





# OTHERWORLDLY EVIL MONARCH

BOOK 04

*Fengling Tianxia*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Otherworldly Evil Monarch

(异世邪君)

by

**Fengling Tianxia**

(风凌天下)

# Synopsis

---

Jun Xie was the number one assassin in modern earth. His skills and knowledge in the field of assassination were unparalleled, his accomplishments unprecedented, his reputation terrified the entire underworld. However, during a mission to retrieve a mystical treasure, a mishap occurred...

He is now Jun Moxie, a sixteen year old super level debauchee, sole heir to the declining Jun family. A family of valiant heroes, left with an old grandpa, a crippled uncle and a debauchee as the sole heir! Accepting the world's criticism and cold stares with a smile, his new journey begins! His life will be carved by his own will! Rise to the top! Evil Monarch Jun Xie!

“This cup I toast to those I’ve killed in my past life. Forgive me, for there is no chance for you to have revenge. Gulp!

This cup I toast to those whose life I will take in my new life. Forgive me, for you are fated to die by my hands. Cheers!”

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

## Chapter 301: [We Just Need The Eastern Wind!](#)

---

The original Jun Mo Xie would've used the same means as Tang Yuan if he had faced a similar situation.

The present Jun Mo Xie and the previous one were very different from each other. Jun Xie was an evil spirit, and was also regarded as a 'free bird', but his bones weren't made of the same debauchery that consisted Tang Yuan and the original Jun Mo Xie's. Jun Xie had always relied on his own self. In fact, he wouldn't even alert the police if he were to spot a vicious crime; he'd treat the evil as his own enemy and would deliver justice himself.

The original Jun Mo Xie had a habit of oppressing people using his power. He would use it to push them down. These two people had such different characteristics; so, how could they be so easily integrated?

However, Tang Yuan's divine inspiration came 'in the nick of time' to help Jun Mo Xie settle his urgent matter. Time was of the essence, and Jun Mo Xie was merely a rookie at refining a Dan. In fact, he hadn't even practiced the most fundamental basics. Besides, there had always been a shortage of medicinal ingredients. But, Fatty Tang had solved the Young Master Jun's greatest problem. And, Jun Mo Xie wasn't going to blame him even though the methods he used were extremely despicable. Anyway, they had compensated the frightened shopkeepers with a lot of silver. So, that would justify as 'compensating for their losses'.

[This was naturally unfair to them. However, is this world ever 'truly fair'? This Young Master has crossed-over to this world; can they do that? Isn't that unfair too...]

The world doesn't exist in a balance of fairness and justice. So, what was the need to conceive such perfection?

[However, it doesn't matter if it was fair or unfair. I have to refine the Dan by tonight!]

This was very important, and Jun Mo Xie was looking forward to it. [What would be the result when I refine these ingredients?]

Then, suddenly a loud and dragon-like roar echoed. The Cold-Blooded Master, Lei Wu Bei appeared in the sky above the Jun residence. His expression was indifferent as he spoke, "Solitary Falcon, why haven't you left when the entire manpower from the Silver Blizzard City has departed? How long do you plan to procrastinate? Do you not fear the Xuan Beast uprising?"

Careful eyes would see that the Cold-Blooded Master's complexion wasn't good. His eyes were somewhat bloodshot, and his vital conditions weren't good either. The person responsible to bring him to such a condition should've been very proud of themselves.

"I'll go if I want to go. And, I won't go if I don't want to go. So, I'll only go when I feel like it. Do you have a problem with that?" the Solitary Falcon replied in a bad mood.

Solitary Falcon was depressed. [This nonsensical summons has come at a key moment. Couldn't you have waited till I had finished mastering the 'Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon'? When will I be able to come back and practice in the calm if leave for Tian Fa right now... When will I get an opportunity like this? On top of that, I might miss out on the medicines too!]

Lei Wu Bei snorted coldly, "It's important to go. You and I are both in The Tian Xiang City, Old Falcon. I know we have some grudges between us. But, when the supreme summons comes — we are to set everything aside. You're one of the Great Eight Masters; you ought to know the consequences of ignoring the supreme summons. This Old Man wishes to travel with you. But, I didn't know that you'd be so unappreciative of such kindness."

Not only Solitary Falcon... Jun Mo Xie was also alarmed by Lei

Wu Bei's words.

The Cold-Blooded Master wants to travel with the Solitary Falcon? This was extremely strange!

No one was aware that Lei Wu Bei had gone mad while searching for his personal enemy Chu Qi Hun. He wanted to find the man so that he could kill him. He would be extremely tense all day, and was always on-guard against his 'imagined' foe since he believed that the number-one assassin could deal a fatal attack from the shadows at any moment. Eventually, Lei Wu Bei's body had become tired, and his mind had become exhausted. In fact, this Great Master was nearly on the verge of a nervous breakdown.

Then, the supreme summons came. Lei Wu Bei realized that a mountain-forest or a lonely inn on the way to Tian Fa would pose as a very convenient setting for Chu Qi Hun's ambush. Moreover, his enemy was evil, and intelligent. Lei Wu Bei realized that his entire life's work would go wasted if he weren't careful. So, he came up with the idea of travelling with the Solitary Falcon. ...The two Great Masters had some grudges, but it wasn't like they had a life-long hatred which couldn't be mediated.

If he could get the Solitary Eagle to help him... the two Great Masters could possibly jolt Chu Qi Hun's nerves... and he may not dare to attack either one of them.

A person's shadow flitted across as the Solitary Falcon appeared before Lei Wu Bei, "Speak the truth Lei Wu Bei — what sly plan have you formed in that head of yours?"

"Are you afraid?" Lei Wu Bei snorted in provocation.

"Me? Afraid? Ha ha ha... this Old Man is aware that this is an indirect method of yours to get me to go with you. I can see the trick you're trying to play!" the Solitary Falcon laughed heartily.

"Stop!" The Young Master Jun couldn't stay calm as he realized that the Solitary Falcon might leave with the other Great Master.



So, he quickly moved into action in order to stop them. He knew that the Silver Blizzard City was a step ahead, and may be waiting in ambush for the Solitary Falcon. The Young Master Jun hadn't anticipated that Lei Wu Bei would seek the Solitary Falcon's company in order to guard-against Chu Qi Hun. Moreover, he believed that Lei Wu Bei was unlikely to render any aid in case the Solitary Falcon was met with any mishaps on the way. In fact, he was likely to step-on the Solitary Falcon if it were to serve his purpose.

“What's the matter?” the Solitary Falcon frowned.

“This young student has to pass-on many things before the Master's return,” Jun Mo Xie's eyes turned.

The Solitary Falcon's heart jumped when he heard those words, and he became extremely excited with anticipation, “What things?! You brat, you've made me happy with those words.”

Lei Wu Bei was somewhat alarmed. [Who is this youngster's Master? How strong is he? He made one of the 'Eight Great Masters' jump around with joy using only a few words...?]

“My master told me to recite the following lines to you, “The falcon soars in solitude; like a cloud floats in the empty sky — it is dissolute in this empty solitude. The dead falcons don't exist in the solitude of the sky. And, ten thousand laws don't exist in the solitude of the sky. The ten thousand laws are the solitude.” Jun Mo Xie wasn't very verbose about it. And, he stuck close to Solitary Falcon's name in order to create his mnemonic chants for him.

“The falcon soars in solitude; like a cloud floats in the empty sky — it is dissolute in this empty solitude. The dead falcons don't exist in the solitude of the sky. And, ten thousand laws don't exist in the solitude of the sky...” the Solitary Falcon frowned as he contemplated. It was like he had the meaning in his hands, but was unable to grasp it properly. His eyes revealed how perplexed he was.

“This is a very clever and creative line. It can be understood, but not described. I can’t express it in words. Master knows that you will have to rush to Tian Fa; he knows that you will be involved in several battles. So, he has preponed the time of my telling you this line since he didn’t wish for these incidents to interfere with your cultivation...”

“Many thanks!” the Solitary Falcon’s rough face appeared very grateful. He then cupped his hands.

“Master also told me to inform you that Six Spirit Xuan experts from the Silver Blizzard City are already a step ahead, and may try to way-lay you on the way to Tian Fa. They’ll be accompanied by their seven swords. I request you to be extremely careful, and move as fast as you can.”

“Six Spirit Xuan experts? The Seven Swords? Could it be ‘THE’ Seven Swords from the Silver Blizzard City?” the Solitary Falcon’s expression turned grave as his heart sank. He wouldn’t have believed this if someone else had told him this. But, the Solitary Falcon believed this news since it had come from the mouth of that Mysterious Master.

“Then, I shall travel with Lei Wu Bei. There may be some disadvantages in that, but there can be many advantages if we co-ordinate properly. So much so, that the former outweighs the latter,” the Solitary Falcon mumbled to himself for a long while. Then, his expression changed, “What else did the Master say?”

“Master said that the senior’s spirit will soar like a Falcon by the time he returns,” Jun Mo Xie chuckled. He then cupped his hands, and said, “God-speed! Tread carefully!”

“Goodbye!” the Solitary Falcon bowed in a rare instance of respect, and cupped his hands. “Again, give my sincere thanks to your Master. Solitary Falcon holds him in very high esteem. I take this matter regarding the Jun Family very seriously. Tell him to feel relieved.” The Solitary Falcon let out a long roar after he was

done speaking. Then, he soared up into the desolate sky. Lei Wu Bei laughed out loud, and followed after him. The two figures flitted in the sky for a moment before they disappeared without a trace.

"A Great Master isn't to be trifled with, ah..." Jun Mo Xie let out a profound sigh, and turned to walk inside the room.

Many Xuan Experts gathered in the Tian Xiang City that night; regardless of their level or backing. Then, they rushed towards the Tian Fa forest; whether in groups or alone.

After all, this was the Supreme Summons. No one could take it lightly.

Even Song Shang and Hai Chen Feng asked permission to leave for Tian Fa since they had a mind to go and lend aid. But, Jun Mo Xie forbade them from doing so, "What are you doing? Do you have a dislike for long lives? I prohibit you from going there. You're staying here. Song Shang, get back to fermenting wine; I'll cancel your apprenticeship if I find you slacking-off. And as for Hai Chen Feng — get back to looking after your gang! You needn't involve yourself in others' matters. You must focus on developing your gang."

This was a joke. The Young Master Jun was in no position to stop the Solitary Falcon if he wished to leave. But, he had marked these two as 'men of the Jun Family'. So, how could he allow them to leave?

What would happen if Jun Mo Xie left the Jun Household with ordinary men? But, if both these experts stayed behind... they could take care of the Jun Household even if something were to happen. In fact, the Jun Family would be considered the strongest in the area. And, Jun Mo Xie had made-up his mind.

Coming back to the original issue... he wouldn't allow them to leave even if they weren't required to look after the Jun Household. This was because they had been labeled as 'men of the

Jun Family' now. So, sending them to Tian Fa would be like using them as cannon fodder against the Xiao and the Li Families. These two men were Sky Xuan experts, but the Tian Fa forest was crawling with Spirit Xuan experts at present. A Sky Xuan expert would be akin to a dog in the south. Therefore, they would be better used in Tian Xiang.

[I've selected the members of my factions so carefully! So, why would I throw them away at Tian Fa? The Xuan Beast uprising? What difference would it make to me if a lot of people die, huh?]

Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang had gone to meet Jun Mo Xie in very high spirits. However, they had no choice but to return embarrassed after they had listened to Jun Mo Xie's words.

### The Second Prince's Residence

The Second Prince was in a very cheerful mood. He was feeling extremely happy.

He felt that all men under the heaven were coming to his aid. Two Great Masters had issued the supreme summons just when the Xuan Beast crossbows were about to arrive. So, the well-known, and the not-so-well-known experts had started to leave for the Tian Fa. The Tian Xiang City's experts were no exception to this.

The Capitals's strength would be reduced incomparably since so many experts were leaving. He could use this chance to transport the deadly weapons safely. Moreover, these weapons would deliver far better results since his men wouldn't have much competition. So, the tiger could grow wings when the time was ripe, and could move-in to fill the power vacuum of the city. Would he be able to seize the city with ease?

The Second Prince and his councilor were embroiled in a tense discussion in his secret chambers. Everyone seemed very excited.

"Mr. Fang, inform the Spirit Storm Guard to hurry up to the

Capital. Tell them that they are to leave the southern provinces, and come here as fast as they can," The Second Prince looked amiably towards his mastermind. "Mr. Fang, I would request that you proceed with the future plans."

"I request the Second Master to be relieved. This is Fang Bo Wen's job, and you can be assured of safety."

Fang Bo Wen then muttered to himself irresolutely, "I know that the Zhao Trading Company has sent two hundred men as escorts. Two Jade Xuan experts lead them. Then, there is the Company's Vice-President... Meng Xiao Song... he leads a group of eighty experts. That Meng Xiao Song is an Earth Xuan expert. With him, there's no need to be anxious. The Zhao Trading Company will move in the bright light — and the guild in the dark; they will move together yet separately. This would eventually go smoothly. The Spirit Storm Guard and the Zhao Trading Company will travel together. In addition, the Blood Sword Hall has been notified as well. They will send two Sky Xuan assassins, five Earth Xuan assassins and twenty Jade Xuan assassins. These assassins will secretly escort the convoy; just to make things absolutely safe. And, most of the power has left the Capital now. That leaves it vulnerable; so, the power of our means will guarantee victory!"

"Humph! This Blood Sword Hall had never sent anyone higher than a 'Jade Xuan' expert in any of their previous missions for me! This had often resulted in their assassins' failure to achieve anything. It had been a waste of labor and money. But, they suddenly dispatched two Sky Xuan and five Earth Xuan experts when it comes to the Xuan Beast tendon crossbows?! And, the lowest level assassins they're sending are Jade Xuan! They are merely trying to show their terrifying strength!" The Second Prince was extremely indignant. He spoke these words very angrily.

"The Blood Sword Hall's method of handling things has always been a profound mystery. This Old Man doesn't know the reason

behind it." Fang Bo Wen frowned and continued, "These Xuan Beast Tendon crossbows are very important to them. Therefore, they are being cautious. And, this isn't without reason. One should be better to oneself than he is to others... After all, it is 'every man for himself'."

Then, Fang Bo Wen suddenly stopped talking. There was a hint of doubt in his eyes. Then, he suddenly started to tremble with fear. It seemed as if he had recalled an extremely dreadful matter.

However, the Second Prince hadn't noticed his mastermind's unusual behavior. He was still seething with anger. He then spoke in a cold voice, "Let that be then! They will be of no use to me after I get those crossbows. And, that's a good thing. I won't be angered by their unfathomable way of working again!"

Fang Bo Wen's snow-white eyebrows shot up, and a trace of fear condensed in his eyes. He wanted to say something, but felt that his idea was nonsensical. In fact, it seemed too fantastical. Therefore, he swallowed his words back. But, that expression of worry became even more profound in the secrecy of his eyes.

He was in no mood to listen to the speaker.

The Second Prince was just whining; nothing more. However, his words resounded like thunder on a sunny day to Fang Bo Wen's ears.

The matters that were hazy before... were becoming clear...

[Do I have to think of another way...? Will I have to retreat from this road?]

The Second Prince leaned to the side, and put his hands behind his back. His face was full of confidence as he laughed. He was brimming with the confidence of a man who was on the verge of victory. The Prince then mumbled, "I can use this opportunity to deal with the First and the Third..."

He didn't speak his thoughts, but his face had a very fierce

expression on it. He then suddenly turned around, "That's it! Mr. Wen, is Yue'er ready?"

"There has been no news of Miss Yue'er for several days. She has made... very few public appearances. Our contacts in the Ni Chang Pavilion... don't know much about this matter either. This Old Man is... very confused in that regard," Fang Bo Wen went through those words very slowly. In fact, he hadn't stated them in a very fluent manner. He had stammered several times in between. It was evident that he was disturbed, and his thoughts weren't on the same matter.

"Humph!" A cold light flashed in the Second Prince's eyes. He remained silent for a little while. Then, he finally spoke-up, "Let her be for the time being. Anyway, it's not like she can turn the tide with her strength alone. What about Cheng De Cao though? What has he been up to? Why hasn't he shown his face for so many days?"

There was a slight look of loathing in Fang Bo Wen's eyes. It was obvious that the Young Master Cheng's reputation wasn't good. He replied, "This Old Man hasn't seen Young Master Cheng for a long time. It seems that he's busy with something. Though, he isn't telling anyone about this matter. Also, the corresponding manpower is yet to arrive. He may have met with some mishap..."

The Second Prince frowned. He strolled around for a bit before he spoke in a gloomy voice, "Shelve the trivial matters for now... everything will be determined with the arrival of the crossbows." His fair face suddenly revealed his murderous intention.

[Humph! A woman and a Young Master! Humph! You consider yourself as something important? So, you agree with me outside, but defy me in private? Yue'er, you mustn't think that you can take advantage of the way I treat you! You'll regret this!]

[This Cheng De Cao thinks himself to be a formidable person? The Second Prince can destroy you whenever he wants!]

"Yes," Fang Bo Wen could sense the Second Prince's killing intentions. His white eyebrows quivered. The mastermind couldn't help but tremble. [Your Majesty is already quite ruthless and without any pity. But, why are you being so shallow? Why are you being so domineering in such a minor matter? What will you do if you accomplish great things in the future?] Suddenly, he became bored to death, and hung his eyes. He shut his mouth, and kept his thoughts to himself.

The Second Prince looked outside at the moonlight. A fiery expression suddenly swept across his face. It was zealous expression. His eyes seemed to burn with a hot flame. It seemed as if he already believed himself to be a great entity.

... ..

The Jun Family's residence; Jun Mo Xie was having a sleepless night.

He had carefully filtered through the ingredients. The list of medications that Jun Mo Xie required was finally in order. He had unexpectedly received two hundred herbs. There were no rare or legendary herbs among them. And, there weren't any precious herbs ingredients among them either. But, there was a massive amount of low-level ingredients. Besides, there were some 'never before seen' low-level ingredients present in this stock-pile as well. It was almost like one could find anything in that pile. The entire stock had been piled-up in the special room in Jun Mo Xie's courtyard.

He then dispersed the bystanders. He even shooed Fatty Tang away to take rest. Then, he selected two trusted helpers to sift through those ingredients.

The so-called 'trusted helpers' were very few in number. In fact, there were only a total of four in the entire Jun Household as far as Jun Mo Xie's count was concerned. But, he couldn't dare to exhaust Grandpa Jun and Third Uncle. As for the other two... he



had regarded it to be very impolite to make Little Ke do this work. Sister Qing Han was available too. So, he had unwillingly asked for her help as well since he needed more people.

After all, Guan Qing Han was the daughter of a Xuan Qi Family. These drugs mustn't be unfamiliar to her. So, she would be a great help to Jun Mo Xie. Moreover, she was one of his most trusted people to say the least.

Jun Mo Xie sat at a place where the light of the lamp couldn't reach. He sat there like a wooden figure; motionless. He frowned deeply in rapt attention. The two females assumed that he was immersed in deep thoughts about a very serious matter since he was frowning so profoundly. So, they decided against disturbing him, and allowed him ponder in peace...

The two tiptoed around. They even spoke softly in order to avoid causing disturbance to Jun Mo Xie's thoughts. Their hands worked quickly in accordance to his instructions. They first segregated the ingredients according to their weight. Then, they mixed them together; as per requirement. Afterwards, they wrapped the mix up, and put a serial number on each package.

The work was not arduous in itself, but working continuously at a stretch for such a long time had exhausted them. The fact that it was a very monotonous and dull job also tired them out. The two worked hurriedly past midnight. They aimed to hand over at least five batches of prescriptions; each with a hundred items.

The two women were drowsy-eyed by the time they finally stood up. They didn't know why Jun Mo Xie wanted these medicines, but he seemed to want them very urgently. So, they didn't dare to take it easy, and had worked incessantly throughout the night. And now, it was finally done. The two females stood up, and smiled bitterly at each other. They felt out of energy, and had a slight ache in their slender waists.

However, the two couldn't help but feel like being praised for

completing so much work so fast. They smiled at each other, and then looked at Jun Mo Xie in unison. [So much work has already been finished! So, what's he still frowning at? What problem could take such a long time to ponder over?]

Jun Mo Xie remained seated; same as before. His head had lowered a bit. The Young Master had a serious look on his face. His frown was so profound that it seemed as if he had encountered the mystery of the ages...

He was concentrating so hard that the two females were able to walk up to him without him detecting their movements...

"Ah! This bastard! He has swindled us into becoming his work-oxes! This bastard fell asleep long back!" Guan Qing Han observed him for some time, and came to that conclusion. She obviously became very angry. They wouldn't have been to tell that his 'breathing' was 'snoring' in reality if they hadn't walked so close to him.

[He's just too much! Who does such things?!]

[We both tired ourselves out working busily throughout the night. You didn't say anything; neither did you help! We didn't disturb you since we thought that you were pondering over something important. But... you were actually sleeping the entire time! This is too much!]

Anger rose inside Guan Qing Han's heart. She rubbed her eyes, but was so tired that she was unable to open them properly. This made her even more sullen. She raised her leg, and gave that 'shameless good for nothing' a tight kick on his thigh.

"Bang!"

Jun Mo Xie fell from his chair, and woke up. He opened his eyes, and immediately understood the reason for that kick. Then, the Young Master calmly got up, and sighed as he put on airs. He then exclaimed, "This problem is very tough! I've thought-it-over all

night, yet I still can't understand it. This is an amazing headache!"

The Young Master Jun looked very gloomy. He continued to moan and groan in pain. Jun Mo Xie tried his best to look very concerned... as if he feared for the country. Anyone who looked at his face would fear that all the land under the heavens would perish if he was stopped from pondering over his problem.

Guan Qing Han sneered. Her beautiful leg landed at the pit of Jun Mo Xie's stomach as she scolded, "Young Master Jun, is it normal for you to have so much saliva when you're focusing hard on a problem?"

Jun Mo Xie made a 'hiccupping' sound. He then replied in a frustrated manner, "This is one of the many problems I have. I don't pay attention to what my body does when I'm thinking long and hard on something important. So, my mouth opens when I think for a long time, and I forget to shut it. A lot of saliva ends up getting collected as a result..."

[What bullsh\*t is this?!]

Guan Qing Han was in a good mood, and found it funny. Though, her face was cold as she chided Jun Mo Xie. She then suddenly realized that the Young Master's eyes had changed direction. He then smiled, "Ah, Third Uncle! What are you doing here so late?"

Guan Qing Han and Little Ke looked around frightfully. But, they didn't even spot the Third Uncle's shadow. They then realized that they had been tricked, and became very angry. Even the usually gentle Little Ke felt her face becoming hot as she turned to look back. However, their eyes opened in amazement once they turned around to face Jun Mo Xie. There was no one in Jun Mo Xie's chair anymore. He had vanished without a trace...

Such speed was... simply heavenly...

The two females looked at each other with blank stares. Then, they recalled Jun Mo Xie's funny appearance from a moment ago.

"Pfft, Pfft" sounds escaped from their lips as they started to laugh.

Little Ke pursed her lips and chuckled. She then looked at Guan Qing Han appreciatively, and exclaimed, "Young Lady, you have a very attractive smile. I'm seeing you smile after a very long time. You should smile more often... it's very, very pretty."

"I'm seeing you smile after a very long time..." this made Guan Qing Han's body tremble. A frantic look passed through her eyes. Then, she resumed her cold expression and sighed, "It is very late at night; go and rest." She said this and silently walked out of the courtyard.

Her silhouette seemed very lonely and desolate in the night-light. She appeared like a 'Snow Lotus' on a faraway mountain peak that was covered in snow and clouds — alone, proud and upright.

"God!" Jun Mo Xie had hidden inside the HongJun Pagoda. [The two tigresses come up so suddenly! Why didn't I hide before?] He hadn't slept for two nights and a day. That was the reason why he had fallen asleep like that. He was extremely tired. Another reason was that he was re-vitalizing his vigor in order to concoct the Dans.

As for the selection of the ingredients and formulas was concerned — Jun Mo Xie had already combed through the Book of Folk Remedies, and was confident that he could refine 5 kinds of Dans.

The Mysterious Yang Dan, the Missing Yin Dan, the Spirit Amassing Dan, the Multi-Division Dan, and the Connecting-Meridians Dan!

The title is an idiom. It means that all preparations are in order, but something tiny yet important is needed. This 'tiny element' usually refers to good fortune.

# Chapter 302: Alchemy and Progression

---

The [Mysterious Yang Dan and the Missing Yin Dan](#) were bodily nourishment medicines, and were to be taken by men and women respectively. They were refined using the most ordinary herbs, and could be consumed by the most ordinary of people; without any fear of a side effect. However, the Spirit Amassing Dan was a high-level Dan, and was only suited for high-level martial practitioners.

The Spirit Amassing Dan was also known as the ‘Devil’s Heart’ Dan. This Dan was designed to be consumed while undertaking martial training. It would increase the concentration of the ‘spirit energy’ inside a person’s body by a very significant margin. Moreover, the possibility of a backlash — or the ‘Devil’s Bite’ — would be more-or-less eliminated even if a person would wholeheartedly immerse themselves in their practice. This function of the Devil’s Heart Dan would seem rather simple, but it was no trivial matter. This Dan wasn’t a rare treasure, but it wasn’t exactly sold openly in the market; nor did it have a price.

A martial practitioner can’t afford to be afraid of foreign object; they can’t fear pain. However, the ‘[Devil’s Bite](#)’ was one the biggest hurdles in their path. And, most people were afraid of this phenomenon. It was hard to say how many high-level martial practitioners had succumbed to the Devil’s Bite over the course of their training, and had lost their lives and cultivation to this tragedy. In fact, the effect of the Devil’s Bite was likely to be more severe for a martial practitioner of a higher level. But, the Devil’s Heart Dan effectively put an end to this phenomenon’s possibility. Hence, this Dan was often considered as a ‘Life-saving’ Dan.

An open circulation of the ‘Devil’s Heart Dan’ would likely give rise to a ruckus in the entire Xuan Xuan continent. This small medicine pill could easily cause a blood-bath; a very tragic one at that. In fact, the intensity of the scramble for this medicine wouldn’t be very different from the one that had unfolded for the

‘Level Nine Xuan Core’.

The “[Multi-Cure Dan](#)” did what its name suggests. It was miracle medicine that could cure a myriad of infections and diseases. This medicine could blend with a plethora of infectious and poisonous substances inside the host’s body, and could remove them from therein — without causing any harm to the subject. It was a long road to Tian Fa. Moreover, the journey and the destination were filled with a variety of elements that could cause infections in the troops’ bodies. And, this medicinal pill could act as a major means of prevention against all such elements by preserving the troops’ health. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had given this medicine preference over the others.

The last was the ‘Connecting-Meridians Dan’. Jun Mo Xie had given it a different name: Ten Years Dan. According his experiments — a person’s Xuan Qi and internal strength were likely to see an enhancement after the consumption of this Dan. This Dan wouldn’t exactly open-up a person’s Xuan meridians, but it could enhance a person’s Xuan cultivation by ten years’ time!

Moreover, the effects of this enhancement were possibly permanent in nature!

In other words, this ‘Medicinal Dan’ could provide a life-long enhancement in person’s combat effectiveness. Moreover, this miraculous medicine could produce this effect in a very short period of time. Jun Mo Xie could enhance the cultivation level of the 300 hundred guards he was training to an entirely new level if this medicine could be combined with the ‘Devil’s Heart Dan’.

Jun Mo Xie could naturally refine a few more medicines using the second level of the ‘Art of Unlocking the Heaven’s fortune’. But, those medicines were mostly nourishment medicines such as ‘Spirit Purifying’ Dan etc. These medicines were quite effective as well, but Jun Mo Xie didn’t think very highly of them; nor did he need them very urgently. So, he had temporarily ignored them when he had made a list of his first-choice medicines.

It was imperative for him to enhance strength as soon as possible. Not just his own — but that of the entire Jun Family's troops.

Jun Mo Xie sat cross-legged inside the Hongjun Pagoda. He was facing the 'Furnace of Good Fortune', and was trying to calm his excited frame of mind. The 'Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune' had been surging like a torrent, but it started to flow like a smooth stream as his mental state became calmer. Suddenly, he felt burst of clarity in his mind.

[Well!]

Jun Mo Xie raised his hands after a loud shout, and drew a large circle in the void of the air. Then, he rapidly drew some characters with his finger. He wasn't using any kind of ink, but some strange characters would show up in that circle he had previously drawn. And, those strange characters would fly into the Furnace of Good Fortune once they had been fully formed...

Boom!

The 'Flame of Primal Chaos' was lightly ablaze under the 'Furnace of Good Fortune' when he had started. However, the flame suddenly became more ardent and fierce. A jet-black flame soared ten feet into the sky, and enveloped the entire 'Furnace of Good Fortune' inside it.

Jun Mo Xie pointed the index finger of his hand towards the 'Furnace of Good Fortune' as this happened. A 'buzz' resounded from the Furnace, and it started to float and swirl in midair. Soon, the Furnace's body started to radiate with a rainbow-colored light, and countless strange patterns appeared on its outer surface. Then, those patterns suddenly disappeared. But, that rainbow-colored light continued to radiate on the furnace's body. The furnace continued to swirl and buzz midair as its lid was raised into the sky.

Jun Mo Xie tossed the medicinal ingredients into the furnace

with his right hand, and the entire atmosphere was suddenly filled with a rich medicinal aroma. This dense fragrance had come to life the moment the ingredients made contact with the Furnace. Then, the Furnace's lid slammed down, and the 'Flame of Primal Chaos' lit-up once again. Then, Jun Mo Xie pointed his finger towards the furnace, and it was enveloped in that jet-black flame again.

Suddenly, Jun Mo Xie felt as if the spiritual energy inside his body had surged out like a massive river that had broken past its dam...

This was merely the beginning. The Young Master Jun had always sailed swiftly — despite the direction of the current. However, he found himself complaining like never before...

[Oh My God! Is this medicinal alchemy or blood suction? That feeling from a moment ago was simply terrifying! Refining such a small amount of Dans requires so much strength, and such a substantial amount of Aura?! And, that's when I'm only refining the most basic and ordinary Dans! If this is merely the starting point... wouldn't it kill me if I were to refine high-end Dans? This is too much...!]

[Damn it! I've seen the movies! Those Daoist alchemists would concoct Dans with so much ease. They would merely stroke their beards and scratch their whiskers, and the job would be done. The clouds would shake, and the Dan would show up in front of them. And, a person could be brought back from the dead with the Dan they would concoct! In fact, a person could become as light as feather, and ascend to the heavens as an Immortal...]

[Ah... why did it have to be so difficult in my case? I just want to treat some injuries, cure some infections, and enhance a person's cultivation by a few years... that's all! But, why does something so simple have to demand so much energy from my spirit, ah?]

Jun Mo Xie grumbled in his heart, but didn't dare to slack off. He tried to maintain a steady flow, and allowed his body's spiritual



energy to surge out like a massive river...

A long while later...

“Bang!”

The Furnace of Good Fortune issued a loud sound, and resumed its original position on the ground. The Flame of Primal Chaos simmered down and reverted back to its original color.

As for the Young Master Jun — he was completely exhausted. He didn't even have the strength to move his fingers. He panted for air as he sensed the HongJun Pagoda frantically pour Aura into his meridians. He felt as if he had just run 5 kilometers with a 500kg boulder on his body. He was literally on the verge of his sticking his tongue out of his mouth to breathe more air. In fact, the Young Master Jun would've probably fallen into a deep slumber if it wasn't the crazy amount of supplementary energy that the HongJun Pagoda was pouring into his body.

Physical fatigue was secondary. The crucial point was that his spirit had been exhausted. This was a rather frightening situation. The consequences could be very serious if his spirit wasn't timely supplemented.

A long, long while later... Jun Mo Xie finally felt as if his dried-out meridians had been somewhat replenished. He strutted off the ground with the help of the little remaining spiritual energy in his body, and lifted the Furnace's lid. Then, he peeked to take a look inside it. He violently cried-out after a quick glance, while his limbs started to tremble.

There was nothing inside the Furnace of Good Fortune! ...apart from some burnt-out ashes...

“I'm going to fu\*k you!” The Hitman was flabbergasted. He continued to curse in anger, “I don't believe this! I spent all the effort I could, and this Dan still didn't get refined?! I can't believe that I'll have to try a second time over such silly and ordinary

Dans!”

He sat down cross-legged, put the HongJun Pagoda into motion, and started to absorb the spiritual energy... [I won't mess up the second time]...

Then...

“You recumbent furnace!” the Hitman couldn't believe the result of his second attempt either. “This is again... ah... well, my I'm going to get serious! Let's see who the real daddy is!”

Then, he started all over again...

Bang! Then...

“Damn it! I can't believe this devil! I don't know how many attempts this nonsense is going to take... ten times... Do I have to try a hundred times? A thousand times...?” he continued to curse in anger. He vented out his anger till he exhausted himself, and then sat down cross-legged again. He restarted the HongJun Pagoda to replenish his energy, and started the process again...

He couldn't believe the result again... abused till he was exhausted... and then started the entire process again...

It's hard to say how many times it took, but eventually...

“Wow, ha ha ha ha... I'm your daddy! How can a piece of trash like you keep turning my stuff into ashes, huh? Ah? You son of a bit\*h! You think I don't know you? You're a bastard! Ha! You evil little thing! You think you can beat me? Hum...”

The Young Master Jun's messy hair and dirt-filled face didn't look much different from that of a beggar's. In fact, even a beggar would look better than Jun Mo Xie's present appearance. His face had gone as green as that of a zombie's. His entire body was trembling as if he was suffering from a stroke of epilepsy. He extended his hand, and grabbed a tiny and shiny pill from the Furnace. He then raised it into the air, and started jumping up and down like a maniac...

He gnashed his teeth as he held that pill in his hands. Jun Mo Xie had a strong impulse to throw that pill on the ground so he could trample it like a maniac. [Damn it! I suffered so much for this tiny piece of trash?! I've got cramps from that tortuous ordeal! What if I were to toss you to the ground, and stamp on you... that would be fun... that would feel so good... how good would that feel?]

However, the heartless and ruthless Jun Mo Xie was reluctant to part with it. [Damn! Trample on this thing? Has my brain short-circuited? That's not enough! I'm going to swallow you! You will squirm inside my intestines till you've been digested. And then, you shall be transformed into my moisty and stinky sh\*t. That's the best punishment for you!]

He continued to rain curses as he slowly put them into a jade bottle. Then, he pulled one pill out of the jade bottle, and brought it up to his mouth. His hands treated the pill as if it was a priceless treasure, while his mouth cursed it "Tiny piece of trash". Then, that pill reluctantly left his hand, and dropped into his mouth. Crack, crack, crack... he chewed it a few times, and swallowed it down...

"The result looks good." Jun Mo Xie face reveled in the aftertaste of the Mysterious Yang Dan as it came in contact with his mouth. Then, Jun Mo Xie's face revealed a bitter expression as he realized that he had many more to refine, [How much time will this take?]

[Forget about the material required for this Mysterious Yang Dan... I came in with 100 packets of herbs... and now I only have 78 left. It took me 22 attempts to succeed once. And, it could've been by accident too! I can only concoct 30 pills in one go. So, I will have to succeed 10 times if I want to make enough for all my trainees. How many attempts will it take to succeed 10 times...?]

"This stupid furnace!" Jun Mo Xie sat down again, and started to replenish his spiritual energy...

One had to say that Jun Mo Xie had a very tough will-power. It

had certainly surpassed that of an ordinary person. An ordinary person wouldn't back away if they were met with a wall on their path. However, Jun Mo Xie wouldn't just refuse to give-up... he'd continue to knock against the wall until he had broken past it.

Jun Mo Xie had initiated the Hongjun Pagoda to reinstate his spiritual power for the 22nd time. He wanted to restart the Furnace of Good Fortune and Flame of Primal Chaos so he could adhere to his task of concocting the required number of pills. However, the spiritual energy in his body had been exhausted. In fact, not even a spec of it was left.

What kind of sensation would a martial man feel once their Xuan Qi and Spiritual Energy had been depleted? Such excessive strain would leave their limbs cold, and their mind in chaos. And, if a person had to experience this feeling over 22 times... one would feel as if the very depth of the sea of their soul had started to tremble... as if they would wither at a moment's notice; it was a very creepy sensation that would leave one's hair standing at an end! It would be akin to taking a recreational hike along the gates of hell.

An average person would at best endure this the first time due to their "discipline". But, they would never attempt it a second time. Moreover, the memory of this sensation was likely to shatter the said-person's will-power, and leave them traumatized. In fact, even the individuals bestowed with the strongest of will-powers wouldn't attempt this more than three-to-five times.

However, the Young Master Jun had attempted this process 22 times in a row! He had failed the first 21 times... but judging by his zeal — he would've single-mindedly carried-on even if he hadn't succeeded in his 22nd attempt.

Who could claim to be more tenacious than Hitman Jun? Who could claim to be more ruthless?

Let alone the Spiritual Energy... even the mental discipline

required to accomplish this feat wasn't trivial! It was simply unimaginable!

As the situation stood — the Young Master Jun had succeeded once, and had concocted a few pills. However, he still wasn't willing to stop. In fact, he was brimming with desire to refine all the ingredients he carried...

Even if an almighty alchemic master was to see such tenacity... they'd probably roll their eyes over and faint!

They'd call him a freak; perhaps an evil spirit!

However, Jun Mo Xie wasn't aware of this. In fact, he probably wouldn't bother even if he was. So, he'd endlessly gather his energy, and would immerse himself into refining the pills. Then, he'd put-up a miserly expression on his face as he'd slowly put those pills into his small jade bottle...

One bottle could only hold a hundred pills. Seeing that one bottle had filled-up... he brought out the next one... filled it... and then the next... Perhaps it could be attributed to his previous failures, but Jun Mo Xie had become very skilled at this. In fact, it seemed as if he was one of the best alchemists alive...

Perhaps he had failed too many times in the beginning. But, his rate of failure had decreased very significantly after he had gained some experience. Now, he'd succeed one out of every three times...

However, this wasn't the most important aspect. The most important thing was — the recovery speed of Jun Mo Xie's spiritual energy had been increasing incessantly. Jun Mo Xie's countenance had resembled a 'dead dog' after his first attempt. But, he would only be left to pant grumpily at present. Then, he'd gasp a mouthful of air, sit down to meditate, recover himself in a few moments, and then start again... this had increased his speed by two or three times...

His success rate had also increased!

It was hard to say how much benefit these pills would provide. But, Jun Mo Xie's spiritual energy was deriving great benefits from this refining process. And, these benefits would certainly be profound and long-lasting.

Jun Mo Xie's spiritual strength's condensation and his spiritual awareness's strength had shown massive improvements over the course of those 21 failures. And, they had unexpectedly burst-out when he had successfully concocted his first batch of pills. This had revealed the progress that Jun Mo Xie had made while concocting these pills.

However, Jun Mo Xie was unaware of this. In fact, he hadn't taken any note of this aspect.

Jun Mo Xie had "accidentally" or "unintentionally" attained a state of detachment from his body.

He was completely detached from himself. There was only one thing in his mind — [refine pills! Refine pills! Refine pills! I need to refine pills at any cost! ...there's no time! I don't have enough time! I must pay close attention to how much time I spend in refining these pills...]

The expression on his face had gone from that of excitement... to calm and serene... to 'it's only a matter of time'... to a wooden expression... and had eventually transformed into that of a man who was mundanely sitting and eating his daily cabbage...

And the cheapest variety of cabbage at that! The kind that would be sold for a dozen a dime... the kind that one would grow bored of consuming...

But then, Jun Mo Xie made a startling discovery by the time he started to refine the Connecting-Meridians Dan. And, he finally woke-up with a start...

[What the fu\*k!]

[My body's spiritual power has supported three consecutive

refining processes, and I still don't feel exhausted! This... what's happening? Are these pills of a lower level than the previous ones? Nah... they are all at the same level. But, this Connecting-Meridians Dan is the highest-leveled pill amongst these... It's the hardest to refine, and requires the maximum amount of Aura input... I remember that I was barely to persist when I refined the first batch of pills... so why don't I feel dead-tired right now? What's happening...]

Jun Mo Xie's mind was set into motion. And so, he peeked inside his body. One glance — and he jumped-up in shock!

The traces of the formless spiritual energy still persisted within his meridians. It had broken past the first layer, and was gradually breaking through the second layer as it shuttled back and forth his meridians. This spiritual energy was still in the form of mist, but it was much denser than before! In fact, it nearly felt as if it had solidified!

[Don't tell me! My spiritual strength has seen such a massive growth by merely refining these medicines?]

Jun Mo Xie couldn't understand this. After all, wasn't he merely concocting pills?

He would exhaust his bodily aura every time he'd refine the ingredients. But, he'd instigate the HongJun Pagoda into motion since he didn't have any time to replenish his spiritual energy. And, the HongJun Pagoda would reinstate his meridians with pure aura, and revive his spiritual strength. However, it would replenish his meridians with a little more aura than they previously contained.

It was hard to tell the number of times he had undergone this process... but, he'd put all his effort into the process each time, and would overstrain himself in the process...

It could be said that Jun Mo Xie would've died without a dreg if it weren't for the HongJun Pagoda. However, the HongJun Pagoda

existed. And, his body was presently inside it. This was greatly beneficial for him, but it's difficult to describe these benefits in words...

His strength had more than doubled since the time he had started to concoct these pills in the Pagoda!

As for the measure of his Xuan Qi — he had at-least reached the mid-level mark of the Jade Xuan realm. And, he could make another breakthrough at any point. As for the 'Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune' was concerned — he had reached the mid-level mark of the second layer! He could reach the peak of the first layer after one more giant stride. Then, he could advance further by impacting the third layer's bottleneck!

Moreover, it hadn't even been 15 days since he had broken into the second layer!

In other words, he had managed to enhance himself by two full steps over the course of this frenzied time when he had been immersed in refining these medicines. Two full steps! Ordinary people couldn't even think about such progression!

Xuan Qi cultivation was easy before a person reached the Silver Xuan level. So, the growth was rapid. But, every step would become harder once a person had made the breakthrough into the Silver Xuan Realm. In fact, the same was true for every type of martial cultivation. It gets tougher to make a breakthrough with every grade a cultivator advances.

Take the Tian Fa King beasts for example. They were far beyond the ordinary. In fact, one could say that they had been blessed by the heavens. However, they had been stuck at the same breakthrough for decades; but still hadn't seen any signs of a breakthrough. They had made progress every day over the course of these decades. But, they still hadn't been able to make a breakthrough. So, one could imagine how fanatical they must've gotten when Jun Mo Xie offered to assist them in making one. This



was probably the most apt description of the difficulty of progression.

An ordinary person simply couldn't fathom this!

Jun Mo Xie exhaled a long, long, long breath. His mind was enveloped by ecstasy, and he suddenly loosened up. Then, he suddenly felt a strong ache in his head; as if his skull had been punctured with needles. Jun Mo Xie had forgotten about the passage of time since he had entered the HongJun Pagoda. In fact, he had no idea as to how much time he had been here!

However, he had an unbearable headache at the moment. His entire body felt powerless. His spiritual energy had been re-filling itself, but his body had long been exhausted. Then, a strong sense of starvation emerged from his stomach. So much so, that Jun Mo Xie was left aggrieved to death.

[How long have I been at this without any food? Ah, not to mention... without any water...]

Jun Mo Xie scanned the floor beside his feet, and was again shocked by the sight of his doings...

Rows after rows of jade bottles had been neatly arranged on the floor.

He counted the number of bottles... [My God!]

Jun Mo Xie sucked in a breath of cold air. [Did I really refine so many pills? Crap! I'm so abnormal! In fact, I'm not even a human being ah...]

[There's five bottles of Mysterious Yang Pills, three bottles of Missing Yin Pills, six bottles of Devil's Heart Pills, eight bottles of Connecting-Meridians pills, and fifteen bottles of Multi-Cure Pills...]

[My God!]

[I'm too great! Too great! I'm very, very handsome! I'm amazing!]

...no adjective can aptly describe my talents!]

[These pills... they are... power ah! How much progression will my 300 guards' strength see once I give them these pills? It's certainly going to be formidable!]

Jun Mo Xie spent some time praising himself. Then, he quickly ducked-out of the HongJun Pagoda... [I'm going to starve to death if I don't leave this place...]

However, Jun Mo Xie was completely unaware that he had spent three days and three nights inside the HongJun Pagoda instead of that one 'intended' night. Moreover, he was completely unaware of the commotion his absence had caused...

The Jun Family's Young Master had disappeared from his own residence... no one had found any traces of his departure, and he hadn't told anyone either. Moreover, he had never disappeared for such a long stretch in the past...

On top of that, Jun Mo Xie had disappeared right after the Solitary Falcon had departed the Jun residence. What did this indicate? Could anyone imagine that, ah?

The entire Jun household was in a chaos, and everybody was in a hurry. Something big had happened!

It was outrageous!

The Third Young Master of the Jun Family! Their only surviving scion!

Yin and Yang. Yin in this context refers to female. Similarly, Yang refers to male.

'Devil Bite' is phenomenon when a person (a martial practitioner) gets possessed by the devil during their practice, or (metaphorically/ sometimes literally) catches fire.

It was referred to as 'Multi-Division Dan' in the previous chapter. But, this name makes more sense if its function is taken into

account.

# Chapter 303: The Dispute Over the Medicinal Dans, and Guan Qing Han's Breakthrough

---

Grandpa Jun wasn't worried on the first day. Jun Mo Xie's strength wasn't weak, and he had full confidence in his own abilities. In fact, he had stated that he could defend himself against a Great Master if need be. Could anything be more dangerous than that? Grandpa Jun had no idea where Jun Mo Xie had gone off to, but he was more focused on planning a Great-Grandson for himself...

However, Grandpa Jun and Jun Wu Yi couldn't help but get worried on the next day. [He hasn't come home for two days and two nights. What's the matter? This has never happened before! Could it be that he is busy indulging himself in pleasures and has forgotten about his duties towards the Family?]

Finally, they lost their cool on the third day. After all, his claims of being able to defend himself against a Great Master hadn't been confirmed...

Grandpa Jun became extremely anxious, and ordered an emergency throughout the capital. He also dispersed his troops everywhere. The Jun Family's secret force was dispatched, and they searched every corner of the city. Then, the Jun family dispatched more troops in disarray since they couldn't find him. Hai Chen Feng and the Jin Yan Gang also initiated a comprehensive search. The gangsters and the soldiers had taken initiative to work hand in hand in this instance! Grandpa Jun and Third Uncle personally led the search, and were thorough like a sieve. They searched each shady area in the city — multiple times.

Third Uncle's complexion was extremely unsightly. He was extremely vicious during this search. Each word that came out of

his mouth was unsuited for a cultured man's speed. He would first strike a person, and then... he'd abuse. Grandpa Jun's speech was also very fierce. [Damn it! I will carry out a detailed search... even if the sky falls! And, I'll kill anyone who doesn't cooperate!]

[I'll break your legs if you dare to utter a word! You dare to slack-off after I broke your legs? Should I go for your skull as well?]

The brothels were shut down and raided. The same was especially true for the wretched Spirit Fog Lake's most infamous establishment: [Ni Chang](#) 'Rainbow' Pavilion. That was certainly on top of the list.

They further went on to take the Madame and the pimps of the 'Rainbow Pavilion' into custody. They even intercepted and arrested Lady Yue'er. Apparently, Lady Yue'er had been touring every influential family's residence in order to show-case her skills. Every brothel was falling-over itself in an attempt to hire her. But, she had planned a big tour. And, she was barely done with half of it when she was intercepted by the soldiers led by Jun Wu Yi, and was then taken into custody...

But why?

What reason could they have to capture a prostitute?

Everyone knew the relationship between the Second Prince and the 'Rainbow Pavilion'. But, this incident marked the first time when the Second Prince sent his own 'Mastermind' — Fang Bo Wen — to intercede on his behalf. He had counted on the Jun Family's honor. He was ordered to return only after they had released Lady Yue'er. But, Jun Wu Yi's face was extremely cold when he passed his judgement, "Get lost!"

It was said that the venerable Mr. Fang flew into an epileptic rage on the spot.

Then suddenly, the Third Young Master Jun re-appeared... in the midst of all that chaos.

The beggar-looking Young Master Jun appeared in his courtyard like a starving re-incarnation of a stray dog. He sped to Jun Family's Kitchen like a fish that had just escaped its net the moment he appeared.

Little Ke had bathed her face with tears. She jumped in fear at his arrival. Though, she couldn't even see his shadow when she turned her head to look at him.

Little Ke then hurriedly went and informed Guan Qing Han. In turn, she informed Jun Wu Yi that the Third Young Master Jun had returned safe and sound.

After that, the two females proceeded towards the direction Jun Mo Xie had disappeared in. They were extremely shocked when they reached the kitchen.

Jun Mo Xie's dress was ragged, and his hair was disheveled. His face was pale, and there were two pouches beneath his eyes. He looked like a wretched animal. His hands were skinny and black like a chicken's claw, and his boots had holes which revealed his toes. He'd grabbed a fish with his left hand, and put it into his mouth. He then pulled hard in the opposite direction; only the fish's skull and bones came out of his mouth.

He held a lump of beef in his right hand. He didn't even seem to chew it as he stuffed it down his throat. A bowl full of soup was placed in front of him. He'd occasionally choke and let out a strange cry. Then, he'd lowered his head, and smashed it in the bowl. He'd ignore the strange sounds of his actions as he'd empty half-the-bowl in one go.

Beneath him... was a pile of bones, fish bones, and bits-and-pieces of meat...

The chubby chefs in the kitchen were behaving as if they had been struck by lightning. They stared foolishly at the famished incarnation of the Young Master. Their faces twitched. He was eating too much.

[Crap! Even a pig... no... even a wild boar can't eat so much at such an unbelievable speed!] They felt dizzy as they witnessed that spectacle.

Guan Qing Han and Little Ke rushed over and caught up. They were very indignant. [You little debauchee! You disappeared to god-knows where. You left home for three days without even leaving a message! Could you at least think about how worried everyone else is?] The sister-in-law wanted to teach her brother-in-law a lesson. After all, she was an elder relative. But, she was dumbstruck by this sight, and was unable to say anything.

[These kind of table manners?!] The eyes of the eldest daughter of the Guan Family opened wide. And, she covered her small mouth as her expression turned to that of shock. The generally cold and beautiful face of the young woman had revealed this look for the first time...

Little Ke's delicate and small mouth opened-wide as she stared startled; one could stuff two duck-eggs in her mouth.

Eventually, Jun Mo Xie sighed with satisfaction. Then, his head went down again to finish the last bits in the soup bowl, and raised it back once its white base was visible.

Then, he raised one leg and kicked at the pile of bones... which had nearly reached his ankles. The Young Master then hiccupped in satisfaction. After that, he took-out his throwing knife, and calmly started to pick his teeth. He then saw everyone's expression... the one that had surface on their faces after witnessing such a strange event. He couldn't help but ask in bewilderment, "Is my face flowering?"

Everyone was speechless.

They were speechless for a long time. They wondered if anyone could say anything after witnessing something so shameless.

"What have you been doing these past days?" His sister-in-law,

Guan Qing Han, asked in a dignified and interrogative manner once she came back to her senses.

"Me? In the past few days? Hah..." Jun Mo Xie immediately guessed what had happened. He then sighed as he shook his head, "I was extremely busy these past few days; extremely busy! Unlike you all — who slept till they were hungry, and ate till they were satisfied. You had nothing to do... except for taking care of your physiological needs."

[What did he say?] Guan Qing Han bristled as she spoke fiercely, "What did you say?"

"What did I say? He He... I said that sister-in-law and Little Ke look increasingly beautiful every time I see you. Especially sister-in-law! Not only do you look very attractive, but you also look younger. I believe that people who don't know that you're my sister-in-law will think that you're my younger sister if you carry-on at this rate!" Jun Mo Xie honeyed his words as he uttered this nonsense.

Guan Qing Han and Little Ke were stunned. They knew that his words were an overstatement, and were aware that he was only trying to flatter them. But, they still felt delighted at being praised. Their mood changed, and a funny expression surfaced on their faces as they stared at him speechless. Guan Qing Han's face became taut after some time, "Third Uncle has returned. He'll make you feel better." She finished and pulled Little Ke away with her.

Qing Han had been right. Moreover, she hadn't exaggerated one bit.

The Grandpa Jun and Third Uncle rushed back to Jun Mo Xie the moment they heard of his return, and burst-in furiously like a storm. The Young Master Jun's hair turned white at the sight of this, and he started to splutter...

The Young Master Jun was barely able to withstand the



concentrated thunderstorm of the berating. But, he wanted to show-off his achievements. So, he then cleared his throat and took out the Mysterious Yang Dan, the Devil's Heart Dan and the 'Ten Years' Dan. But, the two big shots continued to scold him violently.

Erm... these Dans were very good. Though, they couldn't be taken in concentrated doses. The Mysterious Yang Dan could be taken once every ten days. And, it would be fine to take a regular dose for health purposes. But, the 'Ten Years' Dan was a one-time affair; it would be useless to have it regularly... in fact, it would be a complete waste.

Grandpa Jun and the Third Uncle picked the Dans with their fingertips. But, judging by their facial expressions... they didn't look very convinced. After all, the Young Master Jun had said that the efficacy of these Dans were miraculous. They looked at Jun Mo Xie with doubtful expressions. [You cheating demon! This little Dan can increase cultivation by ten years? That's rubbish!] The same thought emerged in both men's brain.

However, they felt their cultivation shoot-up frantically after they took the pills under Jun Mo Xie's administration. They felt their skills had risen to a level of ten years or more. Their expressions turned green as the Young Master's. They stared at the Young Master Jun like a pack of... hungry wolves!

"This is such an amazing thing! How many of these are there? Hand them over to this Old Man! I'm happy again. So, don't make trouble for me! I'll have none of your nonsense, you little brat!"

This was Grandpa Jun's roar. His face had flooded with excitement. He grabbed the front of Jun Mo Xie's gown, raised him in the air, and shook him like he was drying a dead fish in the wind.

The Old Man greedily opened his mouth wide as he spoke those words in a tyrannical manner.

"Since your grandfather has opened his mouth first... you must serve his needs before anything else. I'm not that important. You come round to me as you wish. Just hand over a hundred dozen bottles to me. You must give the remaining to your grandfather; no matter how many you have in total." That's what Jun Wu Yi had said. He wanted more than a hundred-dozen bottles of these Dans.

[This father-and-son duo thinks that these Dans have fallen from the sky? And, one can just pick them from the ground? These are medicinal dans with genuine efficacies!]

Jun Mo Xie groaned. He had been dizzied by the shock...

[Even if I could merely pluck them from the ground... I'd still need to work my back! These medicines are amazing supplements... But, these two think that they are like cabbages...? How can they demand such a large amount...]

Could these two men kill Jun Mo Xie over these pills? They had conveniently forgotten about their grandson/ nephew / and their Family's sole heir in the lure of these Dans! Grandpa Jun was pulling Jun Mo Xie's cheek in hostility, and had nearly transformed his appearance into that of a pig's. Jun Wu Yi was slightly gentler in his approach. He was only addressing to Jun Mo Xie's logical sensibility. Else, Jun Mo Xie's face would've turned purple from all the 'pulling'.

[Did he faint in front of us? We have misjudged this brat's intentions. We have erred and counted our chickens before they hatched!]

The Young Master Jun let out a blood curdling cry. He wanted to burst into tears, but couldn't find any tears to shed. "I can't do it anymore... I will faint... I can't do it anymore... you two... please let me off!"

"You cheating devil! I just saw that you took out several bottles of those! Now calmly hand them over to me. Are you looking for trouble?" Grandpa Jun caught Jun Mo Xie by the ankles, and

pulled him up. Then, he started to wave him around ferociously. It appeared as if an urchin was hanging from date tree's branch. But, the only difference was... he was upside-down...

Jun Mo Xie couldn't bear this treatment anymore, "Let go... I'm dying! I'm feeling very dizzy! I'll give... I'll give... isn't that enough?"

Grandpa Jun put his grandson down, and stared at him like a tiger looking at his prey. He didn't even blink.

Jun Mo Xie crawled away and slapped his face. [You really had to show off, didn't you?! Didn't you know that you'd be inviting trouble? You're well aware that this stuff can sway people's hearts. You knew that your grandfather and Third Uncle will lose all sense of relations when lured by the desire of such amazing Dans!]

He still felt this was wrong. [I anyway refined the Dans to increase the Jun Family's strength. So, why am I getting the miserable treatment that is meted out to rebels?! So many different kinds of torture! It's like they are forcing chili water down my throat!]

He moved slowly and took out one bottle of the Mysterious Yang Dan, Devil's Heart Dan, Multi-Cure Dan and Ten Years Dan each. He then kept them on top of the table for display. "That's all I have!"

"I don't believe it! Take out more!" the two older men roared in unison.

"That's really all I have!" Young Master Jun's face revealed a sincere expression. "These will be enough for hundreds of people. My master gave these many to me..." he thought; [You want them all for yourself? I made them to upgrade the strength of the troops under my command... but, I won't give to the unreliable ones. So, I'll keep the remaining with myself.]

"These bottles have enough for a hundred people?" the two older

men were full of disbelief. Such precious medicines were extremely rare. The Third Uncle had asked for over a hundred-dozen of these bottles, but was he was merely joking.

It would've been enough if one bottle could provide for 3-5 people. So, how could they not be flabbergasted to hear the Young Master Jun speak that these tiny bottles could provide for hundreds of people?

"That's right. My master has used all his strength to refine these medicines. Why else would I have asked for those herbal ingredients? But, my master suffered a serious injury in refining these medicines. He may take up to 3-5 months to recover. Moreover, he may not be able to refine such Dans for a very long period of time. So, we need to be careful with the usage of these medicines." Jun Mo Xie was naturally exaggerating a few things. But, if the two men came to know that these Dans could be refined repeatedly... wouldn't they force him to refine those Dans every day for the rest of his life?

The two men thought this to be reasonable. It was reasonable if Jun Mo Xie's master couldn't refine these 'divine medicines' again and again. After all, wouldn't it be too much of a child's play if such medicines could be mass-produced?

The two older men extended their hands pushed Jun Mo Xie aside. Then, the two of them pulled at each other as they tried to grab...

"Mine!"

"Mine!"

"Bang! Slam! Thump!" it was quite obvious that the two men had reached out for the Dans...

Jun Mo Xie disappeared from the hall like a wisp of smoke. He paid no attention to those shameless 'good for nothing' men. In any case, there wouldn't be a mishap... no matter how much they

tussled. But, they had sent the ground rumbling. [I better make a run for it...]

Intentionally or otherwise, Jun Mo Xie wobbled into Guan Qing Han's courtyard. She was quietly sitting under the blossoming tree. The young woman was calmly looking at the tree with a calm and content face. She had obviously heard Jun Mo Xie's footsteps, but she had remained as before; in fact, she didn't even turn around to face him.

"What's the matter?" she asked unenthusiastically.

"Nothing major. I just brought a few medications. You should try tasting them, but they're not too delicious. Ha Ha..." Jun Mo Xie gave a hollow laugh.

"Oh?" Guan Qing Han slowly turned her cold and beautiful face to look at him. "What kind of medication?"

"I've refined many kinds of medications. Their effects are pretty good too. Would you dare to try it?" Jun Mo Xie yawned these words. But, there was only one word in his mind — aphrodisiac. Though, he didn't dare say it out loud.

"What dare? You think I'm scared that you'll poison me?" Then, Guan Qing Han went beyond Jun Mo Xie's expectations and... she actually smiled. Jun Mo Xie temporarily forgot about moral integrity when he saw that stunning beauty smile... it was stunning... shocking... absolutely unexpected...

"Jun Mo Xie, I can't stand you at times, but I've come to realize that you're not the type of person who'd always use despicable means. And anyway, I'll always be your sister-in-law." She stretched her hands to receive the pills from Jun Mo Xie. Three pills; woman's quota. The Missing Yin Dan, Devil's Heart Dan, and the Ten Years Dan. She looked at Jun Mo Xie indifferently. Then, she raised her head and without any hesitation, and swallowed the medication.

Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes wide. He was about to tell her to wait till she had started to cultivate. But, she had already opened her mouth, and had taken the medication by then. This really amazed him.

A bubble of regret emerged inside Jun Mo Xie when he realized that Guan Qing Han trust him so much that she took the medication without a second thought. [I would've refined that aphrodisiac if I had known that she trusted me so much. This is a huge blunder! Bah! This must be that old Mo Xie's spirit haunting me and causing mischief. I'm so pure... how can I be that kind of a person...?]

Guan Qing Han was about to ask about the Dan and its effects when she felt a warm sensation well up in her dantian. Suddenly, her body felt warm and comfortable. It was an indescribably comfortable sensation. Then, the Xuan Qi started to move through her meridians on its own accord. It moved like a strong tide of a flooding river. Her dantian became increasingly warmer as the Xuan Qi continued to move through her meridians. In fact, it was getting converted into an exceptionally pure variant of Xuan Qi...

Jun Mo Xie's mysterious Dans promoted a person's abilities in a miraculous manner!

Guan Qing Han was shocked to discover this. She felt a little regret at doubting him. However, her cultivation was presently at the Silver Xuan realm's peak. In fact, she was about to break through to the Gold Xuan realm. But, she could feel that her breakthrough to the Gold Xuan realm was imminent since a lot of power had started to rush through her body after taking the Dans.

However, this was also a very frightening moment. And, there was no one there to guide her at such a crucial time... besides her brother-in-law...

[Why didn't that little brat explain this? How could he be so careless? I thought that it was a candy!]

However, there wasn't enough time for her to think these things. The extremely powerful and pure energy from the Dan was surging through her limbs. She was resolutely stepping into the Gold Xuan Realm. But, she suddenly started to feel ill all over. Her consciousness also became somewhat fuzzy.

Guan Qing Han's cultivation level was very low. It was merely at the Silver Xuan Realm. In fact, her cultivation level was even inferior to the Young Master Jun. Jun Wu Yi and Grandpa had been able to ingest the Ten Years Dan without any scruples since they were Sky Xuan experts. They had been able to control themselves with ease through the enhancement process. In fact, they could've even made a breakthrough without any issues if the moment had demanded it; without any issues.

This was because they had a strong foundation.

However, Guan Qing Han was on the verge of death. The difference between her cultivation, and that of the other two, was over ten levels! She had only been cultivating for ten years. And now, she was experiencing the enhancement process of ten years in one go. This was nearly the sum-total of her cultivation before she had taken the medication. Moreover, the Qi flowing inside her at this moment was much purer than ever before. On top of that, she had never been put through Jun Mo Xie's cruel training methods... so, how could she persist? Fortunately, she had also taken the Devil's Heart Dan... else, she would've burst into flames by now.

Guan Qing Han felt as if she was about to burst. Her consciousness had become fuzzy. She felt despaired; [will my life end due to such a mysterious reason?]

Her brother-in-law had changed for the better with such difficulty. He had used 'Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune', and had come up with such divine medications. Moreover, he hadn't forgotten to include her needs amidst all this. This showed how much he had improved! But, he hadn't considered that her

ability to control Xuan Qi was lacking by a fair margin. The divine medication was unexpectedly going to kill her by force.

Guan Qing Han felt somewhat ridiculous. In fact, she was somewhat reluctant to let-go. If this had happened a few months ago — she wouldn't have felt anything similar. In fact, she would've actually felt free. But, why was she reluctant to give up?

She smiled happily as she thought; [see you again.] Then, she closed her eyes. But, she quickly opened them the moment she closed them... she was in utter shock.

Guan Qing Han recalled she hadn't said, "I have come," in the face of death. Instead, she said, "See you again." [Why did I say "see you again?" Who am I reluctant to leave behind?]

Guan Qing Han realized that she didn't have time to think about this.

Then suddenly, she felt a cool palm touch the center of her back. She then felt a warm energy penetrate her body. This warm energy cleared her spiritual consciousness. It was like she had become very dizzy due to the extremity of the summer heat. But then, she had suddenly dived into a pool of cool water. She felt elated to her very bones...

Then, she felt as if pure strength had emanated from that palm, and had started to flow into her meridians. She could sense it methodically guide that frantic flow of Qi through her meridians...

The flow of Qi had been extremely frantic a moment ago. But, it became very obedient since the arrival of that warm strength. It had started to flow wherever that strength directed it to...

There was a loud noise inside Guan Qing Han's mind. And then, she became aware of the incomparable sensation of her meridians opening wider. Even her spiritual consciousness entered into a new heavenly realm.

Guan Qing Han had broken into the Gold Xuan realm with the



help of that hand at her back!

This timely help was rendered by none other than the Jun Family's Young Master — Jun Mo Xie.

Guan Qing Han had panicked; it could be said that she was inexperienced in such matters. But, Jun Mo Xie was aware that the Dans he had refined were strong; not overbearing. He had also given her the Devil's Heart Pill to assist in this enhancement. So, there was no way that she'd suffer a Devil's Bite and die. Her consciousness may have faded away for a few days, but her skills would've continued to surge ahead. But, this was a golden opportunity, and Jun Mo Xie was no gentleman. So, how could he let it pass? After all, there should be some pleasure in helping others!

He had placed his hand on her back. His hand was only separated from her skin by a mere two layers of clothing even though it was late autumn season at present. Guan Qing Han was a Silver Xuan expert. Therefore, she had a decent resistance to heat and cold. Hence, she obviously wouldn't put-on too many layers of clothing. That is why, she had felt a burst of tenderness when Jun Mo Xie had put his hand against her back. She felt so comfortable that she nearly wanted to shout and call that individual...

Ni Chang : A possible translation is 'Rainbow'.

## Chapter 304: Ballad of the ‘Real Man’

---

The Young Master Jun's head was initially filled with many muddled thoughts. Then, he remembered to lend a helping hand...

Guan Qing Han slowly woke up. She felt her body relax. The Young Lady felt like soaring high in the sky, and couldn't help but feel a sense of exultation. She had broken through to the Gold Xuan realm! This meant that she had attained considerable strength. She didn't need anyone's protection anymore. It was useless now.

Guan Qing Han suppressed that rising feeling of joy with great difficulty. She realized that the palm which was placed on her back, and had earlier transferred that warm strength to her — had stopped doing so. Yet... she could still feel that warm palm on her back.

It was a good, big and warm hand!

[Who helped me? That Jun Mo Xie doesn't have enough cultivation to help me.]

She curiously turned her head to look. Surprisingly, she found that Jun Mo Xie was sitting cross-legged behind her... with his eyes closed. His hand was extended outwards; his palm was still placed on her back...

[How is this possible?]

[It really was him!]

Suddenly, she felt a burst of dizziness. [Since when did this little brat have such a high cultivation? Is it possible that...?]

[But he's motionless... He must've expended a lot of strength to assist in increasing my power, right? No wonder he can't open his eyes. It must've been unbearably tiring.]

Just when she was thinking this — she felt the hand placed on

her back move. Then, she felt the five fingers squirm about. Suddenly, she started to feel ticklish. [Is this little brat kneading my back?!] His fingers moved again... [This, this... this... Isn't he fondling my back?]

Guan Qing Han's body stiffened as she turned her head to look. The wretched little brat's eyes were still closed. But, he had a happy expression on his face. The corners of his mouth were bent-crooked in an extremely vulgar smile. It seemed that his face was revealing the lustfulness of his soul...

[This is the same vulgar side of the Brother-in-Law. But... wasn't he only pretending to be a vile character?]

[How...]

That palm started to move again. This time... in a downward direction...

Could Guan Qing Han allow her devilish brother-in-law to take advantage of her?

"Ah!" she exclaimed. "Bang!" she instinctively slapped him. Then, she resolutely stamped her feet, and let her kick loose. Her face turned red with shame. She couldn't show her face anymore. So, she clutched her face and ran away.

The Young Lady's speed had increased drastically along with her cultivation. Her silhouette disappeared into her room. Her heartbeat sounded like loud drums. She was angry and ashamed; ashamed yet bashful. Guan Qing Han's expression was one of hatred. She stamped her feet on the ground. She couldn't prevent tears from flowing down her eyes as she sat in daze for some time. Then, she suddenly fell on her bed and covered her head; sobs escaped her lips even though she tried hard to stifle them.

Jun Mo Xie had been able to feel her soft and satin skin even though his palm was separated from it by a layer of clothing. His mind had been intoxicated by this sensation. In fact, he felt as if

his mouth had run dry. His palm seemed to have grown a mind of its own. It was seemingly moving around on its own...

[It's so smooth, ah... what is that...?]

His mind was star-struck with admiration. He was completely oblivious about his bodily actions. He felt as if he was slowly floating in the breeze. In fact, he felt as if he had become an immortal...

Then, Jun Mo Xie was startled by a sudden cry of fear. He had just opened his eyes when — "Bang!" he felt a palm slap his face. The slap had given rise to a crisp sound. He was obviously angered by this; [what's the matter?]

He was about to retort when he suddenly felt a violent sensation surge in his abdomen. He didn't get enough time to feel the pain since he was sent flying like the misty clouds. He drifted for ten meters and crashed onto a flowerbed.

A full ten meters ah! The Young Master Jun hadn't been born as big person in this reincarnation. He wasn't even close to six feet in height; nor was his figure bulky or brawny. His body was that of an average man. So was his weight. That is why one kick from a pretty girl was enough to send his body flying!

[Did she become this powerful by taking the medicine?]

[This medicine... you can't eat it indiscriminately ah...]

As fate would have it... there were many sharp thorns in that flowerbed. Several thorns pricked into the Young Master Jun's posterior. He started to hurt everywhere, and all thoughts instantly disappeared from his skulls. The tent which had previously been raised in the crotch of his pants — had dispiritedly collapsed...

He crawled out of the flowerbed in a daze. There wasn't a soul in sight. The Young Master Jun tried to recall the sequence of events. He couldn't help become frantic; [I understand that my hands

moved in an immoral manner... and my thoughts were immoral as well... but, I had only intended to help you! However, the outcome of that...]

[What can I say? Couldn't you have objected before you struck me? This is unreasonable! Although, I certainly acted immorally first, ah...] The more Young Master Jun thought about this incident — the more he realized that he was in the wrong... and that the slap and the kick were fitting punishments...

[I can't even absolve my actions in this incident! Isn't that depressing?]

Young Master Jun remained silent for some time. He had given some of the Dans to his grandfather and his third uncle — only to have them rip him apart. Jun Mo Xie then gave a dosage to Guan Qing Han, and also helped increase her cultivation. He thought that his beautiful sister-in-law would commend him for it... or would at least behave gently with him thereafter. Who would've imagined that she would instead kick his abdomen...?

It was still fortunate that she had kicked his abdomen. What if her kick had landed a bit lower? Wouldn't she have broken his eggs?

Jun Mo Xie wiped his cold sweat and fled with his tail tucked between his legs. He realized that he wouldn't have been able to go to the Tian Fa if that kick had smashed his eggs. So, he quickly concealed his crotch with his hands, and frog-jumped out of her courtyard. [My legendary reputation would've been crushed...]

The Young Master Jun issued an order. 254 strong guards had been training intensely in the Jun Family's grounds. It didn't matter if they were in 'honing their skills' training, or were in 'resistance' training, or they were soaking in the hot pool — everyone immediately put their tasks on hold. They quickly divided into two groups, and stationed themselves in an orderly manner in front of Jun Mo Xie.

Every man in the two formations appeared to be in high spirits.

"Remember when I started your training — I told you that I want two teams out of you. Those two teams would be the strongest. One would be the 'Heaven Destroyer Team', and the other would be the 'Spirit Devourer Team'. And, not only would those two teams be the strongest — they would also make the backbone of my fighting force! These two — the 'Heavens Destroyer' and 'Spirit Devourer' teams would assist me in moving through the continent unhindered. And, the members of these two teams would be selected from the best amongst you! And, those chosen men would be 'nightmare' for the rest of the world! They would be this continent's foremost warriors! They would be without equal!"

Jun Mo Xie leisurely paced in front of the assembled warriors. There was a sharp look in his eyes. His gaze swept across each and every soldier's face.

Each and every man's breathing was coarse and heavy. Every man's eyes was brimming with longing.

To become the strongest warrior! To become the nightmare of all foes! This was their greatest desire.

This is what they had craved their entire lives!

"I had also said that whether you deserve it or not... depends on you! On whether you'd qualify! I don't know any of your names up till this point! Firstly, because I'm not interested in knowing them! Secondly... because you don't deserve my recognition!" Jun Mo Xie slowly stated. His slow manner of speech had a bizarre tempo to it. It was like an overbearing power that was pressurizing the entire land. It seemed that time itself had slowed down.

"I will send you on your first mission after four days. And, those who survive it will become the members of my 'Heavens Destroyer' and 'Spirit Devourer' teams! From then on, they shall step onto the path of power, and the path of slaughter! Their very-name would make the entire continent shiver with fear!"

Jun Mo Xie stared at them. Then, he continued in a low tone, "But, this mission is different from the previous ones. I want only the strongest warriors. So, this mission will be extremely deadly. I will tell you that this mission is extremely dangerous! The mortality rate will be 90 percent. And, that is only a conservative estimate. Therefore, anyone who doesn't wish to proceed... can take a step back. My Family and I won't force anyone to go through with this. So, you can withdraw if you wish. There's no shame in thinking about your own safety."

The autumn wind whistled. Not a single man amongst the 254 moved. In fact, no one even batted an eyelid.

"This is the last opportunity to withdraw; you won't be able to look back later. It is entirely possible that ten out of every ten may die. They'll be gone forever! This is the final opportunity!" Jun Mo Xie proclaimed coldly.

Nobody moved an inch — same as before.

Jun Mo Xie nodded softly. Then, he spoke sternly, "Those who want to join — step forward."

"Boom!"

Two-hundred-and-fifty-four men took a step forward. They had exerted themselves as they had taken this step forward. Their orderly, yet powerful, step had sent the entire ground trembling.

"Very Good! Nine-out-of-ten may not survive this mission. But, you can't have any regrets now. They say that a man who pushes forward despite the troubles — is an iron-blooded man! Let me tell you something..."

Jun Mo Xie irresolutely muttered a few words. Then, he suddenly looked up with a thunderous expression in his eyes. Everyone became alert, and straightened their backs. They wanted to listen to Jun Mo Xie's words very carefully.

"A real man's journey has only one direction. Glory and splendor

in life or death... but no retreat!

"A real man's blood is made of iron. He shall never sway in the face of danger!

"A real man's tears are the most expensive. He doesn't retreat even when he faces many enemies alone!

"His bones may break. His blood may flow like a river. But, a real man stands firm — he doesn't look back!"

"This 'ballad of the real man' can only be recited by 'real men'. Those who aren't 'real men'... can't even understand it." Jun Mo Xie put his hands behind his back. "I hope that each-and-every one of my brothers becomes a 'real man'. Gentlemen, take the first step to become a real man! Accompany me as we proudly take-over the entire world!"

There was complete silence.

Everyone's expression was extremely fierce. That heroic ballad had boiled everyone's blood. It seemed that each-and-every pore in their body had erupted with impassioned strength; their eyes emitted scorching brilliance.

It was an excellent ballad!

A real man's journey has only one direction. Glory and splendor in life or death... but no retreat! A man could only move in one direction if his goal was clear. And, he'd continue to move in the same direction his entire life. Such a man could never have regrets.

A real man's blood is made of iron. He shall never sway in the face of danger! This was an inherent quality of a 'real man'.

A real man's tears are the most expensive. He doesn't retreat even when he faces many enemies alone! The Sun may set when the battlefield has been riddled with corpses and drained with blood. The allies may have left, and the 'real man' would have to confront his many-enemies despite the scars on his body. It would be a very tragic scene. But, how could a 'real man' retreat?



His bones may break. His blood may flow like a river. But, a real man stands firm — he doesn't look back! Such was a 'real man'!

The two team leaders led the two-hundred-and-fifty-four-men to pass from in front of Jun Mo Xie. They took their Dans, closed the palm of their hands, and strode away.

The two-hundred-and-fifty-four men had collected their Dans in a jiffy. Then, they neatly organized themselves in two groups without falling into disarray.

"These medicines are rare and legendary! This Young Master had to face many twist and turns, and had to spend a lot of money to refine these Dans. And now, each one of you has one ration of these medicines in your hand. These Dans will increase your Xuan Qi's ability by ten years. Gentlemen, do not fail to live up to my expectations!" Jun Mo Xie spoke this in a stern manner as he placed his hands behind his back.

Everyone was shocked. People had heard about various kinds of rare and precious medicines across the entire Xuan Xuan continent. Such as... ginseng, thousand years' mushrooms, knotweed etc... these medicines could foster an individual's progress. But, there had never been any news of medicines which could increase Xuan Qi cultivation by this much. And, this Young Master hadn't only refined these priceless Dans... but he was also handing them over to others!

Everyone was extremely touched by this.

A man lays-down his life for his close friends!

And, he does it without saying a word...

The two captains issued an order, and the two-hundred-and-fifty-four started to march about. They arranged themselves in a manner that each man was separated from his adjacent-comrade by a distance of three meters. Then, he looked upwards, and swallowed those three precious pills down. After that, they sat

down cross-legged and solemnly focused their attention on their respective Dantians to absorb the Xuan Qi from the Dans.

Jun Mo Xie stood in front of them in an outwardly-light and easy manner. However, he had concealed throwing knives in his hands as a precaution. He was in his own home at the moment, but he couldn't dare to show the slightest of negligence at this juncture.

Over two hundred men would promote their cultivation altogether. Such a thing was unprecedented!

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had taken extreme precautions.

A tower was located some distance away from the training area. Jun Wu Yi had been watching the show from the sidelines. He grinned and murmured, "I knew that this brat had kept a lot to himself; and I was right! Upgrading the two-hundred-and-fifty-four of them together... this is amazing..."

Grandpa Jun snorted, "Mo Xie should use those medicines, but he shouldn't use them indiscriminately. Dangerous situations can arise if the news of this matter were to spread out. An ordinary man doesn't need to hide behind a wall. But, these medicines are capable of causing mishaps that can doom my Jun Family to eternal damnation in an instant. Wu Yi, we must be extremely careful! It is better to bury these medicines into the ground if their source was threatened with exposure! I won't let anything happen to Mo Xie! Do you understand?"

"I understand." Jun Wu Yi gave a profound nod and said, "The lure of these medicines can bring about the Jun Family's doom. We shouldn't take risks if there's any scope of problems. It's better to miss this opportunity than to take the risk involved."

"Good!" Grandpa Jun then looked at his grandson. A look of love and affection emerged on his face as he continued, "The timing of these medications' consumption should also be precise. And, the beneficiary shouldn't know that his enhancement has taken place because of the Dans. Do you know how to go about it?"

Jun Wu Yi gave a slight nod, "My body had been crippled for ten years, but my mind hadn't gone to waste. I coincidentally developed a method to enhance my cultivation. I'll simply ask people to use the same method. That's all."

Jun Zhan Tian narrowed his gaze, "Then, you're putting yourself at risk?"

The Third Master Jun smiled in a calm and tranquil manner, "Be at ease, Father. I know what's going to happen. But, no one is likely to search for Mo Xie in regards to this matter."

"You'll have to be extra-careful!" Grandpa Jun nodded, and didn't say anything for a while. Then, his eyes shone with a cold light. After that, he spoke in a dignified manner, "I want every intel on these two-hundred-and-fifty-four! I want to know about their experiences, and their connections. I want to know about their friends, their families, and anyone else they may've come into contact with. Even neighbors... or perhaps even lovers... even the prostitu\*es they may be intimate with! You will eliminate anyone who turns up suspicious in the investigation. Even if our actions appear baseless or unjust... do you understand?"

"Yes!" Jun Zhan Tian had given the order in a resolute and firm manner. Moreover, it was spoken like a military order. Especially when he had spoken those last words, "Even our actions appear baseless or unjust," — he had decidedly ordered to kill. So, Jun Wu Yi had given a solemn reply like a subordinate would upon receiving such orders. Jun Wu Yi had only said one word in reply. But, the two people had understood that this command was tantamount to a 'military order'!

Jun Zhan Tian was aware that there would be movement the moment the news of Jun Mo Xie's medicines would surface. He was aware that it would cause a sensation, and would lead to problems. So, Grandpa Jun was merely taking precautions against any eventuality.

He was acting reckless for his grandson's safety!

Similarly, the Third Master Jun had bet everything in order to keep his nephew safe. He had even bet his own life.

The soldiers who had taken the pills were already experiencing a reaction.

A few of them were already at the Gold Xuan realm. These few men were finding it relatively easier to absorb the pure Xuan Qi. And, were able absorb it properly. But, more than 95% of the men were facing extreme pain. They had no other option since their Silver Xuan cultivation wasn't enough to withstand the effects of these Dans. The muscles and meridians over their entire body had started to become taut. Their skin had started to flicker with a silvery radiance since the Silver Xuan Xuan Qi was frantically flowing through them. These men were at the Silver Xuan realm, but their foundation wasn't strong. Therefore, they had no option but to endure the extreme pain that was being caused by this burst of pure Xuan Qi.

However, they had to support themselves through this ordeal. They would learn a lot of things if they were able to do this on their own. This would help them greatly during their future breakthroughs. Moreover, they would gain experience, and would get to hone their self-discipline.

There were a few men whose cultivation was weaker than the rest. Their faces were full of sweat. The color of their skin had started to resemble that of blood. In fact, it seemed as if their blood was aching to burst-out on to the surface. Their expressions were dark and contorted; that was enough to describe the tremendous amount of pain they were enduring.

Xuan cultivation had various stages. And, people had to break through the previous stages to move up. For example, a Silver Xuan expert would break through to Gold Xuan, and a Gold Xuan expert would break through to Jade Xuan etc. Such a breakthrough

was qualitative in nature. However, there could be a difference in the strengths of two individuals even if they were at the same level. For example, most of these soldiers were at Silver Xuan realm at the moment. But, their cultivation wasn't very profound. So, majority of these men weren't at par with Guan Qing Han.

Guan Qing Han's family wasn't that powerful, but she had been taught the 'proper' practices since childhood. Hence, she had been able to make a breakthrough after taking those three dans. In fact, she could've done it without Jun Mo Xie's assistance. She would've fainted at the most; nothing more.

However, these brawny soldiers were different from her. Their Xuan Cultivation wasn't sufficient. It was difficult for them to control this ten years' worth of cultivation since they weren't like Guan Qing Han. In fact, it was quite possible that they wouldn't see any advancement throughout their life if they failed to absorb this ten years' worth of cultivation properly.

Fortunately, they had gone through Jun Mo Xie's hellish training. And, their resolve was far superior to that of a normal person's. So, they could endure this pain even though it was unbearable. In fact, not one of them screamed... or issued a single sound from their throats. But, they gnashed their teeth, and the loud sounds of their teeth's 'clattering' resounded uninterrupted.

There wasn't even a single groan of pain — only the sound of grinding of teeth.

Grandpa Jun's voice became dignified as he watched at the scene below, "Unexpectedly, these two-fifty-four men are 'real men of blood and iron'. Their bones are good and strong. They've made this old man's pulse race!"

Jun Wu Yi smiled. His eyes were full of praise.

Eventually... the silver light around one man started to condense. Then, it faintly transformed into a light-golden one. The golden light didn't dazzle, but it was exceptionally stable. He had passed

that ordeal, and had broken through to the Gold Xuan realm.

A second man followed... then the third...

The golden lights flickered endlessly as ten men successively attained the Gold Xuan level. They were extremely pleased after having passed through that painful transition. However, these men didn't rise to their feet immediately-after. They kept their eyes shut, and continued to breathe slowly. They had started to sense the huge changes they had gone through; they had never felt so much strength in their body. They started to circulate the Qi-flow through their meridians slowly and unhurriedly so that their bodies could adapt to these changes as quickly as possible.

Meanwhile, the silver lights continued to flicker brightly. In fact, their radiance increased as time passed. The entire training ground of the Jun Family had started to bathe in this resplendent silver color since over 200 men had simultaneously shone bright with that color. These brilliant flashes of light nearly blinded the father-son duo on the tower.

"The weakest of them are Silver Xuan experts; the majority of them are Silver Xuan Peak experts! A few of them have made it to the Gold Xuan, and the strongest-four are at the peak of the Gold Xuan realm!" Grandpa Jun gasped, "If these troops are sent to the battlefield..."

"They won't be sent to the battlefield. They aren't ordinary soldiers anymore," Jun Wu Yi spoke unenthusiastically. "They will only fight for Mo Xie now. And, sending them to a battlefield would be a waste. I won't permit such a waste..."

"Mo Xie had once said that the weakest of these men would be Earth Xuan peak. I thought that he was just talking big... But now, I don't think that's impossible... Three months ago, the strongest of them was merely a level-eight expert. This is absolutely astonishing. It is against the will of the heavens!" Jun Wu Yi spoke slowly. A divine light of excitement flashed in his eyes.

"The weakest of them would be an Earth Xuan Peak expert...? Wouldn't that mean... that we would have around two hundred Sky Xuan experts...? Even the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor wouldn't be able to resist me... even if they were to combine their strengths... my god..."

Grandpa Jun had remained silent. He had been stroking his beard, and had unconsciously strengthened his grip on it when he heard this proclamation. In fact, he had accidentally pulled out a few strands of hair from his beard... and was completely unaware of it.

This was shocking!

# Chapter 305: The Undercurrents before the Battle

---

All two-hundred-and-fifty-four soldiers had a breakthrough; not a single one of them failed. Then, they got up from the ground, and quickly organized themselves in their previous formation. They were looking at Jun Mo Xie with eyes full of gratitude... and... franticness...

"Bang!"

Two-hundred-and-fifty-four people kneeled to the ground, and knocked their heads against it. The sound produced by their act of gratitude was so loud that it echoed in all directions.

"Thank you, Young Master!" over two-hundred men roared in unison.

"I will give you two days. Use the usual training to adapt to the changes in your body. I want everyone to coordinate their style with the changes in their Xuan Qi. And, on morning of the third day — you will go to the weapons arsenal and receive your weapons!"

Then, Jun Mo Xie nodded coldly and continued, "Moreover, 'this matter' is classified as 'top secret'. No one is allowed to divulge it to anyone. All of you will be implicated — without exception — if anyone leaks this information!"

"Yes! Your subordinates would rather die than divulge!"

Grandpa Jun was still atop the tower. There was a sense of anxiety in his gratified eyes, "Mo Xie's finesse is enough to make a coherent and charismatic leader. He has the prestige. And, he certainly has the required genius. But, I don't think he's fit to lead the troops."

"Why? Father, Mo Xie leads his troops by demanding exact compliance with regard to instructions. His strict discipline has



produced such great results. His leadership has transformed these troops into an elite force... So, why isn't he suitable to lead the troops?" Jun Wu Yi was puzzled.

"He has a very fierce mind!" Grandpa Jun snorted. He then sighed. It seemed as if he was looking at something which was perfect... except for one defect. "He's a suitable leader for 'special' troops, but not for regular soldiers. The words he just spoke were the only the usual threat, but pay mind to his last words, 'All of you will be implicated — without exception — if anyone leaks this information!'"

Grandpa Jun sighed again, "Mo Xie didn't hesitate as he stated his fearful doctrine; there wasn't a strand of emotion in his tone. When I heard his words... I realized that Mo Xie will stay true to his threat even if one of those men steps out of line and divulges the secret. And, he would actually implicate each one of them..."

"That doesn't mean anything, does it? If he can train this batch... he can also train another." Jun Wu Yi disagreed, "Father, you and I are well aware that discipline is important. And, things can get very harsh and cruel at times, but it's of utmost importance to maintain order. How can we be soft-hearted under such circumstances? This is the right thing to do."

"That's why you will only be a commander. But, you can't become a commander-in-chief," Jun Zhan Tian sighed, "A commander will only have a few troops under his command. And, you can deploy them as per the war's situation. These handfuls of troops can follow you to the letter since they are well-trained and understand things. So, they won't be able a problem. Your personal troops and Mo Xie's platoon are an example of that. But, these handfuls of troops only make a small portion on an actual army... There are likely to be hundreds-of-thousands of troops under a commander-in-chief's command. And, it is vital for a commander-in-chief to control the overall situation. But... if you were to act this harshly with all of them... I'm afraid you will bring

about the doom of your own army.

"Frictions and contradictions are inevitable when many platoons are stationed together since armies are full of hot-blooded men. You can have hundreds of dispute within a night of them being garrisoned together. Now, if we followed yours and Mo Xie's approach... you would have all of them beheaded." Jun Zhan Tian sighed, "A commander needs to be strict and impartial, but a commander-in-chief needs to be tolerant. Being a commander and being a commander-in-chief isn't the same thing.

"You're too unyielding, and Mo Xie is too fierce. These are your strong points... but, also your shortcomings." Jun Zhan Tian spoke in a profound manner, "Mo Xie is too ruthless, but that is sufficient to protect himself. However, you can still suffer a loss since you act so unyieldingly. That is the primary difference between the two of you."

Jun Wu Yi stood calmly. He pondered over his father's words, and remained motionless for a long while.

The harsh training had begun on the training-ground. But, the intensity of the training was ten-times higher than before.

Jun Mo Xie returned to his courtyard, and drew a long breath. He had enhanced everyone's skills. Now, the only person who was left was he-himself. He had refined those Dans, but hadn't yet tried them himself.

[I've recently reached the middle level of the Jade Xuan Realm. So, would the Dans produce good effects?]

Jun Mo Xie wasn't sure. But, he also knew that any positive effects would only tantamount to extra benefits.

Therefore, he didn't hesitate as he swallowed a 'Ten Years Dan'.

However, Jun Mo Xie didn't take the 'Devil's Heart Dan'.

The 'Devil's Heart Dan' was certainly very dependable, but this was an opportunity to practice self-discipline. Moreover, this Dan

had a very negative impact on the promotion of the spiritual realms.

Jun Mo Xie felt an abundance of Qi-flow in his dantian. He was very delighted by this. [This is really useful...]

As his mind settled down — he realized that... [I forgot something]. He initiated the 'Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune', and his meridians were flooded with powerful waves of Qi-flow.

The Imperial Edict was issued the next day. As expected, it appointed Jun Wu Yi as the commander of the army that was to leave for the Tian Fa forest. He would command an army of 20,000. The army would be deployed in the next couple of days to follow. It would depart south towards the Tian Fa forest. Every major family would provide assistance to deal with the 'Xuan Beast Uprising'.

Apart from Jun Wu Yi... the Emperor had mentioned the names of several other people from the major families on that list. Jun Mo Xie's name was impressively high on that list. A few people from the Meng Family were mentioned as well. The Murong Family was to send Murong Qian Jun and Murong Qian Li. The Dugu Family was to send three of the "Heroes and Legends". And, even the Song Family was to send some people.

However, against Jun Mo Xie's expectations... Li You Ran's name wasn't mentioned on that list. In other words, Li You Ran wouldn't be heading to the Tian Fa forest.

[How could His Majesty retain such a dangerous person in this hollow capital?] Li You Ran was ambitious, and Jun Mo Xie couldn't be convinced that the Emperor hadn't realized it. But, it was problem for Jun Mo Xie since the Emperor had decided to keep Li You Ran behind... despite knowing about his ambitions.

That list contained the name of one-or-the-other youngster from each major family. Therefore, these families were bound to send

some experts to protect their heirs. The Emperor's Imperial Edict hadn't explicitly stated this, but each powerful family would virtually end-up dispatching a major subset of their strengths.

Jun Wu Yi rushed to the Ministry of Defense to finish-up with the formalities the moment he received the Imperial Decree. The Emperor wanted the army to move within two days, but how could it be done on such a short notice? It would require at least five days' time to make the preparations.

The army hadn't moved, yet the supplies had already advanced.

Jun Zhan Tian — the Supreme Commander of the military — blew along the province like a storm to make the arrangements, and everyone was set to work. The Ministry of Public Works, Ministry of Revenue, and the Ministry Defense joined hands. They acted swiftly and everything necessary to supplement the march of the army was readied in less than one day's time.

Such efficiency could leave anyone flabbergasted.

Armies had gone to war before as well. But, who had run around to make such preparation without a trace of dawdle in their efforts? In fact, the army would set out, but the army's supplies would never be in position. The army's ration supplies would always be delayed. It was hard to draw this nuisance's comparison with anything...

However, no one refused to comply this time.

Who was Jun Wu Yi? Jun Wu Yi had retired some time ago, but he was still considered a legendary general in the Tian Xiang Empire. It had been ten years, but this iron-blooded general was still a famous legend.

And, he was coming out of retirement for this battle. So, the entire military was in celebration. His old comrades-in-arms and his subordinates were particularly excited. It didn't matter whether a particular organization was under the Dugu or the Jun

Family's military control... Jun Wu Yi got a green light from everywhere. No one dared to raise any objections... whether it was a civil division, or a military division!

The soldiers and the officers in the military had started to pray. They wanted to be a part of the army this legendary general would lead into battle. They hoped that he would point in the direction of their battalion, and select them as a part of his army.

The army hadn't started its march yet, but everyone was in high-spirits.

### Inside the Palace

"You think it's strange that I've dispatched Jun Mo Xie, but retained Li You Ran?" The Emperor wasn't playing chess this time. He was sipping tea, while his face was covered with a smile.

"Yes. Especially since Jun Mo Xie doesn't have any ambitions, while Li You Ran's careerism is pretty obvious. So, I can't understand why His Majesty would send Jun Mo Xie and retain Li You Ran." Mr. Wen sat across from him. He asked in a puzzled manner.

"Li You Ran has some weaknesses. He's easy to control. He can't do anything when he is under my eyes. And, I want to see if this person can be of any use to me. So, I've kept him behind to observe him more carefully," The Emperor smiled lightly. "As for Jun Mo Xie... he doesn't have any desires. He'll go if you ask him to go, and he'll stay if you ask him to stay. He's like a floating cloud. But, he can't be controlled. So, I'm sending him to the Xuan Beast uprising. Whether he lives, or he dies... is up to him."

"I'm still not clear. If he's like a floating cloud... then why must..." Mr. Wen frowned.

"A floating cloud is of no concern when it's alone. But, a floating cloud can wreak havoc if it has a strong support behind it." A cold light passed through His Majesty's eyes as he sighed, "Great merits

can shake the world, but great power can also attract trouble."

Mr. Wen sighed in silence.

"Has there been any activity around my second son?" the Emperor smiled rather eccentrically.

"Yes, the crossbows will arrive in the southern suburbs of the capital on the morning of the fourth day." Mr. Wen gave a sly sigh as he spoke.

"Very good; I won't have the crossbows stranded outside," The Emperor gently kept his palms on the table. His fingers were spread out. His Majesty concentrated his gaze on his fingers; as if admiring how perfect they were.

"Be at ease, Your Majesty," Mr. Wen replied. "And with that being the case... why didn't Your Majesty issue an imperial edict."

"If it is my second son's doing — I'll have no choice but to destroy him," The Emperor smiled bitterly. He looked in the distance for some time. Then, he finally muttered, "It wouldn't matter if someone were sitting in a hall, in the harem chambers, or anywhere else on this land... this activity could shake everyone. A strong undercurrent is surging in all directions. We can't afford this vibration."

Mr. Wen lowered his gaze, and remained silent.

He had never thought the Emperor would do something like this since his fatherly emotions would intervene. But, he had come to realize that he had been mistaken; gravely mistaken. He laughed at himself, [the Emperor's thought-process is far worse than I imagined...]

"Send a letter. Convey an order to the Blood Sword Hall... and whether it is the southern Zhao Family or the southern trade unions... and also my Second Son's men — no one is to be let-off. Make sure that this matter is handled cleanly."

The Emperor exhaled in a profound manner, "My second son had

no means to acquire these terrible weapons. The Blood Sword Hall took the initiative on its own. And yet, my second son hasn't suspected anything fishy... I've lost hope in my second son's intelligence."

Mr. Wen continued to remain silent.

[I wouldn't have suspected it. Rather... who could possibly suspect that you — the Emperor of the four seas — would still secretly be in control of such an assassination team in the dark?]

[In fact, I'm convinced that most people wouldn't believe this matter even if it came to light...]

Mr. Wen looked at the Emperor. A question rose in his heart, but he was too scared to bring it to his mouth. [How many trump cards does this Emperor hold in his hands?]

## Chapter 306: I Wish To Go Too

---

Naturally, if the Second Prince or Jun Mo Xie or other people came to know about these words... they would immediately understand why the Second Prince had asked the Blood Sword Hall's assassins to execute this mission. This faction's men were bound to fail one step before they reached the finish line!

The Blood Sword Hall was the most famous 'house' of assassins in the Tian Xiang Empire; perhaps the entire Xuan Xuan continent. But, the identity of the mastermind behind them... was extremely shocking!

However, if one mulled it over... it would seem normal. In fact, it would make a lot of sense.

Wouldn't it?

How could the entire upper echelon of the Tian Xiang Empire know this organization of assassins? And, how could this organization act so openly without any scruples? So much so, that they had connections with the Families in the Imperial Court... and even the later generations of the Imperial Family...?

The existence of such a group would've been fairly normal in a small country since smaller empires usually have a very weak military force. But, the Tian Xiang Empire's military-strength was tyrannical, and highly centralized. The Empire's Emperor was one of the most talented individuals of the generation. So, how could he allow such an organization of assassins to act in such an unrestrained manner inside his nation? So much so, that they would even have the courage to attempt the assassination of the Royal Princess... as if it was child's play...?

There was a lot more to this matter. Take the example of Princess Ling Meng's assassination for example — the continent's most well-known organization of assassin would likely possess an intelligence network of equal merit. And, though Ye Gu Han's



existence was admittedly a secret... but, how could an organization like the Blood Sword Hall fail to find out about Ye Gu Han's presence on her guard? However, they had only sent two Gold Xuan experts to assassinate Princess Ling Meng...

Would facing a 'Sky Xuan bodyguard' of the 'target' with two Gold Xuan experts be of any use? Did it make any sense?!

It was a pity that the Second Prince had been involved in all this. Especially that bullsh\*t line, "Your intelligence is erroneous," had already been dispatched to him. The Second Prince probably wouldn't understand the reality of this till the end of his days... that... his own father had used him to cleanse and rectify the bureaucratic structure of the Empire. In fact, he would even use this event to purge his harem.

If this was ever to come to light — the Hitman Jun would accept that he wasn't the world's most formidable player... by any means. That 'title' was undoubtedly reserved for the Tian Xiang Empire's Emperor.

The chambers of the Imperial concubines

"Little Meng, truthfully tell your mother — what's the problem? Are you ill?" a graceful and gorgeous lady asked in a courteous manner. She wore a yellow gown of her body, and a traditional crown on her head. She was the current Empress, and Princess Ling Meng's mother — Murong Xiu Xiu.

"I... it's nothing. Your daughter's health is fine. Everything is normal. I don't know why Queen-Mother would ask this," Ling Meng didn't admit anything. Ling Meng didn't know what would happen if she told her mother about the misery of Ye Gu Han's condition. So, she invariably lied.

"Normal? Child, you've never been good at lying. You always stutter when you lie." The Empress smiled gently as she looked at her daughter with affection, "Sometimes, you seem very worried these days. And sometimes, you giggle. On top of that, you usually

weep at night. Your tears have moistened your pillows. This... would you call this 'normal'?"

"Mother..." Princess Ling Meng let-loose her lovable self, "Could your daughter ever lie to you? There's nothing different with me."

"Could it be..." The Empress smiled. She lovingly poked her daughter's tiny nose, "Perhaps, you've taken a fancy to a Family's young man?"

"Mother... what are you saying?" Princess Ling Meng blurted out aloud. She became bashful, and her face reddened. But, she still hesitated inside. [Can I use this chance to tell my mother about Jun Mo Xie?] Princess Ling Meng couldn't help but blush as her beloved's thought crossed her mind.

The Empress looked at her daughter's expression. How could she not know? [My daughter's body isn't that of a small girl anymore. She had reached that age. My daughter has grown up!]

"You little girl... but I can't tell which family's young man has garnered the affections of my treasured daughter...?" The Empress looked at her daughter teasingly.

"Queen Mother..." Princess Ling Meng turned and twisted her waist. She hesitated for a moment, but eventually decided to keep her feeling to herself for the time being. The Princess was no fool. How could she not know that Jun Mo Xie's feelings may not be in compliance? She feared that he might not harbor a favorable impression about her. Therefore, she might court a rebuff if she were to declare her feelings in a rash manner.

However, the Princess's heart was in denial. [You tried to woo me for so many years, but I wasn't impressed. I didn't care no matter how much attention you gave me! And, now that this Princess has no objections... this lecherous guy is giving me attitude... humph!]

"My little girl seems shy. Don't tell if you don't want to. Your mother won't compel you. He he... Little Meng, tell your mother

about your beloved as soon as possible. You're not that young anymore. It would become a very troublesome matter if your father — the Emperor — impulsively decided to bestow you in marriage someday..." the Empress spoke as she dotingly played with her daughter's hair.

"Your daughter understands." The Princess cuddled into her mother's embrace. She suddenly recalled her Uncle Ye's years of service... and the misery of his current condition. She felt sick at heart, and wanted to cry.

"I don't know why... but, my heart seems to sense something oddly fearful for the past few days... As if something very bad has happened..." a light smile graced the Empress's face. A pensive expression covered her face as she muttered to herself, "What could it be...? What could have happened? I've been feeling a strange ache in my heart..."

Princess Ling Meng's heart tensed, but she didn't dare to speak. [I don't know Uncle Ye's situation. And, I don't know how many damned enemies he has in this Palace...]

## Jun Family

Jun Mo Xie's forehead was sweaty. He had kept quite in the face of this little girl's bared fangs.

He had remained silent because...

"I wish to go too!" Dugu Xiao Yi arrogantly declared as she held Little White in her arms.

"What are you saying, sister? Do you intend to fill the bellies of the Xuan Beasts? Do you intend to help me or the Xuan Beasts?" Jun Mo Xie flippantly rolled his eyes. [God ah! Spare me, please? This little girl has been annoying me the entire morning...]

"Humph! You might end up in the belly of those Xuan Beasts, but I'm very fierce and powerful! Even my seven brothers can't match me if I use my Knife technique properly. No one in the Gold Xuan

realm can match me! Besides, what could a couple of Xuan Beasts do to this little girl?" Dugu Xiao Yi continued in a lofty manner. "Just look at how Little White behaves... doesn't he act like a little puppy even though he's a level eight Xuan Beast? So, what do I have to fear if they are all like this? I can kill thousands of them! And hey, I can find a play-mate for Little White too!"

Little White let-out a discontent whine. [You think it's easy to find such a high-level and top-notch beast?] He raised his eyeballs to look at her. However, he was also aware of the reason behind his mistress's words. He knew that it would be unwise to make a move. So, he ignored her, and went back to sleep.

Jun Mo Xie felt helpless, "How can you make this comparison? Little White is a high-level Xuan Beast. But, he's not a grown-up, is he? No, we shouldn't even say that... we ought to say that he's an infant! So, how can you associate him with them? Have you never seen another Xuan Beast? Don't you know anything?"[1]

"What nonsense are you talking? You think I don't know stuff? And, the other Xuan Beasts? What about them? Other Xuan Beasts get dispirited the moment they see this Young Lady. They don't even dare to raise their heads!" the little girl proudly declared.

Tears streamed down Jun Mo Xie's cheeks. [Really? How could a pampered girl from a powerful family know about these dangers? You've only seen low-level Xuan Beasts who have been domesticated by others!]

"You must be joking! You always carry Little White with you. And, the Capital only has standard level Xuan Beasts. So, they get dispirited when they see Little White. Does that reasoning make any sense to you? Little White is indeed very formidable here... but he isn't worth anything in Tian Fa!" Jun Mo Xie explained earnestly.

"You think you can fool me as if I were a kid?! Little White is so ferocious! And, you still say that it's nothing? I'm going anyway!"

And, when I want to go — I will get to go!" Dugu Xiao Yi spoke in an unreasonable manner, "It will be my grandfather's seventieth birthday in two months. He had received an injury to his waist on the battlefield long ago. He can't stay in the wind for long — he catches a cold because of that injury. I've heard that a Snow-Ferret Xuan Beast's fur can prevent a person from catching a cold. So, I plan to hunt down a Snow-Ferret on this trip. I wish to give it to my grandfather on his birthday in order to show my love."

[This little girl thinks that a snow-ferret is just waiting there for her to come for it. She thinks she can just go and grab it...]

Jun Mo Xie nearly fainted. "Sister, good lady... do you think that a Snow-Ferret Xuan Beast is a domestic kitten? ...That you can just grab it? That thing is much higher in level than your iron winged panther. They are at least level eight Xuan Beasts. And not just in name only. In fact, level eight is also a conservative estimate... In other words, it can evolve. Do you understand?"

She had been gentler these days. So, Jun Mo Xie had forgotten about her domineering nature. But, it seemed that she had reverted back to her old ways. ...Someone had rightly said — it's easy to change a country, but it's hard to change one's essential nature!

"What's so difficult about it? Isn't it just a little snow-ferret? What's the big deal?" the little girl waved her hand and cried out. She didn't take Jun Mo Xie seriously. Then, her eyes changed directions as she lowered her head and implored, "Brother Mo Xie, you can spare one horse for me? Right?"

"I can't! I won't even discuss this!" Jun Mo Xie was surprisingly resolute as he denied her. [You think I don't have spare horses? Won't your annoying Dugu Family skin me if something were to happen to you? I'm no gentleman. It will be very troublesome if something happens along the journey ah.]

"Brother Mo Xie, I beseech you!" Dugu Xiao Yi caught his arm,

and looked at him in a frail and lovable manner.

"Out of the question! It's no use to tempt me!" Jun Mo Xie snorted. Then, he thought of something and added, "Tempting a Jun Man has never been of any use."

"You think you can be pleased with yourself?" Dugu Xiao Yi snorted, spat and stuck her tongue out. "Humph! I'll just go with my elder brothers if you won't take me! You think I need your charity? You think I can't go to Tian Fa if you refuse to take me along?"

"Do as you wish!" Jun Mo Xie spread his arms, "I'm fine with everything as long as I don't have to take you! If your three elder brothers are willing to take you — they've saved me! They'll have my thanks for sharing the burden!"

Notes:

1) The original text had an old Chinese proverb. "Even if you've never eaten pork, surely, you've seen a pig run?" This proverb means that "Don't you know anything?" We've gone with the literal meaning of the proverb since it was repeatedly used in the text, and would've been very difficult to interpret unless you're aware of its true meaning and variants.

# Chapter 307: The Crossbows... Have Arrived!

---

"But, I wish to go with you... Hee hee... following you will be quite amusing. You're not very restful by nature. So, the journey will be very interesting. How could it be any fun to go with my three foolish elder brothers?" Dugu Xiao Yi instantly realized that her 'trick' had been ineffective. So, she shamelessly turned to a new approach.

It was clear to Jun Mo Xie that the little girl's three brothers had flatly rejected her request to accompany them. So, she had come to annoy him. [Why else would she come to me?]

"I've told you. It's not going to happen. You're not to get involved on this trip. So, you can forget about leaving this place!" It was like Jun Mo Xie's heart was made of iron and stone. He wouldn't concede; no matter what. "You will accompany my sister-in-law at home. You can't go to a place like that. It will be hard to look after you. We're not going on an outing."

"I don't understand how she'll keep me company... Anyway, she won't be accompanying me because I'm going to Tian Fa," a cold voice spoke out. Jun Mo Xie's spine became stiff as he heard those words. He turned his head to look. [Wasn't that Guan Qing Han?]

Guan Qing Han had been feeling as if something was wrong with this matter of marching south to the forest. Not many people knew about their issues with the Xue Hun Manor. But, most of the influential families knew about it; the Imperial Palace was obviously no exception.

[And yet, they mentioned that Jun Wu Yi and Jun Mo Xie were to go ...why would they do that?]

Jun Wu Yi would have to lead the troops into battle. So, that was acceptable. But, why had Jun Mo Xie been dragged into it? This

had worried Guan Qing Han. And, what she was most worried about was... [What if the Xue Hun Manor tries to use this opportunity to create problems for Jun Wu Yi and Jun Mo Xie? It will all be because of me... What should I do? The nature of this uncle-nephew duo is bound to make things worse!]

[These two aren't that strong. So, how will they be able to deal with the Xue Hun Manor if some problems were to arise? There's bound to be an argument if either of the two sides brings up my name. And, Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi won't back down given their nature... Then, how would it end?]

[And, Jun Mo Xie is particularly fearless!]

[Is there anything he wouldn't do?]

Therefore, Guan Qing Han had decided that she must go. She had to go... even if it meant the death of her. [I'll undertake that journey by myself if you refuse to take me along!]

Everyone would return safely if everything turned out alright.

However, Guan Qing Han could always use herself as a bargaining chip if any problems were to arise. She would rather sacrifice her life for Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi's safe return. However, she couldn't allow the uncle-nephew duo to learn of her intentions. If they were to learn of her intentions... they would rather break her legs so that she wouldn't be able to go. Her third uncle wasn't very likely to take this action. But, she was well aware of her brother-in-law's nefarious nature. She knew that Jun Mo Xie was perfectly capable of confining her.

Guan Qing Han was perfectly aware of that point.

"What's happening today, ah! My sister-in-law... my very own sister-in-law has come to add to this chaos... why did you all come to see me...? Look, I can't deal with this..." Jun Mo Xie grabbed his hair. It seemed as if he had been driven mad, "Don't come to me if you wish to go to Tian Fa. I've already said no... So, go to Third



Uncle!"

"Your decision in this matter is your business. But, whether I go or not is mine!" Guan Qing Han looked unenthusiastically at Jun Mo Xie. Then, she quickly pulled Dugu Xiao Yi and left without consulting anyone. However, Dugu Xiao Yi gestured towards Jun Mo Xie with her eyes to demonstrate her protest as she left.

Her thought behind this gesture of protest was simple, [I'll be nice as long as you don't make trouble for me, and love me.]

Jun Mo Xie's mouth twisted wryly.

On the afternoon of the same day — Jun Mo Xie and his over-two-hundred imperial guards divided into groups, and disappeared from the Jun Family's residence.

Later that night...

Grandpa Jun's tall body stood sturdily in his courtyard. He said something to the ten shadowy figures that stood in front of him. Then, the ten figures dispersed and disappeared from the courtyard without a trace.

Grandpa Jun sighed and asked Old Pang, who stood beside him, "When will they reach...?"

Old Pang thought for a moment and replied, "Approximately by tomorrow evening."

"Hmm..." the Old Man frowned and spoke, "Old Pang, prepare the face-masks and dark clothes."

Old Pang's eyes beamed with happiness.

Jun Wu Yi was inside his small courtyard. The Third Master had torn a slip of paper between his hands. He chuckled and muttered, "Tomorrow evening..."

The curtains of night descended and ascended. The morning sun rose in the sky, and then set again. Soon, it was evening...

The moon was already on the rise after the sun had set. Time had

passed in a flash. Zhou Wu Ji had forgotten how many times he had raised his whip to hasten his horse. It had been two mornings since he had left his ship and had come ashore. And, it had been two full days of haste.

They had hardly stopped ever since they had left the south. They had been travelling for nine days. And, they had hastened night and day. The result was also quite obvious. They were two days ahead of schedule. Two full days!

It was easy to imagine the number of mishaps they had avoided because of these two days.

This made him a little excited. Not a single unexpected incident had occurred over the last nine days... whether it was the land route or the waterways. They had smoothly journeyed with the current. However, this was also quite hard for him to accept... things had gone 'too' smoothly.

As a result, Zhao Wu Ji's heart hadn't been able to relax. On contrary, it made him even more alert. These circumstances were highly unusual. And, he was surprised by any lack of misfortune.

Ever since he had received this job — the Zhao Family's head, Zhao Wu Ji — had tried to understand what this represented and what it meant. But to his regret... it was already too late by the time he figured it out.

This was because the manufacturing had already commenced by the time understood this matter.

[The Second Prince is up to something...!]

[However, what would a prince wish to manufacture with these things? And moreover, why would he wish it done in secret?] Zhao Wu Ji had realized that he had unwittingly stepped onto the Second Prince's pirate ship. And, now it would be too awkward to get down.

From the moment they had received this task — his family would

end-up getting tied closer to the Second Prince's war chariot with each and every kill from those crossbows. And, it would become even more difficult to get out of this situation if the blood of any other Imperial Prince was shed.

However, he had no means to resist this.

Leaving alone the fact that the manufacturing had already started... how could he have backed-out even if it hadn't?

His family had some influence. But, it was still nothing when compared to the Second Prince's strength. He feared that his family would be annihilated in half-a-day if he had declined that job; they would vanish from the face of the earth.

Great risks represented huge profits. His business could earn three-hundred times the profit from this job alone. This would make his business even more profitable. So, even if he had to stake his life on the line for this job... it was worth the risk.

Moreover, this entire matter was somewhat political in nature. So, if he could gain some foot-hold in the political structure of the country as a reward...

Zhao Wu Ji felt that he had swallowed a housefly. But, he still had a smile of appreciation on his face. [The fly tastes disgusting when it enters one's mouth. But, it's quite nutritious. After all, it contains a high amount of protein.]

The Xuan Beast Tendon crossbows were manufactured very quickly. No mistakes were made while manufacturing them. The Zhao Family's head — Zhao Wu Ji — had then relaxed a little. However, his nerves had become taught soon-after since he had realized one thing clearly; the journey to deliver these crossbows to the capital was the real test.

Therefore, he had chosen to halt the entirety of his family's business, and had gathered all the experts in their ranks to safely escort these crossbows to the Capital City. But, he still didn't feel

relieved in his heart. So, he started to look for additional manpower. He incurred a massive cost, and engaged the Vice-President of the Southern Trade Union to personally lead experts who were to escort the cargo... just to ensure complete safety.

However, the Second Prince disrupted the proceedings just when the preparations had been put in place. He had sent the troops from his elite guard to escort them. This was done to ensure absolute safety. But, this matter scared Zhou Wu Ji. It had seemed to him that the preparations he had made were quite sufficient. In fact, he felt that they would be more than enough to deal with any eventuality.

However, the Second Prince wasn't even remotely comforted. This was a very serious matter. So, it was quite possible that the cargo would find itself ambushed by an unusual and exceedingly strong force. The strength of the original escort-convoy wouldn't be sufficient to deal with the matter if this were to happen.

The true use of these crossbows had become abundantly clear at this point. His plans had failed even before their start.

Each step the horse under his crotch took... was a step closer to a bloody Imperial struggle.

Eventually, they were close to the Tian Xiang City.

"Elder brother, we've safely come so far. The Tian Xiang City lays just two-hundred kilometers ahead. Even if someone wanted to intercept us... I don't think they would be able to commit such a huge crime so close to the Capital!" A slim man walked his horse besides Zhao Wu Ji. He was smiling, and looked gratified. "It seems that we were worrying so much for no reason. I really didn't expect things to go so smoothly. It seems that the Second Master's arrangements for secrecy were genuinely outstanding!"

This slim man was Zhou Wu Ji's younger brother, Zhao Wu Tian. He was also one of the very few people in the Zhao Family who was aware of their client's identity.

"I hope so!" Zhao Wu Ji sighed as he looked at the darkening sky. He suddenly felt that the grey heavens were transforming into a giant black-hole. He felt as if this black-hole was sucking him and his family into it... and he didn't have the strength to resist such a thing.

"Only the last stretch of the road remains. Everyone is to raise their spirits, and use the entirety of their remaining energy to reach the Capital as soon as possible so that we can deliver and unload the goods. Our responsibility will be over with that, and we can finally relax then," Zhao Wu Ji breathed out. He lowered his head as he tried his best to disperse those gloomy and chaotic thoughts.

"Yes!" Zhao Wu Tian responded, and quickly slowed-down his horse. He then took out a small banner from his bosom, and quickly waved it twice in the air. The whole caravan was moving quite fast anyway. But, it suddenly started to move even faster.

There was a sudden sound of urgent hoof-beats. A tall and sturdy middle-aged man quickly caught up; he was atop a red horse. His windblown and travel-weary face had an impatient look on it. "Zhao Family's master, there's not much distance to the Capital now. So, there's no need to hurry like this, right? We brothers have been scared and jittery the entire route since we've been hasted throughout. We're exhausted. The sky is also getting darker. I don't know how hard the road will be at night; things might change under the dull light of the night sky. I suggest that we find a place to 'set-up camp' for the night. Then, we can start again tomorrow. We are anyway ahead of the agreed-schedule by two days. So there is no need to hurry since we'll have plenty of time in the morning, right?"

The man speaking was the South Trade Union's Vice-President — Meng Xiao Song.

# Chapter 308: I've Come Here to Rob!

---

He had been restraining a belly full of anger that entire journey. The man didn't even know what he had been escorting. This entire journey had been an unusual mystery to him. On top of that, they had hastened the entire journey. As a result, he and his twenty men were nearly falling apart due to exhaustion. Moreover, nothing unusual had happened since the beginning of the journey.

[Isn't this just pure and unnecessary torment?]

[The Zhao Family's men seem to be very serious. It seems like their mothers have died. And, then there are those other bastards... God knows where they've come from! Those guys have acted so arrogantly ...as if my men are just meant for odd jobs! Would the Emperor's Imperial Bodyguards have acted like that with me if they were here instead of this bunch?] Meng Xiao Song had been left feeling very gloomy because of all these factors.

They had hurried the entire journey. Their buttocks had been segmented after riding their horses for the entire day. So, they had all sighed with relief when night fell. They had just started to think that they could finally rest... that they would look for a decent tavern and enjoy a good wine. They were in the mood to find a young woman to have a good time with. But, they had unexpectedly received a command to accelerate their pace further.

[This is against the will of the heavens! Isn't this completely unreasonable? ]

[Every mission I take becomes a scenic tour. So, why are you giving us such a hard time? Do you think that I would've personally come on this trip if it weren't for your promise to pay an insanely-high price of fifty thousand silver taels? However, I've given you the respect of a man. So, don't think that you can work me like a donkey!]

That is why Meng Xiao Song — the Vice-President of the

Southern Trading Union — couldn't bear it anymore. So, he asked in a rude and loud voice.

"It's of great importance! We have no choice but to be vigilant! Vice-President Meng is extremely magnanimous, but still I ask him to forgive us for this," Zhao Wu Ji forced a smile and cupped his hands.

"Bullsh\*t! 'Of great importance, of great importance;' I must've heard this line 800 times over the course of this journey! I'm sick of the trouble you've been giving me! Zhao Wu Ji, I advise that you give us some respect. You're paying us a lot of money to protect your convoy on this trip. But, we are not the Zhao Family's hired errand boys. You must understand this point very clearly. Don't think that we're dim-witted pigs!"

Meng Xiao Song was anxious. He had heard that line, "great importance!" so many times over the course of the journey that it had caused calluses in his ears. So, he couldn't help but explode when he heard it again.

Zhou Wu Ji forced a smile. He was about to give an explanation because it wouldn't do to have his own side stuck in internal strife. But, four men suddenly arrived riding on their horses. The faces of the four horsemen were cold as they came over. Their eyes were open wide as they stared at Meng Xiao Song and spoke coldly, "What's going on? What are you arguing for? You brat, why are you so dissatisfied... did your mother die or something?"

The four horsemen were from the Devine Storm Guard. They had also made a difficult journey. So, they too harbored a lot of complaints in their hearts. However, they didn't like it when they saw Meng Xiao Song take the lead and voice his discontent. [We haven't complained one bit. So, what are you worth?]

Meng Xiao Song could clearly feel an intense murderous intention emanate from those four horsemen. His heart suddenly flew into a rage. [These handfuls of trivial Gold Xuan soldiers dare

to threaten an Earth Xuan expert like me? In fact, they're scolding me!? This is against the heaven's law! How can it ever be reasonable?]

"Why? You have something to say in this matter?" Meng Xiao Song looked at them coldly, and put his hand on the hilt of his sword.

However, Meng Xiao Song instantly regretted doing that because ten other warriors suddenly crowded around him. Their swords made 'ringing' noises as they shouted and unsheathed them; their blades glittered with a cold light. Then, those warriors suddenly charged towards them without saying another word, and slashed down mercilessly with their swords.

"Insane! You're insane!"

They were many in number, but they were only at the Gold Xuan realm. So, they shouldn't have been much of a problem for someone like Meng Xiao Song who was at Earth Xuan realm. However, action of the Devine Storm Gaurd had been completely unexpected since they were all companions for the duration of this trip. ...Meng Xiao Song's face had made it obvious that he wasn't exactly happy, but he hadn't done anything as of yet. But, those men had suddenly started to attack without saying anything... or giving any reasons. The other party wasn't even ready...

"Stop! Everyone stop! We are all on the same side!" Zhao Wu Ji had started to sweat profusely. But, he rushed over to mediate.

"Slam! Slam!" they had finally withstood the first round of the siege. But just then, another horseman came over with the intention to attack them; those men weren't very strong, but their disposition when mounting an attack was that of 'one soldier filling the gap left by a toppled comrade'. They wouldn't give-up unless they had defeated the enemy.

Zhao Wu Ji was extremely anxious. He was barely able to speak, "Everyone! Everyone, we're on the same side. We're all going to



the capital for a major event. So, why are you attacking friendlies?"

After several efforts to mediate... both sides called for a halt.

The Second Prince's Imperial Bodyguard was accustomed to oppressing people. So, how could they tolerate Meng Xiao Song? [So what if your cultivation is at Earth Xuan Realm? Many Earth Xuan exerts have died by our brothers' hands. How could you be any different?]

[We see that you're Earth Xuan, and we are merely Gold Xuans. But, us brothers are the Imperial Family's sworn bodyguards. We're the government, and you're the commoner! We'd get it if you were a Sky Xuan or higher. But, how can you dare to display such a temperament when you're not? We'll brand you a traitor you idiot!]

The Imperial Bodyguards maliciously looked at Meng Xiao Song's fleshy butt. [We've heard that many serious felons are into buggery...]

Meng Xiao Song had flared up in the beginning. But, he had calmed down after Zhao Wu Ji had whispered a few words into his ears.

"These men are from the Imperial Bodyguard," these softly spoken words had immediately dispelled Meng Xiao Song's anger. In fact, they had terrified him.

People hadn't fought with government officials since the ancient times.

This was the eternal and steadfast norm since time-immemorial.

An Imperial Bodyguard could kill a local official without any justification, and no one would say a word. So, what value did a person from the southern district hold? And, that too someone with a business house in the southern districts?

[No wonder Zhao Wu Ji was acting like an obedient grandson! This assignment is tantamount to royal service. Could we dredge-

up a semi-official position after this assignment is over?]

Meng Xiao Song started to look at those Imperial Bodyguards in a flattering manner as this thought crossed his mind.

Then, the convoy resumed its journey. The mood had become quite harmonious because of that little tiff.

There was a tall mountain up ahead. It was called the 'Tian Xiang Iron Wall'. It was like a natural rampart that protected the Capital.

One could vaguely see the Tian Xiang City after they had climbed the top of that mountain.

The mission could be considered as ninety-nine percent complete after they had reached the mountain.

They could finally sigh with relief.

Zhao Wu Ji raised his palm, and ordered a short rest at the foot of the mountain. Those on foot unloaded their pots and pans, and started to prepare a meal. Everyone was to eat till they were satisfied, and then continue onwards with full speed to cover the remaining distance. The sooner they were inside the city walls... the happier they would be. Those 'brothers' were happily laughing together.

The smoke rose from the iron pots and disseminated the smell of rice. A barbeque was supported on iron frames. Its smell drifted in the air. Everyone swallowed their saliva with the greatest of greed in their eyes. Their spirits had been repressed the entire journey, and their bodies were extremely tired. It had been an unbearable trip...

However, they could finally relax and gorge themselves.

"Serve the meal!" Zhao Wu Tian shouted happily. He picked up a large iron bowl and advanced.

"He he... serve the meal? You think you'll get to have a meal? ... That you'll gorge yourselves? You devils! The time is very limited! Go to hell, and eat a meal there!" a measured voice sneered. It

seemed like an extremely cold wind from hell had started to 'whistle-about'. It chilled everyone to the bone!

"Who is it? Come out!" Everyone nervously sprang up, and unsheathed their swords in unison.

"We're here to rob you!" a loud and excited roar emanated as a blue light flashed. There was huge blast without any prior warning. The cooking pots on the ground exploded, and the cooked rice was scattered by the explosions. The iron fragments from the cooking pots flew everywhere. Then, the endless pained and miserable screams of several people were heard. The fact was that... many people had been unlucky-enough to die when fragments from the iron pots hit their bodies.

"A Sky Xuan expert?!" everyone exclaimed in alarm; without exception... whether it was the Earth Xuan Meng Xiao Song... or the previously arrogant Imperial Bodyguards.

A figure covered in blue light rushed out like a rocket. "SLAM! BANG!" several warriors in were sent flying. They sailed through the air like clouds in the sky. A masked and black-clothed individual stood in the middle of the area. He extended a hand, and grabbed Zhao Wu Tian by the neck. Then, he raised Zhao Wu Tian's body off the ground. His actions looked so effortless that it felt as if someone had grabbed a chicken by its neck. Zhao Wu Tian's face turned red and purple since he was being choked, while his arms and legs struggled helplessly in the air.

"Tell me! Where's that batch of Xuan Beast crossbows kept?" The blue light flickered around the masked black clad man as he tightened his grasp. A cold tyrannical light flashed in his eyes.

"Kill him!" a shout arose from all sides as thirty-to-forty people brandished their swords and dashed towards the black clad man without caring for Zhao Wu Tian's precarious situation. Meanwhile, Zhao Wu Ji shouted with a sense of urgency in his tone, "Careful... my younger brother...!"

Then, another excited roar emanated from the pitch-black mountain woods. This roar literally shook the ground. A second figure — his face hidden behind a mask, and body dressed in black clothes — suddenly rushed out. He too was covered in a blue light. He wielded his sword in left hand, and warned of the impending slaughter with his right.

The first black-clothed and masked man looked at Zhao Wu Tian and spoke in a cold tone; Zhao Wu Tian was struggling helplessly in his clutches. The masked individual's voice didn't have the slightest trace of emotion as he asked, "It'll be extremely bad for you if you don't speak. And, don't tell me it's inside the carriage. I won't be fooled by such a childish lie. You'll only meet one end if you dare lie to me — Death!"

"In... in..." Zhao Wu Tian's legs flailed in disarray, and his eyes belied his fear. A yellow ray of light flashed through him at that moment. He screamed and twitched for a moment. Then, he went limp.

"Bastard!" the black-clothed man cursed in rage and pounced. The nearly 500 men in the caravan were thrown into complete disarray.

Zhao Wu Ji let out a mournful and miserable scream in the midst of all that chaos, "Little brother!" He was suddenly filled with the desire to pounce at the warriors from the Imperial Guard, "You killed my younger brother!"

The warrior who was faced with Zhao Wu Ji's accusations... was actually the head of the Second Prince's Devine Storm Guard — Zhang Cun Xiao. He became even more ferocious when he saw the Zhao man becoming angry. His face became red, and he sternly shouted, "Zhao Wu Ji, you dare to go against the Second Master!? Your younger brother craved life and feared death. He would've divulged the secret if I had taken action any later! My decision to kill him was the proper thing to do. It was a natural course of action! A catastrophe would've befallen everyone if he had been

allowed to reveal the secret! And, every member of your Zhao Family would've been beheaded because of it, you fool!"

Zhao Wu Ji trembled all over. Then, he came to complete halt. He had nowhere to vent his grief and indignation. So, he suddenly let out a violent roar. He then turned towards the first masked-and-black-clothed man, and dashed towards him.

# Chapter 309: I Will Only Observe; I Won't Even Speak

---

Someone shouted from midair, "Great Senior, we might as well kill everyone and then look for those crossbows. These people were escorting those crossbows. So, the crossbows couldn't have flown to the sky, isn't it?"

A figure covered in blue light shot out. The glittering blue light of his sword illuminated the surrounding radius of three meters. That person's appearance gave rise to wretched howls. This individual slashed at the crowd and opened a bloody path for himself at the cost of an individual who was sent spinning. He then killed his way into the middle of the battlefield.

Zhang Cun Xiao shouted loudly, "Everyone, encircle them! Cooperate and form an iron barrel to kill them! Resist the enemy!" Everyone responded and rushed forward. The roar to kill emanated from all directions as the Imperial Guard drew close to the center. They weren't a match for these three Sky Xuan experts, but they gradually managed to stabilize their position and disposition.

A faint sigh emanated from the top of a tall tree. However, no one could be seen on it.

The Young Master Jun had been hiding on that tree.

Jun Mo Xie was endlessly shaking his head as he watched at the battle. Those three individuals had been killing everyone without any reason. This had left him speechless. [They are such unprofessional robbers! I don't know what nonsense that Great Master Lei Wu Bei has taught these guys!]

Jun Mo Xie had obviously realized that those three black-clad individuals were the three remaining disciples of Lei Wu Bei's.

After all, he was 'all too familiar' with them.

[These three have a higher chance of messing-up than succeeding! What a waste, ah!]

[A robber has to arrive in silence and attack at once. But, you guys unexpectedly found it important to say a few words before you attacked...!]

This had left Jun Mo Xie speechless.

[This is all nonsense!]

[There was no hope for your robbery plans, ah. But, you've disturbed this Young Master's perfectly crafted plan as well! So much money spent! So much physical effort expended!] Luckily, Lei Jian Hong didn't say, "This Mountain is mine, and I have planted this tree. So, you'll have to pay a toll-price if you want to cross," Or something similar. Otherwise, that would've annoyed Hit-man Jun beyond reasonable limits, and he would've fallen head first down the tree.

Jun Mo Xie had started ahead of time, and had led his personal guard to that place a day-before. They had dug-up the pit falls, and had concealed their presence. In fact, Jun Mo Xie had even distributed a pill to each one of his men; this pill would assist to suppress their aura. Over two hundred men had systematically arranged themselves in hiding in the woods nearby. Naturally, they had already dug underground caverns, and were now hiding inside them. They would start like thunder the moment that caravan would enter their encirclement. They would've seized the items, and quickly fled.

[These three people attacked the caravan before it fell into my encirclement!]

[These fuc\*ers have left me speechless!]

Jun Mo Xie quickly spread the news amongst his men. He told them to be calm and motionless. They would first see the result of that battle. He analyzed the situation... [Those three are obviously

quite powerful. It won't be easy to succeed against them, ah. Moreover, this has turned into a dog-eat-dog type of battle. I'll have to come up with a new plan.]

Just when Jun Mo Xie was thinking this... Lei Jian Hong rushed forward and issued a low whistle. Suddenly, the loud rumbling sound of orderly footsteps echoed. A huge group of black-clothed and masked men rushed over and joined the battle at once. The deadlock between the two sides was broken in an instant.

The Devine Storm Guard's leader — Zhang Cun Xiao — was hit on the chest by a palm. He sprouted blood from his mouth as he was thrown back. However, he extended one hand behind his back, and pulled out a fire rocket from the back of his belt. Then, he shot it skywards. Suddenly, a 'bang' sound was heard. The night-sky was lit up by the firework; a vivid image of a pair of blood-red swords had taken shape above.

"It seems that the Blood Sword Hall had also hidden themselves in this area. Now, let's wait and see which side is stronger, and which is weak... in any case, I'll just sit here and watch the two tigers fight. I'll let them fight till they are spent, and then I'll reap the benefits." Jun Mo Xie was crouched atop a tree-branch like he was seated on a horse. The branch moved up and down because of the wind and the movement's rhythm was extremely... weird. If he was to show himself, and someone was to see him... they'd believe that he was doing something secret and private with the tree...

The Young Master Jun supported his chin in his hand. He calmly waited — engrossed. [This is so lively! Blood Sword Hall, Lei Wu Bei's disciples and Li You Ran's secret experts... It's better if they all suffer serious losses in this battle. In fact, it would be best if they all die!] He wanted this to happen, but he didn't have very high hopes for the same.

[Anyway... I'll just observe; I won't even speak]

It was such a pity that the resulting outcome had been contrary



to everyone's expectations. The signal for the Blood Sword Hall had been issued a while back. But, the experts of the Blood Sword Hall hadn't come to their aid; not even a single shadow had arrived.

The lonely mountain was mostly quite; only the murderous yells could be heard. The residual light from the bonfires was lighting-up the deathly pale complexion on the faces of Zhao Wu Ji's men.

"I genuinely had more support, but you were only bluffing!" Lei Jian Hong sneered as he taunted. "This is awfully amusing! This 'bluff' trick may work on others, but it won't work on me. You couldn't play me... but, you managed to play with your own chances! It looks like you're impatient to leave this life. I shall certainly fulfill your wishes!"

Zhao Wu Ji was rolling around like a lazy donkey. He cut a sorry figure as he narrowly avoided a blade that had slashed-down on him. His loud weeping voice rang out, "Commander! This... this... our reinforcements... didn't you say that our reinforcements would be following after us? Why? ...Why? ...Why? ..."

He had wanted to say, "Why hasn't there been any activity from them?" However, three blades came 'whistling' down to chop him while as he was speaking. That interrupted his speech three times. And, it ended-up sounding like he was stuttering.

"How would I now? You think I'm not worried?" Zhang Cun Xiao cursed in rage. "Worry about your little life first!"

The Li Family's elite warriors — led by the three Sky Xuan experts — had gained an overwhelming advantage by now. They had pressed their enemies hard; step by step. And, Zhao Wu Ji's men had been compressed into an extremely small and circular formation. A little over a hundred men had survived on Zhao Wu Ji's side. They were holding a defensive line with great difficulty. They were doing their utmost to resist their enemy's dangerous attacks as they crowded into that circle. Not a single man from

their side was left alive outside their circle!

Meng Xiao Song, Xiao Wu Ji and Zhang Cun Xiao — the three of these leaders were at the center of the defensive circle. Their faces were deathly pale.

The time-elapsed since the signal had been dispatched... had passed the time it takes for an incense stick to burn down. Yet, there was no trace of the reinforcements from the Blood Sword Hall.

Meng Xiao Song couldn't help but curse. His voice had already started to resemble weeping, "What's this? How can someone attack the Imperial Guards so brazenly this close to the Capital? I tell this senior... I have a family to take care of. I've followed you this time, but it hasn't been easy at all. Now, why don't you hurry up and think of a way out? You're the boss in the Capital's region... so, why don't you take note and apprehend these people later...?"

Meng Xiao Song's cultivation was quite high. He was at the middle level of the Earth Xuan realm. He was the strongest expert in Zhao Wu Ji's party. However, he had been living like a prince for many years. He had lost the fierce determination for victory and the unshakable murderous aura he had once possessed a long time ago. He had also come to treasure his family's life more than ever before. So much so, that he would measure the safety of his life above an opportunity to make money. He couldn't help whining about it since their situation had gotten desperate. But, it was too late for regrets.

[I could've been drinking tea in a safe environment at home? Perhaps I would be walking a dog, or bullying the common folk, or seizing a girl... wouldn't that have been fun? Instead, I've been cheated in the name of those fifty-thousand silver taels. I haven't even taken possession of the money! And yet, my life is coming to an abrupt end here...]

Zhang Cun Xiao couldn't help but become enraged, "You're

shouting trivial stuff in this chaos? The hearts of my men are already in confusion. And yet, you yell your nonsense? You're making them more confused, and you're scattering our fighting spirit! I'm telling you... shut up! If you make any more noise — I promise — I'll cut you down with my own blade!"

Meng Xiao Song couldn't help but get angry. He used his blade to protect his body as he shouted in indignation, "What nonsensical argument is that? You're a noble Imperial Guard who serves the Emperor! You're intermediary officials! We're just common folk with little power. We were merely assisting you in delivering these things. You've put our lives in danger, and you're still giving me this much attitude!? And now, we can't even utter a word?"

Meng Xiao Song stopped speaking. Then, he shouted... even before Zhang Cun Xiao had an opportunity to reply, "Help! Save us!" His Xuan Qi cultivation was only second to the three Sky Xuan experts in this setting. Yet, he had been retreating since the start of the battle. He hadn't received even a single injury, but his loud voice travelled in all directions and spread far.

Jun Mo Xie nearly tumbled down the branch he was sitting on. [Uncle, no matter what you say... you're still an Earth Xuan expert. You can't be considered as one of the top people in this world, but you're accorded the prestige of a high-level individual! So, how can you have such greed for life?]

The masked and black-clothed Lei Jian Hong couldn't help but stagger at this either. He then laughed and called-out in a sinister manner, "Shout! Shout! Shout as loudly as you can! It's no use even if you damage your throat shouting! No one will come to save you!"

Jun Mo Xie trembled all over. He remained silent and inquired of the heavens... he had a strong urge to faint; [heavens let me die! How could you allow me to hear these classic words at such a crucial moment?!]

Meng Xiao Song had by-and-large shouted to save his life since he

was very greedy for it. However, Lei Jian Hong's words had been quite famous in his previous world.

Jun Mo Xie was in a state of trance. He could almost visualize a sinister man with a vulgar expression... facing a young girl in an empty alley. The man appeared quite pleased with himself as he shouted, "It's no use even if you damage your throat shouting..."

He absentmindedly thought that the scene was contrived a bit melodramatically. But, it still couldn't compare to the scene before his eyes. Moreover, there was a man in this world who had spoken those very words!

A strange sound came from Jun Mo Xie's throat. It was the sound of him choking on his saliva; as if he was on the verge of death. [I have to vomit. This is too disgusting!]

The situation was still as one-sided as before.

Zhao Wu Ji's men were mostly dead. Most of the men Meng Xiao Song had brought from the Southern Trade Union had turned to corpses. Their blood had proverbially splashed across the horizon. He had no choice but to admit that the two hundred members of the Devine Storm Guard — sent by the Second Prince — were the strongest. Nearly hundred-and-fifty men of the Devine Storm Guard were still alive.

The strength of the men from the Devine Storm Guard couldn't be considered to be very high in their own individual merit. In fact, they were probably slightly weaker than the members of the trade union and the Zhao Family. However, they had a huge advantage in terms of battle experience. And, they were accustomed to fighting in formations. Therefore, their disposition was stable even though they had fallen into a disadvantageous position. Moreover, they were especially good at fighting in close encirclements. Their team-strength was so powerful that they held a considerable advantage even in such a pitch black night where these two forces were facing off.

As for the Zhao men, and those from the trade union — their individual fighting strength was stronger than the men of the Devine Storm Guard. However, they were accustomed to fighting alone, and had no experience when it came to cooperating with others. So, they had relied on their own strength, and had proceeded to kill even though they were faced with such a large-scale and chaotic warfare. As a result of that... they were the first ones to die. They were stronger in comparison when it came to individualistic strength, but their team-spirit was lacking in front of the ‘experts.’

Lei Jian Hong and his fellow disciples attacked from three sides. It was clear that they were getting impatient. After all, this location was very close to the capital. The consequences could be huge if the news of this event were to spread.

## Chapter 310: We've Lost Another One!

---

Lei Jian Hong's sword suddenly turned into a blue tornado in the midst of that battle's confusion. There were rapid explosions as he resolutely smashed the defensive circle that had been made by the members of the Devine Storm Guard.

Loud explosions echoed as over ten members of the Devine Storm Guard bore the brunt of the attacks. That exceptionally ferocious attack made them spit blood as they went flying upside-down. Lei Jian Hong didn't neglect this chance. The blue light that had covered his body wrapped around his long sword as he slashed at the men in the circle. The seven or eight people who were in the sword's range were cut into two.

Lei Jian Hong had intended to open-up a gap in their defense using the entire might of his strength. However, the strength of his previous attack had crumbled, but the new attack hadn't yet replaced it yet. This was a crucial moment. And, Zhan Cun Xiao, along with the other members of the Devine Storm Guard, quickly rushed over to fill the gap. And then, thirty swords fell on Lei Jian Hong with the intention to behead him. Lei Jian Hong's was able to muster his Qi in the given time-frame. So, he fell into a defensive position as he parried continuous blows from around a dozen swords. However, he was a Sky Xuan Peak expert at the end of the day. So, he was able to withstand the numerous enemies in a stable manner. He then mustered his powerful Xuan Qi as he defended against many sword attacks, and gave out a loud roar. His tyrannical sword power had been replenished by now; around a dozen men sustained serious injuries and fell to the ground.

Lei Jian Hong had gained a good foothold by breaking through that defense. However, he had exerted a lot of effort to resist those multiple counter-attacks. And then, he had roused his powerful Xuan Qi to use that murderous maneuver. This had somewhat injured his meridians. Moreover, he had received strong attacks

from over ten enemies' swords — twice at that. His high Xuan Qi cultivation had made his skin as hard as iron. Therefore, he didn't receive any wounds on his body, but his clothes weren't able to escape their fate. His clothing had been slashed to strips. His clothes now looked like those of a beggar. Lei Jian Hong then quickly turned around, and retreated away.

Lei Jian Hong merely needed a little time to recuperate. All he had to do... was to harmonize his breathing for a moment. And then, he'd be able to reinstate himself to his original state.

However, the outcome of Lei Jian Hong's powerful attack had been very shocking. He had thoroughly opened a gap in their defenses on his side. That was when the Li Family's elite warriors shouted in unison, and rushed-in like a powerful sea-tide. The other two Sky Xuan experts employed the same tactic in the other two directions. They made a gap... and when that gap in the Devine Storm Guard's defenses was exposed... the defending troops were thrown into disarray.

Lei Jain Hong and his two companions had initially conserved their strength to deal with the Blood Sword Hall's experts as-and-when they'd show-up. However, those people didn't show up. They presumed that the enemy never had any reinforcements. Therefore, the three Sky Xuan experts became relaxed, and embraced a blitzkrieg-ish attitude. And then, they displayed their true strength. They didn't spare any expenses when it came to consumption of their Xuan Qi, and pounced at that flock of sheep like tigers. They then commenced the slaughter.

"Stop... don't kill me! I'm the Southern Trade Union's Vice-President! I... I... I surrender!" Someone's mournful shout pierced the blue dome of the heavens. It was Meng Xiao Song.

His side was being defeated. So, he couldn't repress that feeling of abject fear in his heart; nor could he repress his thirst for life. Therefore, he put forth his surrender.

Zhou Jian Ming — Lei Wu Bei's second disciple — was facing him. He was thoughtlessly about to chop down with his sword when he unexpectedly came-up against this person who wasn't really very weak in terms of strength. However, how could he bear to fight an opponent who just went down on his knees? And whose face was covered with tears and snot? "Let me go... I... please great hero... have pity on me. I have a hundred year old mother back home. I have hungry and crying children..."

Meng Xiao Song cried as he continued to whimper, "Great hero... boo hoo... I don't want to die!"

Zhou Jian Ming stopped and stared blankly.

He could never have imagined that there would be someone in this world who'd be so greedy for life, and so afraid of death. [This shameless person is kneeling down when the two forces are clashing. Unexpectedly, he's the Southern Trade Union's Vice-President... Isn't this humiliating for him? He's indeed without any sense of shame; he's extremely shameless! His shamelessness knows no limits...]

"Bullsh\*t! Come crawling to the Master you coward! Tell me where the Xuan Beast Crossbows are kept, and I'll let you go. In fact, I'll make a way for you to escape!" Zhou Jian Ming yelled in anger.

"It's... it's... those crossbows..." Meng Xiao Song tried his best to become beady eyed. [Wouldn't I want to tell you if I knew? Do you think I know where they've hoarded those crossbows? Do you think I consider them to be more important than my life? I really don't know ah!]

"Hurry up! Damn it! What are you turning all 'beady eyed' for, you coward?! Do you want to die? Nod if you're that unhappy with life!" Zhou Jian Ming yelled loudly.

"Great hero... spare me! I... I'm useless... I don't know where those crossbows are kept!" Meng Xiao Song was extremely scared.



He suddenly kowtowed with a "Slam!" — that was actually the sound of him touching the ground!

"I'm going to fu\*k your mother! Your surrender isn't worth a fart! It's no good; you don't have the tiniest bit of usefulness for me! Fu\*k you, you coward!" Zhou Jian Ming cried loudly. His eyes widened in a glare. He then raised his foot and gave a tight kick "Bang!" to Meng Xiao Song's abdomen. His kick sent that man over three meters away, but he was left feeling gloomy.

[This coward didn't know anything, and yet he came to surrender... really?!]

The airborne Meng Xiao Song was still shouting "Spare... my life..." He hadn't finished his sentence when his voice suddenly stopped. A blood red sword had metamorphosed in the sky. It had easily cut the airborne man's body into two. Then, it picked-up speed instead of slowing down, and shot straight towards Zhou Jian Ming.

Meng Xiao Song's body was cut into two, and sprayed a rain of blood everywhere. Then, a blood-red figure emerged from that rain of blood like a devil.

This figure had penetrated straight through Meng Xiao Song's body.

A ray of light flashed forward like lightning, and chopped the leg which Zhou Jian Ming had raised to kick Meng Xiao Song's body. Zhou Jian Ming hadn't retracted his foot in time. The light cut the flesh as easily as knife cuts butter.

[This attacker has grasped this moment of opportunity very accurately!] Jun Mo Xie was still seated on top of the tree's branch. And, he was 'all praise' for the attacker after witnessing that attack. Considering that strike alone — Jun Mo Xie wasn't sure that he could've done it better if he had decided to do it. This stealth attack had been executed perfectly. In fact, the level of perfection had reached amazing heights.

This attacker had hid himself on the sidelines. He had picked the moment when Meng Xiao Song had surrendered and Zhou Jian Ming had let loose a kick on the former in his act of hostility. And, at that subtle moment... Zhou Jian Ming, Meng Xiao Song and the attacker were positioned in a straight line from a certain altitude. Therefore, he had been concealed from Zhou Jian Ming's line of sight by Meng Xiao Song's body for a brief moment.

It was as if a thin leaf had covered the eyes of a person, and that person had been momentarily left incapable of seeing the whole forest.

This was exactly the case of the so-called 'leaf that had covered the eye'.

And, that subtle point had been extremely vital. That 'bloody garment' assassin suddenly moved into action. He had gone along the straight line, and had penetrated Meng Xiao Song's body. He had then moved straight towards Zhou Jian Ming. The latter was very gloomy and indignant at that point of time. So, his vigilance had been at its lowest.

The sword came-off smoothly.

The assassin's Xuan Qi was indicative that he had reached the Sky Xuan realm, but his true strength was at most at par with that of Zhou Jian Ming's. In fact, he could even be considered a bit weaker than Zhou Jian Ming. Therefore, the best result would've been a draw if the two sides had engaged in a full-frontal face-off. In fact, the assassin would've at most caused insignificant and minor injuries even if he had chosen to attack stealthily. However, he had ingeniously chosen this perfect moment, and had managed to chop-off Zhou Jian Ming's leg!

"Argh!" Zhou Jian Ming screamed with extreme pain as soon as he saw his right leg being cleanly cut-off. A fountain of blood gushed out. His eyes nearly popped-out of their sockets. He raised his head in pain. Though, the assassin hadn't relaxed at that

moment. He had chopped-off the right leg of his opponent, and had taken the advantage of the moment to completely cut-off the right leg from the very center... his sword had moved like a hot knife through butter.

Zhou Jian Ming's howl sounded very miserable. In fact, it didn't even sound like a man's scream. He anxiously tried to move backwards, but he had forgotten that he had just lost a leg. So, he fell down face-up instead of leaping backwards. His assailant's elbows lit-up like blue sledgehammers as they resolutely bludgeoned his chest. Moreover, there were continual "Crack!" sounds from the breaking of the bones; Zhou Jian Ming's ribcage had been broken.

The screams coming out of Zhou Jian Ming's mouth were similar to that of an injured animal that was nearing its death. His mouth spurted blood along with the damaged internal organs' tissues. The mask on his face had disappeared long ago. The expert's rough facial features had twisted like that of a young dragon's. His blue veins twisted as they butted-out of his skin.

A grim light flashed in the killer's eyes. He still didn't let-off on his attack. His hands clutched his opponent's knees. His left leg fell as he raised his right one to kick. He used this style to hit Zhou Jian Ming's lower crotch in a continual manner. Meanwhile, the assailant's elbows were frantically striking Zhou Jian Ming's chest, while his hands dazzled with blue lights as they ferociously hit both of his opponent's temples.

"Bang!" Zhou Jian Ming's seven orifices turned into fountains.

...fountains of blood.

The attacker's legs incessantly moved up and down as he continued this frantic attack on his victim's body from different directions. He had carried Zhou Jian Ming's body several meters in a wink of an eye, and the latter had been forced to sustain those frantic and continuous strikes all the while. Zhou Jian Ming's tall

and burly body had been transformed into a lump of soft meat by the time this onslaught came to an end. He had become a mass of pulpy flesh. His entire body had withered down. Not a single whimper could be heard from his mouth.

The bones in his body had been turned into fine powder.

In fact, some of the broken bones had flown out of his body under the powerful impact of this unceasing and frenetic onslaught.

"Second brother!"

"Second senior!"

Two grief-stricken and lung-rendering shouts echoed. Lei Jian Hong and his junior sister-disciple Fang Piao Hong had flipped-out. They abandoned their respective fights and came over. However, it was too late. Zhou Jian Ming's body had been turned into minced meat. Not a single breath had been left in his body. He was undoubtedly dead.

"Are you from the Blood Sword Hall? Who are you?!" Lei Jian Hong's eyes reddened as he resolutely scowled at that blood-red figure.

"Senior Lei's eyesight is exceptional! This insignificant soldier is blessed to finally meet these two famed Sky Xuan experts!" The red clothed man smiled as he calmly rubbed his hands to remove the bits of meat and dregs of bones from them. He then turned to them and smiled, "I wanted to exchange greetings with you three famed personalities. But, your second brother has already transformed to dregs. But still, it's a pleasure to meet the two of you. I lack a bit of mannerism. So, I request the two senior Sky Xuan experts to cut me some slack."

Jun Mo Xie was still seated atop the tree. But, his expression had transformed into a very strange one. [This guy's words are too overbearing. There was no trace of aggression in them... or in his

heart. I would've probably done the same if I were in his place. In fact, his choice of words wasn't very different from mine. I've made my decision with regard to this man — I shall leave his corpse intact!]

# Chapter 311: It's My Turn At Last

---

"I asked you — who are you! Don't you have the guts to tell me your name?" Lei Jian Hong trembled from head to toe as he asked in a low voice. He had paid no attention to the opposite party's insult and ridicule; neither had he glanced at the horrible corpse of his brother disciple that lay on the ground below.

Third disciple Fang Piao Hong looked at her senior's corpse. Her entire body shuddered, and she was unable to speak-up.

The intense fighting had suddenly stopped. Zhao Wu Ji's men had escaped from the danger. So, they were rejoicing incessantly. Their enemies had lost interest in them since that person had arrived. This person had arrived a bit later than expected, but they didn't seem to care about that at this moment.

[It doesn't matter whether he came late or early... it's fine as long as he has shown-up. Isn't preserving one's life above everything else?]

Everyone had stopped. But, the prevailing atmosphere in the battlefield had become increasingly depressing.

Suddenly, the red-clothed man chuckled and raised his hand. His sleeve made a "snap!" sound. A sharp explosive sound emanated as his palm hit thin air. It was obvious that he had hit nothing but empty air. However, it seemed like he had struck at a solid object.

A slight 'swishing' sound was produced in the wind. Then, suddenly and quietly, the silhouettes of many people appeared in the surroundings.

The flames reflected light off each and every new comer's body. They were clad in red clothes. Each one of them stood calm and still. However, all of them had a cold and terrifying light flashing in their eyes. It seemed like a pack of blood-thirsty wolves were waiting for a command from their alpha.

The shadows of two people floated forward in the air, and arrived besides the first red-clad assailant. Their bodies glittered with a dark blue light as they stood facing Lei Jian Hong and Fang Piao Hong. However, the visual impact of their arrival had sent Lei Jian Hong's party into a shock.

All three of these assailants were Sky Xuan experts.

If one would look around... they'd see that many of the newcomers were covered with a bright earthen-yellow light; these people were Earth Xuan experts. There were around ten people who were at the Earth Xuan realm. The rest shone with the misty color of rain; Jade Xuan. There were thirty-to-forty Jade Xuan experts amongst them!

Lei Jian Hong's heart instantly became cold.

As cold as piece of ice...

[How can we fight this battle?!]

[The enemy's strength far-exceeds ours! And, our side only has third sister-disciple and me!]

"My name? Ha ha! Senior Lei, you're not new to this world. I'm an assassin from the Blood Sword Hall. How can I tell you my name? I may not care about you two, but how can I not care about Lei Wu Bei? He's the Great Master Lei! As for whether I have 'guts' or not — you can ask your second brother disciple. He would know it very clearly." the man in red tilted his head and answered Lei Jian Hong.

"Very good! Blood Sword Hall it is. I'll certainly remember you!" Lei Jian Hong glanced at them with grief and indignation. He then turned and spoke, "Junior sister, we'll shall leave now."

"Stop!" suddenly, the red-clad man shouted.

Lei Jain Hong halted his steps.

"Why? Don't tell me that you think that you can keep us from

leaving?" Lei Jian Hong gave a plaintive laugh. "Your strength is far above us and we can't match you. But, do you think that you have the strength to restrain the two of us?"

Lei Jian Hong had spoken the truth. Both the sides were led by powerful Sky Xuan experts. It wouldn't be very difficult for the Blood Sword Hall to defeat Lei Jian Hong's side if they wanted to. However, it would be impossible for them to restrain Lei Jian Hong and Fang Piao Hong. These two could cut their bloody path of escape as long as they wanted to leave.

"He he, Elder Brother Lei misunderstands this younger brother's good intentions. You're the Great Master Lei's sole blood relative. We won't dare to commit such an offense!" the red-clad man spoke unhurriedly, "It's just that... your junior's corpse... don't you wish to take it with you? Are you going to leave it in this open wilderness?"

Lei Jian Hong snorted coldly, but didn't pick-up the corpse. He then rose into the air, and pulled Fang Piao Hong with him. He wasn't going to utter a single sentence in such a situation. The branches on the nearby trees oscillated several times as they disappeared into the night's sky.

Lei Jian Hong was aware that carrying Zhou Jian Ming's body would be a very heavy burden. In fact, it would prevent them from leaving. The red-clad man had spoken those words with clear evil intentions, but it was important for him and his sister-disciple to leave that place in order to avoid misfortune.

[A new enmity has been established, and it has left no room for any leeway. That red-clothed man and his companions will use any extreme methods to capture us if we try to retrieve the second brother's body. What difference would it make if my father is the Great Cold Blooded Master? There would be no one left alive to bear as witness if we both die here and the Li Family's warriors are caught in the same net. Then, even if my father decided to take vengeance... he wouldn't know whom to take it on!]



[The opposite party clearly has the strength of kill us if we tarry!]

Therefore, he made a prompt decision and left.

The opposite party didn't see any sense in stopping them — just as Lei Jian Hong had determined. Therefore, no one tried to stop them.

Suddenly, a milky-white mist started to rise in the dim light of night. It covered the entire area, and started to get increasingly dense. It appeared as if it had formed a thin protective screen.

The nights and early mornings were always misty in the wooded mountains. So, no one paid much attention to it. Moreover, a fresh burst of air had passed through the mountain trees along with that mist. This had a serene effect on everyone's heart, and they couldn't help but take deep breaths as they felt their spirits rise.

However, they were unaware that Jun Mo Xie had climbed down the tree, and had let out a deep sigh.

He secretly shouted at his misfortune.

[It's such a pity! Lei Jian Hong and his people left a bit too early! He would've been able to see it if he had remained for a moment longer. It is such a pity that I've had to put-in such efforts, and suffer untold hardships to make this Ecstasy Fragrance. Unfortunately, the two of them were able to escape this trap.]

The Ecstasy Fragrance was unsuitable for use in the battle at an earlier time since there had been a formidable flow of Xuan Qi. It was very likely that it would've been blown away without being able to achieve the desired effect.

However, Jun Mo Xie had realized that the situation had now become stable-enough for him to use his trump card. The Ecstasy Fragrance had been made from the Hongjun Pagoda's Aura. It was formless to the point where it was invisible; it was traceless to the point of secrecy.

However, there was little flavor to it. Nevertheless, it was fresh,

cool and elegant. Anyone who smelled that fresh and elegant mist would lose their strength. Even a Xuan Qi expert would see their Xuan Qi decline very significantly. In effect, they'd lose considerable fighting-strength if they breathed-in that fragrance.

This was Jun Mo Xie's biggest trump-card for this operation.

"You... have finally come." Zhang Cun Xiao had suffered many injuries to his body. He limped-over with the use of a support as he welcomed the newcomers. Zhao Wu Ji also walked close besides him. He looked at the red-clad men with an expression of unbridled fear, but it was mixed with unlimited gratitude.

"Ugh, we had an unexpected accident a while back. That delayed us a little," the red-clothed man replied expressionlessly. "Where are the crossbows?"

Zhang Cun Xiao looked at Zhao Wu Ji. He understood that gesture, and went towards the carriages with some people in tow. However, he didn't stop at the carriages. Instead, he moved forward to the horses that had been drawing the carriages. He took down their saddles. Then, he removed loops of a transparent leather belt from the lower portion of their bodies. He then removed a thin and indiscernible pelt of fur from there. And suddenly, several brightly glittering crossbows fell down with a 'crashing' noise.

That's where Zhao Wu Ji had tied the crossbows!

This scheme was very surprising. In fact, it was exceptional.

Even if a thief wanted to get his hands on those items — he would start with the carriages. And, he would run to another direction to search if the carriages didn't have them. Who would care about what looked like mere 'carriage horses' at a glance?

"There are 350 crossbows in total; twenty more than expected. We've come to deliver them all. The original 'manufacturing-blueprint' has been burnt. A batch of twenty crossbows is tied to

the belly of each horse. The remaining horses have batches of special arrows tied to their bellies. The arrows count to a number of 7000. And, this is only the first batch of these arrows. The second batch is being prepared at a quick pace."

Zhao Wu Ji bowed his head in fear and trepidation. He didn't know why he felt that the red-clad man — who was overflowing with a cold aura — seemed dissatisfied with him.

"Very good! You've accomplished your task properly!" the red clad man seemed gratified now, "This place shall allow you to rest. And, you'll also be given a reward..."

"Many thanks..." Zhao Wu Ji was overjoyed. He bowed his head to pay his respect and show his thanks. However, his head fell on the ground with a "Thud!" His face was smiling in gratitude, but it had been beheaded by the red-clad man.

"Fool!"

This was the final comment the red-clothed man had left for Zhao Wu Ji to hear.

"The reward I've given you is that you can follow your younger brother and reunite with him. You can rest in Hell permanently!" the red clothed man stated in a measured manner.

"Senior... you... why?" Zhang Cun Xiao looked shocked as he asked. The red-clad man quickly hit Zhang Cun Xiao's head, and instantly ruptured his brain. His victim was on the verge of death, yet he struggled and asked, "But... why?"

"Why? I thought that you were somewhat smart. But, you turned out to be an idiot as well! You're actually asking me the reason for this?!" The red-clad man wiped the blood from his hands as he smiled, "Do you idiots really believe that the Blood Sword Hall would be willing to cooperate with that idiotic pig of a Second Prince?! He also deserves this only!"

He then waved his hand, and sternly commanded, "Finish the

task!"

The other red-clad men quickly set-about their task. They had intentionally or otherwise moved closer to the "lucky" survivors; they were nearly stationed beside them. The survivors had previously thought that the shadow of death had been dispersed from their tail with the arrival of such help. They had felt as if a big burden had been removed from their hearts. Hence, they hadn't taken even the slightest of precautions. They were killed and routed the moment the leader of the red-clothed men commenced the rebellion; they were chopped like melons. Even the very thought of resisting didn't occur in their heads. They just cried in misery as they went down.

The remaining red-clad men wordlessly chopped down with their swords, and beheaded the warriors of the Li Family who hadn't escaped with Lei Jian Hong.

These men had been led by the two Xuan Sky experts to attack their enemies. They had been on the winning side. And, the situation had completely overturned the next moment when three Sky Xuan, numerous Earth and Jade Xuan experts attacked them with full strength. Each one of the Li Family's warriors had felt despair when they had witnessed Lei Jian Hong depart. Therefore, they didn't even have the slightest of courage to resist, and were slaughtered in the blink of an eye.

There were only a little over ten red-clad men left in the battlefield at that moment. However, their strength was truly tyrannical. They attacked to kill; not a single one of their enemies was let-off injured.

The white mist that shrouded the mountain had become even denser.

"Hurry up and inspect! Confirm which horses carry the crossbows! Quickly tidy-up, and retreat!" the leader of the red-clothed men commanded with a sense of urgency.

"He he he... it's finally my turn! This has been fuc\*ing exhausting... You guys play the game very fiercely... Most of you are still alive. That makes this Elder Brother very unhappy."

A mysterious laugh rang-out from thin air. It first came from the left, then from the right... then from the front... and then from behind. This phenomenon was unfathomable. One could only hear the words, "Blood Sword Hall is awesome! Your ability to select the most critical of moments... makes me admire you! But, if you're not working for the Second Prince... then, who are you working for? Perhaps I must ask this instead — who has the charisma to deserve the Blood Sword Hall's servitude? This Elder Brother is very interested in knowing, ah."

"Who's there? Who dresses-up as god but acts as the devil? Show yourself!" the leader of the red-clad men shouted while his eyes searched the surroundings.

"Humph... Humph...Humph! I'm your father! Your daddy!" The man in the shadows gave a vulgar smile. He then broke into a hearty laughter, "Is the clever son not sharp-enough to bow down and kowtow at his father's arrival?!"

"You court death!" the red-clothed man screamed in anger. He listened attentively, and then suddenly leapt up. His sword sent-out a long ray of blue-colored light. The blue light flew across, and made explosive noises as it hit several trees at their center. The ground made 'crackling' noises as the trees came crashing down. They pounded on the ground, and caused the dust to rise up in the air.

"Huh? How's this possible?" the red-clad man had killed a Sky Xuan expert with his the power of his attacks a moment ago. But, he had shouted this in a state of shock. He was shocked to discover that his Sky Xuan level Xuan Qi had dissipated to a great extent since the time he had sent his sword-attack a moment ago.

"Ha ha! There's only the unexpected in this world. Nothing is

impossible. What can be considered as impossible?" the mysterious man hissed; he had remained hidden. He then roared, "Complete the task!"

There were explosions everywhere. The ground was suddenly overturned like waves in the sea. Silt and dust flew all over the place after the explosions. That was followed by several sturdy figures jumping out — people had suddenly started to appear from all sides.

A nimble figure suddenly appeared in mid-air, and unexpectedly made his way towards those Sky Xuan man. This mysterious expert flew towards them at a great speed.

The leader of the red-clad men cried, "Be careful!" However, he had barely finished crying-out when he saw a flash in front of him. Then, a black-clothed and masked man suddenly appeared right before him. The leader of the red-clad men was that mysterious man's true target. He quickly evaded backwards and raised his sword to go on the offensive.

However, his opponent followed him closely, and launched a quick attack. A cold light flashed to stab the red-clad man's throat. The cold light moved extremely quickly. In fact, it was faster than his eyesight could follow. He hadn't even seen the weapon when he heard a 'whooshing' sound. He then felt the cold sensation of something stabbing his throat.

The red-clothed man barely raised his sword as he retreated again. He then heard the 'whooshing' noise again, and realized that his opponent was about to attack his crotch. He quickly pulled-back his buttocks, and rejoiced in the fact that he had avoided that terrible attack. However, he became scared when he saw that light flash again. There was a thrust towards his eyes. But, he didn't have enough energy to tilt to the side to avoid the attack. He felt a stinging pain on his face, and realized that the dagger had pierced his skin. He then felt two elbows hit his chest. That was followed by a sudden pain in his lower region; every

vulnerable area of his body had been ferociously struck.

The red-clad man was angry, in pain, and frightened...

The other side had copied the method he had used against Zhou Jian Ming. However, the roles had been reversed, and he was the one getting hit by the opposite party. Moreover, his opponent's speed was greater than his own; this man was more accurate as well.

[Is this divine retribution?!]

## Chapter 312: Frantically Tortured to Death

---

Yet, what scared him the most was that his own Xuan Qi was fading away. Moreover, his dantian was reeling in chaos; not to mention the fact that he had no time to retaliate. In fact, he couldn't have competed with his opponent on the basis of his own skills even if he had the time to retaliate...

His opponent's speed was extremely fast. Moreover, the red-clad man had been thrown into disarray. Xuan Qi was the only thing he could rely on. However, the only thing he could rely on had already started to disappear. He had even forgotten to defend himself, and was simply being knocked-about.

"Bang!" the red clad man was hit on his crotch. Then, he was hit on the back of his head with a "Bang!" before he had the time to scream. He staggered two steps forward — only to find his attacker already present in front of him. Then, the red-clad man was forced to suffer a gale of countless crushing attacks within a split second.

His opponent's speed was like that of a ghost's. The red-clad man felt his entire body — from top to bottom... each and every part of it — getting hit. Moreover, every spot that was struck could cause the death of a person.

This mysterious attackers understanding of the human body had reached a very skilled and 'easy-flowing' level. It seemed that he was attacking randomly in either convenience or confusion. However, each spot he attacked made his victim feel extreme pain and discomfort; all these regions of the body were considered a taboo in martial arts.

The red-clothed man's consciousness was fuzzy. There was only one thought in his mind. [This person is even more proficient at killing than the men from my Blood Sword Hall. Who is this man?]

The other two Sky Xuan experts were scared at witnessing this sudden change in the situation. They bellowed and moved forward



to help their leader. They raised their Xuan Qi — only to discover the lamentable reality a bit too late. They didn't realize when it happened... but their own Xuan Qi had already disintegrated. In fact, more-than-half of it had dispersed. The two felt as if their bodies had been affected by a high-level poison from the inside. They were flustered at being unable to save their compatriot's life. The two experts tried their best to get their Xuan Qi to circulate. They had hoped to force the poison out of their bodies and reinstate their fighting strength by doing this. However, the more urgently they circulated their Xuan Qi... the faster its remnants dispersed. How could they not be frightened?

It was a very scary scene since their men were slowly disappearing from the surroundings as more and more ghosts had started to appear on the mountain... They were like a disease which swiftly spread with thunderous speed.

Each of these newcomers' bodies flickered with glittering golden light. They didn't show any trace of fear as they charged towards the Earth Xuan and Jade Xuan experts; in fact, they even charged towards the strong Sky Xuan experts without any hesitations. The swords in their hand chopped down. It seemed like they were treating the Blood Sword Hall's assassins as a mere flock of sheep that had come for a slaughter.

The strongest amongst this new batch of enemies were Gold Xuan experts. Therefore, the red-clothed assassins would've considered these newcomers to be 'cattle waiting for slaughter' if they hadn't been poisoned earlier... perhaps even inferior to that. These newcomers were like ants to them — at best. It was important to know that the weakest members of this team of red-clad men were Jade Xuan experts.

However, the roles had been reversed. These black-clothed men — whom they would've generally regarded as ants — had somehow started to seem like the tyrant kings of hell!

The overbearing Ecstasy Fragrance had resulted in the crazy drop

of their effective-cultivation in front of their enemy. And, their effective-cultivation continued to fall. This fact left the red-clothed men extremely frightened. In fact, they had already lost their will to fight-back.

These cold-blooded assassins' will to fight had been defeated by Ecstasy Fragrance.

A person's mentality wouldn't even hold at par with an ordinary individual's if they suddenly lost the immense strength they had always proudly relied on for their survival.

Therefore, everybody was only thinking of a means to escape. In fact, they were as chaotic as a swarm of bees.

Their Gold Xuan enemies were extremely imposing on the contrary. They were very ferocious, and seemed unafraid to die.

This new group of men had clashed against the other with the intensity of a volcanic eruption within a span of a couple of breaths.

The newcomers' facial expressions were grim and emotionless. They were confronted with a group of cold-blooded assassins. However, their own facial expressions were far more cruel and cold than a cold-blooded assassin's. Their panic-stricken enemies were attacking them in a very chaotic manner, but these newcomers made no attempts to flee. In fact, they didn't even try to dodge the incoming attacks. They merely used their shoulders and chests to confront the attacks head-on as they sent their own swords of their enemy's body.

It seemed as if they were fighting for the fate of their lives. In fact, it seemed as if they could change their lives by sustaining these injuries.

Their strategy was extremely cruel.

[If you confront a cruel enemy — then you've to be even crueler!]

The battle had begun quickly, but it had ended even quicker. The

battle was already half-finished when the two forces collided. This was because... the black-clad men had attacked in order to slash at the bodies of the other group. And, the bodies of their victims would turn black once their skin had been pierced. Then, the said-individual would cease to breathe and die in a moment's time.

The weapons of the newcomers had been smeared with a highly toxic poison. This bloody poison could easily take someone's life in an instant. Even the Earth Xuan experts were unable to resist this poison for more-than-half a breath's time.

Jun Mo Xie had stored the poison he had expelled from Jun Wu Yi's body. And, that was same poison he had decided to use in this battle. The swords of these men had been dipped in that poison for an entire night's time. And, this poison was a mix of the top-ten most poisonous substances in the world. In fact, this poison could be bestowed the title of the 'King of all Poisons'.

Those 200-plus men were divided into different groups. Each group of 4 or 5 had been tasked with taking-on one individual. One member would act as a 'meat shield' and bear all strikes from the enemy. The remaining 3 or 4 members of the group would swarm around, and cut the enemy down into pieces.

The Earth Xuan experts were able to resist this onslaught for a moment with some difficulty. However, they'd die the next moment since the poison would corrode their body.

The two Sky Xuan experts were trying their best to force-out the poison as they watched this scene unfold. Their eyes were calm because they possessed the strength of a Sky Xuan. However, their brows couldn't help but twitch at the sight, while their bodies started to get covered with cold sweat.

[These... these... people?! This group of people is considering our life... and even the life of their own comrades as dispensable, isn't it? It is understandable if one fights 'tooth-and-nail' in the battlefield... But, isn't their strategy too barbaric?]

They saw a man's shoulder getting resolutely chopped by one of their Earth Xuan comrades. The blade had nearly pierced the man's shoulder down to its hilt. This was certainly a fatal blow. In fact, he would've been able to cut the man into two parts if he had applied a little more force. However, the victim didn't even flinch. He unexpectedly turned his shoulder. This allowed the blade cut-in even deeper. Then, his muscles held the blade in place... tightly. After that, his comrades vigorously rushed-over. They let-out loud roars and turned that Earth Xuan expert into minced meat.

...Another man's abdomen had been pierced by a sword. That was a certain fatal injury. However, just as before, the impaled man remained expressionless. He then put his hands to work... with one — he grabbed the edge of the blade that had pierced him in an unwavering grip. With the other — he held the red-clad Earth Xuan expert's wrist. Then, he actually smiled in a sinister manner! It was then that many swords fell down from besides him, and turned his red-clad enemy into grounded meat...

The same happened with another person...

Then another...

[These people...! They're more desperate than a man on a death sentence!]

Those who are desperate to fight... usually still feel fear and weakness when they are at death's door. However, these warriors had genuinely ignored the prospect of death. They were only concerned about the death of their opponents.

Fifteen Earth Xuan experts and forty red-clothed Jade Xuan experts were killed in the blink of an eye. What was crueller... was the fact that none of the fifty-five men's corpses were preserved. Their dead bodies had been transformed beyond recognition. Their corpses were a far-more miserable sight than Zhou Jian Ming's.

It went without saying that those assassins could confirm that what they had just witnessed... was the best way to kill since the

corpses had been completely dismembered. However, to witness so many dismembered bodies with their own eyes obviously came as a shock to them.

This scene made the two Sky Xuan experts recall their expedition into the Tian Fa forest a year back. They had gone to look for some medicines, and had unexpectedly faced a pack of wolves. However, this group of men was even more dreadful than that pack of wolves. [Isn't this immense murderous intent even beyond the category of Assassins? Even the most blood-thirsty and cruel Xuan Beasts of the Tian Fa forest won't be able to achieve such a high level!]

And then finally...

Then, there was an extremely mournful and blood-curdling scream. It was full of indignation. Then, this sad howl came to an abrupt stop. The two Sky Xuan experts turned around in anticipation — only to see that their leader... who had recently killed the Sky Xuan Zhou Jian Ming... had both of his hands chopped-off. He hadn't yet fallen to the ground. His mouth was opened wide, and his eyes and nose had been beaten into terrible bloody cavities.

They saw their leader's body being kicked high into the sky with a "Bang!" the moment they turned around. Then, a storm-like rain of attacks fell upon his body. Everything... from his throat, heart, crotch, skull... all the vulnerable points of his body were being struck frantically. The two could clearly see that every attack had landed at the vital points of the body. Moreover, these intensive attacks were being carried out very accurately! This fact-alone was worthy-enough to make them tremble!

This incessant and accurate attacking method was very cruel, and cold-blooded. And, it had left them to tremble. Strikes on even half of those vital points could cause a fatality. Therefore, a storm of such strikes was obviously a shocking sight to watch.

Finally, the scene became still after a tart and sour ‘snapping’ sound was heard. What had just been an awe inspiring Sky Xuan expert... had now turned into a ‘walking stick’. That devilish black-clothed man thrust his hand through the pit of his victim’s stomach. It passed through the inner cavity like a ramrod, and pierced through his back. The black-clad man’s fist firmly held a piece of his victim’s heart.

It was hanging in midair!

The hair on the two Sky Xuan experts’ body stood up.

This couldn’t merely be called as ‘cruel’ or ‘cold-blooded’... or anything similar.

This was abnormal! Extremely abnormal! The abnormality of this scene had crossed the limits of what humanity could bear!

This black-clad individual was naturally Jun Mo Xie. He knew that things couldn’t be dragged-on for much longer. So, the Young Master Jun had obviously decided to attack first in order to gain the upper hand. However, he realized something after he had launched his attack. And, this realization had left him very gloomy... very, very gloomy.

The Hit-man Jun was the King of his generation’s assassins. He had always been against such tyrannical and abnormal indulgences of playing with one’s target. He had always paid attention while striking the target, and had tried to kill the ‘target’ as cleanly as possible. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie was secretly troubled since he had been forced to deal with his enemy in this manner as a last resort.

The Ecstasy Fragrance had reduced his opponent’s fighting strength to a freakishly low level. The enemy had no will left to fight. Moreover, his initial movements and speed had caught his opponent unprepared. The speed of his movements had been faster than his enemy’s from the start. But, still...

The strength of the Sky Xuan expert’s body was too high! The

Young Master Jun's growth had been lightning fast, and he had quickly reached the Jade Xuan realm... but, the gap between the two individual's strength was still supposed to be very great! Therefore, he had decided to use this intensive attack method. He had destroyed his enemy's bones to a point where one couldn't even find their dregs. However, his enemy had still managed to let-out a few painful howls in the face of such attacks...

## Chapter 313: The Sullen Sky Xuan Assassins

---

The Young Master Jun's current firepower was nothing compared to the one he possessed in his previous life. He had managed to take his opponent by surprise, and the man had fallen into a state of naked disadvantage. But, the Young Master Jun still hadn't been able to break past his defenses. In fact, his 'overkill' style offense hadn't proved to be of much significance.

In fact, this man hadn't even been able to raise and amass his Xuan Qi. Therefore, the Young Master Jun was at a total loss for words with regard to this matter; this was very disgraceful.

Therefore, the Young Master Jun didn't dare to relax one bit. His attacks were intensive, but he was very clear about one thing — he himself would suffer losses if he wasn't able to kill the man quickly... in fact, the tables might even turn against him if he gave the other man any room to respond or take advantage. After all, he was merely a Jade Xuan expert when all was said and done; nothing more. And on the other hand, his opponent was at the Sky Xuan realm. In fact, he was a Peak Sky Xuan expert.

[My opponent can make me suffer even if his strength has been reduced to one-tenth of its actual power.]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie continuously attacked with 'Bang!' 'Bang!' sounds. His fists, knees, elbows, the side of his heels... had been thoroughly jolted by the impacts of his own attacks. In fact, they had started to ache. But, he still wasn't prepared to relax; he couldn't dare to relax. So, it would've seemed that his attacks had gotten increasingly intense.

This one-sided battle would seem different from an outsider's perspective. An outsider would reckon that Jun Mo Xie could've killed his opponent with one strike alone. They would think that he had intentionally used such a cruel method in order to torture his enemy... that he was reprehensible for torturing people in such



a manner for his enjoyment.

This level of maltreatment was the talk of legends!

Moreover, Jun Mo Xie had displayed his Xuan Qi in order to dispel the opposite side's imposing mannerism. However, he had displayed the dark blue color of a Sky Xuan Peak expert!

[That Sky Xuan Peak expert is wildly beating-up the other man... that too a man who is at a grade that is lower than his own within the Sky Xuan realm! Not only that... his opponent isn't even retaliating! Could it be that his barbaric attacks are an indication of his nature? He could've settled this in one strike, ah...]

Tears streamed down Jun Mo Xie's cheeks. [Even these sinister attacks aren't going very smoothly. What am I supposed to think ah...? Is my strength that incompetent...?]

Fortunately, this wasn't a game-world where everything operates on pure data. Even the strength of a Sky Xuan had its limits. Young Master Jun had continuously struck his victim over three hundred times in the same place by the end of it — on the pit of his stomach. And, he had then worn-out the Xuan Qi that protected his opponent's body... finally. He had finally beaten his enemy's strong-built body — a body the victim had been very proud of — to a pulp. Then, Jun Mo Xie had severed any scope of the other man's survival by striking his heart.

However, he was unaware that his image had appeared stationary after he had thrown his last punch. This had happened because he was very tired. So, he had taken a moment's rest. But, the onlookers had interpreted this sight in an entirely different light. That image was 'an extreme' to their eyes; it was too cruel, and too abnormal.

[You've already killed him... so, why are you doing this to his dead body? He looks like salted fish... do you wish to scare the dead, boss? This has been an exceptional night...]

The two hundred men looked Hit-man Jun with extreme reverence. There was complete silence for a moment.

They were too shocked!

They were extremely shocked!

It was a while before everyone came back to themselves. Then, the other two Sky Xuan experts looked at Jun Mo Xie with grief and indignation. They gnashed their teeth and asked, "Who are you? Have the guts to tell us your name! You're such a noble and far-reaching person! Your distinguished-self has been conferred my Blood Sword Hall's undying gratitude! We will work from dusk to dawn to pay you back!"

"Huh? Pay back? Shouldn't you think of running away?" Jun Mo Xie spoke in a flabbergasted manner. There was a twinkle in his eye. He then suddenly said, "Bullsh\*t! Isn't your imagination too enriched? When did I ever say that I'll allow you to leave? Are you sure you aren't day-dreaming? Or, are you talking in your sleep?"

"Ha ha ha! We've lost more-than-half of our strength after being affected by your poison; this fact is undisputed. And, we've suffered a resounding defeat today! However, do you believe that you and your accompanying group of trashy and repulsive hatchlings can capture us? Right! Your distinguished-self is at the Sky Xuan Peak, and your strength outstrips ours by a margin. But, even your distinguished-self can stop only one amongst us if we truly intend to escape. You must be the one day-dreaming if you believe that you can constrain the both of us! So, the person who's 'day-dreaming' and 'talking in their sleep' is none other than your distinguished-self!"

The two red-clothed Sky Xuan experts laughed in a shrill manner. Their cold words echoed as they spoke, "We aren't afraid to tell you this in all honesty — no matter who you are... or whether or not you have some backing — you and your backers are toast! There'll be no beautiful dream for you... only a nightmare;

an unending nightmare!"

"Capture only one of you? What shameful words are you speaking?! I wouldn't have come here if planned to allow even one of you leave! And, dreaming? We'll see who is dreaming!" Jun Mo Xie sneered and waved his hand, "Kill them!"

The 200 men roared loudly. Their injuries weren't light. Yet, they raised their swords, and threw themselves at the enemy like a tide in spite of their injuries.

"Ha ha..." the two Sky Xuan experts laughed heartily. Then, they suddenly leapt-up and rose in the air. One of them went towards the north, and the other one moved towards the south.

They moved extremely fast.

[Even this extremely tyrannical Peak Sky Xuan expert in front of us will have no choice but to chase only one of us. How can he capture the both of us since we're both at the same Xuan level as him?]

Jun Mo Xie snorted and laughed. He didn't move an inch. In fact, the Young Master Jun didn't even have the desire to move. He merely yelled in a cold voice, "Get down!" The sky was resounded with his loud and 'snapping' yell as it came down to the dark and gloomy earth. His men on the ground were in order. They were well-trained. And so, they immediately scattered; they quickly ducked, and went outside the circle.

The two red-clothed assassins couldn't help their 'bladders crack' when they raised their heads to look.

Dozens of nets appeared in midair — from all directions. These nets were studded with shining barbs, and they covered over thirty meters in radius. These nets were dense, and had no gaps that one could escape from. The two red-clothed men looked everywhere — only to find that there were no openings in the nets. Moreover, the nets overlapped each other as they came down; each net had

another one above it. If one could cross one net with difficulty... he would then have to face a second one... and after that... even a third one...

The two red-clothed men mournfully cried in despair as forty-to-fifty nets opened-up, loudly fell on them with a "Bang!", and trapped them inside.

The two assassins could've worn the nets out if they would've been able to circulate their Xuan Qi... perhaps they could've even broken them if their Xuan Qi hadn't been lost. In fact, it would've merely been a matter of seconds. However, their Xuan Qi had reduced drastically. So, they wouldn't have had enough time to circulate and amass their Xuan Qi even if they had strived to escape.

Indeed, what they lacked the most at this juncture... was time.

How could Jun Mo Xie have allowed them enough time to counter-attack?

The 200 men had dropped their swords in unison once the command was given. Then, they conveniently took-out the already-prepared thick wooden clubs. After that, they — without any rhyme or reason — proceeded to ruthlessly beat-down upon the two poor 'devils' who were stuck under the many nets.

This was a huge opportunity for those Gold Xuan experts to trample upon Sky Xuan experts. It could be a once in a lifetime opportunity... so, how could they let it pass? Moreover, they had all seen the strength and vigor with which their Young Master had trampled upon his enemy. And so, they weren't prepared to let their Young Master attain all the glory...

[What happened to your Sky Xuan Strength? You still think you can trample and kill...? No... that's your fate.]

Dark Blue lights could be vaguely seen shining-through that heavy layer of nets. It was evident that the two Sky Xuan experts

were still struggling with everything they had. They were desperately trying to save themselves from this dire situation. However, the cruel fact was that... their efforts would be in vain. Wooden clubs — as thick as thighs — powerfully fell on the flesh of those two in the midst of jeers and "Puff" sounds...

Their 'nightmare' had truly arrived!

The blood-curdling screams echoed. The two Sky Xuan experts had refused to scream their pain in order to save face at first. Then, they had started to shout as if there was nothing more joyous than that moment in-itself. Their screams had pierced the night sky; their screams had soon started to sound like the screech of numerous owls.

Their Sky Xuan leader had died... and that was extremely sad. However, he had been killed by the "high-level Sky Xuan expert" Jun Mo Xie's sneak attack. So, it could be said that he had died with honor. However, what about those two? They were being trampled by a group of ant-like Gold Xuan experts. How tragic had life been to them in the end?

Come to speak of it... these two people had been pressing their luck for a tragedy. Every man goes to seek-out his tragedies on his own. These two men weren't any different.

Jun Mo Xie originally had many misgivings about these two red-clad men. They had been affected by the Ecstasy Fragrance, but they were still genuine Sky Xuan experts. So, even their minimal strength would be at par with the Earth Xuan realm... perhaps even higher — no matter how much it had been reduced. There was no way to drastically reduce the Xuan Qi level beyond that. Therefore, they would've likely caused severe casualties to Jun Mo Xie's men if they had been allowed to go 'all out' and fight with their remaining might.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had covered himself with the distinct dark-blue-color of the Sky Xuan Peak level in order to deter those

two.

The two red-clad men had obviously thought that the only option left for them was to escape... and that too — separately. And, it wasn't very surprising either. After all, their strength was merely at the initial stage of the Sky Xuan realm. So, they would've run away when faced a Peak Sky Xuan expert even if they had been in their peak condition. What could one possibly say for a situation when their strength had been reduced...

However, their attempt to flee had fallen within the bounds of Jun Mo Xie's strategy.

Jun Mo Xie had previously arranged for fifty-four of his men to hide in the trees. Each one of these men carried two nets with them. And, they were simply waiting for that moment. One could see only 200 people before? However, it was important to note that these men actually totaled to 254!

They acted like 54 skilled fishermen when they threw those dense nets. Moreover, their two victims had been in a state of confusion and panic when these nets had appeared in midair from nowhere at that critical juncture. So, how could they not have fallen into that trap?

The two red-clad men had should've caused huge casualties to Jun Mo Xie's party by all rights. And even then... they might not have been captured. However, they were now as sullen as a fish that had been caught in a net. Moreover, they hadn't merely been reduced to the fishes in a net at this moment — they more closely resembled the meat on a chopping-block... as their butcher pondered over how to chop them up...

Those two hundred men weren't frightened. They seem to brandish their wooden clubs as if the autumn season had arrived... it seemed as if the season for 'crop harvest' had finished, and they needed to thresh the soya beans from the harvest. They shouted with joy as they hammered their victims. Jun Mo Xie ordered his

men to continue that beat-down — for a time period that lasted the duration it takes for half-an-incense-stick to burn — for the fear of a "playing possum" trick. There was no other reason for him to do so; it was just an assassin's caution.

Thereafter, when Jun Mo Xie went forward to look at the result — what he found could only be described as 'very good'. The big nets had been thoroughly tattered. However, inside... what was inside... could in no way be considered as 'men'. In fact, they couldn't even be considered as 'meat'. What was left inside... was minced meat... hundred percent minced meat...!

Even if one slowly stews meat in a pressure cooker for a day's time... it still wouldn't become that decomposed!

Jun Mo Xie's eyes took a quick glance around. Then, he waved his hand and commanded, "Quickly sweep the battlefield! If an enemy still breaths — quickly remedy it with a knife. Take care of our injured. Retrieve the crossbows carefully! Ensure you leave no traces. Start at once!"

Everyone responded boisterously.

Jun Mo Xie raised his head, and looked in the wooded mountain's direction. There was an expression of profound happiness in his eyes.

The battlefield was quickly tidied-up-clean. Jun Mo Xie calmly gave the order. The men screamed in unison, and turned to mount their horses. Then, the men disappeared as the sounds of rapid hoof-beats echoed. They disappeared without a single trace.

All they left behind... were the pieces of scattered flesh... as evidence of this unusually bloody battle.

# Chapter 314: Sword Pointed to Tian Fa

---

After a long while...

"Bluergh... bluergh..."

"Bluergh... bluergh, bluergh..."

Jun Mo Xie turned to look in the direction of the noise. Two individuals had damaged their lungs vomiting. In fact, it seemed that they'd even vomit-out their intestines. Then, the sounds of vomiting started to rise, and soon it seemed that many people had started to vomit...

"Old Pang, what's to be done about this vomiting...?"

"What can be done? Its vomit... it's useless to try to solve this matter. Let's go back... Bluergh..."

"The Young Master's strength is extremely astonishing. But, that method of his' was extremely... bluergh... cruel... heavens... bluergh..."

"You, shut up! We'll talk about this later! Bluergh..."

There was a gloomy warbling sound. Around ten men came out from their hiding places, and showed themselves. Their faces were pale, and the corners of their mouths were dripping unceasingly. One glance at their faces was enough to determine that they had been vomiting quite heavily.

It seemed that someone had taken the initiate to issue an order to these men, and they quietly departed. However, that person hadn't shown himself from the start to finish. In fact, it was almost as if that person was never present in the first place...

The deep curtains of night fell down. They concealed the crimes, and dispersed the bloody events...

The atmosphere had become peaceful and quite again.

The Jun Family Residence



It was already after midnight, yet Grandpa Jun's study-room was still brightly lit.

Jun Mo Xie was quietly returning home with his men when he saw that light, and suddenly felt a poetic feeling in his heart. So, he started to sing in his mind; [the night is calm, and the stars are glittering in the sky. The light still shines clear from Grandfather's window up ahead... He's working his heart out to write the research material. His tall figure is reflected in my heart...]

The Young Master Jun had his own way of enjoying himself. He went to his room, and went to sleep.

The two teams of his men rested, reorganized, recuperated and healed. Besides the 350 crossbows and 7000 accompanying bolts — they had also found twenty-to-thirty-thousand silver taels. Jun Mo Xie had generously divided them amongst his 200-plus men. Those who had sustained injuries were given an additional fifty taels. This had left everyone very happy and satisfied. His medicinal dāns were curing the wounded men's injuries at a rapid pace without any major problems.

This was only natural since the Young Master Jun had very high-level skills in the medicinal field. His troops had received many injuries in the battle. A few of them had received grave injuries. And, there were some injuries that were so serious that they could be considered as 'fatal'. However, could these serious injuries prove to be a big deal with the Young Master's various medicines at hand? These injuries would obviously be cured within a short period of time.

The Emperor had lost his soldiers, his money, and his crossbows. Jun Mo Xie had ordered his men to use other methods for attacking or defending against the enemy. These crossbows were only to be used for self-defense. [In any case, we must set-off for Tian Fa soon. We needn't fear about being discovered if we use these crossbows in Tian Fa.]

Jun Mo Xie had just settled down. Old Pang had also quietly led his troops back to the Jun residence. Their faces were green, and their lips were white. Their footsteps were weak and unstable.

### Inside the Study

"Lord Master... we've returned at last. Your subordinate has nearly madly vomited himself to death..." Old Pang gasped for air with difficulty.

"What happened?" Grandpa Jun was bewildered.

"It was the Young Master. That Method of his'... is very cruel... bluergh!" Old Pang continued to speak even though he felt nauseous.

"Cruel? What's the matter? Tell me properly," Grandpa Jun was even more bewildered now. Old Pang came from a family of warriors. He had been at his side for many decades. He had spent more time on the battlefield than Jun Wu Yi had. In fact, it wouldn't be an overstatement to call him a veteran of a hundred battles. What cruelty had he not seen already? He had killed at least a hundred warriors himself. And, that too was a conservative count. So, what could've possibly left him to look like this?

"Bluergh!" Old Pang retched as he tried to speak. But, he was finally able to, "My Lord, I've seen men getting killed. I've killed many men myself. But, I've never seen anyone beating a live person to death like that, and then stretching one's hands... only for it to come out from behind a man's chest-cavity with his heart in the hand. And, as for the other two men — their corpses can't even be called 'human corpses'. They resembled 'dumplings' more closely. Even the process of chopping wasn't required anymore. Do you still need me to explain in more detail...?"

"Bluergh! Don't talk about it... shut up, and quickly go outside to vomit! Get lost! Bluergh!" He hadn't finished speaking, but Grandpa Jun could well-imagine the scene. He couldn't help but burst out retching.

Old Pang's evil scheme had prevailed. He chuckled in an evil manner, and went away like a wisp of smoke. [It's not good to vomit alone. Everyone should get to vomit. Everyone should be treated equally. This is fair and equitable.]

However, Grandpa Jun was a top-notch warrior at the end of the day. He only retched for a moment. Then, he resumed his natural state. In fact, he couldn't help but smile as he muttered to himself, "This little devil is full of surprises! That stealthy poison was really... I can't tell how many more cards he has hidden in his hand!"

However, one expert inside the Jun Family was very depressed.

This expert was the same person who had recently been made the 'commander' of the Tian Fa expedition — Jun Wu Yi. He had personally led men to the Ni Chang Pavilion in order to arrest and kill Yue'er and everyone else. After all, the crossbows had arrived and their operation had already begun. Therefore, Yue'er and the others had outlived their usefulness.

This was part of Jun Mo Xie's plan.

However, they rushed into that place, and found it empty. They enquired and found that Yue'er had vanished on the dawn of that day along with everyone else. And, she had left no trace behind.

Jun Wu Yi was extremely disappointed.

He had used a mountain to smash an egg. Even a standard stone could smash an egg... but, he had failed to do so. He was depressed... really depressed. [Where was the information leaked from...?] This thought had greatly puzzled him.

Jun Mo Xie stood on the edge of the convened gathering on following day's dawn.

He had to depart with the army in the afternoon. So, Jun Mo Xie was 'racing against time' in the true sense of the meaning.

"Fatty, I'll be leaving later. Take proper care of the Aristocratic

Hall. Bear that responsibility for me. In addition, I will supply you with some medicinal dans. Hold an auction for them every-so-often. And, auction a very small amount. Ensure that you protect the secrecy of the relevant information. And, as for the money you acquire from the auction — don't hesitate to spend it to acquire rare ingredients. You needn't spend much effort to acquire the ordinary ingredients anymore. And, don't collect the medicinal herbs the way you had previously done!"

Jun Mo Xie handed Fatty Tang a bottle of the Multi-Cure Dan, a bottle of the Mysterious Yang Dan, and a bottle of the Missing Yin Dan in order to earn profit. He wasn't going to sell the efficacy-increasing 'Ten Years Dan'. However, these three Dans were enough to cause wide-spread sensation.

"Little Yang Mo, you needn't be involved in the Aristocratic Hall's day-to-day transactions and workings. However, if someone from the royal family comes and proposes something — whether it is excessive or not, whether it is unreasonable or not — you will handle all of it. After all, Tang Yuan's identity is inconvenient for this. You understand, right?"

"But... but..." Little Yang Mo hesitated a bit.

"But nothing! It has been decided!" Jun Mo Xie decisively cut-in. Then, he stated in conclusion, "Quickly go back to your father — the Prince Equivalent — to ask for guidance if you're unable to handle it on your own. Ahem! This matter has already been decided. We won't speak of it again!"

The decision was squeaky clean. So, Yang Mo departed with some worry on his mind. Then, Jun Mo Xie turned to Tang Yuan, "Give all Imperial Family related business to Yang Mo. It doesn't matter if we suffer a loss. In fact, I don't care about any loss from that. Is that clear?"

"It's not clear. Why are you doing this? If per-chance anyone from the Imperial Family does come, and this little devil is unable

to handle it... won't it mean that we'll be out of luck?" Tang Yuan's expression was one of protest. He didn't understand the Young Master Jun's decision.

"I don't require you to understand. I only need you to carry it out!" Jun Mo Xie glared in anger. The Prince Equivalent's family hadn't attended the Golden Scholarly Feast. However, he hadn't opposed Jun Mo Xie's intentional or non-intentional instigation either. Everything had seemed to be still.

It had to be said that the Prince Equivalent could certainly keep his composure. However, that move wouldn't work in front of Jun Mo Xie. [So, you're keeping calm? Good! I'll just add to the fire!]

[You think that you could just put up some money on the table, and buy a share... and then this Young Master will keep making money for you? How can it be that easy? What's the point of giving you so much money if I can't even tie your family to the Jun Family's war-chariot?]

[This isn't exactly openhearted. And, it can be considered very mean to exploit a child. However, I can give you a whole generation of Kings if your son's performance is good!]

[Who won't be satisfied with that?]

Tang Yuan still didn't understand his intention. However, he kept his mouth shut when he saw that Jun Mo Xie was getting angry. So, he only responded in agreement from there on. In fact, he himself hadn't thought of it... when had his childhood friend — some he used to go debauching-around — become so authoritative and domineering?

"Song Shang, you will brew wine during this time, and provide it to our families; do you understand? You will also be responsible for the Aristocratic Hall's security at night. Ensure that no mishap occurs!"

"I understand, Master."

"Hai Chen Feng, I want you to consolidate the underworld during the time I'm away. The amount of fighting strength you gather isn't that important to me. Rather, I would like you to gather as much intelligence as you can. Are you clear on that? For example; the beggars on the Capital's street, the people in restaurants, the barman, the pimps of various brothels, the men who stand and keep watch at the doors of the influential families and so on... Utilize their hidden talents, uncover the valuable intelligence, and record it. Intelligence is the first priority here. You can look to deal with the issue of military strength once you've established a definite line of intelligence. Do you understand?"

A cold light flickered in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. He had spoken the entire set of instructions in one breath. It had embodied the most important purpose for his control over the gangs. Therefore, it was very important that Hai Chen Feng understood it properly.

"I understand. The Young Master can feel relieved. I, Hai Chen Feng, will consolidate Tian Xiang City's gangs, and set-up a watertight intelligence network," Hai Chen Feng solemnly replied. He had clearly understood Jun Mo Xie's idea.

"Ahem! Good. Now, we come to another matter. This matter is of the utmost importance. It is something I won't compromise on; and that is the Jun Family's security. Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang, you both will be in charge of this matter. I will say this in short — I won't permit any mishaps. None whatsoever! Nothing at all! No matter the situation! Do you understand?!"

"Be at ease, Young Master! Anyone who wishes to mess with the Jun Family will have to pass over our dead bodies!" Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang replied in unison.

"Ahem! Then, I'm relieved," Jun Mo Xie nodded slightly. He then took out another porcelain bottle, "There are three Dan pills in this; for each of you. Take them. These will serve to increase your Xuan Qi cultivation by ten years! Tang Yuan, you can take Hai Chen Feng's assistance in this matter. And another thing, this

matter is a secret of top priority. None of you is to divulge anything outside!"

The three people replied in unison with fanatical looks in their eyes. [To be able to increase Xuan Qi cultivation by ten years!] Tang Yuan wouldn't pay attention to matters pertaining martial strength under normal circumstances. However, even he wasn't foolish enough to disregard this, and got all excited about it. Hai Chen Feng and the Song Shang were both Sky Xuan experts. Their understanding of this matter was obviously more profound.

"You're all temporarily dismissed. Hurry up and go. I will leave for battle this afternoon. There's no need to see me off," Jun Mo Xie waved his hand. His eyes revealed a strange expression as he slowly continued, "If everything goes smoothly on this trip... then when we return... he he..." He laughed in a profound manner. His eyes shone with a cold light that was akin to the one that's reflected off a sword's edge.

The people who saw this couldn't help but tremble. [What plan does this Young Master have? And, how can his expression be so scary?]

The sun had shifted slightly to the west. The drums for the army's assembling rumbled loudly on the massive drill-ground. Their echoes shook the heavens and earth.

Generals chose morning-time go to battle for the most part; preferably sunrise. They'd take the rising Sun to be auspicious. However, the vows before the troops were being taken at noon in this case. This was somewhat different to the usual practice. And, this wasn't a very good idea to say the least about it. How could it be good if the sun quickly set in the west? But, the Emperor of the Tian Xiang Empire had decided this, and no one had dared to ask the reason.

The biting-cold autumn wind dried-up, and boiled over the ground. What regrets would a man have if he could achieve such a

feat?

[Let this magnificent army of men and horses follow me impassioned! All without exception will go forward — disregarding life and death!]

Mountains of joyous shouts echoed like tsunamis. It was amongst all this cheering that Jun Wu Yi grasped his wheelchair, and turned around to face His Majesty. He cupped his fists, "Your Majesty, your humble official Jun Wu Yi seeks to resign from his post in order to lead the army."

"I allow you to do so," the Emperor's face had turned red as loud celebratory music started to play.

"Play the music. Send off the Empire's heroes into battle!" Grandfather Dugu Zong Heng stepped forward, and proclaimed with a loud and majestic roar.

The battle drums echoed loudly like a surging tide since they were played with enthusiasm.

Eight horsemen attired in neat battle-clothing and shining armors carried the banner on their staffs. They led the way on their eight horses.

The biting-cold autumn wind blew upon the large banner, and made it rise up. It was the color of blood, and had a single golden word on it — "Jun."

The eyes of some of Tian Xiang's veteran soldiers had welled-up with tears.

The Jun Family's war-banner!

This banner had always symbolized unparalleled victory! This flag was a banner of iron and blood! It had finally risen again after an absence of ten years! However, it still excited everyone's souls; just as it had in the past! It still rolled-up in this weather; just as it had in the past!



The sound of hoof-beats was methodically emanated. The echoes rose as squadron-after-squadron of brightly armored cavalrymen moved out in formation, and slowly formed a vast and mighty torrent of steel as they galloped away in the wind.

A blade was raised towards the blue dome of heaven. The sword was pointed towards Tian Fa. The hero of a hundred battles had moved out. And, the hero's blood hadn't gone cold yet.

[Tian Fa! I'm coming!]

# Chapter 315: To Violate the Army's Disciplinary Laws

---

The day after the army had set off... or to be more precise... on the midnight of the day the army had set off — the real client of the Blood Sword Hall, the Emperor of the Tian Xiang Empire — finally received the news he had been waiting for. The Zhao Family's men who had had crossed into the Capital's region had been wiped out along with the troops they had hired from the Southern Trade Union. The Second Prince's Devine Storm Guard had suffered the same fate.

The Emperor didn't find this news-report shocking; in fact, it was expected. Otherwise, wouldn't things have failed to live up to his arrangements? However, the news-report wasn't limited to this information. This was because the annihilation hadn't been limited to the aforementioned deaths. The members of the Blood Sword Hall who had taken part in the operation had also died a violent death.

The three Sky Xuan experts, fifteen Earth Xuan assassins, and forty Jade Xuan assassins — all had been eliminated. This news was shocking; in fact, it was extremely shocking.

One would've needed immense fighting-strength in order to destroy such a force. And, this was different from an ordinary defeat... perhaps even an 'attack and a rout' situation. Rather, it was the complete destruction of an entire military group; not a single person had been able to escape.

In addition, the main reason for these events had disappeared without a trace. That is... the meticulously manufactured ultra-killing weapons made using the Xuan Beasts' tendons and highly tempered steel — which several powers had been vying and hoping for — had also disappeared without a trace.

The Emperor had ransacked his table, and had his cup had fallen

down. The spirit of his gloomy face didn't revive for many days to come. The crossbows and the strength of the Blood Sword Hall had held great importance for the Emperor. He had never expected that his flawless arrangements would go awry instead of capturing those crossbows. In fact, he hadn't merely lost-out on the crossbows. He had also lost the elite troops that constituted nearly half of the covert martial strength under his command to this unfathomable mystery.

The fact that made him even angrier was that this event had left no clues behind. So, he couldn't determine who had been behind this incident. So much so, that even the tiniest clues hadn't been left behind. How wouldn't the Tian Xiang Empire's Emperor be gloomy? How could he not be angry? This gloom and anger resulted in a cloud of worry and a fog of misery in the Imperial Palace. Everyone trembled with fear and treaded with caution since no one wanted to anger the 'unhappy' Emperor.

As for the effect of the news of this event on the Second Prince... he fainted when he heard this news. This isn't an exaggeration... he had genuinely fainted on the spot.

That was understandable. After all, he had suffered the greatest damage amongst all the participants. He had expended the highest amount of resources from the start to the finish. In fact, he couldn't afford the final outcome of it. The Second Prince had paid for the raw materials that were required for the manufacturing. In fact, he had paid a very high price for them. Perhaps, one should say that he had paid an astronomically high price. Then, he had paid double for the manufacturing cost. The Prince had also engaged a lot of manpower for the transport arrangements. And now, he had suffered a dead loss. Moreover, his Devine Storm Guard had also been annihilated in its entirety; they were the Second Prince's most elite troops!

One could say that he had gone bankrupt while paying for another's wedding dress. The fact that was even more exasperating

was that he didn't know who that 'other person' was... The Second Prince probably wouldn't have been able to figure out a way of responding to this situation if he hadn't already fainted in the first place...

Another person was similarly gloomy. It was Li You Ran. The Young Master Li hadn't suffered the loss of a fortune like the Second Prince. But, he had still paid a considerable amount. One could say that he had lost his hard earned savings...

He had sent half of the most elite of his family's secretly trained warriors for this task. And, they had been completely annihilated. Moreover, one of his senior brother-disciples was killed, and turned to minced-meat.

However, the fact that made him even more depressed was that — he didn't know whom to retaliate against. [Should I look for the Blood Sword Hall? Should I find that assassin and take revenge?] Wouldn't the Great Cold-Blooded Master Lei Wu Bei go mad if he didn't take revenge? Moreover, his two remaining senior disciples had been so shaken that they hadn't even brought their deceased brother-disciple's body back. In fact, he reckoned that his senior brother-disciple and his senior sister-disciple wouldn't stay with him for long either.

Nine senior brother-disciples and one senior sister-disciple had come to Tian Xiang City a fortnight ago in order to help him with his plans. However, eight had already died by now. And, the remaining two had transformed into thoroughly frightened creatures.

The Li Family's Young Master — Li You Ran — resented this situation to no end.

Something else had also added to the fire. He had sent some of his powerful seniors to formally gain control over Tian Xiang City's underworld a few nights ago. However, they had unexpectedly been attacked the same night, and had been forced to retreat. And,

the Jin Yang gang had engulfed the entire underworld as a result.

The Jin Yang gang had already become the biggest group in Tian Xiang's underworld. In fact, they didn't have any competitors.

[Senior Brother Lei Jian Hong and Senior Sister Fang Piao Hong fought the enemies tonight. These two Sky Xuan experts battled the counterparts. Their enemies' strength was indeed greater than my seniors, but these two senior-disciples have failed in the true sense. They become flustered, and lost all intention to fight-back. A Sky Xuan expert must at least be able to maintain their composure and status!] Li You Ran was especially angry at that point. And, the two seniors had also realized their problem. They were ashamed of letting their junior down, and asked him to let them leave. They wished to find Master Lei Wu Bei in order to discuss the countermeasures with him.

Li You Ran had readily agreed. He had naturally provided them with a great amount of money for their travels. He had politely seen them off to their journey as well. However, muttered curses had arisen from the usually calm Young Master Li You Ran's mouth after the two left. He had suddenly raised his leg, and had smashed his family's door with a kick...

He had already reached Jade Xuan realm. Therefore, he had become quite powerful. His ferocious kick had thoroughly destroyed the door.

It was a proper and incisive kick.

"Jin Yan Gang...? You think that I don't know that you're Jun Mo Xie's people?" Li You Ran's fists clenched. Then, his expression had gradually calmed down, and he had slowly loosened his fists. Suddenly, a gentle smile had stretched across his face. "Jun Mo Xie has left the Capital now. Do you think that I won't be able to deal with you now? Do you think that I won't be able to handle you now? I have many ricks. It would be hard to beat you head-on, but round-about ways can also achieve the same goal!"

The Young Master Jun's blood had boiled during the ceremony of vows that had taken place before they had set out to war. This was the first time that he had felt like a hot-blooded heroic son of a military family. However, Jun Mo Xie had found himself unable to bear the military's customs after merely half-a-day's journey from the Capital. It was too much for him to take!

[That's forbidden! That won't do either!] Jun Mo Xie had later discovered walking without consent, and even laughing or speaking out-of-turn was improper in his third Uncle's eyes.

Jun Wu Yi had stayed away from the military for more than ten years. But, this barbaric control of the army had brought victories in the past. He seemingly watched over those who weren't pleasing to his eyes with a cold and scowling face, and acted against them with swift and decisive decisions. He would especially nitpick with the group of debauchees — headed by his own nephew — even more harshly for no reason since they weren't pleasing to look at. So, if he saw one of them... he would scold that 'one' youngster. If he saw two of them... he would scold them both.

Therefore, it was fair and reasonable that Jun Mo Xie, Murong Qian Jun, Meng Hai Zhou, Meng Fei, Li Zhen, Li Feng, etc... these Young Masters of the various families were left to whine to no end.

Jun Mo Xie knew that his uncle would need strict authority over the military to hold the battle formations. For that, his uncle needed to establish his prestige. He would need to set-up the image of harsh and firm military discipline since that would ensure strict obedience when they marched into a battle. Could they possibly go to war if indiscipline was rife in the Army? That would be like marching to their death!

Therefore, Jun Wu Yi needed several 'out of luck' and 'damnable' scapegoats in order to establish his prestige.

It was a classic case of 'killing one to warn the many'. He would set an example as a warning to others in order to implement

military discipline.

However, Jun Mo Xie hadn't expected that he would be the first 'out of luck' scapegoat.

This incident would sound rather melodramatic... Jun Mo Xie had been riding his horse, and had been fighting an urge to urinate for half-the-afternoon. He took a look around. They had left the city's walls long ago. There were woods to his left, and farms to his right; some hamlets could be seen a little distance ahead. [The troops are advancing forward without a break. So, how do I deal with this?] This was an extremely difficult situation for the Young Master Jun. So, he swung his leg down his horse. Then, he stealthily slipped-away to some nearby trees. He untied his trousers, and let-out a single stream without any restraint.

There were several trees before his eyes. The magnificent army was marching forward behind him; very close behind him. In fact, they were so close to the trees that the men at the extreme opposite side of this procession of troops could stretch their hand, and fish-out a bird's eggs...

Therefore, the Young Master Jun let out his urinary stream in a highly spirited and invigoratingly straight line.

He had burst-out to his heart's content. Then, he shook 'it' quickly after he was finished. He was about to pull-up his trousers. But, he suddenly realized that two hands had been placed on his shoulders.

"You've separated from the formation without permission. You've ignored the army's discipline, and you've disrupted the public morals by urinating in front of everyone! Young General, we request that you come with us," Two Military Police personnel arrived like heavenly troops, and caught Jun Mo Xie red-handed.

"What... doesn't that sound unreasonable, ah? I obviously have my back to everyone. So, how can you say that I was urinating in front of them?" Jun Mo Xie contended on strong grounds.

However, the two 'impartial' law officials grabbed him, and took him with them. The pitiful Young Master Jun didn't even get time to pull-up his trousers! His 'thing' was somewhat discernable to prying eyes. He was seized, and brought under the graceful banner of Jun Wu Yi.

The results were good, and Jun Wu Yi — the commander from the Jun family — put on a show in front of his headquarters. He ceremoniously punished Jun Mo Xie at the official gates with the serious penalty of twenty lashings with truncheons.

If the punishment was too heavy for this crime... then no one called it 'heavy'. And, if it was lenient... then no one called it that either. No one asked mercy for Jun Mo Xie. But, that was only natural. Everyone knew that Commander Jun had found an excuse to put on a display. Moreover, the Young Master Jun didn't have friendly relations with anyone there.

Most real men don't cry in such situations. However, Jun Mo Xie nearly wept. He looked up and clenched his teeth as he said, "Third Uncle, you are 'using your authority to bring about order'. It is this little nephew's bad luck that he had erred a little... but, this is the first time ah..."

"Silence! We're general and subordinate in the army camp. I'm not your Third Uncle. And, you're not my nephew. Deputy General, you've spoken rudely, and you've disrupted the army's discipline. Add ten more hits to his penalty!" Third Master Jun's expression was serious.

Young Master Jun clearly understood that he dare not utter another word. He was sure that he would be hit many more times if he spoke-up again.

The truncheon crackled thirty times, and everyone kept quiet. Many debauchees were present there to witness; old and young. They reveled in his misfortune, but they didn't speak a word. That itself was a desired result.



However, Commander Jun was aware of his nephews' skills. It would've seemed that Jun Mo Xie had suffered serious injuries when one looked at his posterior turning all red-and-blue. However, it wasn't a big deal in reality. In fact, it wouldn't have harmed him much even if he had been struck three hundred times; let alone thirty times. However, he had just caught his nephew red-handed after the military operations had already started. And so, he hit upon an idea. [This kid erred. He's extremely undisciplined. This isn't a good thing.] The Jun Family was a family of generals at the end of the day. So, he had decided to use that opportunity to carefully temper his nephews' temperament. This would be important in laying out a foundation in case he had to lead troops into battle in the future.

As a matter of fact... this idea's origin could be barely credited to Jun Wu Yi. Grandpa Jun had exhorted him to ferociously train Jun Mo Xie before they had departed for war. In other words, he had been given this license by Grandpa Jun himself. So, the Third Master Jun had prepared himself to ill-treat his nephew in an unrestrained manner.

However, it was still a bit too much for the youngster's first act of indiscipline.

Jun Mo Xie covered his buttocks after he had received that lashing of thirty truncheons, and walked out of the Commander's tent with his teeth gnashed. Then, he started to look around for someone he didn't like.

"Ah! Is that the all-powerful Jun Family's Third Young Master? What's with that expression? Is this the first time the Commander has educated you? He he he... Third Young Master Jun, you look very handsome when you cover your butts with your hands! This Young Master really admires you!" Jun Mo Xie had been his rival-in-love over Princess Ling Meng in the days gone by. So, the Murong Family's Young Master — Murong Qian Jun — peculiarly shook his shoulders in an exaggerated manner. In fact, it seemed

that he was deliberately making a crackling sound of laughter. Meng Hai Zhou and others were present in the vicinity as well. They roared with laughter at this.

Jun Mo Xie didn't say a thing. He simply walked-over and stationed himself in front of Murong Qian Jun. Then, he suddenly snatched a pike from a soldier who stood beside him. He then used it as a truncheon, and rained-down attacks on the opposite party. He drilled-in an attack with that pike-truncheon at a very fast speed.

[This Young Master had found no place to vent his belly full of anger. Yet, you still dared to provoke me? Are trying to court your bad luck?]

[This is what they call 'intolerable'!]

[This Young Master Jun – at the very least — won't tolerate it!]

What else could Murong Qian Jun expect? The other party had erred, and had broken the army's discipline. And then, the former had still tried to 'take his case' in front of their peers. However, he had been caught off-guard by the Young Master Jun's retaliation.

He wouldn't have been able to avoid it even if he had been prepared for it. He was struck by the truncheon. His eyes instantly filled with a golden light, and stars started to glitter in front of them.

The Murong family's skulls were rather perfect in their bone-structure. The pike hit him dead in the center, and broke off. Murong Qian Jun's skull was perfect, but his forehead was even superior in quality. A red lump — the size of a finger, and as thick as an egg — rose-up right in the center of his forehead at a visibly astonishing speed. In fact, it even made a 'whooshing' sound. It erected straight-up like a unicorn's horn.

"Oh? Isn't this the graceful and elegant Young Master Murong? Is that a pen\*s on his head? Don't tell me that this is his innate

talent? Is it possible that his 'thing' isn't inside his pants, but on his forehead instead? It's a pity... such a pity that there's only one egg to it. But, it has a very graceful shape. In fact, it is unrivalled all throughout the land. It is genuinely unprecedented. I truly admire it!" Jun Mo Xie burst out laughing as he made a gesture with his head. His gesture couldn't be considered as 'lame' in front of that shape on Murong Qian Jun's head. Then, he threw away the now-half-pike, and left with long strides.

He had exported his Qi in this strike. So, that the pike hit Murong Qian Jun with just the precise amount of strength, and his skin didn't break. However, this caused his forehead to swell to its maximum extent, and created an 'amazing and astonishing' effect.

Everyone who heard that remark turned to look — only to find a lump on Murong Qian Jun's forehead. It was erect, and amazingly resembled a pen\*s. It looked like an especially rare one since it somewhat lacked in length. But, it was of perfect thickness, and had a remarkable likeness in all other respects. It had been imitated to perfection, and was very lifelike!

## Chapter 316: The Malignant Tumor Serves as the Vanguard

---

"Hahaha..." Everyone who witnessed this funny and extremely strange scene couldn't help but laugh heartily. Murong Qian Jun had come to taunt Jun Mo Xie's debauchee like behavior. But, he was smiling through his running nose and eyes as well. In fact, he held his stomach the whole time.

The vicinity was brimming with great and experienced men. They had all been married, and knew what Jun Mo Xie's remark and gestures meant. Moreover, this kind of vulgarity had been rather common throughout their military life. However, this sudden act by Jun Mo Xie had unexpectedly been rather funny.

Even the battlefield-commanders couldn't help the corners of their mouth draw into a smile. And then, their mouths opened as they burst out into laughter. They laughed loudly at first. Then, they realized that it was improper to do so. So, they tried to restrain themselves. However, they soon realized that it was no use. So, they started to laugh in an unrestrained manner.

However, Murong Qian Jun soon found himself in confusion since he was unaware of the real joke. The Murong Family's laughing stock had merely felt an unbearable pain on his head, but didn't know anything about the 'unbridled transformation' that had taken place on it. He couldn't help but get angry as he asked, "Is this that funny? He has attacked a fellow soldier inside the army camp. It could be said that he has committed a grave crime! This Young Master... this General demands that a report of this matter goes to the Commander-in-Chief so that Jun Mo Xie gets severe punishment! Hey! What're you laughing at? What's so funny?"

The lone pen\*s-like lump on his head had started to glitter bright-red in the sunlight. In fact, it had expanded, and had gained

more strength. Moreover, the blood that surged upwards through his head which made 'it' seem even more sinister and towering as he seemingly got angrier. The lump had transformed the man's 'elegant' face in its entirety. He spoke in a very serious tone, but the effect became increasingly comical.

He had asked everyone to restrain themselves. But, they weren't able to change their outer appearance, and continued to laugh. Everyone held their bellies as they started to roll around on the ground, "Ah! This is extremely funny! I will die! Kindly forgive me. Hahaha..."

Jun Wu Yi and the other high-ranking officers hurriedly arrived after they received the news of this event. They became extremely angry for a moment after they saw the disturbance. However, they then saw that peculiar lump on Murong Qian Jun's head, and felt like bursting out into laughter. However, they suddenly remembered that it wasn't proper to laugh in this situation. So, they quickly restrained themselves. But, they were unable to make it work, and their smiling expressions still rose to the surface. Soon, everyone started to choke in attempts to restrain themselves. Even the constantly solemn Commander Jun wasn't an exception.

Jun Mo Xie wasn't going to have a lucky escape. He was punished again. Commander Jun was extremely angry. He nearly had the little beast imprisoned.

[This is too much trouble. What can we do in this matter?]

[This is the 'legendary' trouble-spreading evil spirit!]

However, the trouble-spreading evil spirit clearly wasn't done yet. This was because the event still hadn't concluded.

Two sides collided that very same evening after the encampment had been set up. The Murong Family's Guards were out to avenge their Young Master. So, they clashed with Jun Mo Xie's two-hundred-and-fifty men.

Jun Mo Xie was helpless as far as this figure of merely 250 was concerned. He would've been happier if even one more man would've been able to join. However, his men had sustained severe injuries in their previous assignment. So, four of his men were unable to join them. However, the remaining 250 men weren't hindered by the condition of their injuries, and were fit to accompany him. Therefore, he had ordered them to enlist in the military for the glory and honor. However, Jun Mo Xie was depressed that they weren't able to train properly because of the army's routine.

[I guess I'll only have to make do with these 250. Well, it's 250 plus me. So, that makes it 251. This will drive this Young Master Mad. We should each grab a person's leg and break it. But, that doesn't sound right ah. It would be pretty stupid if we break only one leg each ah. We should at least break two legs each. That's not enough either ah... After all, it's 251 of us ah! Let's beat them up properly then!]

The outcome of the conflict was a huge upset. It caused many people to drop their spectacles. Those mere 250 turned out to be very fierce and tough. They attacked the 500 Murong Family's Guards, and beat them to a complete rout. The victims were obviously left to grumble endlessly since they were unspeakably cruel. In fact, over ten of the Murong Guards had been genuinely maimed.

This gave rise to a lot of anger. Numerous influential families accused Jun Mo Xie. And, he retaliated measure-for-measure. It seemed that there would be another bloody conflict soon.

Jun Wu Yi realized that his father's expectations were utter fantasy; same as his own. Jun Mo Xie was a troublemaker in the army. In fact, he was like a malignant tumor. So, it would be best to remove him as fast as possible. The rotten fish would ruin the entire dish if he were to remain there for long.

[The afternoon has barely passed. Even a day's time isn't yet

over. Evening time hasn't even set properly, and the sky still hasn't darkened. And yet, this youngster has already obtained three punishments. Moreover, this kid is committing all offenses that shouldn't be committed. He would've already been beheaded twice if I were to treat him according to the military's law.]

Therefore, after another round of beating was ordered as punishment. It was followed by a lengthy and severe reprimanding tirade...

"You and your 250 men will get a special assignment." Jun Wu Yi stated, "You brat, you will get a special assignment to redeem yourself in light of performance. The special order for Jun Mo Xie is that — he will clear the way for the vanguard. He will open paths in mountains, and bridge streams. And, he will be held responsible if the army suffers any damage in this journey because of his negligence!"

Jun Mo Xie felt that he had been granted amnesty when he heard his special punishment. Jun Mo Xie was so delighted that he clasped his hands in the air like a common man who had achieved his life's dream. He replied in an opera-like dramatic tone. In fact, he got so dramatic that he nearly sung out his acceptance, "I needed... ah... this assignment..."

He then raised his hands like a goose's wings. Then, he started to circle-around. He flew half a circle. Then, he took a couple of steps as if he was passing over an obstacle. Then, he quickened his pace, and flew out of the tent.

The men in the tent couldn't help but stare. They couldn't help but burst out laughing. [Is this the Jun Family's sole member of the third generation? Is he really the descendant of a military family?]

Commander Jun Wu Yi was a loss. He had no choice but to think of the following two words — Family misfortune.

Jun Mo Xie took his Third Uncle's gloom into account. [I've made a very shitty name for myself in the army's way of life. I've

received three severe beating in just half-a-days' time. Moreover, there was no argument that I could've used in my favor to prevent these punishments. It would take about a month to reach Tian Fa. Whether I had lived or died... whether I had lost face or didn't... one thing was for sure — the Iron Butt would've reached miraculous heights.]

[I've been given the responsibility to be a trail-opener from this moment onwards. I'm not very proficient at opening roads, or bridging streams. But, any robber we encounter along the way will be dealt with effectively. Not a single shall remain!]

[This is such a great opportunity to train my troops!]

Jun Mo Xie accepted the orders since he feared a change of command from the Commander. Then, he quickly ordered his 250 men to strike camp the same evening. They then disappeared into the darkness like a sharp arrow... just as Commander Jun had ordered. The 250+1 men disappeared without a trace.

Two days later, Commander Jun Wu Yi discovered that it was a brilliant decision to send Jun Mo Xie as a vanguard. In fact, it was an amazing and wise decision that could make for a great legend.

The best way to employ a person's true talent is to place them in the right position.

The journey became extremely smooth. The army's march had started to seem like a site-seeing tour. They followed Jun Mo Xie's vanguard unit. So, there was no need for them to be frightened since there was no danger up ahead. As for the officials along the way — they welcomed the army heartily in fear of the reception not being satisfactory. And, they even came forward and gave some the military some supply materials. There was no case of embezzlement.

Jun Mo Xie initiated a thorough sweep to completely wipe-out the bandits. In fact, he even went 200kms beyond the official route to deal with them. This vanguard unit led by Jun Mo Xie wiped out



all the bandits throughout the journey!

The entire journey was bloody; a hundred percent bloody.

The Young Master Jun's 'Heaven Destroyer Team' and 'Spirit Devourer Team' had used this bloody journey to accustom themselves to purely bloody conflicts.

These two-hundred-and-fifty men had been killing throughout the journey. Let alone Jun Mo Xie... even Jun Wu Yi could well-imagine the scene of the murderous aura that would be cultivated by the time they'd reach Tian Fa.

[Murderous aura and the bloody-lust are destined to become a part of those two platoon' souls!]

The passage through the first province was still acceptable to Jun Wu Yi. However, the passage through the second province was different. Jun Wu Yi looked at the Magistrate, and it literally seemed to him as if the man was a war-weary comrade who was about to start complaining about the women in the brothels.

However, the Magistrate looked at Jun Wu Yi with a strange expression in his eyes. It seemed as if he had just gotten to see his 'mother' after a long period of separation. No... it should be 'father'.

His face was full of tears and snot.

The Magistrate sounded a bit off as well. Jun Mo Xie's buttocks had started to ache from sitting on a saddle by the time he had reached the Magistrate's province. And thus, this Magistrate's parade had started...

First, the Young Master Jun wanted a carriage. What's more... he wanted it to be extremely luxurious. And, he wanted it completed in a days' time. Further, he wanted the work's progress-reported every hour. However, the Young Master didn't stop here. He also displayed the amazingly erudite accounting skills that he had acquired in his previous life. He settled the entirety of the

Magistrate's accounts... accounts which had been compounding over the years.

This full-grown man of a Magistrate trembled in fear. He summoned artisans from near and far. He ordered them to build a carriage with the utmost caution and the harshest of adherence to standards. He ordered them to produce a carriage which offered the most comfortable ride and fast speeds. Thereafter, he was able to present an extremely luxurious carriage to Jun Mo Xie within the stipulated time.

Moreover, the material required to produce this carriage had been purchased with the money this Magistrate had coveted from the province's treasury over the years. In fact, the cost of production was so extravagant that the Magistrate was forced to borrow money.

The pitiful Magistrate trembled with fear as he came to Jun Mo Xie's vanguard unit to report the completion of the build. Jun Mo Xie was holding the accounts book at the time. In fact, he was treating it as a fan. He wished to educate that one man in all sincerity.

"I say Fei Zhu Chang..." This person's name was Fie Zhu Chang! It meant fat pig's intestines... The Young Master Jun found it hard to deal with this. He couldn't help clicking his tongue. [It's a big world, but there's nothing weirder than this name. This guy's parents must've been on a whole new level!]

"Aren't you too unprofessional? The so-called Heavenly Emperor had made you a Magistrate five years ago. And, you could only rake-in less than fifty thousand silver taels? This is extremely disappointing. Damn! Being corrupt will do you no good. No wonder... you're forty years old, and still a mere trash Magistrate! Five years of your greed and corruption has stained this land. Have you gobbled-up that carriage of mine as well? Is that what you're here to tell me?" Jun Mo Xie shook his head and sighed. It was evident that misfortune and fury was about to befall the man.

"I, yes... the General is right. This Magistrate is very incompetent," the Magistrate replied. He wiped the cold sweat off his face as he trembled in fear. However, he complained in his heart. [My holy ancestors ah! The carriage and its wheels are made from a hundred year old red sandalwood. The interiors are inlaid with four types of pearls. And, I've paid for this with my own money. The red sandalwood I could purchase wasn't enough... So, you tore out my family's door and my bed's planks. What else do you want? Why do you still bring-up my acts of corruption? My Family has become poor and wretched, and my butt has been soaked in debt. Yet, you still won't allow me to live in peace?]

## Chapter 317: Two Girls — Two Problems

---

"Alas, the Qing prefecture's Governor has garnered hundreds-of-thousand in silver taels from the last three years' harvest. Unfortunately, this Magistrate has only raked in fifty-thousand in the past five years! You're a good for nothing!" Jun Mo Xie continued to sigh.

[You yourself said that the prefecture's Governor raked-in hundreds-of-thousands. But, I'm just a Province-magistrate. There are tens-of-thousands of Province-Magistrates under his jurisdiction. Isn't my position... very different from the Prefecture-Governor's?] Fei Zhu Chang continued to complain within his heart. However, his outer appearance was reverent and respectful as he listened to the Great Vanguard Jun admonish him.

"Anyway, it doesn't matter. Maybe you've gained knowledge after falling into the moat. Perhaps, you'll know what to do when this Young Master returns. This Young Master is likely to return from Tian Fa in two months. And, I fear that I won't be able to sit in this carriage then. You must pay special attention to time over these two months. Tax the people brutally, and embezzle as much money as quickly as you can. And, there should be a better carriage waiting when this Young Master returns. You must start the preparations early. You mustn't have to rush-about like this. Opportunities are always set aside for those who are prepared..." the Young Master Jun stated.

Fei Zhu Chang dropped down to the ground, and banged his head against it. He started to cry, and his gurgling voice came out, "Young General! This lowly Magistrate won't dare! He will repent for his past mistakes, and turn a new leaf! This Magistrate will mend his mistaken ways, and get back on the correct path! This prodigal son will return to the path of righteousness! I will repent and start afresh; I shall begin my life anew! I will firmly work my heart-out for the benefit of the people! This lowly man will strive

to do the utmost. He shall leave no stone unturned in this regard..."

"You're very cultured! You've actually spoken so many idioms! Say more of them! Maybe I'll become compassionate and show mercy... and what not," Jun Mo Xie laughed and sang out those words as he looked at him in a praiseworthy manner.

Fei Zhu Chang kowtowed in adulation. He had decided that he would rather die than remain unchanged. The man had decided that he would become an honest and upright Magistrate; a good Magistrate. [I cannot remain a corrupt official anymore! I now know the sufferings of a corrupt official...]

[I regret my past behavior... Will I have to make another chariot for this man if he returns in two months?]

[I will weep rivers in my heart!]

[I reckon I'll lose my life if I cry in his presence...]

[I must call my subordinate officials, and I must tell them to cease their corrupt governance. I must tell them to become honest and upright... to serve the people...]

The Young Master Jun had fiercely plundered the region for bandits again. He had previously sent out the Spirit Devourer Team. They had returned carrying someone's head. The blood was dripping on the ground with a "pitter-patter" sound. The blood dripped all over the Magistrate's official lobby. It practically terrified the pitiful Fei Zhu Chang; in fact, he nearly fainted.

[This is a person's head... damn me! How many of these are there in total...]

Jun Mo Xie's vanguard-unit ate their fill. They then patted their posteriors and left once they had sufficiently extorted the man. Fei Zhu Chang raised his head in hope. He hoped to see Jun Wu Yi's forces soon. This was because the Young Master Jun had told him, "I will return and make you build another carriage if there any

problem with the army's supplies. And, I will break the new carriage if it's not good enough. Also, the quality of the supplies will be decided by Commander Jun Wu Yi. So, you consider all of this properly, got it...?"

Therefore, Fei Zhu Chang's overenthusiasm made the hair on the back of Jun Wu Yi's neck stand on an end. [What's with this person?]

Meanwhile, Jun Mo Xie continued to lead his two-hundred-and-fifty men — 'Heaven Destroyer Team' and 'Spirit Devourer Team' — down the road to the south in high spirits. There seemingly wasn't a need to open mountain paths or bridge streams. However, they spread a reign of terror along their route.

He painstakingly tempered them throughout the journey in a bloody manner. Their strength increased by leaps and bounds, and they made extremely rapid progress. The temperament of each man was becoming increasingly murderous. Each one of them was like an evil demon that had been let loose from the very depths of hell. Their expressions were ruthless — so was their aura. And, both these traits were clearly visible on the surface. They were like a frightening team of meat-grinders on the battlefield.

Such a force naturally moved with lightning speed. The teams were sent out every day to deal with the bandits. They would go one team at a time as per the duty roster. However, the teams had a competition between them — to efficiently clean-up the hostiles, and eliminate them swiftly with great speed. Not a single opponent was to slip through their net. The team that would lose didn't suffer a very severe punishment. In fact, the punishment that was meted-out could even be called 'an easy one'... The team that was defeated in this competition had to wash the winner's underwear from the previous day; nothing more.

This competition led the men in those two teams to view the bandits as doubly-effective aphrodisiac. Or, perhaps delicious and fat pigs since they'd charge like wolves and tigers, and would chop

their prey like melons...

The penalty wasn't a big deal, but their reputation was...

Jun Mo Xie's vanguard had put a distance of 400km from the main army by the noon of the fifth day. Jun Mo Xie was seated leisurely inside the lead carriage, and it was being drawn by six horses. The carriage was quite spacious. It was two meters wide and three-and-a-half meters long. A small bed was placed inside. Yet, it still had enough space for a small wooden side-table. In fact, there was enough space to prompt Jun Mo Xie to call-in a meeting inside his carriage.

However, Jun Mo Xie had only done so once. Moreover, he hadn't even completed half of it when he was forced to call the meeting to an end. Not because of any major problems... it was just that the men had been traversing through the mountain passes the entire day. The soldiers were attired in clothes and shoes, but the smell of their feet was extremely pungent. It was capable of making people tumble. This was especially the case in this nearly fully-sealed carriage. That smell was similar to that of a salted fish which had been fried. It had taken Jun Mo Xie a full day to rid his carriage of that smell after the meeting had concluded prematurely.

"Young Master, please open... there are some people ahead. They are blocking the way," the man to speak was the head of the 'Spirit Devourer Team'; Wang Dong.

[These people must be extremely savage to leave a homicidal maniac like the 'Spirit Devourer Team's' chief to stammer...]

"Blocking the way? Bullsh\*t! Who in Tian Xiang Empire dares to block this Young Master's path?" Jun Mo Xie asked in surprise. He then first lifted the carriage's curtains, and then jumped down to see the people who had been audacious-enough to do such a thing.

Jun Mo Xie got out of the carriage to look. Then, something caught his attention. He then gasped. [My God! No wonder Wang

Dong was stuttering!]

[Unexpectedly...]

The scene in front wasn't too terrifying. There were two divinely beautiful women in front; nothing more. One charming person was dressed in purple clothes. She was extremely adorable and tender in appearance. She held a snow-white leopard cub. The tiny leopard cub looked at Jun Mo Xie and winked. He, it stuck out its tongue. It badly wanted to throw itself into Jun Mo Xie's arms.

The other woman wore a white dress. She had charming, cold and proud face. She was extremely beautiful. She had a graceful posture, and an unrivalled disposition.

The two beautiful figures looked at Jun Mo Xie with a satisfied expression that was akin to a cat's after it had caught a mouse.

Those two women were Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi.

Jun Mo Xie groaned. He felt that he'd faint.

This was too big a shock!

[No wonder I didn't see these two pester me for the two days before we left for the battle! I was mistaken to think that I had convinced them, but they had left home early in reality! And now, they're waiting for me here!]

[What do I do?!]

Young Master Jun felt regret at holding the position of the Vanguard for the first time...

In fact, he had many regrets... [How come these two scalding hot potatoes fell into my hands? I... my life is a disaster!]

[Why did I have to opt for this Vanguard Unit? Why could I have just followed the main army like a good boy? What troubles could've my Third Uncle's command have possibly posed? But, now... I can shout for days and no one will come to my aid... I could shout my lungs out and it would still be in vain...]



[This is the route to Tian Fa! This isn't a road for some vacation destination!]

Jun Mo Xie didn't know what he should say. What could he possibly say in such a pinch of a situation?

The Young Master Jun restlessly turned his head back. He hoped that Jun Wu Yi would arrive from behind the smoke... that his Uncle would lead their army of twenty thousand and drop from the sky to save him from that fiery cauldron.

[That's too extravagant a hope... The distance between our two sides is over 400km at the least... there isn't enough time.]

"Don't look like that. It's useless to look like that. We had made proper enquiries, and we've come here to wait for you," Guan Qing Han spoke indifferently as she looked at him. "You can come out of the carriage. Xiao Yi and I will travel in it. You can ride on the horse. You don't object to it, right?"

Jun Mo Xie became speechless for a while.

[Does this seem like an amiable discussion? Would I have an objection? Would I dare to have any objection? Isn't this what you call 'tyrannical behavior'? As a matter of fact... this is exactly what it is. My behavior with that Fei Zhu Chang was far more straightforward than the conduct of this magnate of a woman. She's overtaking my carriage... This is exactly like the 'legendary turtledove taking over the magpie's nest' scenario!]

The members of the Spirit Devourer Team were secretly sniggering. Jun Mo Xie glanced at them in rage. That made the sniggering stop in an instant, and they started to gaze straight-ahead with a solemn look on their faces.

"Ke ke..." Jun Mo Xie cleared his throat, and prepared to use his honeyed tongue. He aimed to convince the seemingly beautiful women to return to the right path. "Listen to me Elder Sister-in-law and furthermore... Young Lady Dugu..."

"Elder Brother Mo Xie, aren't you pleasantly surprised to see me? Isn't this quite unexpected? Don't you wish to hug me? I know! I clearly understand that this is what it is about!" Dugu Xiao Yi was all smiles. She suddenly jumped in front of Jun Mo Xie, tilted her head and smiled.

Little White still felt like throwing himself in Jun Mo Xie's arms. However, the eldest daughter of the Dugu Family restrained herself for the sake of her modesty. Little White was already jumping-about, but Dugu Xiao Yi wanted to wait for Jun Mo Xie to take the initiative before she threw herself at him.

[Pleasantly surprised?]

[I feel frightened. And, yes this incident is very unexpected... And hug you? I feel like spanking your small butt.] Then, Jun Mo Xie glanced at her butt, and reckoned that it couldn't be considered very small. He wondered how it would feel if he were to spank it a couple of times...

Jun Mo Xie subtly indulged in flights of fancies for a while. Then, he came back to himself, and resolutely tried to make those two women go back. His complexion sank as he became very dignified, "Elder Sister-in-law, Young Lady Dugu... you're worried about us. And I — as a representative of all the personnel of the Tian Fa expedition's army — am very grateful. However, the road to Tian Fa passes through long and dangerous mountains. There are many bandits about. And, this road is also rampaging with man-eating beasts! Further, you two are single ladies. So, it will be very inappropriate to travel that far with you. Therefore, this man humbly requests you to return to the Tian Xiang City."

[Speaking of single... these two have come without any hand-maids! They think that this is a stroll in the park with beverages that are paid with public expenses?! We're genuinely going to a war here!]

"You give it a try, and I'll see who dares to send us back," Guan

Qing Han stated uncaringly as she looked at him coldly.

"Brother Mo Xie, do you really have the heart to send us back after we've made our way till here?" Dugu Xiao Yi wasn't as confident as Guan Qing Han. So, she looked at him pitifully. The rims of her eyes had become red. It seemed that she would start to weep anytime, "Besides the distance from here to the Capital is more than five hundred kilometers. It's such a long way back! What would you do if something happened to Elder Sister and me? The road is dangerous, and who can fathom a man's mind?"

"Don't follow me. Crying in front of me is useless!" Jun Mo Xie stated in an aloof manner. [I know the path is dangerous... Can't fathom a man's mind? You didn't take that into account when you set out? You think such a lie will work with this Young Master? How stupid do you think I am?]

# Chapter 318: Turtledove Takes-over the Magpie's Nest

---

[This little girl's acting is excellent. But, how can this Young Master be convinced by it? She'll undergo a complete transformation the very next moment, and then she'll become extremely bossy and domineering.]

[How could someone see a demon and still not fear of anything sinister?] Jun Mo Xie was obliged to ask this of himself since he had experienced her transformations before. [It would be very unreasonable if I were to get fooled again!]

"Tell me, do you still wish to send Elder Sister and me back to the Capital?" Dugu Xiao Yi opened her round eyes wide. They were pretty and big. Those round eyes were quite moving as well. However, they had begun to threaten, and their speed of change towards hostility had started to increase.

"My two sisters... your presence will only cause more problems. Tell me, what can you do here? What are you capable of doing here? Would the two of you dare if it's required that you kill someone?"

Then, Jun Mo Xie sneered in disdain, "I'm telling you... obediently return. We're done with this topic. Otherwise, don't blame me if I pack-you-up like rice balls and send you back! And, don't ever think that I can't do it! However, you two will lose face if that were to happen!"

"How dare you?!" the little girl rebuked and bared her white teeth. They were very prominent.

"Let it be Xiao Yi; there's no need to request him. This man doesn't have any sympathy in his heart," Guan Qing Han spoke unenthusiastically as she remained standing on her spot. She expressionlessly looked at Jun Mo Xie even though she was

addressing Dugu Xiao Yi, "We'll go without him. Haven't we already travelled hundreds-of-kilometers till here by ourselves? Do we not have legs of our own? Can't we make it to Tian Fa forest on our own?"

"Exactly! What are you acting so pretentious for? We'll go on our own!" Dugu Xiao Yi raised her small chin, "Aren't you just a deputy general? My family has better! Humph! I've come across many great generals. But, even they aren't as arrogant as you!"

The two women turned and started to leave after they had ridiculed him. Jun Mo Xie was genuinely a bit anxious to see this happen. [I won't be able to avoid the tongue lashing if I let these two go to Tian Fa alone... even if they reach there safely. My grandpa, Third Uncle, Grandpa Dugu and Dugu Wu Di... it's unlikely that any one of them will let me off.] Jun Mo Xie could even guess their words, "You let these delicate women leave? You were at ease with the thought of these delicate girls travelling to the remote Tian Fa alone? What would you have done if something bad had happened? Nothing happened, but that isn't the point!"

"Stop! Get them for me!" Jun Mo Xie gnashed his teeth and gave the command. Seven-to-eight Spirit Devourer Team's members quickly set into action. They ruthlessly rushed forward, and blocked the two women's path like iron towers. Then, Jun Mo Xie groaned and spoke, "You two better be obedient towards my commands! Things will go good for you only as long as you're obedient! Humph! Otherwise..."

Jun Mo Xie stopped after he had spoken that. [Isn't this akin to a strong and evil robber threatening a common woman?]

"Jun Mo Xie, I insist on going to Tian Fa. But, if you use force to compel me to stay behind... I promise that I will kill myself right here! I — Guan Qing Han — will kill myself in front of you! Do you think that I won't dare to do it?" Guan Qing Han's expression was complex. But, she quickly drew a glittering dagger, and brought it to her throat.

[Jun Mo Xie, the only reason I insist on going to Tian Fa... is for yours and Third Uncle's sake. I don't worry about you two that much. But, I worry that the Xue Hun Manor will make things difficult for you because of me. Why else would I travel so far to that remote Tian Fa Forest with you? Do you think that I'm the type of girl who doesn't understand the severity of this matter?]

[You will disregard life and death for my sake. And, you wish to protect my innocence in spite of everything. Do you believe that I, Guan Qing Han, am a woman who forgets favors and does nothing while she sees you walk into the tiger's den?]

[Do you think that only men can commit suicide in righteousness and we women can only drift along and live without purpose? It's alright if things go smoothly in Tian Fa. But, if... then what will this Guan Qing Han do with her miserly life?]

Dugu Xiao Yi hadn't turned to take a look at her companion. However, she figured that Guan Qing Han's maneuver was seemingly useful. So, she became arrogant, and spoke with an air of complacency, "Right! We'll commit suicide if you don't let us go to Tian Fa! Do you think that we don't do it? Humph... he he..."

She had never seen anyone who was about to kill themselves behave with such pride. Guan Qing Han's words were very impassioned. However, the little girl had only laughed out since she hadn't understood this at first. She then turned around to look at her companion, and was left speechless upon realizing her resolve...

Jun Mo Xie felt a severe headache. It seemed as if there was a conflict inside his head.

Perhaps Dugu Xiao Yi wished to watch the world burn in chaos. However, Guan Qing Han's expression was very tranquil and calm. He could tell that she would actually proceed with her threat! He realized that he'd have to deal with her corpse if he didn't allow her to leave for Tian Fa.

[I can't gamble on this. I can't even dare to gamble on this!]

"You win!" Jun Mo Xie fixed an unwavering gaze at Young Lady Guan. Then, he sighed with regret. The Young Master Jun was confident that he could've done something to salvage that situation if it were only the little girl. [However, my Elder Sister-in-law has too much of an individuality. I can't afford to provoke her!] Young Master Jun felt sullen in his heart. He had seemingly never felt this sullen in either of his lives. He then spoke with regret and hate, "Give them two horses. They will travel on horses!"

"That's all the same to me..." Guan Qing Han narrowed her wonderful eyes and looked down. Then, she finally smiled. She had only asked to travel to Tian Fa. She was indifferent to the treatment she'd receive. Moreover, it was quite clear that Jun Mo Xie had taken a great risk by allowing them to accompany him. The military doctrines forbid the soldiers to travel along with a female to battle. It was a taboo in the military since there would be threats to their life at every turn.

"We must travel by carriage!" The little girl was young and inexperienced. So, she didn't realize any of this. She was happy to hear that the Young Master Jun had finally relented, and had allowed them to travel with him. However, she looked at him pouting-and-panting with rage when she heard the Young Master hadn't invited them to get inside his carriage, and had instead proposed to arrange two horses for them. Then, she looked at his beautiful carriage again, and started to feel tired. Her spine, her hip... there wasn't a single part of her body which didn't ache at the sight of the luxurious carriage.

"Impossible! I'm allowing you to come with us, and that should be good enough for the two of you. Yet, you unexpectedly wish to travel inside the carriage?" Jun Mo Xie snorted disdainfully. "I would love it if you don't like to travel like this... I can arrange for my men to drop you back if you don't wish to travel like this.

C'mon men! Get the horses!"

"You, you... alright!" Dugu Xiao Yi was flustered as she pointed at him. Her eyes turned, and she quickly took out her dagger. She placed it across her neck. "You, you... I will kill myself in front of you if you don't let me travel inside the carriage! Do you think that I won't dare to?!"

The little girl had seen Guan Qing Han extort the other party with a death threat. So, she had acted decisively and imitated the same. And, the little girl had added to the momentum of that act in order to make the result more effective. This was an extremely effective trick. So, how could she not use it?

[I won't fear using a good and useful trick again. It's very useful!]

Who would've thought that this little girl would say, "Do you think that I won't dare?" So, there was a burst of chuckles as soon as those words left her mouth since the surrounding soldiers were trying hard to restrain their urge to laugh. The shoulders of those grim and unfeeling warriors shook vigorously. It was clear indication that they were genuinely having a tough time in restraining their laughter.

One really could not blame them. That little girl's qualities were too lacking for something like this. In fact, even an individual playing 'clown' wasn't as amusing. Guan Qing Han had also threatened to kill herself. But, her threat was very believable. Then, Dugu Xiao Yi had imitated her. Moreover, she had done so right after. But, it was nothing like what the former had spoken. Moreover, her excuse to commit suicide was a bit too excessive. She would kill herself if she wasn't allowed to ride in the carriage?

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes, "Do as you please. But, I sincerely request you to go a bit far and die. Kindly don't disturb our eyes and hearts. I genuinely request you. This request isn't excessive, right?"

Sister, if you feel like threatening people with killing yourself...



at least pick a proper reason to die for... Otherwise, won't it become too unfavorable if we all started to threaten each other for useless reasons? I'll die if you don't let me in. I'll die if you don't let me eat. I'll die if you don't let me hit you... what is all this?

"You... you're just too hateful!" Dugu Xiao Yi stamped her feet. Then, she steamed towards the carriage without saying a word, lifted the curtains, and entered it. And, she didn't come out. Then, she shouted from inside the carriage, "Elder Sister Qing Han, hurry up and come here! It's quite spacious inside! And, there's a comfortable bed too... he he..."

This move had been the most practical one...

The Young Master Jun became furious.

[This is intolerable! Where will I go if you're in there? This Young Master had captured that corrupt official with such difficulty... only then was I able to extort a carriage from him! So much of thought had gone into it! Does it look that easy to you? Are you genuinely going to plunder the results of my efforts? Humph!]

Jun Mo Xie took a huge step forward and grabbed Dugu Xiao Yi's arm, "You, come down!"

"...Won't get down! I won't get down! I will travel in this carriage!" Dugu Xiao Yi used her other hand to get a hold on the inner walls of the carriage. She had decided to struggle furiously. Her face had become red. However, she had decided that she wouldn't let go for the life of her.

A white shadow flashed. Then, an elegant fragrance floated past. Guan Qing Hand had also managed to get inside the carriage. She then swatted at Jun Mo Xie's hand and retorted, "Fighting with a woman over a carriage! Is this what a Young Master from a good family does?"

Jun Mo Xie angrily said, "What? I'm fighting over a carriage?"

What are you saying? It's evident that you women are fighting over my carriage! Do you think that this Young Master will suffer in silence? You both are merely twisting words to force logic! Isn't this extremely unreasonable?"

Guan Qing Han no longer humored Jun Mo Xie. She reached for the carriage's curtains, and pulled them down. Then, there was a 'rustling' sound. It seemed that the two women had lain down on the bed. It seemed that they had even changed their clothes, and were about to go off to sleep. One could even hear Dugu Xiao Yi's satisfied voice, "This is very comfortable! We can finally go to bed in comfort..."

Jun Mo Xie puffed his chest, and bawled at himself for his stupidity. [I was trying to put facts in front of women... I was trying to preach logic to women... wasn't that utterly idiotic? But, I can't get them out since my Sister-in-law had also stepped into the carriage... no matter how unruly I get. I'll have to stay out here no matter how reluctant I am to this idea...]

The troops continued to move forward. They had been moving for half-a-day when Jun Mo Xie suddenly started to tremble. His horse was extremely big and powerful, but it wasn't as comfortable as the carriage. He then hatefully turned his head to look at it. Then, he frowned and started to plan something mischievous.

Jun Mo Xie let out a blood-curdling screech the next moment. He tilted on his horse, and went down. He fell onto the ground with a 'squishy' sound. His eyes were closed, and he had seemingly become unconscious.

The soldiers were alarmed at first. However, they were no fools; they clearly understood what was happening. So, they played along, "Not good! The Young Master has fainted! His injury isn't in a good condition... that sounds!" they called out in a tragic voice.

[The injury isn't in good condition?]

The 'fainted' Jun Mo Xie was astonished. [When did I get

injured? Ahem... but this is reasonable... I must praise and reward these guys the first opportunity I get...] Then, he winked at them.

"What's the matter?" Dugu Xiao Yi lifted the carriage's curtains and asked. She seemed deeply concerned, while Guan Qing Han only looked at the 'fainted' Jun Mo Xie in a pensive manner.

# Chapter 319: The Yin-Yang Harmony Drug?

---

"Young Master... Young Master had received an injury... he can't ride a horse now... that's why he got this carriage!" The leader of the Spirit Devourer Team — Wang Dong's forehead was beading with sweat. It wasn't that he was scared. He was merely choking himself to bring out this effect. This guy had come up with a lie. But, wasn't it a reasonable one? He was a quick witted man. He was aware that the Young Master's buttocks had been punished when he had broken the military's laws. So, he quickly used that fact to conjure a justifiable lie.

"Hurry and pick up the Young Master. Quickly take him to the carriage and examine him!" Several members of the Spirit Devourer Team suggested 'anxiously.' They appeared like a group of killers, but their acting skills were quite good too.

Dugu Xiao Yi hastily got down, "Let me see! Quickly, let me see! Ah! Hurry up and take him to the carriage! This man is genuinely injured... why didn't he say anything about it...?!"

Everyone was perspiring profusely. Seven pairs of hands picked up the 'unconscious' Jun Mo Xie's body, and carried it to the carriage.

Guan Qing Han was still in the carriage. She wanted to say something, but eventually decided to remain silent. She couldn't help but smile bitterly as she looked at the 'unconscious' Jun Mo Xie. [I clearly understand my little brother-in-law's behavior.]

Dugu Xiao Yi stretched her neck and asked with urgency, "How did he receive that injury? When did he get hurt? What kind of injury is it? Is it serious or not? Do you have any medicines? What medicines should be used? Who injured him...?"

This rapid series of questions stupefied the cold-blooded warriors. They had come up with this tactful lie with much difficulty. However, they had no proper answer to those invasive

questions. [The fact that the Young Master had violated the military discipline and was punished by lashings from a cudgel... isn't a glorious matter. Moreover, the injuries the Young Master had received from the cudgel have already been healed. He had healed a long time ago...]

"Xiao Yi! First come in! Don't interrogate them!" Guan Qing Han's voice resounded from inside. Dugu Xiao Yi withdrew on hearing that, and went inside. She was worried, and her voice could be heard asking, "Elder Sister Qing Han, this... what's to be done? What should we do? Ah! How did he get injured? I'm very worried..."

The members of the Spirit Devourer Team wiped their cold sweat.

"He he..." Guan Qing Han couldn't help but laugh. Jun Mo Xie slowly 'woke up' at that moment. He looked in poor health as he asked, "Where am I?"

Guan Qing Han hadn't yet spoken when Dugu Xiao Yi interrupted in excitement, "In the carriage! You're in the carriage! You... You've woken up! Ah! What injury did you get? Hurry up and tell me how to deal with it? I'll help you deal with it!"

The Young Lady Guan rolled her eyes; [this little girl is too innocent.]

"Me, injured? I had been injured, but that's healed. I'm in such poor condition because... I've been poisoned," Jun Mo Xie mumbled. He slyly shrugged his nose, and inhaled a couple of breaths. [Men and women are very different. I was in this carriage for several days, but it still hadn't come to smell like this. However, these two travel-weary beauties have barely been in the carriage, and it has already started to smell so amazing...]

"Ah! So it was poison?!" Dugu Xiao Yi was terrified. She opened her round eyes wide, "What poison is it? Is it very dangerous? Do you know what poison it is? Is it difficult to cure?"

"Oh... I was careless a while back. So I got poisoned," Jun Mo Xie felt unbounded regret. "To tell, cough cough, it's difficult to explain. I will be fine after I rest for two days. It will be embarrassing to tell you two... You won't wish to deal with my poison..."

"Who said that? Why won't we be willing to? Tell us quickly! How can we help you?" Dugu Xiao Yi inquired urgently. [Why is this guy so upset? He has poison within him... and he still continues to dilly-dally! Don't you know that others are concerned about you?]

"Cough Cough... the poison that's affecting me... is called the Yin-Yang Harmony Drug." Jun Mo Xie slyly raised his head. He wanted to weigh his words carefully. So, he looked straight at Guan Qing Han's expression. He couldn't help but trembled inside after he had glanced at her ice-cold expression. Therefore, he didn't continue.

"The Yin-Yang Harmony Drug? That name is so scary! But, you said that you had a cure for it, right?" Dugu Xiao Yi anxiously asked. She was like a cat on a hot tin roof. Her small and delicate nose was sweating profusely.

"This Yin-Yang Harmony Drug; It is true to say that it's difficult to cure this poison. But, it has a good cure. He he... cough cough..." Jun Mo Xie nearly flashed a sinister smile. So, he hastily coughed to cover it up, "No medicine can cure this poison, but its cure is quite simple. But, it's quite embarrassing to speak of its cure. Moreover, you would have to make a great sacrifice if you wish to cure this poison."

"That doesn't matter! I'm willing to make any kind of a sacrifice for you," the little girl vouched. Guan Qing Han was sitting besides them. The more she heard of this... the more she felt that something was fishy.

[This little brat's 'fainting' was an act. Xiao Yi is foolishly for

being concerned for him. She doesn't see the truth in this confusion. But, what evil scheme is he planning?]

"Actually, it requires... cough cough... se\*ual intercourse between a man and a woman. Then, the poison will instantly be removed," Jun Mo Xie seemed embarrassed. He even covered his mouth to cough, "Cough cough... otherwise, I will die burning with passion after three days. I understand that you must be very embarrassed by this as well. Therefore, forget about it... such is my fate."

The Young Master Jun spoke this last part in a droopy voice.

"Huh?! What?! To detoxify you... I must... with you... you..." Dugu Xiao Yi suddenly opened her eyes wide. Her face turned red as she started to blush. She was young and innocent. But, she knew what "se\*ual intercourse" meant.

Guan Qing Han had expected her younger Brother-in-law to do something tricky. However, she had never expected that mischievous guy to pull something this shameless! She obviously hadn't expected him to mess with them to that extent. She had thought that something was odd when she had heard him mention the Yin-Yang Harmony drug. She felt that something was fishy. However, Guan Qing Han was still inexperienced. So, she still didn't know of the relationship between men and women properly. Moreover, she had underestimated Jun Mo Xie's shamelessness. The Young Lady had never expected him to pull-off something like that.

[I was very tolerant in allowing him inside the carriage. But, now he wants...]

"Jun Mo Xie!" Guan Qing Han's shapely eyebrows shot up and her eyes filled with fire. "Haven't you joked enough?! Do you want me to kick you out again? You should be happy that I've let you inside the carriage! Don't be discontent with what you have now!"

"Elder Sister Qing Han, please don't get angry. He's poisoned. That's quite a frightening thing!" Dugu Xiao Yi anxiously looked at

Guan Qing Han as she tried to mediate.

"He isn't injured; nor is he poisoned! There's no such thing as a Yin-Yang Harmony Drug!" Guan Qing Han spoke coldly, "He was fine when he was inside the carriage. But, he fainted when we sent him outside to ride on a horse. His men outside said that he has been injured. However, he says that he's been poisoned. Little Sister Xiao Yi, how long do you plan to continue being deceived by him? Can't you think clearly? Can't you use your little head?"

"Huh? Elder Sister Qing Han... don't get mad... you're saying that he's acting and hasn't been poisoned?" Dugu Xiao Yi's face became red. She then made threatening gestures since she was extremely mad.

[To think that I was genuinely convinced by him... I would've even tried to cure him if he had managed to deceive Elder Sister Qing Han as well...] Dugu Xiao Yi couldn't help but feel ashamed. Even her neck had reddened in a split second. She then looked at Guan Qing Han in an embarrassed manner, and nestled her head in her bosom. She had been hoodwinked and had lost face. She then said, "Elder Sister! I can't live anymore!" She repeatedly stamped her foot as she spoke this.

"Ah, you weren't actually thinking of detoxifying him, were you?" Guan Qing Han asked coldly. [This little girl is too foolish!]

"Ah, it seems that I have remembered wrongly. I haven't been poisoned," Jun Mo Xie coughed awkwardly and softly.

The two women rolled their eyes. [You managed to remember this wrongly?]

Jun Mo Xie then sat up. He was all-smiles as he spoke, "This road is long and endless. It will take a lot of time to reach our destination. It'll be very boring like this. So, how did you like the story I just told?"

The two women were astonished. Their eyes were wide open as



they glared at the Young Master Jun. [It is difficult to believe that there's someone in this world whose skin is so thick! His lie has been caught... his evil scheme has been exposed and his filthy intentions have been laid bare! Yet, he does not blush. In fact, he doesn't even feel any shame! And then, he shamelessly states that he has told a story so he can ease the awkward environment?!]

[Isn't this man over-the-top? Isn't his skin just too thick?]

The lovable Dugu Xiao Yi cursed as her clothes flung around, "I let you deceive me... you bastard... bastard!"

The Young Master Jun's Vanguard became increasingly comfortable as the days progressed. Moreover, they raked-in huge amounts of money by extorting corrupt officials along the journey. And, the two beautiful women accompanied him the entire time. Their strong and warm fragrance allowed Jun Mo Xie to indulge in pleasure, and he forgot about his worries.

In fact, even the thought of his own practice would've abandoned his mind if the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune hadn't been continuously running inside him on its own.

The Young Master Jun had been very happy throughout that journey. The bottle-neck of his Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune had also cleared somewhat. This meant that he would break through from the Jade Xuan Middle Level to the Jade Xuan Peak Level in terms of Xuan Qi cultivation.

Every day had been very bloody for the Heaven Destroyer Team and Spirit Devourer Team. They had fought vigorously every day, and were becoming increasingly tempered every day. Around two hundred men had already started to show faint signs of a breakthrough. The cruel and sharp aura of these two teams was enough to shock anyone.

The Young Master Jun had wished for this beautiful journey to continue for several more days. However, Heaven Destroyer Team and Spirit Devourer Team were being dispatched fewer number of

times with every passing day. So, the Young Master determined that...

[The topography of this mountainous region is becoming increasingly steeper. The road is also becoming tougher, while the forests have become denser. More bandits and robbers should've descended from heaven under these circumstances. However, they've become fewer in number as the journey has progressed. This is probably because we are getting closer to the Xue Hun Manor. Therefore, these little thieving elements have started to reduce...]

"Young Master, we are about three-hundred kilometers from our destination — the Tian Fa forest. The Xue Hun Manor is a little to the left... at the edge of Tian Fa. We are now in front of the two base mountains of the forest," the captain of the Spirit Devourer Team — Wang Dong — pointed as he reported to Jun Mo Xie.

"Why are we going so slow? We've been journeying for so many days..." Jun Mo Xie asked. He felt annoyed, "We've travelled for a month now. Were you not faster the last time?"

"Young Master... we can travel fast since we don't have much weight on us. But, there are many other issues. We shouldn't make speed the most important factor here. We certainly travelled much faster the last time we were here. In fact, we were probably going at 650kms a day; probably even faster than that. However, we had taken a different route to Tian Fa. There's much less high-level Xuan Beasts on that route. So, we mainly had to deal with low-level Xuan Beasts. I'm afraid that none of us would've made it through if had picked this route. However, we have a large army behind us now. We are the vanguard unit, but we mustn't leave the main army far behind... and, we'll have to send out our teams more often from now on since there will be many dangers. Therefore, this speed can be considered a very fast one," Wang Dong explained.

"Oh..." Jun Mo Xie stepped down from the carriage. He could

sense that there were many Xuan Beasts in these mountainous forests. Moreover, most of those beasts were very fast. In fact, they were unusually fast. They were much faster than ordinary beasts. "It seems that a lot of Xuan Beasts roam-about this area. This Tian Fa is a very nice place..."

# Chapter 320: I Only Seek For My Heart To Be At Peace

---

"First, we must find an area between the mountains and a stream. We'll set up camp there. We will wait for the main forces to arrive. Then, we will journey onwards with them," Jun Mo Xie gave the order unenthusiastically. They were about to go to the Xue Hun Manor. And, Jun Mo Xie wasn't going to act a fool and look for the tyrannical enemy on his own.

[We may still face bad luck. But, at least all the influential families will face it together in that case.]

The Young Master Jun would try to get some small advantages in secret if the conditions were to permit. After all, he didn't harbor a favorable impression of the Xue Hun Manor due to the past events. He wouldn't even grieve if every member of the Xue Hun Manor were to die.

Moreover... the Xuan Beast uprising had gone out of control by this time. However, it had still been instigated by the Young Master Jun. Therefore, Tian Fa's Xuan Beasts were fighting for Jun Mo Xie by any interpretation. If not... they were at least his allies.

Wang Dong sent eight people in eight different directions to look for a suitable place to set up camp, and the men eventually found such a place. Jun Mo Xie, Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi immediately picked their spots.

The place was a small hillside.

There was open land in front of the hillside. It was surrounded by dense woods. There was a turning corner nearby. There was single official road at this bend. They would be able to keep an eye on all developments in the vicinity if they were to place scouts at that spot.

A ‘gurgling’ sound could be heard from behind the hill; it was similar to the sound that was made when one made dumplings. One would see a medium-sized stream on taking a detour. It meandered as it came down. The stream was clear, and its bottom could also be seen. And unexpectedly, there was a clear pool downstream. It wasn’t too far away; it was just after a bend downstream.

Dugu Xiao Yi and Guan Qing Han became somewhat excited when they saw this.

Women love cleanliness. These two had been travelling this route for such a long time. So, they were very exhausted. How could they ever have an appropriate opportunity to clean themselves? They could only wash themselves if they managed to stumble across a wild mountain stream at night. But, that was nothing like their family homes’ large baths. However, they had finally seen a very satisfactory sight in the form of that clear pool. Dugu Xiao Yi’s body started to itch at the sight of the pool.

Guan Qing Han also found the pool very promising. However, she controlled her itch for a thought. She understood her younger Brother-in-law’s character very clearly. [Won’t he try to peek if I went into the pool with Xiao Yi? I need to think of a method which would ensure that he won’t be able to. Wouldn’t I die of shame otherwise?]

Jun Mo Xie coughed in a dignified manner after he looked at the pool. He then turned his head to look somewhere else and pretended that he hadn’t notice it.

....

Jun Mo Xie had seen many teams of Xuan experts ‘whistle’ past him over the course of this journey. These people were rushing towards Tian Fa. However, he had noticed that these people were identical in terms of their attitude towards him. They would either look towards Jun Mo Xie’s team in disdain, and or would just pass

by after glancing at them.

It was clear that the Army didn't have any importance in the minds of these Xuan experts. So, they obviously cared even lesser for Jun Mo Xie.

However, they had witnessed a decreasing number of coincidental encounters with those Xuan experts in the past few days. The road had become increasingly deserted.

Three roads forked-out at a junction outside the sparse woods. These roads seemed very long. Each road looked empty and deserted. The sky above this territory was far bluer than the one in the cities.

The 200+ guards began setting up camp. Jun Mo Xie along with Guan Qing Han and the some others proceeded to the mouth of the valley in order to avoid the fiery construction scene.

They had gone out to breathe-in the fresh air. Jun Mo Xie and the two extremely beautiful women were closely followed by four others. They were the Heaven Destroyer Team and the Spirit Devourer Team's deputy leaders.

Jun Mo Xie let out a long sigh. He felt a spacious and empty void around him. The sky had also become increasingly silent. The insects and cicadas were chirping around the woods. Jun Mo Xie seemed to be in a pensive state of mind. His mind seemed to be in chaos, yet seemingly in a tranquil state. His thoughts were complex yet simple. He eventually couldn't help but raise a perplexing thought.

Even a moment's perplex can be sufficient to become a fatal mistake for an assassin. Even a top-notch assassin like Jun Mo Xie isn't an exception to this fact. However, Jun Mo Xie was a complete loss at this time. Moreover, this state of mind had lasted a decent length of time.

[Nature makes man. My spirit and soul don't belong to the world

they have been brought to. It has been nearly half-a-year since my spirit has come here. Each day has been a struggle; just the way it used to be in my previous life. I've been using my mind a lot more. But, my limbs haven't been exercised that much. I've played the fool a lot, but I haven't used my iron-blooded methods much.]

[Half-a-years' time has passed-by so quickly. I've been immersed in these boring matters. But, for what reason have I come to this world?]

[Is it to conquer this world? Is it to remain a nobleman throughout the ages? Or perhaps it's for living free and unfettered? ...for what purpose have I been sent here?]

Jun Mo Xie put his hands behind his back, and started to walk forward; neither too fast, nor too slow. However, it was an astonishing sight in the eyes of the six people! Jun Mo Xie's previous licentious and greasy debauchee-like appearance had been swept aside. The individual's temperament and innate character had been transformed. He seemed like a hermit who had transcended the earthly characteristics. It was obvious that he was walking on firm and solid land. But, those who watched him felt as if he was walking to another time and space with each of his steps.

That other time, and that other space... was a profound mystery to those people.

The others felt a very unfathomable feeling at that time; [this person can't be considered of this world. In fact, he never ought to be of this world.] This particular feeling was obviously very absurd to their perceptions. However, it still existed.

He walked forward step by step. However, it seemed that everything in that world — the people besides him... the ground beneath his feet... the trees on his sides, and the dust in the air... weren't meant for him. It was evident that nothing in that world had anything to do with him.

Everything still existed in harmony. However, one thing seemed

in discord with the world. And, it was that one living individual in front of their eyes...

He seemed like the only independent existence between the heaven and earth. He didn't intermingle with the living things; nor could he ever blend in. It seemed that this one individual — Jun Mo Xie — was all alone in his own little world.

This wasn't a feeling of loneliness that's felt by those at the top. Rather... it was one of detachment. Moreover... there was an extremely desolate air to it.

He had transcended beyond everything. He was independent from the living world. However, he could still intervene in it.

[I'm not of this world, but I exist in this world. This world is not mine, but I will die in this world.]

Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi had forgotten about walking. They just foolishly stared at the image of that person in front of them. The both of them had the same thought; [are these his true colors...?]

Dugu Xiao Yi couldn't help an urge of walking to Jun Mo Xie, and talking to him. However, she got scared away by that strange feeling that came from him. Guan Qing Han had also pulled her back, and had stopped her from opening her mouth.

Guan Qing Han didn't know what was happening with Jun Mo Xie. She didn't know why things had suddenly become such. However, she had keenly sensed that Jun Mo Xie shouldn't be disturbed at that moment. She was aware that even a little sound could interrupt his unusual stupor.

Then, there was a shout...

Jun Mo Xie let out a very long breath as he stopped in his footsteps. He then put his hands behind his back, and looked up at the heavens. He stared at a white cloud for a long time. Then, the Young Master smiled bitterly, and shook his head. And then, he



remained standing in a calm and quiet manner — only to find that the thoughts in his mind had become ordered, clear and bright.

[There will be no desires if there's no thought. Nothing is permanent in this world.]

It seemed like an individual had awoken from a dream, and was back to reality now. Jun Mo Xie distinctly felt his spiritual strength increase by a huge margin. However, he still wasn't able to break through his bottleneck. It seemed that there was a faint and thin layer of mist in front of his eyes. This layer of mist separated him from the next level. It was unclear and hazy. However, his spiritual abilities would enhance by leaps and bounds if he were able to break through that.

And... Jun Mo Xie could vaguely feel the source of that obstruction.

It came from his heart.

"Mo Xie... you... what were you thinking just a moment ago...?" Guan Qing Han's voice seemed cold and clear; just as before. However, Jun Mo Xie could make out that her voice was filled with a lot of concern and care.

Guan Qing Han was very intelligent. She could sense that Jun Mo Xie had suddenly sunk into a spiritual realm. And, she had also felt that he was at a very important juncture of an unexpected break through. So, she watched as he seemingly remained immersed in that spiritual realm. She watched him for some time. However, she felt that he suddenly started to seem like someone who had been on the verge of gaining immortality, but had been struck down to the mundane world of mortals. She could distinctly feel the difference in him. So, she couldn't help herself, and asked.

"Just a moment ago... I was thinking..." Jun Mo Xie still seemed absentminded. It seemed like one of his feet had remained stuck in the fantastical spiritual realm. He said, "What am I to do in this life? Or perhaps, why did I get this life? What is my goal? What can

I do? What am I to achieve?"

"Goal?" Guan Qing Han asked hesitantly before she continued, "It isn't necessary for every living person to have a goal, is it?" However, she asked herself in her thoughts; [what about me? Why am I alive? What's my goal here?]

Guan Qing Han suddenly felt overwhelmingly listless. [My younger brother-in-law must have a goal. However, I? Do I have the qualification to pursue my goals? Do I have this qualification?]

"Yes. Everyone should have goals. Everyone should have them. I used to have a notion. I wanted to use my strength to make the world a brighter place. I wanted to kill and slaughter to rectify the world's filth. I hoped that it would bring the world to the peace and prosperity I desired for it. I didn't wish to see things that seemed unjust to my eyes..." Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly as he spoke.

"I've never paid attention to other people. I've only followed my own methods, and I've done what I feel like doing in any give circumstance. I've always gone my own way. I didn't change even when I knew that it's inadequate and I'm striving fruitlessly... However, I'm at a loss after I've come here. I'm at a complete loss..."

Guan Qing Han naturally didn't know what Jun Mo Xie meant by "striving fruitlessly". And, she understood what he meant by "coming here" even less. However, she listened to Jun Mo Xie speak, and came to the conclusion that he felt extremely lonely.

This made her as calm as still-water. However, she felt a dull ache in the innermost part of her heart.

It was like watching warrior with a "never say die" attitude in a state where he had expended the entirety of his energy and skill — only to face that harsh truth that his enemy was spread across the entire world... and that it would be eternally beyond his ability to defeat and destroy his enemy.

He had persevered with his conduct throughout his life. But, he had merely overrated himself and had attempted to do something impossible in reality. It was a sort of desolation, helplessness, unreconciliation and frustration that couldn't be described in words.

Guan Qing Han thought for a while. She then said in soft and comforting tone, "Man has but one life; grass has but one spring. Who can say what the purpose of one's life is? It's very difficult to say. Now that we are talking about it... we women are only to assist our husbands and take care of his children; day after day... years after years... no matter how we age. However, we don't feel any disappointment. I'm certain that most women in this world are like this. And, this kind of dull and rigid lifestyle makes countless women happy and satisfied. As for men... especially those who have power, strength and ability... they strive for their honor, fame and success. Each one of them strives to be brave and fierce. Even mediocre and ordinary people try very hard for their food and clothing. It's what they call 'Man eats man...'"

She didn't realize that Jun Mo Xie had turned around and approached closer as she was speaking this. His eyes shone like the full moon as he looked at her. However, those eyes didn't have a frivolous or a stunned look in them. They seemed deep, tranquil and thoughtful. His expression was profoundly pensive.

Not many women in such a feudal society could see things as clearly as Guan Qing Han could. This had left him very astonished.

"Most men in this world work too hard. And, it's genuinely not worth it," Guan Qing Han had a perplexed look in her eyes. But, her eyes also seemed to be full of tough resolve, and a bit of contempt. It seemed that the question that — 'what men are supposed to do' — was even something that she considered worth mentioning.

"So, what do you think everything on this earth is for? Perhaps, you can tell me what are we supposed to do in this world?" Jun Mo Xie asked as he continued to ponder.

"I don't know the purpose of others. Nor am I qualified-enough to represent them. But, I do know myself," Guan Qing Han slowly spoke. Her eyes shone brilliantly. "I, Guan Qing Han, am just a feeble woman. As for this man's world... I'm not even qualified to be a good wife... So, what I'm looking for in this moment... is just peace of mind... and that will be sufficient for me. "

[Yes. I Guan Qing Han only seek true peace of mind.]

[I had been engaged to Jun Mo You for my family's sake. I had never met him before. But, I did it for the sake of my family... for the sake of my parents. I had no other choice.]

[And, I was willing to pay this price for my parents and family.]

[Therefore, my heart was at peace.]

[I had met Jun Mo You only twice in all that time. My emotions were never worthy of a mention in this regard... But, I had known that he was a great man, and that he would be a great husband. Moreover, I had already been betrothed to him. So, I had to accept my fate...]

[And then, when Mo You died in battle... I thought that such a good man was worth grieving for.]

[Therefore, I was willing to grieve for Jun Mo You — the Empire's hero. I decided to live with the Jun Family as a widow, and left my family disheartened. However, Jun Mo You's heroic spirit was far more important to me. I would feel unworthy in my conscience if I were to revoke my vows to him.]

[And the fact is... my choice was right. I was lonely at the time... very lonely.]

[But, my heart was at peace.]

[And now, I haven't hesitated to go to Tian Fa with this weak body to ensure that Jun Mo Xie and Third Uncle return home safely. I'm acutely prepared for all difficulties. I won't hesitate or spare any effort to ensure that this uncle-nephew duo safely return

home to the north.]

[I'm prepared to sacrifice my life for the sake of these two people.]

[And, my heart is at peace with this as well.]

[I have no other demands! That's all!]

[The Jun Family has treated me justly... like I were their own flesh and blood. So, wouldn't I be worse than a beast if I were to helplessly watch as Jun Mo Xie and Uncle Jun Wu Yi died because of me?]

There was also an additional secret reason... Jun Mo Xie seemed to have a lot of affection for her. She used to be cold towards him in the past, and hadn't cared about his feelings. However, she had recently been letting her guard down, and had been ignoring the warning signs. This was especially true since the time when Jun Mo Xie had helped her improve her Xuan Qi cultivation. There had been an indistinct skin contact between them at that time. That feeling had been returning to Guan Qing Han every night. It had gotten even worse recently. And, this had left her in panic...

[Therefore, it's better to go to Tian Fa. My death will solve all problems. It will solve my quarrels with this mortal life. I can repay the Jun Family's great kindness with my life. It will also rid my younger brother-in-law of his infatuation with me.]

[This will solve everything, and my heart will remain at peace.]

[The Jun Family's honor will remain intact, and the Guan family's honor won't be tainted. The two families' reputation won't be affected. As for me... I needn't think about it.]

"Good! You spoke well! You spoke very well! Ha ha ha..." Jun Mo Xie suddenly started to laugh. "Only seek for the heart to be at peace! Only seek to have no quarrels in one's conscience! People often say that a peaceful heart can find justice in this world. But, who could've imagined that a peaceful heart is the justice of this

world!"

"Killing a person is okay. Saving a person is okay. One shall not have to carry a heavy burden in this mortal life as long as one's heart is at peace. I, Jun Mo Xie, won't work for my country or its people. I will work for my heart. I will only work for my heart to be at peace! Everything has to do with one's heart! What's the need to think too much over it? What of the country's prosperity? What of worldly affairs? That is nonsense; nothing else!

"Therefore, I will live my life my way! I will be unrestrained; I will be unfettered! No one can influence my thoughts! No one can control my actions! The world may slander me or praises me... it may even be indifferent to me... how would that make any difference to me? My heart will be at peace as long as I walk this world by following my path! I only seek to have a peaceful heart and an indomitable spirit! And, that will be sufficient for this life!"

Jun Mo Xie burst into laughter. Guan Qing Han had unintentionally untangled his conundrum.

The Young Master Jun was very happy. However, Dugu Xiao Yi and Guan Qing Han were shocked. And, the deputy leaders of the Heaven Destroyer Team and the Spirit Devourer Team — those four men who still stood behind the two ladies — could clearly see the change in Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie had undergone an astonishing transformation in front of their eyes.

He had gone from being a showy licentious and debauchee of a Young Master — to a very able hermit. This change was no doubt exceptional and lofty. However, another exceptional and lofty transformation had taken place with him. And, this transformation too had made him transcend ordinary men. In fact, it had transformed him into an extremely cold force.

He resembled a sword that had been unsheathed from its scabbard. This sharp sword stood proud between the heaven and

earth. It seemed that he could reflect a great amount of radiance. The heaven and earth were vast. However, it seemed that they could never restrain him.

That indescribable sense of confusion had been swept away from his mind. He could distinctly feel the formless Spiritual Energy of his mind rise by leaps and bounds.

He was completely integrated with the world, but he wasn't confined to anything.

[How can I be happy with the status quo in this life? How can I sleep stranded under this heaven?]

[I will pass unhindered through the world! I will hold a great sword, and the world will ask, "Who is that hero who scales to such heights?"]

[I don't wish to conquer the world. But, no one in this world will ever think of telling me what to do! They won't even dream of messing with me, or my family!]

[My goal is finally clear to me!]

[I want my Jun Family to become an existence that far surpasses the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor! I want it to become a family which sits at the highest levels in this world!]

[Even the Emperor or the Great Masters wouldn't be able to look at its members!]

[And, this is bound to require a flood of blood.]

[However, my heart is at peace!]

[This will be the direction of my life's efforts! I... will have no regrets!]

The corners of Jun Mo Xie's mouth became crooked as he smiled in a cold manner. Then, he softly said, "Then, my journey of slaughter begins with Tian Fa!" A cold and extremely powerful murderous aura suddenly burst-out from his body, and spiraled

towards the heavens.

That unparalleled murderous aura raged-about, and made the sleeves of his six companions flutter. It was late autumn, and the withering leaves were already at death's door. They started to flutter-about due to his sky-high murderous aura. Then, they left their branches and circled down in the wind as they dropped.

The scene resembled an all-encompassing yellow rain.

A number of small birds left the trees. Their wings flapped a couple times before they suddenly came across that dense murderous aura. They then tweeted mournfully for a while as they dropped to the ground.

The shadows of three individuals were quickly flitting through the wooded mountains in the distance. However, they immediately stopped after they had looked at this scene. One of them spoke in a serious tone, "This is a very frightening murderous aura. Who's behind this?"

The two men besides him wore a cautious expression as they looked into the distance. Then, one of them contemplated out loud, "Could it be that Chu Qi Hun has finally arrived?"

"It's not necessarily true. It's true that Chu Qi Hun's murderous aura is very powerful. However, it is sharp, acute and concentrated. So, it advances in front of his body — in the same direction as him. However, this person's aura is extremely overwhelming. It even blots out the heavens. These two auras are completely different. So, I can tell that this individual isn't Chu Qi Hun! However, this person's murderous aura is no less than the Great Assassin Chu Qi Hun's. In fact, it may even surpass his'!"

"No matter who it is... let's take a look!" The other person suggested, "We three possess great powers. We shouldn't necessarily be scared of this guy... even if it is the Great Assassin Chu Qi Hun!"



"Good!" The black bearded middle aged man contemplated and replied in a heroic and resolute manner, "Good! We are the three swords of Dong Fang. So, why should we be afraid? Even if it's Chu Qi Hun... what reason do we have to fear?"

"That's right Elder Brother. I heard that the Jun Family's Third Commander will be arriving here. Shouldn't we..." a short but stout person muttered.

"No! That matter still gnaws at mother's mind! Moreover, he had gotten injured, and his meridians were also destroyed. So, why should we mess with the Jun Family? The Little Sister has also been in a coma for the last ten years. So, why should we bother? Is it any of our business if Jun Wu Yi has the skill to return alive, or dies trying here?" The black bearded middle-aged man's eyebrows shot up as he spoke angrily.

"However, even so... Jun Mo Xie is our nephew. He is related to us by blood! Mother had said those words to you... but, aren't you concerned with his fate?" the short and stout middle-aged man asked in defiance.

"That's a sin!" The black bearded middle-aged man sighed deeply. He then spoke resolutely, "I won't allow anyone to harm Jun Mo Xie. And, I'm aware that Jun Wu Yi is a good man. He has courage and moral integrity. But, our younger sister, brother-in-law, and our two nephews wouldn't have died if it weren't for him. So, we won't discuss this again!"

The man sighed as he spoke. Then, the three men changed directions, and shot forwards like meteors. They advanced towards the direction of that murderous aura's source.

## Chapter 321: The Nephew and Uncles Meet as Strangers

---

"Eldest Brother, how about we go to Tian Xiang after this matter with Tian Fa is over?" the short and stout man cautiously and solemnly asked the man he was speeding besides.

"What would we do there? Wouldn't we just look for trouble, and kill people? Won't it be an arduous and thankless job? Don't you remember the lessons from last time?" the black bearded middle-aged man rolled his eyes and lashed out.

"No. How could I ever forget what happened all those years ago? I was just wondering if I could take Jun Mo Xie and bring him to stay with our sister for a couple of days. I hear that that child is different from before. People say that he's acting tyrannically these days; he's oppressing people all the time. He has made a lot of progress as well. Little sister... she has been unconscious for ten years now," the short and stout man spoke with a trace of regret on his face.

"This matter... needs time to be considered. Don't I love my sister too? But, that brat's conduct is very shameful. He had started to behave badly from the start. Besides, mother was waiting for some good news in high hopes the last time I had gone home to report of our nephew's conduct. She was very expectant of him. But, she got so angry after she heard about his behavior that she almost shut herself in... or have you forgotten about that? I would've abandoned him if he weren't my nephew! Rumor has it that... he has improved. But, that is just a rumor. What if the rumor turns out to be false and the brat's conduct turns out to be nastier than the rumors put it? Wouldn't mother feel infuriated? So, let's check-it-out in secret first..." The black bearded man sighed as a sad look covered his eyes.

"Hmm, you're right. That little brat has been extremely

disappointing. Little Sister's innate talent was outstanding, and Younger Brother-in-law Wu Hui was a dragon in human form. How could someone derived from them be so unbearable? We'll need to take a proper look for further consideration. But, what if the prodigal son has made his return? Wouldn't it be a very happy event? However, it will be very difficult for us to come out this time. There's a chance that something may happen if we go back. Eldest Brother... the Silver Blizzard City will most-likely send people to Tian Fa. Shouldn't we trifle with their people a bit? And speaking of anger... that little brat from the Silver City is basically a torrent of flames." The short stout man bared his teeth. There was a hint of a secretive yet fierce smile on his face.

"Very well, there's no harm in killing or playing with a few of them." However, the black bearded middle-aged man warned, "But, no one is to know that we were involved."

"Of course! The Silver Blizzard City's younger generation will die without knowing the immensity of the issue. This will be heartwarming. We can consider this as 'revenge' for Younger Brother-in-law, and a case of 'venting our anger for our sister's condition'." The other two men smiled in an evil manner as they prepared themselves for a fight.

Outside the jungle. At the fork of the three roads

Jun Mo Xie was standing with his hands behind his back. Suddenly, he started to look a bit startled. His expression changed a bit, but it soon became normal again. The Young Master Jun was focused on a particular direction. This was because he had sensed three very powerful and imposing figures, and these figures were moving quite fast. Their direction was unchanging, and he judged that his current location was their intended destination.

Jun Mo Xie narrowed his eyes and focused. He thought that... [I never knew that the world outside Tian Xiang City is so huge. These rivers and mountains are so picturesque.] He was right to say this.

It seemed from their aura that all three of them had Spirit Xuan cultivation. In fact, their cultivation was more-or-less the same as that of the Silver Blizzard City's elders. However, the Hit-man Jun didn't lose his color because of this. ...mainly because the three men's murderous aura was quite faint at this moment. And, Jun Mo Xie couldn't be mistaken in this regard since he was a top-notch assassin. In fact, he had also determined that the third, sixth and ninth elders of the Silver Blizzard City would die an ugly death if they were to face-off against these three.

It was near-impossible to find even one such expert in the Capital's region. However, he had found three of them out here.

[How could I have known about the existence of so many outstanding characters if I had remained in my nest in the Tian Xiang City? I've barely come out, and so many exceptional fellows have appeared. It seems that I should come out more often.]

Jun Mo Xie's train of thought was in motion when the shadows of the three men flashed and arrived in front of him.

They were led by a black bearded and black-robed man. He had a mild expression on his face. One of the other two had a moderate stature. He was quite slim. The third one was very short. He had a big head and small eyes. He looked like the spitting image of a monkey; it was very funny.

The three descended to the ground in a flash. And then, they stared blankly.

They had sensed that overbearing murderous aura in the sky a short while ago. They had thought that it belonged to some extraordinary person. Therefore, they had rushed over to increase their knowledge; and, maybe even make friends with this personality... They didn't have anything particular in their mind. However, someone with such a frightening murderous aura was surely worth associating with. However, they realized that things were entirely different from their expectation once they had

arrived there.

They saw three youths — one young man, and two young girls. There were four other individuals besides them. The cultivation of these seven people was quite clear to the newcomers' eyes. The two beautiful young ladies were at the middle level of the Gold Xuan realm. However, these two girls could be considered as 'talented' since they had achieved this feat at such a young age...

As for the young man — he had reached the Jade Xuan realm at such a young age. He would surely surpass their generation in no time!

Such cultivation was somewhat rare for such young individuals. And, they had never anticipated that they would come across three such youths. They were quite astonished to say the least — [what kind of a force is capable of cultivating these three youngsters to this level?] Though, they didn't feel threatened at all.

The four men who stood behind them had an extremely baleful look on their faces. However, their cultivation could at-best be considered 'average'. The one with the highest cultivation amongst them was at the Jade Xuan realm. The other three were at the Gold Xuan realm. They couldn't exactly be considered as 'weak' if one were to take their age into account. However, they weren't worth mentioning.

Moreover, hundreds of people were at work in the nearby forest. They all seemed to be in Gold Xuan realm. It was quite a difficult and valuable thing for such a small force. However, they weren't that 'great' in the eyes of the three newcomers.

In fact, to accomplish training this small force of over two hundred men to Gold Xuan realm was very rare; especially when one considers the age of those soldiers. It was a luxury even several Empires in this world couldn't afford. This extraordinary feat was extremely shocking. So much so, that it wouldn't necessarily be easy for a major Empire to organize a small team of Gold Xuan

experts even if the said-Empire was to put in the entirety of its efforts.

Therefore, it could be said that Jun Mo Xie's troops could change the direction of any worldly war!

However, the strength of these troops weren't of much importance to those three experts. These soldiers weren't very different from ordinary ones in their eyes. They were at-best a little stronger than ants in their eyes. Every individual holds different levels of importance towards different people. This small army could make any Emperor emotionally charged, but it wouldn't have the same effect on these three individuals.

How could these troops' strength baffle these three experts like that mysterious murderous aura had?

"Young man, this old man has something to ask you. Who was the person that stopped here for a moment, and then disappeared in a wink of an eye? I ask that you to answer truthfully; it will be to your benefit. So, do you know?" the short and stout person asked. His name was Dongfang Wen Dao. He was third in order of age amongst the three experts. The middle-aged black bearded man was Dongfang Wen Qing, and the slim man was Dongfang Wen Jian. The three of them were real brothers.

Dongfang Wen Dao had realized that his Elder Brothers weren't willing to open their mouths. So, he decided to ask since his status was the lowest amongst the three.

There was nothing wrong with his question. However, the same couldn't be said for the manner in which he asked it. He hadn't looked at them when he asked the question. Moreover, he had also spoken in a very arrogant manner. It seemed as if this had turned into an interrogation.

It wasn't surprising that Dongfang Wen Dao had spoken like that. His strength may have been the least amongst the three brothers, but he was still a Spirit Xuan expert. His ego awakened

since he was faced with so many Jade and Gold Xuan experts. So, he spoke for the face of his reputation. Moreover, it sounded as if his words had come as a great benefit for their sake.

It is considered a great favor to receive instructions from a Spirit Xuan expert. One would reap the benefits of such an advice for the entirety of their lives... even if it was only half-a-sentence... or even a single word.

Even the eldest and the second Dongfang brothers thought that this was only a natural course of action. They didn't think that there was anything wrong with their younger brother's method of questioning.

He asked the question, and expected that the opposite party would instantly recognize their strength. He expected that the other party would be delighted, and might even try their best to fawn over them in order to curry favor with them.

However, it was a pity that he had met Jun Mo Xie.

This person couldn't be moved by force, persuasion or material benefits. Moreover, he would never bow down to any threat.

Even if that threat came from three Spirit Xuan experts...

The original Jun Mo Xie had met his three uncles very briefly. But, this had happened over ten years ago. He was no more than six or seven years of age at the time. And, he had forgotten about them owing to his careless nature. The current Jun Mo Xie didn't even have the slightest idea of their identity as a result. He would've been able to recall them if the previous occupant of his body hadn't possessed such a useless memory.

As for those three grownups — his uncles — how would they know? They had last seen Jun Mo Xie over ten years ago. He used to be a snot-nosed stubborn brat back then. However, they were facing a youngster with a promising face and outstanding bearing at the moment. [Where have we seen this extraordinarily talented

and handsome youngster? I just can't recall. This young man is very handsome. And, there's some vague familiarity about him.] However, it didn't occur to them who it was...

Their minds had been tuned by the rumors. So, their nephew was supposed to be a thorough debauchee and a wastrel. How could he resemble this handsome and prod youngster? Moreover, this young man was at the middle level of the Jade Xuan realm; maybe even a bit higher. However, the rumors stated that their nephew had wasted his meridians in his debaucheries. Therefore, it was very hard to make that connection.

"Ha ha... Sister Xiao Yi, do you finally see? That tree doesn't seem like one in late autumn. Its leaves have turned silver, but they haven't fallen down. They will turn green once again when the spring returns. Isn't it wonderful? Shouldn't we take a few specimens back with us when we return home?" Jun Mo Xie seemingly hadn't heard the question that Dongfang Wen Dao had asked. He smiled unenthusiastically as he pointed towards a tree and showed it to Dugu Xiao Yi.

Dongfang Wen Dao immediately got angry.

[Aren't we even worthy of acknowledgement in his eyes?] That was huge blow to the third Dongfang brother's pride. He asked fiercely, "Oi, brat! I asked you something; are you deaf? Didn't you hear this old man's question? Do you need a spanking?"

Dongfang Wen Qing stood beside him. He frowned and spoke, "Don't be frightened by the Third's question, child." However, he felt uneasy inside. [This brat would've easily sensed our imposing cultivation. Yet, not only is he not astonished... he's calm... and he's not paying any heed to our presence! Does he have some powerful backing? Or maybe he's from a renowned family?]

[However, shouldn't he be refraining from acting this arrogant in the face of three Spirit Xuan experts even if he has a strong backing? I can't sense anything astonishing here... but, can that



person with the overwhelmingly astonishing murderous aura be somehow related to this brat? Or... is that person hiding somewhere nearby?]

Then, Dongfang Wend Dao turned his head and grinned. He then laughed, "Elder brother, I always knew that it's important to discipline a child every now-and-then."

Jun Mo Xie snorted and narrowed his eyes as he looked at him and asked, "Are you... asking me?"

## Chapter 322: To Fail Miserably at an Easy Task

---

"Did you ignore the person who asked you a question? What have the elders of your family taught you? Where's the person who came here a moment ago? Tell me quickly?!" Dongfang Wen Dao tried to restrain his anger. The opposite party was a kid regardless of anything else. How could a great Spirit Xuan expert fly into rage over this matter and start with his rebukes? That would be a huge loss of face.

"My family has taught me quite well! The senior needn't get involved! Should asking a person for direction... or perhaps about another individual sound so interrogative?"

Jun Mo Xie then smiled in a warm and cultured manner. He was smiling brightly in an elegant and refined manner — much like Li You Ran. "Now, if the seniors were to ask me for directions... they should've done it like this — 'If I may ask the senior... could you tell me where the person who was previously here gone to? I'll be grateful for the information.'"

Jun Mo Xie chided them in a satisfied manner after he finished, "And, that is called 'courtesy'. Oh yes! That's what my family's elders have taught me."

[Humph! Spirit Xuan? So what? Just because you're a Spirit Xuan doesn't mean that you can ride on my neck and take a sh\*t! I can't beat you, but that doesn't mean that I'll give-in to you! I can't kill you, but I can still embarrass you!]

[Anyway, these three people appear quite cautious. It's like they are scared of something.] It was then that Jun Mo Xie's mind set to work, and he recalled his murderous aura from a moment ago. So, how could Jun Mo Xie not wave his banners?

"Little bastard! Do you wish to die?!" Dongfang Wen Dao asked

angrily. He may have been rude, but he was no fool. How could he not understand the Young Master's Jun irony-clad ridicule? ... Especially that "my family's elders" part?!

"Wishing to die? I'm too young for that. Even the king of hell may not be willing to receive me!" Jun Mo Xie looked at him in a cold and indifferent manner.

These two were unaware that they were uncle and nephew. So, they continued to glare at each other.

Dongfang Wen Dao was extremely angry. He stretched his hand to grab. The man anticipated that he'd catch and strike that little brat to vent his anger. He wanted to teach the little brat a lesson even though it was inappropriate for him to punish someone so young.

Who would've known that his hands would grasp empty air? Jun Mo Xie had changed positions, and had appeared behind him in a flash. The third Dongfang brother suddenly heard a sound behind his body. It was the sound a blade's edge makes as it pierces the air. He couldn't help but feel his blood run cold.

The two men had just moved into action. However, the Spirit Xuan Dongfang expert had unexpectedly been pushed to a disadvantageous position. He had admittedly committed the fault of underestimating his opponent. However, the Young Master Jun's movements had been lightning-fast, and were worthy of being considered as extraordinary.

"Damn it!" Dongfang Wen Dao cried out in alarm. He was a top-class assassin, and could adjust to any contingency. He had been startled by this, but he hadn't panicked. He conveniently leapt forward. The Spirit Xuan's speed was quite fast. His powerful leaps could cover over twenty meters of space. He anticipated that he'd be certain to avoid that brat's pursuit and attacks. However, he unexpectedly felt the eerie cold wind behind him again. In fact, it had surpassed its previous level. [This is seriously unexpected!]

The third Dongfang brother's movements were also quite exceptional. Yet, he was still forced to hasten in order to avoid his opponent. Nevertheless, he dodged to the right. However, the cold air followed him like a shadow. Then, he went left... but the cold air was still there... same as before...

Dongfang Wen Dao had changed his body's posture seven times in a split second. He had also increased his power by ten times. Yet, the cold air never left his back. It stuck to him like a disease, and continued to get worse. And shockingly, he didn't even get enough time to make a turn.

Finally, his waist trembled. A cold knife had penetrated the third Dongfang brother's lower back.

However, Dongfang Wen Dao was still a Spirit Xuan expert. He hadn't expected such a sharp counterattack from Jun Mo Xie, but that didn't affect his ability to transfer Xuan Qi to protect himself. The blade was being held by a mere Jade Xuan expert. It couldn't have caused any damage to him even if it had been a divine weapon. However, the outcome of this fight had technically been his defeat... a resounding defeat.

Dongfang Wen Dao suddenly stopped, and stood dumbstruck. No cold or heat had ever invaded the borders of his body since his cultivation had reached the Spirit Xuan realm. However, he was sweating profusely at this moment. In fact, the sweat had soaked his clothes.

The eight spectators were also covered in cold sweat; especially the black-bearded middle-aged man, and the slim man. Their stares were so wide that it seemed as if their eyes would pop out.

The third brother had appeared like an indistinct demon to the eyes of Dugu Xiao Yi, Guan Qing Han and the others who accompanied them. He was like shadow who had suddenly rushed ahead... then back... then to the left... and then right. It appeared that tens-of-hundreds of small shadows had started to flit-about in

the sky. They had been dazzled to look at the man's skills. And then, they saw him come to an abrupt stop. He stood still thereafter.

As far as they were concerned — Jun Mo Xie hadn't even moved from his place. It seemed that the short and stout man had been showing-off his unique abilities.

However, what about Dongfang Wen Qing and Dongfang Wen Jian's eyesight? How could their faces not turn pale with fear after they had witnessed the events unfold?

This sight had been sufficient to corroborate the Spirit Xuan expert's fate in this battle.

They had seen their younger brother launch ahead, and then use his extraordinary skill to evade that brat's extremely quick blade. However, they saw that white-clothed brat disappear the next moment. And then, he appeared at their brother's back like a ghost. Moreover, he held the knife in a resolved manner...

Then, their third brother had evaded left, then right, then ahead, and then back in circles. He had assumed seven stances in a split second. The man had moved in nearly forty directions in an instance. Yet, that brat's flit figure managed to appear behind their brother's back every single time — like a disease. Their third brother had executed his exceptional moves to perfection, but he was still stabbed in his lower waist.

The fact was that the brat could've easily cut the neck instead of his waist. The Spirit Xuan's Xuan Qi would've obviously protected the body, and would've prevented him from getting hurt. However, the fact that the youngster had stabbed the waist instead of the neck... was indicative of his mercy.

The third brother's agility was much superior to their own. Their family had always recognized him for his agility. In fact, he was world-renowned for it. No one in the present era could compete with him. The Solitary Falcon was known for his speed, but even

the Great Master would retreat when faced their third brother's agility.

The Solitary Falcon excelled at speed. But, his agility was somewhat lacking in front of the secret skills that had been passed down in the Dongfang Family.

[But, this brat... is just at the Jade Xuan realm!]

[This is scary!]

[What's the meaning of this?!]

[Isn't this too terrifying?]

The strengths of the two men differed by nearly twenty levels.

[Good heavens me...! This world has gone crazy! It's like humanity is trying to consume the sun! The rat is trying to become the cat's bride! ...like an ant is violating a King Xuan Beast!]

[What kind of martial arts is this? Even the Lord of Tian Fa might not be able to achieve such a speed! This, this... how did this youngster achieve this?!]

[Who is he?!]

[He's young by the looks of it... The brat appears to be sixteen or seventeen years old. Yet, he already has Jade Xuan cultivation. So, won't his master be even more difficult to deal with? We are fortunate that his cultivation isn't very high; he still can't defeat a Spirit Xuan defense. But, wouldn't he have been able to kill the three of us with ease if he were as strong as us?]

[In fact, he wouldn't even need to be a Spirit Xuan expert. He would be able to injure a Spirit Xuan's vital points as long as he reaches the Sky Xuan Peak. Isn't this inference extremely scary in itself?]

There was pin-drop silence in the area.

The three Dongfang brothers... Young Master Jun's company... all of them remained silent.

Dugu Xiao Yi looked amazed for a long time. She stared at the 'foolishly standing' Dongfang Wen Dao with a sense of adoration on her face. Then, she clapped her hands in acclamation, "Excellent agility move! It was very intricate! It was extremely wonderful; it was unrivalled in this age!"

Heavens must have pity! Dugu Xiao Yi had truly meant those words by heart. One could say that they were akin to words spoken in worship or adoration. That short and stout man wasn't very handsome, but his agility skills were a beauty. It had transformed his image in that little girl's mind. And, this 'virtual' image had dazzled the little girl. In fact, it had almost made her swoon. So much so, that the little girl would've taken him as her master if he was a younger man...

[This is beyond the regular level of Xuan Qi display. This is extremely outstanding!]

Guan Qing Han was similarly shocked. However, she could vaguely sense that the atmosphere was fishy. So, she pulled Dugu Xiao Yi's arm and softly whispered to her, "Sister Xiao Yi, don't speak much."

However, was Dugu Xiao Yi's acclamation genuinely that sweet? It was similar to that 'cackling' sound under the pear tree. It was horrifying for the people who're nearby, but melodious to the ones who're at a distance.

Dongfang Wen Dao stood with a stupefied expression on his face. His complexion had become deathly pale.

This incident had hit his self-confidence hard. Its effect was incomparable. He had always been extremely proud of his exceptional agility. However, it had turned out to be completely worthless in front of this youngster... A youngster of mere Jade Xuan cultivation had surpassed the speed he had always been immensely proud of. In fact, this boy hadn't even given him the time to change directions properly... [My life's hard work has lost

its meaning...]

It was like a huge sailboat had flipped over a small ditch. He had failed miserably at a very easy task.

Then, that sound of acclaim came through to his ears, "Excellent agility move! It was very intricate! It was extremely wonderful; it was unrivalled in this age!"

That voice was very loud and genuinely heartfelt, but...

He was a Spirit Xuan expert... How could he endure this?!

It was possible that even ten-thousand talented writers and their flowery pens couldn't properly explain the third Dongfang brother's frame of mind. His deathly pale face turned red in an instant. The naked eye could see that redness travel to his neck, and then to his chest. One would've been able to see his reddened toes if he had taken out his shoes...

"Bluergh!" Dongfang Wen Dao's vision became blurry. He felt so ashamed that he vomited blood, and tottered on the verge of collapse.

He had become so angry that he had vomited blood...

That innocent and heartfelt acclamation had made this Spirit Xuan expert belch blood...

Dongfang Wen Qing and Dongfang Wen Jian quickly leapt forward to provide firm support to him. However, Dongfang Wen Dao stubbornly pushed them aside.

Then, the third brother took a deep breath, and slowly turned to look at Jun Mo Xie's eyes. His expression was extremely complex as he hesitantly spoke, "You have guts! I admit defeat!"

"I admit defeat!"

Those three words had somehow emerged from his mouth. Each and every one of them had been extremely difficult to speak. Each and every one of them was like a heavy mountain to him.



However, he had still spoken them.

Jun Mo Xie's eyes couldn't help but reveal heartfelt appreciation.

A Spirit Xuan expert had been defeated by a young Jade Xuan expert in front of everyone. And yet... he was willing to admit it publicly...

[What kind of bearing is this?]

One's reputation was as important as one's life in this world. There weren't many people who could accept their defeat in such a magnanimous manner.

## Chapter 323: Jun Mo Xie! You Had the Impertinence to Stab Your Uncle?!

---

His attitude was "It's only a loss, and it's ok" — this point made a good impression on Jun Mo Xie. Therefore, he smiled despite himself, "What competition were the senior and I having? Where has the matter of victory and defeat come from? After all, the cause for all of this was this junior's extreme arrogance. I hadn't answered the senior's question. I had even spoken rudely. This junior shouldn't have spoken that way."

"Humph! You won, brat! There's no need to go out of your way to protect my pride. A win is a win, and a loss is a loss. What good will attempting to cover-it-up do?" Dongfang Wend Dao spoke angrily, "You were qualified to speak to me like that since you could beat me! I had been too carefree while questioning you. It was indeed this old man's fault. Therefore, I apologize."

He then snorted and said, "However, this old man will come and find you in the future. And, our skills will be better matched when that time comes!"

"Ha ha... this junior will always be looking forward to it. However, the difference in the senior's and my strength is more than twenty or thirty times. I'm afraid that the senior would've blown me into bits if we were to face-off using our true strengths!" Jun Mo Xie wished to make friends with them. So, he spoke modestly.

"Your words are true!" Dongfang Wen Dao snorted and spoke in an arrogant manner, "Brat, you are tactful. If I were to seriously fight you in a battle of life or death... the consequences... Ah... I can't say for sure what they'd be... Your movements are very agile. They're even faster than mine! In fact, you can't even compare them! Dammit!"

Dongfang Wen Dao couldn't help but feel dismayed as he finished

his sentence. He had analyzed the other party's speed. He knew that he could only kill that Jade Xuan brat if he were to shamelessly mount a sneak attack using his Spirit Xuan cultivation.

He was a top-notch assassin. Therefore, he was good at mounting sneak attacks. However, it didn't sound right to use his Spirit Xuan strength to deal with a Jade Xuan youngster. He would only take this step if he didn't have any other choice. But, he was aware that he may still fail in killing his boy if the boy got a chance to prepare himself against the sneak attack...

[I may not be able to kill this brat even if I give it everything I've got ah!]

The loop hole would always exist no matter how much efforts he put into covering up the massive disparity in their skillsets. Dongfang Wen Dao had previously believed that no man could avoid his attacks. However, he didn't have any self-confidence left after he had seen that brat's frightening speed. Well, he at least didn't have much of it left...

[Others can't avoid my attacks... but this brat... it's difficult to say.]

Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously. This unfathomable man had an honest, straightforward and admirable temperament. He hadn't expected this.

Dongfang Wen Qing stepped forward. He cupped his hands and spoke in a very amiable manner, "What's your name young brother? Who is your master? That martial art was exquisite. It was absolutely astonishing!"

Dongfang Wen Jian and Dongfang Wen Dao looked at him as he asked this question. It was very clear that they were also quite interested to know.

The two men figured that their suspicions and doubts would be

cleared once they got to know that youngster's name and background. The three men had been disconnected from the general society for a while, but they still knew many of the world's secret powers. It couldn't be said that they were familiar with these powerhouses, but they knew enough.

The three men had rummaged through their memories and were about to have a headache. However, they still weren't able to figure out an entity that could train such a devilish disciple.

[How can an ordinary person cultivate such strength at such a young age?]

The three men's faces were full of expectation. They prepared themselves for the possibility that the youngster wouldn't answer. However, the answer — if they got one — would point to an earth-shaking man with world-threatening power. That individual simply couldn't be ordinary by any measure!

"He he... the seniors flatter me! The seniors are very open-minded. Your Xuan cultivation is also excellent. This little one truly admires the seniors! Moreover, the seniors have a noble character, and unquestionable integrity! I genuinely respect you." Jun Mo Xie spoke these polite words and thought. Then, he decided that there was no need to keep such secrets on that path and spoke, "I'm from the Jun Family; I'm Jun Mo Xie!"

"Huh...?! ...hic... hic... hic..."

"I'm Jun Mo Xie." These four words had a very unusual affect.

Dongfang Wen Qing and Dongfang Wen Jian cried in surprise. They even staggered two large steps back. Their eyes had a look of utter amazement in them. They were so shocked that it seemed as if they had seen a ghost in the bright sunlight.

As for the third brother Dongfang Wen Dao... his eyes were opened even wider. His entire body had turned red. In fact, his body had started to sway as if he was drunk on some ale. A

continual "huh?!" sound escaped from his mouth as he hiccupped. It seemed that his saliva had gotten stuck in his throat, and that he would choke on it at any moment.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel proud after he looked at this scene. [This Young Master has become quite famous! My reputation has spread far and wide to this extent! Even three Spirit Xuan experts are so shocked to hear my name! This is what they call a 'well-known reputation'! It seems that my reputation has reached the bright and shining moon... This genuinely feels like an accomplishment...]

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel a bit giddy.

"You... you... who did you say you are? Jun Mo... Xie? Tian, Tian... Tian Xiang's Jun Family's Mo Xie? Jun Family's Third Young Master?" Dongfang Wen Jian's mouth was crooked and eyes were narrow as he asked this question. His tone was that of disbelief. The powerful Spirit Xuan expert had been reduced to stutters. It was evident that this name had thoroughly shaken him.

"Yes?" I am the Jun Family's Third Young Master. What happened?" Jun Mo Xie felt even more proud now. He assumed that those men must be kicking themselves. So, he assumed a very confident posture.

"Are you really a third generation member of the Jun Family? And, that Jun Zhan Tian... is your grandfather... and Jun Wu Yi is your uncle, right?" Dongfang Wen Dao asked as his mouth gasped for air; his breath wheezed, and his eyes rolled in confusion. It looked like he would faint.

Jun Mo Xie felt even prouder. He held his head high, and replied in a modest manner, "Precisely!"

[It seems that our Jun Family's name has spread far and wide! Even these Spirit Xuan experts are shocked by it! This feels like a great achievement... Act subdued, reserved and modest... don't act flamboyantly...!] Jun Mo Xie reminded himself unceasingly.

"Haah.... haaah... haah..." the three Spirit Xuan experts panted and opened their eyes wide. Their bodies trembled somewhat. They shot Jun Mo Xie a meaningful glance. It seemed as if they were cherishing the tripe their mouths had swallowed. They felt like embracing Jun Mo Xie to show him their affection.

"You, you... what... do you... want?" Jun Mo Xie finally realized that something was off. [Do these three have an unusual hobby or something? How can I not be terrified after looking at this?!] The more he thought about it... the more his blood ran cold. The hair all over his body had risen, and his shoulders had started to tremble. So, he forced himself to ask that question; as calmly as he could.

"I... what do we want?" Dongfang Wen Dao's cheeks swelled. His eyes bulged like a goldfish's. And then, he laid it all out as he gnashed his teeth and said, "You asked us what we want? I want to kick the ass of that crippled uncle of yours; thirty-six-hundred times at that! I... I'm your Third Maternal Uncle! You little brat, you actually had the impertinence to stab your Third Maternal Uncle!"

"Bullsh\*t! I am your progenitor! What is this? You dare to take advantage of me! And, you want to beat-up my Third Uncle? Believe it or not — I'm going to do the same to you!" Jun Mo Xie suddenly replied in a fiery manner. He swore and cursed. [You guys are brazenly trying to take advantage of me! Do you three Spirit Xuan experts really believe that you're that extraordinary?]

"I did your mother's mother, you little brat! How dare you abuse me?!" Dongfang Wen Dao shouted angrily. However, he hadn't even finished talking — when two palms suddenly hit him on the sides of his head with a loud "smack!" He then fell flat onto the ground. Both the sides of his head hurt badly. It seemed that his ears had been hit by thunderclaps. Then, someone roared, "What crap did you just speak you shameless thing?!"

Dongfang Wen Dao suddenly recalled the words he had just spoken, and realized that he shouldn't have said those filthy words. Jun Mo Xie's mother's mother was his own mother. He bitterly covered his head with his hands. He didn't dare to make another sound.

Dongfang Wen Qing then emotionally turned to Jun Mo Xie, and spoke, "Mo Xie... the thing is... actually... I'm your eldest maternal uncle!"

Jun Mo Xie felt very gloomy...

[First, your younger brother said that he's my third maternal uncle. And, now you're telling me that you're my eldest maternal uncle. You guys are taking turns to dupe me...]

[Are these three Spirit Xuan experts frauds?]

"You may have a thousand doubts, and that's alright. But, you would always know your mother's family name, right?" Dongfang Wen Qing trembled a bit. His eyes welled up, and he spoke in an emotional tone, "Your mother was named Dongfang Wen Xin. She's our little sister... I'm your mother's eldest brother — Dongfang Wen Qing!"

"These two are your other maternal uncles. This is Dongfang Wen Jian. And, the one you had just competed with is your third maternal uncle — Dongfang Wen Dao."

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt dizzy.

[What the hell! Isn't this too big a coincidence...]

[These three Spirit Xuan experts... are my blood-related maternal uncles?!]

[I have three Spirit Xuan uncles?!]

Jun Mo Xie had known all the relations which the earlier 'Jun Mo Xie' had ever since he had received that body. He had understood them in an incisive manner. The fact that his Jun

family had no contact with other related families was quite puzzling to him. Yet, he vaguely knew that it was due to that matter in the past. His father and Second Uncle had been killed in battle. His mother had fallen gravely ill due to it; in fact, she was never to recover from her condition. She had been taken back by her parents. The Jun Family had soon received the news of her death.

Jun Mo Xie had thoroughly investigated that matter in the past. But, he still hadn't come to know much. However, he still hadn't given up. He had continued to search for details in secret. He had inherited that body and adopted that family wholeheartedly. Therefore, he had always felt that it was his duty towards this family to apply the entirety of his efforts.

However, this matter of the past was like a dense fog. One could faintly discern what was there on the other side. But, no one had clearly seen the other side. What horrible schemes were hidden? But, if there was a murderer behind the scenes... was it only the Silver Blizzard City...? Jun Mo Xie wasn't so sure about it...

Therefore, he had been collecting information in secret; one little clue at a time. He would even go to the Silver Blizzard City if he had to. And, maybe even the Shen Ci Empire and the Yu Tang Empire if need be. However, Jun Mo Xie doubted the Tian Xiang Empire more than anyone else.

This was one of the many reasons why Jun Mo Xie had decided to help little Yang Mo. This was the reason why he hadn't hesitated in getting involved in the Imperial Family's internal struggle for power.

[The Emperor's sons may be striving hard. But, how's it any of my business whether they fail their family or not? I am Jun Mo Xie. So, how can I allow you to my Jun Family? Humph! You won't even begin to set about the task, and I will cut your head in the middle of the night. My strength may temporarily not be as strong as a Spirit Xuan experts', but you are only an Emperor. Perhaps



you have Spirit Xuan experts to protect you. But, I can kill you as long as you're not a Spirit Xuan expert yourself!]

## Chapter 324: Don't Let Your Fertile Water onto Others' Farms?

---

How wouldn't Jun Mo Xie know his mother's name and family name after he had gathered so much information? Moreover, those three men seemed emotionally moved. Their expressions were amiable; as if they were trying to express their feeling upon meeting their next of kin. How could Jun Mo Xie not see that?

However, Jun Mo Xie thought, [isn't this too much of a coincidence?]

[I had just spoken my name... and then I got three Uncles at once?]

Jun Mo Xie forced a smile. He felt at a loss for the first time in his life. He gave a hollow laugh and spoke, "I, that... he he... my Third Uncle is behind us... Ahem... he will be catching-up soon... therefore... he he... this... also... are you awaiting his arrival?"

"Why is he behind you?" Dongfang Wen Jian raised his eyebrows and asked resentfully, "Why isn't he in front?"

"Third Uncle is the commander of the main force. So, he'll naturally be moving with them. I'm the leader of the vanguard." The 'Vanguard Leader' Jun continued, "I'm to move ahead to clear mountain roads and bridge streams for the main forces."

Jun Mo Xie burst into sweat the moment he stopped speaking. Even Dugu Xiao Yi and Guan Qing Han couldn't help but burst into giggles. [When has this brat adhered to his duty as a 'Vanguard Leader'? When exactly has he cleared mountain paths and bridged streams?]

[He has opened mountain passes... but only wide-enough for his carriage to pass through. As for bridging streams... what nonsense are you talking about...?]

"What? Jun Wu Yi, that bastard! He sent my sister's son to lead

the vanguard? What would he do if something happened to you? Has he no memory at all? Or has he forgotten what happened in the past?" Dongfang Wen Qing spoke angrily, "My sister has such a great son! Doesn't he have the skills to be made a General? This is absolutely shameful! This is extremely reckless!"

Dongfang Wen Jian and Dongfang Wen Dao also looked very enraged. They seemed to be gearing-up to humiliate Jun Wu Yi.

Everyone was stupefied. [Where was this even coming from? These three haven't even been confirmed to be his Maternal Uncles, but they have already started to shield him?]

"Mo Xie... there are rumors that the Jun Family's Third Master has become a debauchee... that he acts tyrannically, and bullies people. They say he acts immorally and... and is a hoodlum... that man... it isn't you, right? Is there someone in your relation with the same name as yours?" Dongfang Wen Qing asked with difficulty. It was evident that he was having a hard time in forming the appropriate questions. Moreover, he was finding it hard to believe them even if they were conjectures...

Jun Mo Xie, Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi — and even the four men guarding them — were dumbstruck. A dark line appeared on their foreheads.

"Ah Eldest Brother, what are you saying? These questions are of no concern!" Dongfang Wen Jian addressed his elder brother in a dissatisfied manner, "Take a look at our nephew. He is elegant, lofty and noble. He has become so capable at such a young age that his skills can shock the entire world. In fact, he even routed our third brother in close combat. Does he look like a low-life debauchee to you?"

"Who was routed by him?" Dongfang Wen Dao spoke in resentment as he refuted him, "I saw that he was young... Moreover, he's our nephew... I was only trifling with him. Do you think that I would ever lose to him with the skills I possess? Do you

believe that I would lose to an infant?"

"Bah! Say that without blushing! Were you aware that he was our nephew at that time? You're just trying to boast in this chaotic atmosphere!" Dongfang Wen Jian snorted with disdain and said, "Your skills aren't perfect. And, you're only looking to justify yourself. Anyway, you only lost to our nephew; there's no shame in it. So, what are you chirping about? Honestly, you don't have the demeanor of an elder!"

Then, he paused for a moment, and said, "The same goes for Eldest Brother. He's such a great youngster to have as a Nephew. What kind of Uncles are you to talk such nonsense about your own nephew..."

"I'm only asking!" Dongfang Wen Qing spoke in a dignified manner, "You two need to shut up!"

Jun Mo Xie's expression became one of embarrassment.

He had rarely ever felt so embarrassed in either of his lives. First he had made a mistake in realizing his relation with his uncles. Then, he had stabbed his own maternal uncle. After that, he had also flaunted his family name. He had thought that his name had gathered a world-shaking reputation in a positive sense, but had then come to realize that it was the exact opposite. He had realized that his name hadn't come to shine like the moon, and had instead become known for its infamy.

A "pfft" escaped Dugu Xiao Yi's mouth. Then, she burst into laughter. She held her stomach as she started to tremble. She would give Jun Mo Xie a mischievous look from time to time. She would then wink at him, and would start to laugh even harder.

The four guards turned away. They didn't wish for Jun Mo Xie to see their faces contort as they tried to stifle their laughter. Choked "pfft" sounds of sniggering continued to escape from their suppressed throats...

Guan Qing Han was able to suppress her smile the most successfully. Though, there were some signs of thawing on her cold face. She was somewhat aware of her mother-in-law's maiden family since she was the Jun Family's daughter-in-law. Guan Qing Han knew that her mother-in-law's family didn't have a widespread reputation. But, she vaguely knew that they possessed great power. However, she was still astonished since the three men who were calling themselves her 'Uncles' were all Spirit Xuan experts.

Guan Qing Han exclaimed. The concerns hidden deep in her heart had been laid to rest. They would surely have to face the Xue Hun Manor in this expedition to Tian Fa. And, she was certain that they would have some conflicts with them since Jun Wu Yi and Jun Mo Xie were present here. However, she felt at ease since such strong Xuan experts were now on their side.

Jun Mo Xie glared, and then scratched his head. He then brought his hands down, and spread them. Then, he shrugged his shoulders and spoke with an innocent look on his face, "Tian Xiang City... doesn't have any other Jun Mo Xie... and, there isn't any other male in the Jun Family's third generation. But... are you sure that these rumors are about me?"

"Could that person really be you?" Dongfang Wen Qing asked. The three men stared in astonishment. "Are you really what the rumors claim to be... a heinous and heartless debauchee?"

"Bullsh\*t!" Jun Mo Xie's face became dark with anger, "Who has ruined this elder brother's reputation? Am I that kind of a person...?! This is a cunning ruse! This is extremely absurd! This elder brother is young and promising, kind and charitable, handsome and confident, and epitomes an immortal's bearing! He is known as a 'person of virtue' in Tian Xiang City! A heroic, yet understanding person! He has the bearing of a warrior, and the heart of an artist! It could be said that I'm a well-known name, and everyone praises me! The people who don't know this, don't

know..."

Dugu Xiao Yi uttered another "pfft" sound, and held her stomach.

The faces of Dongfang Wen Qing and the other two were full of shock. They started to twitch. Dongfang Wen Jian glared, "You brat! Who is the 'elder brother'?! We are your uncles! Don't you have any sense of respect?!"

Jun Mo Xie clutched his hair. He was extremely depressed, "Your identity hasn't been confirmed yet! We will have to wait till Third Uncle arrives and confirms it!"

The three Spirit Xuan experts became furious at first... then gloomy. [What is he saying? Will our status as his maternal uncles become invalid if his third uncle refuses to recognize us?]

The tents had been raised by nightfall. And, the three Dongfang brothers occupied — one each — in an 'entitled' manner.

Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi snuck out to take a bath at night. The Young Master Jun couldn't help but sigh on missing out on the opportunity to take a look because of this sudden development. Moreover, he couldn't help but feel depressed since his three uncles had caused him a lot of embarrassment. In fact, he was hoping their identities would remain 'unconfirmed' so that he could throw them out of his camp.

Jun Mo Xie had become very fiery in the secrecy of his heart; [I don't see you as my maternal uncles! Why should I? Humph! I would toss you out in the morning if I could beat you...]

[My 'plan' can't keep up with these changes!]

[I can't fail to put my 'plan' into action! My plan will be nothing more than a pretty image if I can't put it into play...!]

[Moreover, I now have to waste my energy by talking to these guys instead of putting my plan into action!]

[Even talking to these guys is physically taxing...]

"So, you're saying that this expedition to Tian Fa is a trap? And, many people will die an untimely death by falling into this trap?" Dongfang Wen Qing's expression was dignified.

"It doesn't matter if it's a trap or not. Tian Fa is where all my enemies are gathering." Jun Mo Xie smiled, "Moreover, some of my enemies can't be considered as 'ordinary'. The Silver Blizzard City is one for example... and the Xue Hun Manor is another. As for the others... humph! There are kids in the camp who will try to stir trouble for me, but they aren't worth mentioning."

The three men drew long breaths, "We understand about the Silver Blizzard City. But, what's the problem with Xue Hun Manor?"

Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly. He then narrated the entire background story to them, and said in a helpless manner, "Elder Sister-in-law only insisted on coming along because she's worried about Third Uncle and me. How could I not know her true motive? She has always remained aloof from the affairs of the world. So, how could someone so aloof and peaceful suddenly quarrel like this and threaten their death just to go to Tian Fa? I've known this for a long time, but I'm trying to think of a solution."

"Li Jue Tian's filthy son wants to snatch away our nephew's wife?! Bah! He has some balls! And, some beastly guts!" Jun Mo Xie had barely finished speaking when Dongfang Wen Qing and the other two jumped up. Their faces were filled with righteous hatred, and they seemed unable to restrain their anger.

"This old man will go to the Xue Hun Manor and castrate that brat! He's fu\*king delusional! That toad wants to eat the swan's meat! Damn it! I won't even leave him capable of taking a piss!" Dongfang Wen Dao angrily waved his hand.

Jun Mo Xie hiccupped; he hadn't expected such a huge reaction from these three men.

"Mo Xie, you said that your sister-in-law... isn't that cold towards

you anymore?" Dongfang Wen Qing asked cautiously in contrast.

"Uh, yes," Jun Mo Xie replied without thinking. He felt that the three men were asking boring things. He had also started to feel drowsy by that time.

"Oh... what an unfortunate child! The husband she had seen only a few times has died! She then chose to stay as a widow with your Jun Family... and now this! She's like that tragic princess from the legends. Her youth has frittered away, and now she can only keep watch on her empty chambers. What kind of suffering is this?!"

Dongfang Wen Jian's thin and grim face was plastered with a smile, "Mo Xie, this little girl is quite pretty. She has an elegant figure. She'd make good for any man. Moreover, she's fresh and full of life; isn't it?"

Jun Mo Xie supported his cheeks on his hand and said, "That's exactly it; she is full of life and slip..." he then swallowed his saliva.

"Yes, ah. What can I say in that case?" Dongfang Wen Dao clapped his hands. He then spoke merrily, "The family name will still remain 'Jun' in any case... would you run away from this? The Young Brother will have to step up since the Elder One is dead. As that proverb says, 'don't let your fertile water onto others' farms.'"

"Shut up Third. And, don't talk rubbish!" Dongfang Wen Qing's face was stern as he scolded. "What 'don't let your fertile water onto others' farms?' Are these the things an Uncle should say to his nephew? It's very impudent of you to speak such things so casually! This is a very shameful way of thinking!"

Dongfang Wen Dao was quite afraid of his eldest brother. He immediately shrunk on seeing him getting mad. He lowered his head, and didn't dare utter another word.

Jun Mo Xie was suddenly woken from his daze by that scary shout. He sobered up and asked in a dazed manner, "Who... what... 'don't let your fertile water onto others' farms?'"



## Chapter 325: Dongfang Wen Xin

---

"I thought that you were a young brat when I saw you in the daytime. But, you said that I've wrongly accused you when I called you a debauchee? You are indeed hopeless! You were quite drowsy a moment ago, but you woke-up quite quickly the moment I mentioned this matter..."

Dongfang Wen Qing snorted and stroked his beard. He then spoke in a contemplating manner, "This is a headache... if... but it's such a pity... but, if this brat... it is problem... this problem... is just not..."

Dongfang Wen Dao and Dongfang Wen Jian scoffed as well. They even rolled their eyes. It seemed that the two old men were playing the same game. The two men had started to play dumb, and were acting all noble and virtuous. They were slyly concealing their intentions in the shade of ethics. Their mouths spoke the words of the world's ways, but not their personal thoughts...

"This matter... we will discuss at length" Dongfang Wen Qing concluded and sighed. Then, he spoke again after a prolonged silence, "Mo Xie, your uncle scolded you because the rumors had mislead him to believe that you were unbearable. However, I finally see that you are an elegant and heroic person — a promising youngster, and the foremost in your generation. Your grandmother would be so gratified if she could see this. And, your mother would be so happy... if only she could open her eyes and see!"

The three brothers then lowered their heads as he finished speaking. They felt depressed as they remembered that their younger sister had been unconscious for ten years.

"Tell me my mother's story." Jun Mo Xie felt a little sad. He realized that his heart felt a bit pained as he said that one word, "mother." He trembled a little. Moreover, he found that saying

"mother" wasn't difficult for him. In fact, it felt right. It seemed to be in his blood, and in his soul. He seemed to have accepted it — just like he had embraced his grandfather and his third uncle...

Dongfang Wen Qing let out a long sigh. He had started to shudder a bit. His jaw and beard were also trembling. One could see that he felt very sad. The three brothers looked at each other. They saw each other's eyes, and realized that they all felt the same sadness in their hearts.

"Your mother was named Dongfang [Wen Xin](#). We loved our little sister very dearly. She was gentle, beautiful and lovely," Dongfang Wen Qing's voice shuddered with emotion. He seemed gloomy. And, his eyes had become misty; they appeared to be pulsating in the candlelight. It seemed from his voice that he was on a delirious rave. He continued to recount the story, and it appeared that his state of mind had gotten engrossed in the events of the past.

... ..

Everyone loved my lovely little sister in those days.

Now, unexpectedly...

I still remember to this day — the entire family had opposed the idea of my little sister's wedding with Jun [Wu Hui](#). But, she was determined. She wouldn't be fazed, and continued to insist on it. So, the family had no choice but to agree to their marriage. But, mother had told her, "Come back if you don't like it there. This family would always be your home."

Little Sister had laughed happily and said, "Wen Xin asks her heart, and Wu Hui has no regrets. I have asked my heart, and it shall have no regrets till the end," she had excitedly said.

But, from then on...

I remember that happy smile to this day. It was like a splendid and joyful flower. It warmed the heart of everyone in the family.

Then, I remember the day she had come back... She had returned

home haggard. It seemed that her heart had died from the depression. She's been sleeping for ten years since... never to be Wen Xin again...

I still remember that she was wide awake when she had returned home. But, her eyes were empty, and she didn't speak. Mother and everyone else were at her side three days later... that's when she mustered the last of her strength and muttered a line...

"I have no regrets in this life. I have no regrets on being born. My Jun has no regrets; so, I have no regrets. I asked my heart what it wants... to be with Wu Hui — a world with Wu Hui; life and death with Wu Hui!"

A tear had dropped on the pillow from her nearly dry eyes after she stopped speaking. She then slowly closed them — never to open them again.

Little Sister didn't have any regrets or deep-rooted hatred up till the very moment she lost consciousness.

"I will follow him in life, and I will follow him in death! I have no regrets in either life or death!"

Our family has tried every method to keep her alive for the past ten years. And, we've endlessly tried to revive her. But, we weren't able to make her open her eyes.

She had — Wu Hui — no regrets in her heart. And so, she had gone away...

Mother became uncontrollably enraged. She had trained many fighters for the clan over the years. She sent out all of them out. 196 Earth Xuan and stronger experts unleashed indiscriminate slaughter upon the world. The Dongfang Family's name shook the entire world for few years. And, the Silver Blizzard City was given special attention. The entire world felt endangered for a while; everyone was terrified.

However, our Dongfang Family's power was still insignificant.

So, it was difficult to make the whole world tremble.

Eventually, three Great Masters arrived to put a stop to it. Li Jue Tian and Han Feng Xue came out, and intercepted the many Dongfang warriors at the Broken Dragon Valley. Even the greatest Great Master — Yun Bie Chen — also made an appearance.

It was mutually agreed to restrict the outcome of the war to the result of one battle.

Mother was our strongest fighter. She was to fight Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Xing Yun and Xiao Bu Yu on her own. They had then agreed that the fate of the lives of Xiao Xing Yun and Xiao Bu Yu would be left in our hands if the Xiao Family suffered defeat, but all the hate and enmity will be written off. However, if mother was to lose this battle — the Dongfang Family would have to retreat from the society at large, and go into hiding.

That terrifying battle could only be called 'world shaking'!

Mother eventually became weary, and lost her strength while fighting the two level-four Spirit Xuan experts. She lost the battle, and was compelled to honor the condition. The Dongfang Family vowed that we'd only return to the society if the snow-capped peaks were to collapse, and the Xuan Beasts were to come out of Tian Fa. Else... the Eight Great Masters would severely punish our family.

The Great Eight Masters weren't the same at that time as they are today. The Supreme Blue Master Meng Hong Chen and the Solitary Falcon weren't ranked in the Great Eight Master at that time. They ascended to their ranks after two of the Great Masters disappeared.

Mother had begrudgingly lost that battle, but she left her mark behind. Xiao Xing Yun and Xiao Bu Yu would never cross the Spirit Xuan fourth level; their cultivation halted at their then-current levels. Consequently, they'd never be able to reach the level of a Great Master.

However, the Dongfang Family's strength was seriously weakened as a result of the battle.

The Dongfang family hasn't come out of its hiding in ten years... except to avenge Mo You and Mo Chou's deaths.

....

Dongfang Wen Qing finished speaking about the past. Jun Mo Xie felt a heavy mountain-like burden press down upon him after he heard of it. The other three felt the same. The Young Master Jun stared at the flickering candlelight. His face was expressionless, but he was enraged inside.

His parents' unchanging love for each other flashed in his mind, and his stomach turned to knots.

His soul was transported to the battles of the past for a moment. He could almost see the warriors of the Dongfang Family spread far and wide. They spilled blood as they continued to take people's lives. Their strikes would never return empty. Thus, their prestige rose within the society.

His mind then rushed towards the Broken Dragon Valley to witness the Dongfang Family's fight of desperation — a fight which the lady of the Dongfang Family could have won, but didn't; she couldn't be defeated, but lost. A fight she couldn't win even though she was certain to...

Sometimes a victory can bring more hardship than a defeat!

Yun Bie Chen, Li Jue Tian and Han Feng Xue — three of the strongest Great masters were present there to keep watch. How could this bloody enmity be written-off if the Dongfang Family was victorious?

Write off the enmity? It was very pleasant to hear about this notion. However, the Xiao Family would've never agreed to resolve this enmity even if the Dongfang family were to uphold their word. How could they not avenge the deaths of the two elders

who'd die fighting in this battle?

Moreover, how could the three greatest masters allow another one of such disputes to arise? Therefore, this matter had to end with tragedy for the Dongfang Family. They had been doomed the moment they had been intercepted. The lady of the Dongfang Family had no choice but to accept her defeat in order to protect her family.

She could've won, but she was forced to lose. It was a tragic and moving sight...

Jun Mo Xie was convinced that the people present at that scene were well aware that Lady Dongfang couldn't have lost the battle. [How could it be that she lost the battle, but secretly forced Xiao Xing Yun and Xiao Bu Yu's cultivation to halt at level four of the Spirit Xuan realm?]

This outcome had taken shape under the pressure of the three Great Masters. And, the Dongfang Family had no choice but to surrender.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt disgust arise from the bottom of his heart. This dislike was directed at those three Great Masters.

[The snow-capped peaks were to collapse, and the Xuan Beasts were to come out of Tian Fa...! What kind of harsh conditions are these?]

[These are the most fu\*ked-up conditions!]

[Damn it! Why didn't they just say that it's better to have the heavens fall and the earth rend than allow the Dongfang family to return?]

[If I were to set-up a condition... I'd say... only when the eagles scurry underwater at the sight of rats soaring in the sky! Or perhaps, only when the fishes start to race on land...!]

[Damn it!]

"And then, mother... that is, your grandmother... broke all ties with your Jun Family because of this matter ten years ago. She was very dissatisfied. In fact, she was extremely disgusted with the way your grandfather handled things then," Dongfang Wen Qing let out a long sigh. His eyes were filled with an indescribable emotion.

Jun Mo Xie remained silent. He found it inconvenient to speak. He had always known his grandfather's temperament. [The Royal Family must have gotten involved, and grandmother must have wanted to eliminate them. However, Grandpa must have resolutely refused that idea.]

[This disagreement would've brought the two families to break off all ties!]

[This is possible owing to Grandpa's foolishly loyal attitude at the time. But, it may not stand the same after such a long time and after so many events...]

"Jun Zhan Tian was his generation's hero. He is upright, honest and incomparably loyal. However, this is his biggest weakness as well as his greatest merit." Dongfang Wen Qing sighed, "The bird has fallen to the bow, and the rabbit has fallen to the hunting dog since ancient times. He is extremely loyal, and his services have been highly appreciated by the entire country. However, a highly admirable war general's fate is very tragic. He doesn't die on the battlefield. He is beheaded and his property is confiscated... One can shake the gods if they fly too high..."

Dongfang Wen Qing looked at Jun Mo Xie in a profound and meaningful manner. He then chanted in a loud voice, "High position, huge wealth and endless glory — are fleeting like the mist. What can these aspects be compared to the prospect of roaming free and unfettered in this world..."

"Haha... you do not have to worry about me on that count. Do I look like the foolishly loyal type?" Jun Mo Xie laughed. He intentionally laughed in order to lighten the mood since the heavy

atmosphere had become extremely oppressive and stifling for the four men.

"You really don't look like one, brat! You're a little crafty one on the contrary! One shouldn't be that crafty!" Dongfang Wen Qing laughed.

"However, the Dongfang Family can't show themselves... so, how come you have come out?" Jun Mo Xie asked curiously.

"Dongfang Family can't be that upright. However, can't we come out if we don't use the Dongfang Family's name, and operate in secrecy? Anyway, won't we all starve if everyone from the family withdraws from the world?" Dongfang Wen Dao gave a "are you stupid?" look to Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie was stunned.

"Besides, this Xuan Beast uprising is unprecedented. It has resulted in the formation of strong alliances. Powerful forces are being gathered, and we three have come here since we've been hired by the Xue Hun Manor." Dongfang Wen Qing laughed in order to alleviate Jun Mo Xie's embarrassment.

"You were hired?" Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes wide in shock.

Wen Xin means 'To ask one's heart'

Wu Hui means 'no regrets'.



# Chapter 326: The Biggest Barrier to Xuan Cultivation's Advancement

---

"Of course we were hired! When has the Dongfang Family done anything without a payment?" Dongfang Wen Qing asked as he stared and chided, "This is our family's fundamental principle!"

"Oh... ha... ha..." Jun Mo Xie was dumbstruck for a while, but then he suddenly broke into laughter.

This was a genuine case of "having many common traits".

[I follow the same principle.]

"What are you smiling at?" The three men stared at Jun Mo Xie. "Your grandfather used to call us 'profiteers' in those days. Don't tell me, you also... humph!"

"I'm not smiling at anything. This is exactly how things should be done. One should earn money and avoid calamities. It is natural that you should receive remuneration if you're going to do something. How is this 'profiteering'? Do I have to do everything free of charge so I can seem honorable? That's just too..." Jun Mo Xie laughed happily, "What's the quotation for this mission?"

"A hundred-thousand silver taels. Actually... it's a hundred-thousand per person. Therefore, we're earning a total of three-hundred-thousand in silver taels!" Dongfang Wen Dao spoke with some arrogance. He stretched his fingers to demonstrate the value, "Pretty good a sum, right?"

Jun Mo Xie was stunned speechless.

"We will take this three-hundred-thousand back to the family, and it will be able to procure provisions for our family for a long time," Dongfang Wen Qing sounded content. He stroked his beard, and narrowed his eyes. It seemed that he had accomplished something great.

"Bang!" Jun Mo Xie suddenly fell down. His head hit the table the candle was set on. The candle got extinguished as a result. The small lamp jar also tumbled, and his face was splashed with the oil.

"This... what on earth is this?" the three Dongfang men cried in shock, and hurried to support the Young Master Jun. [Has hearing of such a high price for our mission shocked him that much?]

Hit-man Jun was admittedly very shocked.

However, the reasons behind that shock...

"A hundred-thousand for one person... and three-hundred-thousand for the three of you...? That's extremely cheap! I drink flagons of wine that are worth more than that! Since when did the price of Spirit Xuan experts' service become reduced to that of a daily wage worker?" Jun Mo Xie's shocking words made his three Spirit Xuan uncles feel somewhat ashamed.

The Young Master Jun hadn't spoken lies either... He had auctioned his exquisite wine at the Aristocratic Hall at very high prices. However, that wine was truly worthy of being called the 'Heavenly Grade Wine'. Everyone who had lived to taste it had gone crazy over it. On top of that, its price had sky-rocketed even further because its supply was limited, and only the people from the highest echelons of the Tian Xiang Empire — true aristocrats — could enjoy it. So, its value had obviously increased because of its rarity. Many besides those within the boundaries of Tian Xiang Empire had the good fortune to taste the wine. And, they too ended up admiring it greatly.

The highly expensive price of this wine didn't drop at all. The noise about this "one-in-a-million wine" didn't fade after the Aristocratic Hall announced that it wouldn't sell any more of it. So, some of it appeared on the black market soon after. Some magnate fortunate-enough to have purchased it at the auction had put it on the black market. And, Jun Mo Xie had found out through Fatty Tang, Hai Chen Feng and other people that the price of that

wine had shot up even higher. The price of a single jar had reached over three-hundred-thousand in silver!

"Bullsh\*t! Is the wine you drink fermented with gold and jade? Does your wine cost more than a hundred-thousand in silver? Does your family pay a hundred-thousand to a daily wage worker?!" Dongfang Wen Dao retorted gloomily. However, he was aware that the lifestyle at the upper echelons households in Tian Xiang City was extremely extravagant. The riches and opulence in that city was far higher than any other place on the continent. Moreover, he was aware that these words had come from the mouth of the infamous Jun Family's debauchee of a Young Master. Therefore, he feared that the statement wasn't actually fake or exaggerated.

Speaking of the Dongfang Family... it was once considered one of the great aristocratic families. And, it was quite powerful even if it wasn't as strong as the Silver Blizzard City or the Xue Hun Manor. It merely conducted itself in a quiet and discreet manner in order to attract less attention. But, they had still possessed commendable resources at their disposal.

However, the family has been cut-off from the world for ten years because of that damned pledge! It had seemed like the entire Dongfang Family had disappeared. Everyone from this family had withdrawn from society to live in their secret holdings, and they had fully disengaged from any interaction with the outside world as well.

The many Great Masters had kept a close watch for the first few years since they had feared that the Dongfang Family wouldn't adhere to the condition. The Dongfang Family had no choice but to give in under such strong pressure. Therefore, they became completely isolated from the world. However, the family had several people, and a lot of clothing and food was required for them. They had a profound background, but they were slowly unable to make their ends meet. Many years passed, and it had started to seem that they were feeding on empty air. Soon, several

major forces started to contact the Dongfang family, and expressed their desires to resume business with them.

After all, the outside world needed to maintain its livelihood even if the Dongfang Family had been banished. But, the circumstances of the three Great Masters who had witnessed their exile changed with time. Yun Bie Chen got spirited away and disappeared. Li Jue Tian began to wander the world for years on an end, and became hard to find. Soon, Han Feng Xue was the only one who remained accessible. However, he went to the Silver Blizzard City soon after. Thus, all three of the greatest Masters had become secluded from the rest of the world.

The Dongfang Family had been rendered helpless. So, they had no choice but to send small teams to maintain its business. However, their old businesses declined after some time, and the new business required a lot of man power and resources. This obviously wasn't easy to establish.

However, Li Jue Tian had personally approached the Dongfang Family with a plea for help this time. He then offered a generous hundred-thousand in silver for each person. This gesture had clearly demonstrated his approach, "I know you come out in secret, but I won't interfere with it."

It could be said that this transaction was of great importance to the Dongfang Family. So, they decided to give special attention to this job. In fact, they were now indebted to the Xue Hun Manor. Therefore, they dispatched their three strongest warriors for this task. In order words, this matter wasn't about their greed for the three-hundred-thousand silver taels alone.

"Your grandfather sends his troops to the Dongfang Family every year and every season. They deliver us with supplies in secrecy even though he shuns in front of the world. However, you grandmother still hasn't forgotten about the past," Dongfang Wen Qing smiled bitterly and sighed. Who would've thought that the once great Dongfang Family would've been forced into such a

miserable state...

Jun Mo Xie remained speechless.

It's quite difficult to state who was wrong or who was right in that matter.

[How could grandfather not understand the manner in which people's minds work? He had probably evaluated the situation a long time ago... The Dongfang Family was very powerful back then, and they even had justice in their support. But, it was bound to result in widespread outrage throughout the continent if they had rashly eliminated the Tian Xiang Empire's royal family. Moreover, the Great Masters would be compelled to intervene due to their contract of alliance. In fact, even the present Eight Great Masters would rise up in revolt if the situation turned.]

[Moreover, their enemy was the Silver Blizzard City's Xiao family.]

[Therefore, the only this matter would've only concluded with the destruction of the Dongfang Family and the Jun Family.]

[This would've been the only conclusion to this matter.] He was convinced that any man would think the same way. [My grandfather spent his entire life at the battlefield. His entire would be a waste if he couldn't foresee this...]

[The weight of making a 'preferable' decision would've taken precedence in the presence of such pressure from all sides. And, the most important aspect is obviously to preserve the existence of the Dongfang and the Jun Family.]

This kind of a result was temporarily painful for everyone to bear, but it had ensured the safety of lives of people from both the families. Moreover, it ensured that the Dongfang Family survived a thorough extinction. Otherwise, how could someone with Jun Zhan Tian's temper just submit without making any attempts to take revenge?

Jun Mo Xie had always thought that it was strange that his grandfather and third uncle — two genuinely iron-blooded men — had never tried to take revenge in all this time. But, his maternal uncle's words had cleared everything, and had pointed to the real reason for behind their inaction.

Jun Zhan Tian wouldn't worry too much about his own family getting wiped out while taking revenge. But, he wouldn't stand getting the Dongfang Family involved in it... and being wiped out as well. He was a man who wouldn't flinch at the prospect of his own family's blood being spilled. But, he wouldn't allow it happen to someone else's family.

Jun Mo Xie thought that his speculation may not have been factually correct to the point. But, it was by-and-large correct...

"In fact, I think that living in seclusion for these ten years hasn't necessarily been a bad thing for the Dongfang Family," Dongfang Wen Qing saw that Jun Mo Xie looked sad after he had heard everything. So, he smiled to console him, "My Dongfang Family's assassination technique is famous throughout the world. However, the secret technique is also my family's biggest concern and flaw!"

"Why is that?" Jun Mo Xie was somewhat puzzled.

"My Dongfang Family has existed for three-hundred years. And, it has produced a number of successive experts. But, it has never had a Spirit Xuan Master in its ranks," Dongfang Wen Qing spoke bitterly.

"Oh? What kind of an answer is that? The old lady of the family fought two Spirit Xuan experts from the Xiao Family on her own. Though, she didn't win... but she could've. Such strength is nothing short of 'astonishing'! Has she still not reached the strength of the Great Masters?" the Young Master Jun was quite puzzled.

"Mother was admittedly strong-enough to singlehandedly overcome two Spirit Xuan experts. And, her strength was truly at

par with the Great Masters. However, she hadn't reached the true realm of the Great Masters! The Dongfang Family trains in 'assassination missions'. We pay careful attention to the target... we strike it, and then we escape. However, an assassin is in no way a 'warrior'."

Dongfang Wen Qing continued in a serious tone, "We have been trying to perfect the 'assassinating technique' since times-immemorial in attempts to make it perfect. The Dongfang Family's generations have focused their attention on studying agility martial arts techniques; and, we've been making it increasingly exquisite. Therefore, our skills have become nearly perfect as a result.

"However, the consequence of this is that... one enters an incorporeal form, and lands up on a devious road. And, it's very difficult to turn back from that devious road."

"A Devious road?" Jun Mo Xie looked thoughtful. His expression had gradually become pensive.

"Can you make a guess? You are extremely proficient in such martial arts. So, I presume that you'll figure this point out very quickly," Dongfang Wen Qing asked. Then, he looked at Jun Mo Xie's expression and sighed, "A Spirit Xuan expert who wishes to ascend to the level of a Great Master doesn't seek for the conditions to be appropriate. Such an expert forms their own system. They incorporate their Xuan Qi into it, and develop a unique understanding. And, thus takes place the formation of a new field; a field which they develop in their own sphere. It can even be said that each Great Master is like the creator of a particular sect!

"And, one needs to explore themselves in order reach this stage. They need to explore their skills in order to sharpen them. And, where does this exploration process take place? It takes place in real-life battles! It comes from killing! One would discover their weaknesses during combat. And then, they would put their efforts

into making an improvement. After that, they would again return to combat, and then become even better. They would eventually be able to attain spiritual comprehension after hundreds and thousands of attempts. This is the initial obsession of every Great Master! How would they ever be Great Masters if they weren't obsessed with improving their Xuan efficacy?! How could they ever become a Great Master if they senselessly continued to cultivate their bodies?"

The Young Master Jun nodded in silence. He recalled that the Solitary Falcon didn't hesitate to risk a gruesome death when he scaled the perilous snowy mountain to fight with the Xuan Falcons and Eagles. The man also didn't hesitate to reduce his identity when he came out to look for a fight. [He did it all for this reason?]

"We assassins get to kill enough number of people. But, we don't have enough direct combat experience by virtue of being assassins. After all, how can we be considered 'assassins' if we start getting involved in direct combat? It's true that we assassins get to kill many people. But, we can only use this experience to perfect and enhance our skills. And, this renders us with the inherent inability to absorb combat experience while fighting someone since an assassin must necessarily kill with one strike when he takes on a mission. So, this one strike must be very sharp and incisive. But, an assassin's weakness will only get exposed when he fails to kill his target in one strike. However, an assassin exposing his weakness in front of his opponent is like him signing his own death warrant!

"This has been the greatest flaw of our Dongfang Family! This was the reason why we couldn't do anything when faced with the three Great Masters even though our power reached the clouds and we had numerous assassins! Therefore, Mother had no choice but to accept this extremely unfair condition."

Dongfang Wen Qing's eyes shone as he looked at Jun Mo Xie, "You must've understood the reason I'm telling you all this... Your



move is even stranger than ours! It's more agile! No one who can kill you when you employ your skills! However, this is also the greatest barrier to your martial advancement!

"You won't need to worry about your life once you can disregard any expert's strength and defense. You would then move throughout the world unfettered since you'd find security in this knowledge!

"But, you have these skills to rely on! So, you won't be worrying about your life. Why would you, right? However, even if you don't wish to admit it... and even if you think you won't be negligent... but... the fact is that having such skill and mindset is what makes you different from the ones who aspire to become a Great Master."

"You are already different from them because you won't tremble in fear like they do. But, one can only have a tremendous breakthrough under the pressure of death! Otherwise, you will only make a breakthrough when the conditions are right. However, you won't reap the unexpected rewards that come with the unexpected breakthroughs that one can attain under pressure. Hence, your chance of attaining the level of the Great Masters will eventually turn into a hopeless endeavor."

Jun Mo Xie was both frightened and emotionally moved.

The immense capabilities of the Hong Jun Pagoda had already guaranteed that he wouldn't die... even if the Eight Great Masters tried to kill him together.

[I was always secure in this knowledge. And, that's why I was so daring! I hadn't even reached the Silver Xuan cultivation, but I had already gathered the courage to confront Sky Xuan and Spirit Xuan experts! And... there was no pressure or fear of death in my heart at that time either!]

[But, if I ask myself — what if I didn't have the Hong Jun Pagoda with me? How many times should I have died because of my actions?]

[I was immeasurably self-satisfied. I had thought that I had no need to have any misgivings because I possess remarkable abilities. But, will I be able to make progress to that level in the future if I continue to have such an attitude?]

A drop of cold sweat slowly trickled down as Jun Mo Xie thought about this. That sweat-drop made a crystal-clear "plop" sound as it hit the table.

Dongfang Wen Qing was aware that he had given his nephew something to think about. He could see that the young man was strenuously pondering over it, and shouldn't be disturbed at any cost. Therefore, he stealthily waved to his two brothers, and the three of them quietly withdrew from the tent.

Jun Mo Xie sat motionless inside the tent; alone. His brows frowned in contemplation as the lights flickered.

[Perhaps... I should change?]

[The Hong Jun Pagoda is a treasure that goes against the heaven's will. And, its functionality is extremely formidable because of this reason... But, it won't help me much with my progress.]

Jun Mo Xie continued to ponder over this issue throughout the night... and up to the next morning. But, he hadn't figured out a solution yet.

The Young Master Jun had dark circles around his eyes as he walked out of his tent the next morning and stretched his body.

Dongfang Wen Qing had been waiting for a long time. He was calmly standing under a tree in front of the tent's entrance. The Spirit Xuan expert looked at Jun Mo Xie and asked, "What? You still haven't figured it out?"

Jun Mo Xie forced a smile, and looked up to the sky, "But you gave me such a difficult problem! I have such a wonderful skill, and yet I shouldn't use it? I should suffer even if I encounter an enemy who I know is stronger than me... but I shouldn't use my

skills? ...Even as a Jade Xuan expert against a Great Master? Wouldn't it be akin to courting death?"

"You were awake the whole night and this is what you've been able to come up with?!" Dongfang Wen Qing asked somewhat rudely. He stared at his nephew for a while. Then, he started to abuse him, "Fool! Idiot! You're absolutely disgraceful! You're an Idiot! A fool! How has my smart sister given birth to such an idiotic son like you? You have really rendered this old man speechless! Do you have fodder inside your head?! Or did a donkey kick your head when you were a kid?!"

"Huh?" Jun Mo Xie was confused. [There isn't a single man who hasn't praised my intelligence — whether it was in my previous life, or this one. But, he's calling me stupid?] He felt like retorting. But, he couldn't find the words, and continued to stare blankly.

"What I earlier said was that you should try as hard as possible to abstain from using your special skills to attain victory over someone at the same level as you! The harder it is to win — the better it is for your growth! You could even skip a few levels, and challenges the experts who are stronger than you. But, don't ever try to handle things that are too much for your Xuan capabilities! But, you are an idiot! When did I ever tell you to go and challenge a Sky Xuan expert with your bare strength? Or worse... a Spirit Xuan or a Great Master?! Isn't that akin to hating your life?"

"Uh..." Jun Mo Xie didn't know whether to laugh or cry, "You didn't state that very clearly!"

"This also needs to be stated clearly? Don't you understand the difference between 'hard to beat' and 'impossible to beat'? You have a wonderful skill, and your agility will naturally allow you to flee to safety... But, are you really that stupid?" Dongfang Wen Qing frowned in anger. [How could my nephew be so stupid?]

What he didn't understand was — that the cleverer the person... the more difficult it was for them to come out of a single point

once they were engrossed in it.

"You're a Jade Xuan expert. So, wouldn't you die the moment a Great Master touch you? How would you surpass your skills in such a case?! Idiotic boy!" Uncle Dongfang was at a loss for words. [I had told you to use your natural surroundings to fight and absorb as much experience as you could. I had never told you to throw away your life...]

"I understand it now... it's so obvious!" Jun Mo Xie suddenly started to laugh. He then rose to the sky, and somersaulted several times as he went into the distance. He descended to the ground once he had covered a considerable distance. [God knows what else my uncle would've called me if I had stayed there!]

[He seemed so refined, elegant and graceful when I saw him yesterday. But, it seems like a huge misconception now! He was unexpectedly so fiery when he scolded me just now!]

Jun Mo Xie hadn't noted this change in his behavior. He had intentionally-or-otherwise started to consider those three men as his uncles. In fact, he had actually started to equate them to his Third Uncle — Jun Wu Yi — in stature.

...because those three men had shown genuine care and concern for his well-being!

"You stupid brat...!" Dongfang Wen Qing was still mad at him for failing to meet his expectations. So, he wanted to scold him some more. However, he couldn't even see his nephew's shadow anymore...

Three days later...

Dust rose over the great road in the distance. The mountains started to shake. Tremendous and majestic sounds heralded the arrival of Commander Jun Wu Yi's main forces.

# Chapter 327: Dispelling Erstwhile Resentment

---

The sound of orderly marching resounded. The echoes of their vigorous rhythm shook the earth. The clouds of dust soared into the sky. These factors could only signify the arrival of elite troops. A mushroom-like cloud of dust would've arisen due to all the confusion if it were an ordinary force. It was only because of the orderly march of properly organized troops that there was no confusion and the dust rose in the air the way it did.

That majestic sound of the army's march gave rise to a subtle yet earth-shattering feeling. The sound of this army's march was so formidable that it seemed as if no force in the world could stop it from advancing forward.

"Jun Wu Yi is genuinely worthy of the Jun Family's name. He's running a very tight force. One has no choice but to admire his work after looking at it," Dongfang Wen Qing was standing on top of a tree. He looked far into the distance and sighed.

"That youngster is quite remarkable." Dongfang Wen Jian and Dongfang Wen Dao stood beside him. They couldn't restrain their sighs either.

One could see several cavalry-units ahead of Jun Wu Yi if they'd look into the distance. These units surged ahead like a powerful current. Even the horses seemed to raise and set their hooves in unison. No matter what side one would look at this formation from... whether it was at the front, or the back or the sides... everything progressed in a straight and uniform line. Their adjustment to uniformity looked similar to a knife's cut.

However, this was just a product of firm discipline; nothing more. However, the face of each soldier in that army was filled with pride. This is what an army is characterized by. An army unit that lacked a spirit of internal cooperation would never have faces

as proud as the ones in this.

Even the Young Master Jun jumped at the sight of such a grand and organized army.

One must know that only the troops under Jun Wu Yi's direct control had been properly disciplined at the time of Jun Mo Xie's departure from the main force. However, private troops from various families had also joined the ranks of this army. These private troops had been assigned as 'guards' for the many Young Masters who had enlisted in the army. However, these private troops weren't disciplined like the rest of the soldiers. In fact, they were like untamed horses. So, it was a wonder that they had been disciplined and brought in-line within a month's time.

[It seems that Third Uncle has great skills in supervising troops.]

The Young Master Jun wasn't familiar with the military affairs in the least. But, he knew that this wasn't very simple. So, the Young Master Jun was aware that he would've had a lot of trouble on his hands if his place had been exchanged with his uncle's.

Jun Mo Xie led the 250 of his men to make a welcome party. However, he was greeted by a cold face. Jun Mo Xie was a wild and untamable beast. But, he smiled at this cold face because it belonged to his Third Uncle — Jun Wu Yi.

Jun Wu Yi looked at his nephew with a solemn expression on the surface. However, his heart didn't know whether he should laugh or cry. [Has any Vanguard unit ever acted in this manner? Letting out your men wasn't very different from letting out sheep in the forest. They basically disappeared without a trace. And, no news of your advancements was relayed to us at the back. I've never heard of a Vanguard unit to operate in this manner before. In fact, this is unprecedented...]

The Young Master Jun had actually done a good job in clearing the path ahead. The army hadn't faced any inconvenience or latent problems. The Young Master Jun's approach may have been

improper and insensible, but he had completed his task nonetheless. Therefore, the army hadn't faced even the slightest of problems. Jun Wu Yi was extremely satisfied with this point. Even the upper echelons of the command were quite satisfied with this since they were informed of his efforts; well... at least no one tried to nit-pick the problems.

The only problem was that he hadn't stayed in contact with the main army.

However, what about those who didn't know of his efforts? They had readily believed that the Jun Family's brat had no sense of responsibility. And, they had credited Commander Jun for the fact that they hadn't encountered any trouble throughout their journey. Even the Old Master Jun — who had stayed back in the Tian Xiang City — had somehow come to receive some of this credit.

However, the problem that seemed more serious was the fact that the count of people who were unaware of the Young Master Jun's efforts was massive in number. To quote an example... if the army had only a hundred men... ninety-nine of them would say that it was the Third Master Jun's or the Old Master Jun's handiwork.

Therefore, this naturally gave rise to the issue of convincing the majority of the population. The Young Master Jun's actions had seemed undisciplined on the face of it. So, how could the military's order be maintained unless some punishment was meted out to him?

Therefore, Commander Jun was left with no choice but to rain down a tongue-lashing on Jun Mo Xie. The Young Master played his part well — he raised his eyebrows in shame, and looked down. He acted like a 'yes-man' in a bewildered manner. The Young Master pretended that his Third Uncle was praising his efforts. In any case, Jun Mo Xie didn't listen to his uncle lecture properly, and had nearly fallen asleep by the time it ended.

The Third Master Jun was busy venting his anger on his nephew when he sensed the hint the latter's droopy eyes were giving off. So, Commander Jun had no choice but to hastily explain the camp's arrangements to the troops in a brief sentence. He then quickly ordered the troops to retire.

"Humph! Commander Jun has great authority and murderous aura! Your authority has increased many folds since I saw you ten years ago. You sent your nephew to lead the vanguard; and then, you actually gave him a tongue-lashing even though he completed the task very satisfactorily. But, I didn't hear a single word of encouragement from your mouth. That's truly a ruthless method of self-discipline. You're genuinely an iron-blooded man!" a mockery-riddled eccentric voice echoed from somewhere.

A cold light flashed in Jun Wu Yi's eyes as his sword-like eyebrows shot up, "Who is it? Come out!"

"We're coming out, we're coming out; don't tell me that the Commander is afraid?" there was a 'brushing' sound as three people came out of their tents.

"Elder Brother Dongfang?" Jun Wu Yi exclaimed in pleasant surprise before he looked further, "Second Brother Dongfang... and Third Brother! It's really you!" Jun Wu Yi's eyes filled with an immensely guilty look immediately-after that pleasant surprise. His countenance also became extremely dispirited.

"Humph! Of course it's us! You're rushing towards Tian Fa so quickly, Jun Wu Yi. Do you wish to die? Are you tired of your life?" the words that came out of Dongfang Wen Qing's mouth sounded harsh and taunting, but his expression wasn't very grave. A person would have no problems in discerning a sliver of care in that speech if they used their perception ability.

The three brothers' resentment towards the Jun Family didn't run that deep. They had only vented their anger; nothing more. Moreover, their hearts were at ease since they had seen that the



rumored 'debauchee nephew' of theirs was actually a promising young man. So, they felt even less resentment towards the Juns.

Ten years had passed since that tragedy. And, Jun Wu Yi was surely the source of it all... but, wasn't he its victim as well? In fact, he was the biggest victim! He had lived the life of a cripple for ten years. And, he had lived a life of remorse for ten years. That one man was forced to bear the blame of the misery of multitudes. Worse of all... Jun Wu Yi wasn't even aware of the situation in the beginning. And, things had already gotten out of hand by the time Jun Wu Yi came to know of Han Yan Yao's identity...

They looked at Jun Wu Yi, and realized that these guilt-ridden ten years had exhausted him completely. They were suddenly overcome with guilt and shame since they realized that Jun Wu Yi had led the saddest and most difficult life over the last ten years.

They felt deeply for their sister. But, they had already given vent to their rage ten years ago by bringing about wide-spread slaughter. A long time had passed since then, and this time had long since worn-away their anger. It wasn't engraved in their hearts in the same manner that it once used to be...

However, Jun Wu Yi was different. That entire affair had happened because of him. And, that fact would always remain even if hadn't intended for it to happen...

Jun Wu Yi hadn't intended it, but he was still guilty of it. He may not have intended for it to happen, but it had become the heaviest burden of his life...

Commander Jun had felt like his heart was being devoured by small ants every night; such had been his suffering for the past ten years. [We can still get drunk and use our bodies to get into crazy fights to drive away the pain in our hearts when it gets unbearable. But, Jun Wu Yi's legs had remained disabled for so many years. So, he had no choice but to endure the pain in silence...]

The four men looked at each other, and felt a very strange

feeling. It seemed as if they had been transported ten years into the past. However, they found it difficult to breathe since those memories had started to play on their minds.

The rim of Jun Wu Yi's eyes slowly turned red and moist. He then opened his arms and smiled, "I have missed you over these years, Elder Brother Dongfang! We haven't met for the past ten years, two months and seven days..."

He then looked at the color sky to figure out the time, and then spoke gloomily, "And two hours... I gave you the news of the Elder Brother's death on that day about two hours ago from now..."

Jun Wu Yi's eyes suddenly became blood red.

The four men at his side were heavily shaken.

He had been accurate to the very day and hour!

[Ten years, two months, seven days and two hours! Jun Wu Yi has actually recorded the time in such an accurate manner! What is the meaning of this?]

This showed that Jun Wu Yi hadn't forgotten that deep-running blood-feud; not even for a single day. But, he could only endure. He clearly knew who the enemy was. However, he had no choice but to endure. Moreover, he had been crippled, and had to suffer the pain of being separated from his love.

Dongfang Wen Qing and the other two realized the plight of the life Jun Wu Yi had been leading for those ten years.

This short sentence was enough to determine all this...

"You've suffered too much, Third Younger Brother." Dongfang Wen Qing took a step forward, and tightly embraced Jun Wu Yi. The two men embraced in silence. Jun Wu Yi closed his eyes since he was on the verge of welling up. However, he was already crying ardent tears in his heart. His facial muscles twitched, and his jaw was clenched; but, he didn't make any sound.

[These words which I had longed for... words of understanding and care from the Dongfang Family... have come after ten years! Ten long years! Even if it's a little late...even if it's a little late... they've finally come! Heavens know how many times I have fallen apart in all these years... How many times!]

Jun Wu Yi's face was expressionless, but a bitter pain battered his heart like a flooding river.

Dongfang Wen Jian and Wen Dao thought about Jun Wu Yi's ten years' worth of suffering. They then saw this emotional scene. They were unable to stop their eyes from becoming red at this sight; the tip of their noses became sour, and they arrived on the verge of shedding tears. However, the only thing they could do was to exert the entirety of their strength to cough a little since they were afraid that they would gush fountains and cry themselves horse if they didn't restrain themselves. They had managed those coughs with extreme difficulty in order to cover up. However, even these coughs had a tenor tremble to them.

[I don't know how Jun Wu Yi managed for ten years! I would've already committed suicide in order to apologize for my mistakes if I were in his place. Yet, he continued to persist through all the torment for ten years...]

Everyone's mood returned to normal after a good while.

"Do I not know that going to Tian Fa is perilous? Moreover, many other bitter enemies of our family have gathered there besides the terrible Xuan Beasts! I request that you three elders ensure that Mo Xie returns safely to Tian Xiang City if I'm unable to escape with my life! I sincerely request you!" Jun Wu Yi changed the subject after he returned to normal, and put forth this urgent request.

## Chapter 328: A Grim Situation

---

"What is this nonsense?! Mo Xie is our nephew! We obviously won't let him get hurt! And, you're also our younger brother! So, you can't get hurt either!" Dongfang Wen Jian opened his eyes wide and replied.

"It's not that I want 'this'. However, I had received intelligence while I was on the road. We don't know the reason for the Xuan Beast's uprising yet. But, we know that the scale of their uprising is extremely huge. In fact, it has the potential to cause unimaginable damage! It is reported that Tian Fa's kings are extremely enraged, and have ordered all the level-four-plus Xuan Beasts to participate in this war."

Jun Wu Yi smiled and looked up at Dongfang Wen Qing, "Your Dongfang Family had made a baffling vow. It seems that half of that oath has already been fulfilled!"

"The Tian Fa beasts have come out. But, couldn't people interpret our oath in a different manner, and say that it would only be fulfilled when the Tian Fa beasts are dead? So, why would you say that half of our oath is already fulfilled?" Dongfang Wen Qing was quite happy a moment ago, but he suddenly asked in a doubtful manner.

"That's because it has been confirmed that this uprising has been instigated by the Third and the Fourth Xuan Beast Kings. The mysterious and strongest Xuan Beast King has yet to participate!" Jun Wu Yi took a deep breath before he continued, "This is the latest information I've received. However, I believe that many strong Xuan experts will arrive at Tian Fa because of the war. And then, the strongest Xuan Beast King would have to arrive in order to support the other Xuan Beast Kings. I'm convinced of this. Therefore, there's only one thing remaining as far as the Dongfang Family's oath is concerned. And, that is — the collapse of that snow covered peak..."

"So, that's how it is."

Jun Mo Xie's mind was set into motion — [I don't know how that mountain peak looks... But, I will go and have a look when I have free time...]

"Moreover, the Shen Ci Empire and the Yu Tang Empire have also sent armies to assist after they looked at the increase in the scale of the conflict. In fact, even the King of the Prairie has sent ten thousand elite cavalry from his side. This is the reliable intelligence that I've gathered so far. I also infer that the Three Empires will be a hindrance to each other during the course of this war since they harbor mutual sentiments of deep-seeded hatred. I've also come to know that the Xiao Family's second elder — Xiao Bu Yu — will be leading the Silver Blizzard City's troops. Moreover, these troops will mostly consist of Xiao Family's members. Our Jun Family has a deep and long-standing feud with the Xiao Family. Also, Xiao Han is my arch enemy, and we have irreconcilable hatred between us. Hence, I'm sure that something or the other will happen!

"In addition, our Jun Family and the Xue Hun Manor also have ill feelings towards each other. So, we must guard against that as well!" Jun Wu Yi spoke everything in one breath. Then, he spat and spoke, "The situation is grim. It's very grim. It's bad enough to make me dispirited."

"And, then there's the Eight Great Masters... the greatest Master Yun Bie Chen hasn't arrived. However, the third Great Master, Han Feng Xue... the Heavenly Great master Mo Wen Tian... The Great Blue Master, Meng Hong Chen have already arrived," Jun Wu Yi spoke in a heavy tone. But, his eyes were burning with an incomparably intense flame.

Jun Wu Yi was looking forward to witnessing the elegant bearings of those Great Masters from a close range.

"Perhaps there's one person you may not be aware of..."

Dongfang Wen Qing spoke up, "The one who was robbed of his place by the Eighth Great Master Solitary Falcon — Feng Juan Yun. He's also on the road. And, perhaps... may have already arrived there."

"Feng Juan Yun..." Jun Mo Xie was silently sitting on the side and slightly raised his eyebrows at that name. [This shouldn't have made a breakthrough and become powerful enough to defeat the Solitary Falcon, right?]

"Many other powerful families — aside from the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor — have also sent their people. The most famous amongst them are — the Baili Family, Duanmu Family, Beigong Family, the Wenren Family, Sikong Family, and Zuoqiu Family, the Diwu Family, the Ouyang Family and also... the Dongfang Family; basically, the nine great families are getting together at Tian Fa! These families haven't sent out many people, but the men they have sent are powerful. Especially the Duanmu family; even their chief — Duanmu Chao Fan — will participate in this war!"

"Duanmu Chao Fan? Like... 'Chao Fan' for 'fried rice'?" Jun Mo Xie suddenly spoke up, "This name is quite memorable and profound!"

Dongfang Wen Qing laughed and explained, "The Duanmu Family's head is name Duanmu Chao Fan; Chao Fan for 'extraordinary'. However, he stutters a bit. So, whenever he pronounces his name... he elongates it since he thinks very greatly of himself. However, the more he elongated the name... the more others hear it resemble 'Chao Fan' word's 'fried rice' variant. Therefore, people have been calling him Chao Fan word's fried rice version since the first meeting of the 'Nine Great Families'. In fact, his true name has been almost been forgotten..."

"Oh okay!" Jun Mo Xie said solemnly, "So, this guy is basically slow-witted. He should be called 'Slow-witted Chao Fan'. It would sound far more appropriate!"

"Ha ha..." everyone burst out laughing. Then, Dongfang Wen Qing continued to speak.

"In addition, the Golden Flood Castle, the Seven Dragons Mountain, the Soul Severing Palace and Clear Sky City have also sent a few of their people. Moreover, there are countless powerful nomadic experts who will add to the numbers." Dongfang Wen Qing gave strenuous smile and continued, "This secret information was divulged to us by Li Jue Tian before we left. However, I don't know of any newer events that may have occurred since then."

Jun Wu Yi's frown became increasingly deeper as he heard those illustrious names. The presence of such strong reinforcements only meant that the Xuan Beast's uprising was becoming more and more intense.

"Damn! There are so many!" Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but whistle. Then, he continued to speak, "They can easily trample all over Tian Fa if such strength is being assembled. Then, each person can grab a Xuan Beast, and take it home as a 'pet'. What's the point of going to such a war? These people will just have their fill and stay idle!"

"Do you even know what you're saying?!" four mouths roared these words in unison as the eight eyeballs glared at that rude brat.

"You brat! Your experience is too shallow to know of the dangers! The Tian Fa forest spreads over tens of thousands of kilometers. And, there are multitudes of Xuan Beasts living in it! There are at least ten million of them living there... by a conservative count! And that too, these are only the level four or higher Xuan beasts we're talking about! The gathered experts won't be able to compete with the full strength of Tian Fa's beasts. This truth isn't pleasant to hear, but the mere saliva of all those Xuan Beasts is enough to drown these so-called 'experts'!"

Dongfang Wen Qing was very angry at his nephew's ignorance. So, he went ahead and dealt with that illiterate.

"You must also realize that you would require an extremely huge space to encounter all of them at once. Ten million Xuan Beasts... wouldn't they be squeezed to death even in the prairie? ...Let alone inside these mountains!"

The Young Master Jun gave a disdainful look and shook his head, "There are many strong people here and there are many strong people there. A small battle starts when these people start to fight. A military campaign is constituted of several such battles. And, many campaigns constitute what we call a war. And after many wars... eventually comes — peace. Wow..."

Dongfang Wen Qing became enraged after he heard this. So, Jun Wu Yi had no choice but to hurry up and assuage the situation. However, he had deep creases on his forehead, "There's so much trouble because there are so many people. It wouldn't have been very difficult if it were only the three Great Empires, the Xue Hun Manor, the Silver Blizzard City and the troops from the Prairie's King. After all, these entities are aware of the general situation. They understand the military restrictions. So, there will be space for mediation if conflict arises. But, so many other forces are also coming together. So, there's bound to be deep-rooted enmities and long-standing gratitude and grudges in all this entanglement. And, it would be hard to say how many people would be there... and how many of them are wise... Who can say that a few recklessly spoken words won't give rise to a large scale conflict between two families? And, who doesn't have three or six friends behind them? Moreover, the Xuan experts who hail from the general society don't maintain order like a disciplined army."

"This problem is a genuine headache," Dongfang Wen Qing and the other two nodded in unison.

"We must have a unified command since so many people are participating. There must be a single commander-in-chief in such a situation. Otherwise, won't we just be providing 'rations' to the Xuan Beasts if everyone decides to fight as they please and charge



like a swarm of bees?" Jun Mo Xie added. The four elders were quite appreciative of the first part of Jun Mo Xie's words. However, they rolled their eyes when the second part about providing 'rations' to Xuan beasts was spoken.

"This is an evident admission. However, the commander-in-chief must be one who isn't occupying that post in name alone. Moreover, he will have to do a very thankless job. Some conflicts may even get triggered between officers who occupy insignificant posts. After all, there are forces from three Empires, and there will be generals from the Prairie as well. Several of them won't bow down because they will be there representing their respective countries!

"However, this problem is a comparatively easier to resolve. The soldiers will obey the commander-in-chief because they are accustomed and in-understanding of military duties. That isn't a big problem. The real problem is the huge number of powerful experts from around the world. They're all undisciplined. Moreover, they aren't accustomed to military restrictions. Not only will they not accept each other... but also any large-scale military command. Each powerful expert will have their own prestige. So, they won't bow down to an ordinary general. This is the allied forces' greatest problem!"

Jun Wu Yi frowned deeply, "I've commanded battles for half of my life. And, I've never seen such an amazing assembly of warriors in the past. In fact, even the combined strength of my previous commands wouldn't come close to this. Yet, I've never seen so less hope of victory in the past. In fact, this is the first time that I don't even see an opportunity for victory.

"And, our opponents are the Xuan beasts! They have an unimaginably strict hierarchy of ranks. Moreover, the Xuan Beast Kings are personally controlling them in this war. So, the Xuan Beasts would do exactly as they bid. They will attack at one whistle, and retreat at the next.

"Everything points to disaster." Jun Wu Yi and Dongfang Wen Qing looked at each other's expressions. They looked at each other's eyes, and read these words there as well.

"We've come this far. Don't tell me that you wish to back away now? We'll see how things progress at every step. It's good to save people. But, what's the point of saving someone if you end-up taking their place? I'm fine because I believe that we have enough people to safeguard our own security. As for the fate of others... are we going to get any money out of saving them?" Jun Mo Xie smiled heartlessly.

Jun Mo Xie was the most confident amongst everyone when it came to this 'Xuan Beast uprising' expedition. Jun Mo Xie could easily ensure that his army wouldn't suffer any harm if the armies were divided into different groups. Moreover, he could ensure the defeats of the others...

[This really won't do! Let's just go and pretend that this matter is already over...]

[Why are these guys making such miserable faces?]

## Chapter 329: Thunderous Events in Tian Fa

---

"You little brat! Stop talking such nonsense! How can we selfishly look out for ourselves under such circumstances? At least ten million Xuan Beasts will spill out to the inlands if we fail in this war! How many civilians do you think will suffer? At least tens of millions of innocent lives will be lost... by a conservative count! This can turn into a huge calamity!"

Jun Wu Yi sternly chimed-in, "We need to put our personal grudges and gratitude behind us at this moment. And, we need to work together for our common good. Only then will we have any chance of hope."

"Wu Yi is absolutely correct! This battle between man and Xuan Beast will decide the fate of our continent for the next hundred years! A man of Li Jue Tian's arrogance wouldn't have made the supreme summons after letting go of his pride if the situation was a minor one! He must've been constrained by the severity of the situation to forego his ego and make the supreme summons! In fact, he would've been condemned by history if he hadn't done that!"

Dongfang Wen Qing smiled bitterly, "Several independent experts will be fighting for profits, and they will surely have a high morale at first. But, I guarantee that one-third of their numbers would sneak-off after the first defeat. After all, one has to conserve their strength for gaining superiority in society! However, we're done for if all of us hold the idea of profit in the 'supreme' position in such chaotic times!"

"The human nature is very evil... They want to fight with the wind, and attack the dogs that have fallen into the ditch. However, a majority of the people won't refrain from backing away when the winds become rough, and that dog in the ditch transforms into a tiger. Most people would wait for the others to fight, and die... they would then try to take advantage of the situation. Thereafter,

they will slip away when no one is looking. These people would rather lose their face than their lives. They would say that — ‘the tide’s higher than I can take... I’m not the only one to lose face in this situation... so, what difference does it make...’ ”

Jun Mo Xie shook his head as he spoke these words in a very cynical tone. He found it a joy to speak in such a manner. However, he then saw the expressions of the other four men, and realized that they were turning increasingly darker. So, he gave a hollow laugh and spoke, "Damn! I have to take a piss! I’ve been holding it in with such difficulty since early morning. But, you people speak so slowly!" he said this, turned away, and escaped.

The four men looked at each other in dismay. [This mischievous brat doesn’t have any shame!]

"This matter isn’t looking good. We will go and meet Li Jue Tian once we reach Tian Fa. Then, we’ll come to your forces and protect you. Mo Xie’s ideology is indeed dependable. We will get an opportunity to survive if we stick together. As Mo Xie said... saving others is a good deed, but putting ourselves in danger for them is meaningless. We have to be pragmatic..."

Jun Wu Yi nodded. Then, he looked up into the sky and sighed, "I don’t know the cause of this calamity... or where it came from... or what instigated such a huge disaster? But, it can be assumed that the Xuan Beasts wouldn’t leave Tian Fa without any rhyme-or-reason. So, who instigated them? I would flay the man alive if I knew his identity! This person has taken the entire world for a joke!"

The other three men agreed.

The Young Master Jun had returned after he had initially slipped away. He was presently hiding in the corner of the tent, and was overhearing the conversation. He broke into a cold sweat after he heard their words. His heart was shouting his innocence... [My original intention was to teach the Xue Hun Manor a lesson. How

did they dare to lay their eyes on the Jun Family's daughter-in-law? But, I never knew that it would turn into such a big issue!]

[I didn't deliberately bring this matter to such a state ... so, you can't blame me!]

....

The next day, Jun Wu Yi got to know that Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi had also been travelling with his nephew in secret. Commander Jun almost went mad with anger when he saw the guilty expressions on the faces of those two women. He nearly scolded Jun Mo Xie to death. However, he didn't stop at 'just' the tongue-lashing like the previous time. In fact, he brandished a rod to beat-up Jun Mo Xie...

[This is such a dangerous place. How can these two come along?]

This resulted in a game of 'hide and seek' between Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi. The Young Master Jun would move far away from whichever place it was probable for his uncle to arrive at. He'd naturally do this in order to evade his uncle's rod. He would escape like a quick hare... so as to never come face-to-face with his uncle.

The army meandered forwards, and eventually reached the Southern Heaven City on the third day since the link-up. It had now been thirty-three days since they had left the Tian Xiang City. The army had been travelling at approximately 180kms-a-day the entire journey. This meant that they had covered over 5000kms after crossing many mountains and wading through many streams.

Everyone breathed-in the cold air after they reached the Southern Heaven City.

The area outside the Southern Heaven City was barren for almost 500kms. The Tian Fa forest was still fine, but the human habitations were all in ruins. Jun Mo Xie looked in the direction of the Southern Heaven City, and laughed at his foe's misfortune so wildly... that he pulled a muscle in his stomach.

The Xue Hun Manor's site had turned into a base camp for the Xuan Beasts' operations...

They had found large groups of Xuan Beasts on the road to the Southern Heaven City. These groups would swarm over to attack any experts they'd find in the vicinity. But, the Xuan beasts' discipline was incredible. They hadn't found any trace of a Xuan Beast in the 150km before they reached the Southern Heaven City.

Therefore, one could tell that the Xuan Beasts' temporary target was the population of the Southern Heaven City. Or perhaps... the people the Xuan Beasts harbored hatred towards. Like... the Xue Hun Manor's Li Jue Tian... or his son...

The scale of the Southern Heaven City was in no way lesser than the Tian Xiang City. It was the first southern city in the continent. However, the Xuan Beasts had already occupied the surrounding mountains, and had created a somewhat iron-bucket-like encirclement.

Jun Wu Yi's forces finally took security in their numbers, and advanced towards the Southern Heaven City. The experience was daunting even though they didn't run into any mishaps. But, they managed to enter the city.

And, the very moment they entered the city...

"ROAR!" a loud howl resounded from the northern end of Southern Heaven City. It split the air as it echoed into the distance. It seemed like it was conveying a message.

The "ROAR!" sound resonated from the north to the south, and the west to the east. It echoed in all directions, and spread its message. It transmitted throughout the city as it travelled south.

"ROAR!" a sharp howl resounded from the southern end of the city in answer, and the message again resounded back and forth.

It seemed like two people were exchanging information. One of them had seemingly said, "Here we go again. Ten-thousand troops

have arrived; this time from Tian Xiang."

And, the other one replied, "I know..."

This interpretation may not be 'exact', but these howls must've meant more or less the same things.

"Wow, these Xuan Beasts are truly disciplined! They're even better than the army's troops. This is simply amazing; I love this," Jun Mo Xie praised in a heartfelt manner. He then shook his head before he continued, "The Xuan Beasts aren't that dreadful. I believe they are somewhat civilized."

The sounds of two lovely laughs resounded from his side. Jun Mo Xie had dressed Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi as two petite soldiers before they had entered the city. In fact, no one could tell that these two slim soldiers were women at one glance. This decision had obviously been met with strong and dissatisfactory appeals from the two beautiful women. However, Jun Mo Xie had insisted on it nevertheless, and had embodied his 'iron-blooded' stance to make them comply...

Dongfang Wen Qing helplessly looked at his 'incomparably useless' nephew. [This is astounding! This brat has decided to joke at such a juncture? He is genuinely stupid if he isn't afraid of them!]

Then, he sighed and spoke-up, "The transmitting of these messages was done by Peak Eight Level Lion Beasts. The Tian Fa's Lord uses such high-level Xuan Beasts for the transmission of messages. This matter isn't a joke..."

"Damn! Wow! This is so awesome!" Jun Mo Xie smacked his lips and continued, "Why didn't we see any of the flying beasts on the road? I wish we could catch them and saddle them like horses. They'd be so useful for 'picking up girls'! Any young woman would fall for me after they took one look at them!"

Dongfang Wen Qing stared at him wide-eyed, and started gasping

in anger. This brat had become so unbearable that he would soon have brain-hemorrhage due to excessive anger.

Uncle Dongfang finally realized that his nephew's 'continent-shaking' reputation as a 'debauchee' wasn't without any reason...

He also realized that no normal person was capable of having any kind of a regular exchange with this degenerate and perverted youngster... It would end-up sounding like a chicken talking to a duck... The language itself would seem foreign...

The Southern Heaven City's troops showed no resentment towards the assistance-force that had just arrived from Tian Xiang. The several high-ranking officers stationed inside the wall respectfully welcomed Jun Wu Yi's army into the city.

Jun Wu Yi had been a bit doubtful on this aspect. The Southern Heaven City was as famous as the Tian Xiang City, and occupied an extremely wide area. However, many people resided in this city. Moreover, many reinforcements from different Empires, organizations, and other places from around the world had arrived there by now. Therefore, Jun Wu Yi had anticipated that the city would be overcrowded, and wouldn't have any space left to accommodate the arrival of his troops. [But, it would be too risky to station a majority of my troops outside the city walls.] He had been very worried about this point.

However, his 20,000 troops entered the city with ease. In fact, the troops that were already station inside the city remained silent, and even seemed a bit embarrassed. [This is very a puzzling marvel!]

But, his doubts were resolved by the time the entire army got stationed in the city...

Experts came-and-went on both side of the city's road... Some of them were bandaged; this was indicative of the injuries they had sustained. Some had a white cloth around their injured heads. There was a lot of clamor around the city, but it didn't feel that



chaotic. However, they realized that the city was missing something as they travelled down the road...

The Young Master Jun thought for a while, and realized what was wrong, "How come there aren't any local people in this city?" These words called everyone else into attention, and woke them from their reveries. However, it wasn't that there were no people there. It was just that... there were only a very small number of them. And surprisingly, the ones present... were at the prime of their lives. No one could spot any old and infirm men, or women and young children inside the city...

The highest-ranking officer in the city's garrison was a General named Wan Wu Yan. He smiled bitterly and said, "The Xuan Beast's uprising is extremely huge. So, we couldn't dare to ignore it. We've migrated the women, children, old and infirm men about a 150kms away. We did this a fortnight ago in order to save them from this calamity. We've only retained men who are at the prime of their lives, and a few necessary stores. This general will personally go and recall all of them if we are able to defeat this Xuan Beast Uprising. We may not be able to live happily and work in peace... But, we can at least defend our families and homes..."

Jun Wu Yi felt a sense of great veneration for the man.

"General Wan, this Jun admires your feelings for your people in times like these!"

Wan Wu Yan looked pained. He then smiled bitterly, "This Uprising is surely unprecedented. Powerful Xuan Beasts have infiltrated the city at least a dozen times in order to look for trouble. And, they've caused more casualties than I can count. So, why trouble the people? I've guarded this desolate post of the Southern Heaven City for the past twelve years... The people of this place aren't exactly the most civilized, but they're still like my parents, relatives, friends and younger siblings. So, I wouldn't leave this place even if had the chance to..."

The Southern Heaven City was his homeland; he had grown up here. So, he looked at it with extreme warmth and yearning...

The atmosphere had suddenly become heavy and stifling.

"To move so many people must've required a lot of effort?" Jun Mo Xie changed the subject.

"The Southern Heaven isn't like the interiors of the continent. So, the population here isn't that large even if the city is big. We've moved around 1,543,900 or so people out of the city and its surrounding areas," Wan Wu Yan said in a somewhat gratified and proud manner. He then chuckled, "The effort it took if of no concern... This was a matter of over 1,500,000 lives! The hard work was worth it!"

"Amazing!"

Jun Wu Yi looked at the ancient Southern Heaven City and said, "General Wan, your painstaking work won't be in vain. This Jun promises that General Wan's tremendous efforts won't be wasted!"

"I hope so. I just... request Third Master Jun..." General Wan stayed quite for a while, and then stuttered those words.

They reorganized the army and made arrangements for the camp. Afterwards, they went with General Wan Wu Yan to the City Lord's official hall to discuss the pressing matters.

Jun Wu Yi suddenly jumped scared after they turned the bend.

[This is the official hall?]

[My God!]

[This discussion is at the public square?!]

The City Lord's hall had been torn down along with the other unnecessary constructions. All that was left was a large drill ground which could accommodate around ten thousand soldiers. The City Lord's original stage-platform was still present. It was around three meters in height, and was adorned with thick green

cloth. Jun Mo Xie glanced at it, and felt that it looked like a stage from a drama-play.

Several luxurious tents had been set up on either side of stage. And, the grand banners fluttered in the fierce autumn wind in front of each of these luxurious tents. Around a hundred imposing banners fluttered together. They also had writings on them — "Xue Hun manor", "Silver Blizzard City", "Ouyang", "Duanmu", "Baili", "Beigong", "Wenren", "Zuoqiu", "Shen Ci", "Yu Tang", "Soul Severing Palace" and so on...

Jun Mo Xie became exhilarated. His eyebrows shot up, and his eyes shone with happiness as he laughed and said, "This is unexpected! I didn't know that this would become such a huge convention of all the great martial artists! This is fu\*ing exciting! There are basically no ordinary tramps around here..."

However, the Third Master Jun Wu Yi didn't take this so lightly. He puckered his eyebrows...

It was very important to have a unified command if they were to have any chance of winning this war. Those independent tyrannical experts could perhaps lead a scuffle or a 'gang fight' with ten... or maybe a few more people. However, Jun Wu Yi knew that none of them were capable of leading a large and unified force of hundreds-of-thousands to war.

However, it was evident that the armies and troops of the Big Empires and the people from the Noble Martial Arts families were on equal-footing in the present circumstances. In fact, it could even be said that the army's status had been raised to the top.

Regular troops would never be held to any importance by powerful Xuan experts during regular times. But... were these regular times? Wouldn't it be the biggest joke in the world if these people looked through a slit in the door, and thought that they could do as they please, and fight as they liked against the terrible Xuan Beast Kings who had a unified command over the entire

Xuan Beasts' uprising?

"Commander Jun, we have set-up the tent for the Tian Xiang Army's command over there," General Wan Wu Yan smiled and pointed with his finger. He had pointed to a huge tent. It was pitched in the middle of a huge space, and was covered in green cloth. Two huge and sturdy poles had been dug into that ground on either side of it. They'd roll-up the entrance screen, and would find that the tent was very neat on the inside. It was also quite spacious. So much so that the tent could easily accommodate twenty people... with some room still to spare.

A red banner flew high in front of the tent. It had "Tian Xiang — Jun" written on it. The three words fluttered as the banner flew high like a spiritual dragon, but they could easily be seen intermittently. This banner was taller than the ones of the other factions by at least three meters. It was also the only one which had the name of an individual family.

"Huh?" Jun Wu Yi looked at Wan Wu Yan with a questioning look; he was somewhat puzzled.

Wan Wu Yan laughed gently. His eyes were full of reverence. "I have always revered the four Commanders of Tian Xiang's Jun Family. The great Marshall — Jun Zhan Tian; the White Commander — Jun Wu Hui; the Devine Iron-Blooded Battle Commander — Jun Wu Meng, and the Blood General — Jun Wu Yi! I'm proud to host the Tian Xiang Empire's Jun Family. Many extreme supreme experts have gathered here in the Southern Heaven City, but this is still my territory. This matter is related to my Southern Heaven City, and I won't allow Tian Xiang's hero to be beneath anyone here! So, I request you to grace the residence... Commander Jun!"

"Many thanks!" Jun Wu Yi remained silent for a while before he managed to solemnly utter those two words.

"I've been hearing many things these days, and many people

seem to have opinions about the Jun Family. You need to be careful Commander Jun," Wan Wu Yan lowered his voice as he cautioned. Jun Wu Yi nodded slowly as his eyes filled with unwavering determination. However, Jun Mo Xie's eyes flashed with a cold light.

Jun Mo Xie slowly pushed the wheelchair forward. Four deputy generals of the Tian Xiang Army followed him in formation. Their eyes were alert, and their hands were on the hilt of their swords. And, the three fearless Dongfang swords walked beside him.

People from every faction leisurely started to enter the wide space at once. If they paid attention... they would notice that Jun Mo Xie was pushing the wheelchair in the center of the field. He was neither an inch to the left of the field's center... nor to the right.

This was an extremely aggressive approach.

[This is my land! It's my territory! I'll do as I please! And, I'll move the way I want to!]

Their route was such that people from several factions were able to inspect them from both sides of the field. And, everyone shot arrows from their eyes!

The atmosphere had suddenly become very oppressive. It seemed that Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi had brought heavy weather and high pressure with them.

The six men moved calmly forward. But, the people on the sides could only feel as if these men were a powerful and invincible current of steel that was silently marching forward. Most people couldn't sigh as they watched these men walk forward in their firm and resolute stance.

The biting-cold wind suddenly started to whistle over the Southern Heaven City. The dark clouds of thunder started to rumble in the heavens above the city, and slowly started to

converge over the field. A gale whistled in the field, and the dust started to roll. The numerous banners started to flutter in the wind, and started to make rustling sounds. However, even the rustling sounds of the banners seemed neatly organized in this moment.

The dust blew into their faces. This made the four deputy generals and the three Dongfang men squint, and their movements became a bit sluggish. However, Jun Wu Yi remained calm and tranquil. His expression was still stern; even his eyebrows didn't flinch.

Jun Mo Xie pushed the wheelchair easily and indifferently behind him. His eyebrows rested like vigorous dragons... dragons which would break out and fly into the air at any time. His elegant, desolate and demon-like face was completely still. It seemed like he hadn't even noticed the changes in the sky, or the multitudes of burning gazes around him. The speed of his movements was neither too fast, nor too slow. And, they remained unaffected still...

This uncle-nephew duo seemed a flashing divine sword that was freely cleaving through the storm to the eyes of the onlookers.

A long strip was cloven in the crowd by the two men as they moved forward.

This area was within the Tian Xiang Empire's limits. And, the Tian Xiang City was also the closest amongst the ones that had sent reinforcements. Therefore, everyone was resentful over the fact that the troops from Tian Xiang had arrived last. They believed that Tian Xiang had set the timing of the arrival of its troops very precisely in order to embarrass them. This was one of the major reasons why the people from the various factions hadn't come out to greet the Tian Xiang Army at the time of their arrival.

However, they didn't even speak of the thought of censure as they saw the uncle-nephew duo gradually make their way forward.

None of them could recall the things they had discussed earlier. Everyone was in a dignified mood. And, everyone was respectful.

Even Xiao Han — who was the most jealous of Jun Wu Yi, and had wanted him dead — couldn't help a look of envy and inferiority overtake his eyes.

[Is it... is it possible that I'm genuinely not his equal?]

Jun Wu Yi didn't have 'Spirit Xuan' cultivation; nor did he have moves as strong as those of the Great Masters. However, he had become a true hero around the world ever since he had commanded those millions in that decisive battle; he had indeed earned himself the place of a famous General. Countless Sky Xuan experts, Spirit Xuan experts... and even the Great Masters thought of him as an incomparably apt General. He had distinguished his name as a commander since that moment onwards.

His demeanor was such that it felt as if he grasped the fate of millions of soldiers in his palms. It felt that a snap of his fingers to light a beacon of war a thousand miles away, and scorch the lands with the slaughter of a thousand generals. He was the strongest general there had ever been. Any strategy that ever came out of his command tent could only bring victory. Even the strongest of Xuan experts couldn't boast of such an unbeatable strategic mind.

This tyrant had the fate of nations in his palms! He disdained the commoners, and rebuked their lowly mettle!

They were only two men, but they had enough strength to send cold shivers down everyone else's spine. This seemingly calm duo emitted an aura which made people look up and take notice.

[I will tread the land ahead... even if it is a mountain of knives, a forest of swords, or even a river of hellfire! I... will tread it flat!]

The soldiers from the Shen Ci and Yu Tang Empires also stood up. They couldn't help but straighten their backs at the sight of their once-enemy General. They looked at him with fervent gazes

as if he were a divine idol of the military.

This was a warriors' freemasonry!

The party of nine men rhythmically moved in silence, and entered their tent.

The weather had changed very suddenly. The sky had gotten covered with clouds, and had darkened.

Then, a loud voice suddenly boomed from somewhere, "You're truly worthy of being called the 'Great Earth-Shaking Blood General! You possess the awe-inspiring bearing of a true 'Commander'! I'm convinced of it! I — Sikong An Ye — truly admire you! And, I apologize for not coming to greet you at the gate! This Sikong would like to have a few drinks with Commander Jun if he has any free time!"

The bold and booming voice shook the ground as its source walked out from the tent beneath the Sikong banner. He was a tall and strong-looking person. His built was tough, stocky and exceptionally majestic. However, his rough looks gave-off a harmonizing and comfortable feeling. He was dressed in green, and both the sides of his face had cuts. One could see the growth of a stubble of whiskers as thick as a young dragon's on his face.

Jun Mo Xie shot a cursory glance at the person. He must've been at least two meters tall. The man seemed like a majestic iron tower as he stationed himself in front of their tent.

This person was the Sikong Family's foremost expert — Sikong An Ye.

"Elder Brother Sikong seriously embarrasses me! This little brother is your host, and he truly apologizes to the numerous seniors present for reaching here so late! And, the elder brother and I can have a chat over some wine any time it interests the elder brother!" Jun Wu Yi's clear and sonorous voice echoed for a while.

"Good! Good!" Sikong An Ye laughed heartily.



"Ha ha... this... this head... of the family... wanted to talk to you. But, this... this person... comes before... Third General Jun... I... I'm the Duanmu Family's head... Duanmu Chao... Chao Fao... greetings..."

This man's delayed speech had a strong stutter to it. However, the expression on his face, and the tone of his speech were enough to ascertain that this man thought too highly of himself.

Jun Mo Xie burst into giggles. Merely listening to this speech was enough to determine that he was 'the' "Duanu Chao Fan" his uncle Dongfang had told him about; it could be no other.

It wasn't certain whether he was 'out of the ordinary' as his name suggested. But, it was evident that he was 'self-important'.

"The head of the Duanmu Family is very polite. I will come and pay a call to the family-head the moment I'm free." Jun Wu Yi's voice was neither too pleased, nor angry. Yet, it made people feel comfortable; as if they had just bathed in a spring breeze.

"No... not... guest... polite..." Duanmu Chao Fan replied with a smile. He was about to speak further when a mystifying voice resounded, "Wouldn't that be too arrogant of these two men. They don't belong to the Tian Xiang Emperor's Family. Isn't that guy 'just' Jun Wu Yi?"

Jun Mo Xie looked at the source of that voice — only to find a man not older than twenty years in age. He stood in a straight posture, and was very handsome of face. However, one could see a hint of maliciousness on his brow. He stood beneath the Xue Hun Manor's banner. The man was gowned in embroidered silk, and had a long sword hung from his hip in its ornate and fragrant scabbard. He looked like a rare warrior of his generation. However, he seemed to be looking at them with disdain.

Jun Mo Xie immediately figured out the opposite party's identity. Aside from the toad who wanted to have the swan's meat... he was also Li Jue Tian's only son — Li Teng Yun. Who else

could it be? [Your father has sprouted a very handsome, but vulgar son! Would we have had a war with the Xuan Beasts if it weren't for you? I will cripple you the first opportunity I get!]

Jun Mo Xie laughed as he stepped out.

How could Jun Wu Yi — the commander of all the warriors of his generation — get involved in this trivial matter? Therefore, it was only appropriate that the debauchee Young Master Jun dealt with it. He set-out light as a feather, "This man seems to have his eyes on his head since it seems like his nose is pointing skyward. It seems that the Young Master of the Xue Hun Manor likes to bully people. You are the bully of a Young Master Li — Li Teng Yun; right?"

"You! Humph! Would I require power to deal with you?" There was a hint of maliciousness in Li Teng Yun's eyes as he scoffed and spoke with disdain, "Your Jun Family has arrived so late in such circumstances. And, that too when you're the hosts! What mischief were you up to? Aren't other people even allowed to ask you this question?"

"We are obviously aware that the situation is dire. And, as for the topic of our 'late' arrival is concerned — why didn't you ask our Emperor for aid sooner? Secondly, I'd like to ask your Xue Hun Manor — why didn't you send out the summons sooner if the situation was that urgent? What were you up to?"

Jun Mo Xie snorted and continued, "Oh! That's right! The Xue Hun Manor's reputation is very important! Would this matter have come to such a point if it weren't for your arrogant, blind and inflexible behavior? How could you delay the summons till the point where the matter has become nearly impossible to salvage?"

"Aren't you ashamed at your incompetence and lack of strength to ask the help of others? And then, you have the courage to blame others? The others can ask this question. However, you and your Xue Hun Manor can't!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled, "Granted, it may be a duty of many to ask this question. But, many senior experts are present here. So, how did you get a turn before them? Don't forget, you're Li Jue Tian's son... not Li Jue Tian himself! So, who are you? And, what qualifications do you really have of your own?"

"How dare you speak to me like that? You've got some guts! Who are you?!" Li Teng Yun glared. He realized that he couldn't rival that person in this discussion. So, he changed the discussion into an interrogation of his counterpart's identity while harboring the intention of punishing him at the appropriate moment.

"This elder brother is called Jun Mo Xie!" The Young Master Jun smiled carelessly. "You must have heard the name of this famous elder brother. Isn't it quite well-known? A reputation that pierces the ears like thunder...? Like the bright moon in the sky...? Aren't I someone who lives up to such a reputation? You must admire me ah."

"So, you are 'that' Jun Mo Xie! That debauchee wastrel from the Jun Family! The famous lecher who never shies from committing any crime in the Tian Xiang City! It's quite an honor to meet you, Young Master! Your evil reputation is truly like 'thunder to the ears'! Your reputation as a 'filth' is truly justified!"

Li Teng Yun was aware that he had grasped his opponent's biggest weakness. So, he laughed loudly and continued, "The strongest experts of the age have gathered here! Yet, a ruffian like you has come along? What seniority does a hoodlum Young Master like you have here?"

Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously, "I don't deny that I am a lecher who wouldn't shirk from any crime. However, this debauchee will still never try to grab a young woman who is already a daughter-in-law of another house. You are my senior in this matter, Young Master Li. Us debauchees should learn from your example!"

"You... Guan Qing Han is a good woman. But, your Jun Family

has forcibly seized her! The two of us are meant for each other! I'm only saving her from hell. What's wrong with that? Moreover, your eldest brother died years ago. Do you wish for her to guard your dear departed brother's memory all her life? What kind of logic is this?" Li Teng Yun's face reddened. He had suddenly become very angry. He naturally couldn't allow this contempt to his name. So, he hastily quibbled those words in reply.

"You two are meant for each other? You are saving her from hell? Did you even take her consent for this?" Jun Mo Xie looked up to the sky and laughed heartily. "I never knew that someone so shameless existed in this world! I had begun to take that for granted. However, you are a master of distorting the truth, and confusing the right and the wrong. You tried to snatch a woman; that too a woman who's a daughter-in-law of another family. Moreover, you threatened the woman's family with complete destruction if they didn't hand her over to you! Is that what you mean when you speak that you two are truly meant for each other, and that you only wish to save her from hell! You genuinely stand out from the masses! Today, I — the biggest wastrel of a debauchee — have no choice but to step down in order to make place for Young Master Li. And, I shall write his name on that banner of debauchery! I sincerely admire your shamelessness; it is the greatest in the world!"

Many people from powerful families had gathered on that field, but most of them didn't know of this matter. But, they glared at Li Teng Yun with disdain after they heard those two young men talk. The Xue Hun Manor was a hegemonic family, but this was too outrageous. However, these enraged people wouldn't fear any consequences when faced with something so outrageous.

The people of this world attached a lot of importance to monastic discipline. However, Li Teng Yun had seriously offended their norms if he had genuinely done something like this.

"That's enough! We needn't discuss this further!" an angry shout

resounded from a tent. It wasn't very loud, but its explosive echoes still managed to shake everyone.

A few silhouettes slowly walked out of the tent, and their majestic auras covered the entire ground.

The first person was tall. His had a dull face. Three wisps of a black beard floated in the wind, and down to his chest. His eyes radiated with power. They weren't full of arrogance or prestige. But, they radiated a natural bearing of the greatest power in the world. It made everyone feel like the person had superhuman and tyrannical strength.

He didn't mean to be arrogant. However, he made everyone feel that no man was worthy in his eyes. It felt that even the blue sky above wouldn't dare to contend with him.

It was this man who had shouted just a moment ago.

Jun Mo Xie had never seen him before. But, he knew that the man who seemed forty-or-fifty years of age... had actually been famous for the past sixty years. He was none other than the Great Master Li Jue Tian!

No one besides him could've had such a powerful and heaven-shaking demeanor!

The Great Master Li Jue Tian must've been at least a hundred years old. Yet, he still looked very young! Jun Mo Xie criticized him inwardly; [no wonder this hundred year old fart has a son of just twenty years of age. Just look at the way he looks! It won't be a surprise if he spawns a few more children.]

[He is indeed... a monster!]

Li Jue Tian was followed by the Great Master of Life and Death — Shi Chang Xiao; the Cold Blooded Master — Lei Wu Bei; the divine eagle-fighting Master — the Solitary Falcon, and another person. This person's looks were ice-cold. His face was like a black mask. The man's robes were black, and so were his boots. The scabbard

of his sword that hung from his hip was also jet-black, and so was the hilt of his sword.

The person resembled a pitch-black blade. He stood in a very calm manner, but everyone still felt as if a sword-energy was pressing down upon them.

His sword-energy could dash against the ninth level of heaven! This person was none other than the one who Solitary Falcon had fought years ago... the Divine Storm Sword — Feng Juan Yun. He originally wasn't a part of the Eight Great Masters. However, his name had been recently included in the list. The man was also a peerless swordsman.

However, the Young Master Jun was very confident that the Solitary Falcon had left his old rival far behind. After all, the Solitary Falcon had made breakthroughs after he had received instructions from the Young Master Jun.

"Since everyone is here — I request the leaders of the different factions to come together and discuss the strategy to repel the enemy," Li Jue Tian unenthusiastically skimmed his gaze around the field. He didn't mention the argument between the Young Master Jun and his son.

His appearance seemed placated. However, he glanced at Jun Mo Xie, and the Young Master Jun felt that he was shooting sharp daggers at him. In fact, Jun Mo Xie felt that his gaze was so sharp that it would pierce his eyes. The Young Master Jun couldn't help but feel himself shudder from the very depths of his soul.

[I have to be wary of him from the bottom of my heart!]

[He can't be matched!]

[No one is capable-enough to match him!]

This was the first time that Jun Mo Xie had felt so dispirited in his entire life.

He had never faced such a high-level Great Master before. The

Young Master Jun could've easily spoken and laughed freely if it were Shi Chang Xiao, Lei Wu Bei or the Solitary Falcon. However, he had felt a very strong and incapacitating feeling when he faced Li Jue Tian's glare.

[This must be similar to some kind of spirit attack! One wouldn't be able to move an inch forward after the seed of such fear has been implanted in their mind.]

However, Jun Mo Xie was very angry since the Great Master had tried to cover up his son's fault. In fact, the Young Master Jun was fuming with rage!

[You are the Second Great Master. Yet, you involve yourself in the quarrel of two youngsters to avenge and vent your son's anger! This is extremely disgraceful!]

[Bullsh\*t Second Great Master; this guy is just a show!]

However, he had also realized that Li Jue Tian had spoiled really his son.

[He knew fully-well that his son was in the wrong in that argument. Yet, he doesn't say anything to resolve it... and then he glares his anger and prestige at the family of the victim!]

Jun Mo Xie finally understood why the two Xuan Beast Kings had only agreed to break the man's son's legs... and not take the boy's life. And, even that had elicited such a strong reaction from Li Jue Tian. He had eventually issued the Supreme Summons instead of making the compromise. The Young master Jun finally understood why the situation had been brought to such a stage.

Jun Mo Xie quickly closed his eyes. He then initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune, and got rid of that dreadful feeling.

However, his heart still trembled with fear.

Li Jue Tian's strength was many levels above the Great Master Solitary Falcon and the Fifth Master Lei Wu Bei.

He was truly worthy of being called the second most powerful person of his age.

Everyone agreed with Li Jue Tian's words. And unexpectedly, no one had noticed the shady look Li Jue Tian had given Jun Mo Xie.

He was anyway convinced that he wouldn't get any justice even if people found out. After all, who would clench fists against the Second Greatest Master for a young and wastrel debauchee? He was convinced that no one would pick this choice of action...

Everyone started to appear from their respective tents. But suddenly, a faintly discernible yet long-drawn-out screech was heard from somewhere. Everyone was shocked. So, they all strained their ears to listen to it properly.

The screech then started to magnify. It seemed to have appeared right where they were. The sound also travelled between the spaces of numerous tents. It had suddenly changed from something barely audible... to a booming sound. It seemed like the heavens had been rendered apart. This screech had the capacity to tear people's eardrums.

"Puff..." many soldiers in the Southern Heaven City faced upwards, and started to spray blood from their mouths. The loud screech had shaken them on the inside, and had managed to injure them. Moreover, the entity which had issued that screech was at least five kilometers away.

Such power was extremely frightening!

Then, the mad and ferocious scream ceased it had momentarily gone berserk. In fact, it only stopped after it had made a resolute grunting sound. Suddenly, everyone realized that the sound had actually been quite melodious.

That sound had just subsided. And then, millions of Xuan beasts from the innumerable mountains, woods and streams raised their heads and screeched, roared, and howled in reply. The sound of



tens-of-millions of Xuan Beasts burst forth with the power of a tsunami... or a terrible landslide...

The people present on the field started to tremble and ruffle.

The resulting screech was so loud and incisive that the clouds which had densely covered the blue sky... disappeared. They had been driven away by the power of this violent screech!

The sky had become clear and bright!

Li Jue Tian's expression became extremely solemn as he looked into the distance. He couldn't hide the shock this screech had jolted him with, "Tian... Fa's Lord... has... arrived..."

# Chapter 330: The Unreasonable Lord of the Tian Fa Forest

---

Three unforgettable hisses resounded in the wake of that hair-raising noise. Two of these voices managed to stand out from the rest, and everyone inside the Southern Heaven City had been able to discern them.

The two sounds — one like the cry of a crane, and the other like that of a bear — had been emitted by the two Xuan Beast Kings — Long Crane and Big Bear.

Only a small number of experts were aware that those two were the instigators of the Xuan Beast Uprising.

There was a "whoosh" sound, and a giant crane suddenly flew-by from above. It passed over like lightening. Its opened-wings spanned at least fifteen-to-twenty meters in length. The crane's crown was bright red, and it glittered resplendent in the bright sunlight. Its shiny beak appeared like a sharp sword that was seemingly cutting through the sky.

Everyone could see that the crane was looking down at the residence of the city's lord with great disdain. Its wing covered the sky, and the entire world became dark in an instant. It seemed a giant cloud had suddenly appeared out of thin air, and had then disappeared in the next instant.

Then, a giant silhouette suddenly appeared from the mountains, and started to rush at lightning speed. It didn't matter whether it was going down a road or through trees; nothing could stop it. It crashed into the giant trees, and severed them from their middle. However, it had disappeared by the time the trees fell down....

Li Jue Tian suddenly flew onto the roof. No part of his body — including even his body's hair — moved an inch. He flew-up until he had station himself on the roof-top. However, his bearing had

made it seem as if he had remained standing on the ground instead of flying up in the air. His movements had been very leisurely.

The lightness of his skills was closer to magic than anything else.

"Has the venerable Lord Mei arrived? Kindly excuse Li Jue Tian for not welcoming you!" Li Jue Tian had amassed the entirety of his Xuan Qi, and had used it to transmit his dignified voice loud and far. He had climbed on top of the roof, and had emitted a roar worth-witnessing. He was afraid of losing his face in front of this Devine Dragon of a Tian Fa Lord. Moreover, he wasn't willing to resign himself to start with a disadvantage.

That voice rose up to the sky, and slowly and gravely started to transmit towards the south. It seemed quite gentle to those who heard it on the ground. But, it seemed like a resounding thunder amongst the innumerable mountains and streams after it reached there. It flowed with great momentum and exceptional prestige.

It echoed amongst the mountains and the woods for a long time before its effect finally came to halt.

"...excuse ...for not welcoming you..."

"...not welcoming..."

"...welcoming..."

"...welcome..."

"...elcome..."

That earth-shaking shout by Li Jue Tian left the low-level Xuan Beasts tremble with fear in the mountains and the woods. So much so, that it even induced a few panic stricken riots.

It had to be admitted that Li Jue Tian's shout was on the same level as the earlier screech of those Xuan beast Kings. Its effect was quite different, but it certainly didn't fall short in terms of its level.

A long while passed...

Then, they heard a clear and long-drawn-out voice. Everyone

could tell that this person had spoken from a distance of at least five kilometers. However, that individual's voice made it seem as if he was standing right in front of them.

This person's voice was quite strange. It was fair, honest and mild. None could discern whether it was a male or a female from the voice itself.

"Li Jue Tian... it's really you...? You've reached a profound cultivation level! Ha ha...! No wonder my younger brothers were so angry! How could an ordinary man cause them to have such a look in their eyes? And, to have even defeated them...? Good! Good! You have progressed Li Jue Tian! You have really progressed!"

Everyone looked at each other in dismay. They felt like their heads would explode. Li Jue Tian was a top expert. He was the Second Great Master amongst all the Great Masters. He was no ordinary man!

However, this person wasn't even talking to him at a level of equality. He had even complemented that the Great Master had "progressed"...

Those words of praise were like those spoken by a teacher to their very young and obedient pupil... "Child, you have progressed so much! You're such a good child!"

Li Jue Tian's voice was unrivalled; the might of its prestige had been unbounded. But, the opposite party's voice was dull and effortless. However, who amongst the listeners wasn't an expert? How could they not tell that this individual's cultivation was higher than Li Jue Tian's after they had listened to that exchange? Maybe even higher by an entire realm...? Or perhaps they were at the same realm... However, the difference between them must be at least as much as the one that separated the Solitary Falcon and Li Jue Tian.

They were separated by a long distance. Li Jue Tian's voice had

managed to stir bursts of echoes. But, this other entity's voice had made it seem as if he had been standing right next to them. In fact, it hadn't even echoed. This area was surrounded by mountains. So, even the loud cough of an ordinary person would tend to resound in this vicinity. However, his individual's voice hadn't... even though he had spoken from a distance of over 5kms...

[What kind of control is this? This control can easily be said to have reached perfection. It has genuinely reached the greatest of heights!]

Then, Li Jue Tian raised his voice, "This matter has arisen because your two younger brothers have provoked my Xue Hun Manor without any reason. I — Li Jue Tian — merely struck back in the given situation. Tell me... was that really wrong of me? And, as for suffering a loss... could it be that the venerable Mei can't see who has suffered the genuine loss here...? Its no other than my Xue Hun Manor... my life's work has been reduced to ashes! I'd like to ask what the venerable Mei has to say on this matter...?"

Li Jue Tian's tone was full of condemnation. He was aware of the difference in strength between him and the opposite party. However, he couldn't be outdone or be seen to shy away in the capacity of the Second Great Master.

The distant voice then became sharp, "Li Jue Tian! Are you telling me that you fought my brothers and were unsuccessful? So, why are you painting me as a 'bully'? Li Jue Tian! Are you sure that you're not dreaming?"

Everyone's hearts shook. [This man had just covered-up his son's extreme wrong doing, and had acted without any reason. And now, his eyes have been opened. He had shielded his son, and had avoided an uncomfortable topic. But now, he's arguing with someone who's even more unreasonable. I don't know if it's karma or divine retribution...]

Jun Mo Xie lifted his chin as he felt inwardly appreciative. [Very

good! This person's temperament is quite similar to mine! I can certainly take advantage of this guy's power later!]

"How could you dare?!" Li Jue Tian snorted, "As the saying goes... Justice is the free will of the people... everything must have a reason behind it. You can't act brashly even if you're the greatest under heaven!"

The other person then laughed, "What are you saying? This joke of yours isn't pleasant to hear, Li Jue Tian. Have you really adhered to this saying throughout your life? How come you're the one to preach now that the matter has gone above you, and your opponent is stronger than you...? Justice is the free will of the people... you've have just spoken these words, Great Master Li Jue Tian... but, does your distinguished self actually believe in them?!"

Those were very pinching words. The law of the world was only binding to ordinary people; it had no effect on the strongest in the world.

The talk of 'justice and free will of the people' were mere empty words for the powerful.

Only those whose fists were strong could decide "justice" in that world.

Those words by the opposite party were an unreasonable rhetoric, but they were also a fact. That pinching mockery of Li Jue Tian made Jun Mo Xie feel very satisfied in his heart. He almost felt like pointing his finger at the Great Master and saying, "Scoundrel! You keep preaching about justice and free will. But, is that reasonable? Is it reasonable that your son wants to forcibly snatch away a family's daughter-in-law? How can you call that 'just'?"

[The evil indeed fall into their own traps!]

Li Jue Tian snorted and replied sharply, "Venerable Mei, shall I assume by these words that you won't distinguish between right

and wrong, and will continue to shield the miscreants?"

Li Jue Tian was the second of the Eight Great Masters. And, his conscious wouldn't allow him to discuss such matter. So, he avoided this uncomfortable topic once again. Moreover, he had more-than-half of the world's experts gathered beside him. So, even the venerable Mei would find it difficult to face-off against such a force... even if his strength transcended the heavens.

The other person's voice became sharper and colder, "Li Jue Tian, you Eight Great Masters are renowned for your strength. But, you still aren't much in my eyes. Kindly think over what you've just said, and remember who you're talking to!"

The opposite party had stopped. It seemed as if something had come up. Then, he burst out again in severe rage, "Li Jue Tian, when did you decide to go to the Elusive World of Immortals? You have caused a huge injury to my fourth younger brother with your sword! You certainly do have guts!"

This roar's power was world-shaking. It had nearly stirred a storm in the sky above. It was evident that the Lord of Tian Fa was very enraged. It appeared that Big Bear had made it to him, and had shown him the injuries on his body.

Jun Mo Xie thought; [The Elusive World of Immortals ...? Why haven't I ever heard of it?] He looked at the faces of others around him. They too had a perplexed expression on their faces. Those people obviously didn't know about this place either.

Everyone else doubted what they heard, but Jun Mo Xie pondered deeply. He may certainly not know anything about the Elusive World of Immortals ... However, the fact that Li Jue Tian had seriously injured a Xuan Beast King's body was quite shocking. It was important to know that Big Bear's physique was amazing, and had transcended any human abilities. Big Bear was a formidable Xuan Beast. Moreover, he had once laughingly faced-off against the Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao. Yet, he hadn't

suffered from the slightest of injuries at that time. And, he had retreated with his body completely unharmed. So, one could imagine his body's defensive capabilities.

However, Li Jue Tian had used his "Elusive Heart and Vein Splitting Sword Attack" to inflict such injuries to him. Therefore, one could easily imagine the might of his strength...

"There are some things one mustn't discuss. Venerable Mei mustn't try to attract the heavenly calamity upon himself in a fit of rage." Li Jue Tian's tone of speech has a flavor of caution to it, "You may attract the dissatisfaction of the Holy Land if you create too much noise. I presume the 'all-knowing' venerable Mei will consider this?"

He had unexpectedly suggested the other party to avoid discussing this topic of entering the "The Elusive World of Immortals".

"Ha ha ha..." The bone chilling laughter rose up to the sky, and continued to resound for some time. Then, the opposite party replied, "Are you trying to threaten me with the Holy Land, Li Jue Tian?"



## Chapter 331: Jun Mo Xie's Doubts

---

"I won't ever dare to do that! I was merely advising the venerable Mei to consider what I'm saying..." Li Jue Tian was calm, "The heaven and the earth must not be disgraced. You mustn't mention the Holy Lands. I'm afraid that you may have committed a taboo."

"He he... consider? To consider...? One shouldn't overestimate oneself. But, when has this matter ever been worthy in my eyes? And, what can you do even if the Elusive World of Immortals, the Supreme Golden City, and the Illusionary Blood Sea unleash their full wrath at my Tian Fa?"

Then, that individual continued in an arrogant manner, "Even Yun Bie Chen hasn't dared to show himself in this world since eight years on my word. I'm confident that I can kick out the three great entities from my Tian Fa as well."

"I'll wait and see if the venerable Mei says so!" Li Jue Tian finished speaking, and his figure started to float down from the rooftop. This indicated that the conversation was over.

Then, another screech arose from a faraway spot in the forest.

Then, an earth-shattering rumble started to echo. East, west, north... all three directions reverberated with a loud howl. Dust rose up, and coerced the entire sky.

Innumerable Xuan Beasts rushed out of the woods and the mountains. They charged in orderly formations. These Xuan Beasts rushed from the outer regions of the city... in one direction — south.

It seemed as if the Tian Fa's Lord had commanded his troops...

However, the strength of the troops in these three directions had left every head in the Southern Heaven City to explode.

There were around ten golden-crowned Xuan Tigers on the eastern side. They had a sole silver horn on their heads. These

Xuan Tiger moved in formation. They were being led by a white Xuan Tiger King. However, its crown was also golden in color. They moved at extreme speeds. Soon, all kinds of Xuan Beasts rushed out from the surroundings in neat and orderly formations. Their movements and formations didn't seem any different from that of a military parade. And, they continued to charge at lightening speeds. Their skills didn't seem beneath a Spirit Xuan expert.

"Ninth level Xuan Tigers!" Solitary Falcon gazed and exclaimed; he stood behind Li Jue Tian. "There are so many of them! And, they're led by a Xuan Tiger King! And, he might even be at the peak of the ninth level!"

And then, a similarly sized squad of White Jade Xuan Lions was spotted in the west.

"There are White Jade Xuan Lions in the west!" Dongfang Wen Qing spoke in a serious manner. These two men were aware that Jun Mo Xie was young and inexperienced. So, he was unlikely to recognize high-level Xuan Beasts. So, they were deliberately trying to explain what they were witnessing since they were aware that he was beside them, and would be able to hear their words.

Then, the sounds of a heavy stampede-like sound arose from the north. A huge bear led scores of giant bears and charged past.

"The Mountain Splitting Bear! It's also a level-nine Xuan Beast! The Tian Fa forest is so strong!"

These troops had barely covered half of the distance. Then, multitudes of shadows flew out from the rivers and mountains, and soared into the sky. They were seemingly of various magnificent colors in make. They circled disorderly in the sky for a while. But then, they assembled together, and organized themselves in a neat formation. They seemingly took the shape of a cloud, and skimmed over the Southern Heaven City.

"There are too many of these flying Xuan Beasts... just too many!"

Dongfang Wen Dao wrinkled his nose, and bared his teeth as he stared. "Each one of them is at least at level eight! My good mother! How did you provoke such a powerful reaction? How on earth did we land such a battle on our hands?"

A head-exploding sound echoed through the valleys and mountains. This was the sound produced by the Xuan Beasts' stampeding feet against the ground. It sounded like an incessant torrential rain to anybody who listened to it. One could one image the sheer number of these beasts...

Everyone had unknowingly stationed themselves at a high altitude. All color had left their faces as they looked at the incomparably formidable sight. The sight in front of their eyes could only result in such a feeling. There were tens of thousands of powerful Xuan Beasts in front of them at present.

[Good heavens! This world has gone crazy!]

Tens of thousands of Xuan Beasts had bubbled up. Moreover, not a single one of these beasts was lower than level six.

Almost everyone's mouths opened wide in an "O" shape.

However, there was one exception to all that gaping. It was Jun Mo Xie. He could see all of this like the rest of the people. However, no one could know what he was thinking...

He had countless questions in his mind...

Everyone knew that there were two major powers on the Xuan Xuan Continent — the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor. No one could deny that the strength of these two clans was unsurpassable.

Then, a few additional names had emerged from the mouth of this mysterious Lord of the Tian Fa forest.

Elusive World of the Immortals, Supreme Golden City, and the Illusionary Blood Sea...

[What do those names represent? What do they signify? Where are these three Holy Lands? What's the extent of the tyranny of the people from these places? Why have I never heard any of these names?]

He then recalled the words that Li Jue Tian had just spoken — [‘the heaven and the earth must not be disgraced. You mustn't mention the Holy Lands!’ Why does this Li Jue Tian place these three Holy Lands at the level of the Heaven and the Earth?]

[What did this mean?]

[The entire world recognizes the ten peak experts. Eight of them are the Great Masters. Then, there's Feng Juan Yun, and the supreme assassin — Chu Qi Hun. But, why does it sound like this Lord of Tian Fa doesn't hold them in a high regard? What does this mean?]

[From what I've heard and seen so far... I'm convinced that this Lord of Tian Fa has abundance of strength.]

["Even Yun Bie Chen hasn't dared to show himself in this world since eight years on my word. I'm confident that I can kick out the three great entities from my Tian Fa as well."]

These words were still ringing in his ears.

[A mere few words had compelled the Greatest Master — Yun Bie Chen — to not show himself for so many years...]

[What kind of strength would be needed for that?]

The others had a look of horror on their faces. However, Jun Mo Xie had a tranquil expression on his face... unlike the others. But, innumerable waves were raging inside in his consciousness since many problematic questions had started to arise in his mind. [This Lord of Tian Fa seemingly has such strength... Moreover, he has decided to show himself in public... So, why didn't he wait a bit longer? He could've easily waited a bit longer until the war broke out on a full scale... and he could've easily inflicted a very heavy

damage onto this coalition in that case...?]

[This coalition would've surely suffered a terrible blow in that case... In fact, this fight between men and Xuan Beasts would've been over once-and-for-all if that had been the case...]

[Moreover, this dispute arose two months ago. But, he didn't appear once. So, why is he showing himself now? He has already waited for two months; couldn't he have waited a few more days?]

[It can't be denied that his appearance would've overawed his enemies. His extreme strength is like that of a god. It would hit the morale of the experts. And, the morale of the force will be invariably destroyed!]

[But, this issue shouldn't be on his mind given his true strength. So, what's he worried about? The method of the coalition's attack shouldn't be an issue either. He could've easily changed the tide of the battle... and everything else with mere one appearance of his'...!]

[What's the purpose of all this?]

These series of questions made Jun Mo Xie's head spin. He rubbed his eyes... only to find another unusual thing when he opened them.

Everyone had moved to the same higher area ever since the Xuan Beasts had started to stampede towards the south. However, there was one exception. A lofty and solitary figure stood motionless.

A young man stood alone and unafraid under the Baili Family's banner... His face exuded calmness and indifference. His bright expression clearly portrayed, "These events are of no interest to me. None of these things have anything to do with me."

He stood indifferently. Moreover, it seemed like he was almost lifeless. It seemed as if no one in the world held any importance in his eyes.

A sudden interest in the youngster was suddenly kindled in Jun

Mo Xie's heart; a very strong interest.

Not for anything else... but the fact that this solitary figure had reminded him of his own aloofness and indifference to society at-large in his previous life. [Wasn't I like this once?]

Jun Mo Xie was undeniably an oddball himself. Therefore, he had never taken interest in showing goodwill to others. And, this is the reason why he had always taken keen note of the solitary people on his vicinity.

Dongfang Wen Qing finally collected himself, and noticed that Jun Mo Xie wasn't beside him anymore. He immediately looked away from the waves of the Xuan Beasts, and frantically started to look for his nephew.

Jun Mo Xie was obviously an 'apple' of the three Dongfang brothers' eyes. They had come to treasure him very deep. The three brothers had even dreamt of taking him back to the Dongfang Family for a while. After all, how could their mother not be happy at the sight of such a capable grandson? In fact, they had even hoped that the connection between a child and a mother might help awaken their sister who had lain unconscious for the past ten years...

Therefore, the three men behaved like 'hens with a newly hatched chick' around him. They didn't intend to let their nephew out of their sight for even a bit. There was no denying that his miraculous agility techniques made for a great defense. However, that still didn't bring any relief to them. The people from the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor had gathered there. Which one of their people would ever act with nobility?

And, these men would cry rivers if anything bad ever happened to him...

Therefore, they immediately tailed him and stationed themselves beside him once they realized that Jun Mo Xie wasn't at their side anymore. Even that spectacular scene couldn't take precedence

over the issue of his safety...

"Do you know who that person is?" Jun Mo Xie pointed at the solitary youngster.

"He's someone from the Baili Family. And... also someone who that family is bound to abandon. Why do you ask?" Dongfang Wen Dao tilted his head and stole a glance. He then replied with a disdain-filled voice.

"Why? Why are they bound to abandon him? Why would they do that?" Jun Mo Xie asked in a confused tone.

"Look at these people... who amongst these guys from the big families seems like a fool to you? Who doesn't understand the severity of this uprising? These people were pressured by the Xue Hun Manor and Li Xue Tian to send help. So, they had no choice but to come and fight. But, has any family sent the entirety of their strength? Moreover, all these men are peak Sky Xuan experts. Do you see any weak men amongst them? In other words, these men have adequate strength to have a chance of saving their lives and fleeing away if this coalition doesn't prove to be enough to deal with this threat. And, these families have less chance of suffering a great fall in their strengths in that case. However, have you seen any of the other families send their Young Masters?" Dongfang Wen Qing asked in a ridiculing manner.

"So, they're throwing his life away? He's just cannon fodder?" Jun Mo Xie seemed somewhat shocked.

## Chapter 332: Baili Luo Yun

---

"Exactly! Any youngster with such cultivation who comes here to fight the Xuan Beasts is basically throwing away their life. Insignificant jade Xuan experts don't have any chance at survival when faced with so many high-level Xuan Beasts. What else could it be if it isn't throwing away one's life? However, to say that they are 'meat for slaughter' isn't exactly very pleasant to hear," Dongfang Wen Jian gave a ruthless smile.

"Mo Xie, don't start to believe that your agility skill set is too exquisite. You will find it difficult to escape if you're thrown to the enemy. Even your marvelous skill set won't help if you're surrounded by them. Therefore, you mustn't act recklessly. And, you must never leave our sight!"

"But, that youngster is only twenty-five or twenty-six years old. And, it's quite clear that he's already at the peak of the Jade Xuan realm. I believe he's just a step away from reaching the Earth Xuan. So, he's a very rare talent if he has reached such a level at this age. Why wouldn't his family keep such a talent close to them? Why would the Baili Family allow this youngster to throw away his life? Isn't this pitiful?" Jun Mo Xie asked in a confused manner.

"The reason for that isn't very difficult to understand. In fact, it's rather simple. This youngster wasn't born from a legitimate wife of the family! His mother was a concubine!" Dongfang Wen Qing seemed sorry as he smiled.

"That youngster is named Baili Luo Yun. He's one of the rarest talents to be ever born into the Baili Family. Families that practice Xuan Qi usually have a member with a high cultivation comb-out the meridians of a new born baby. This is done in order to reduce the chances of illness in the infant. Moreover, this helps to lay down the foundation for the infant's future cultivation.

"However, no one combed Baili Luo Yun's meridians when he



was born. But, it didn't matter since he had already started to cultivate at the age of three. And, he had broken through to the Ninth Xuan Level when he was ten. In fact, he had already reached the peak of Silver Xuan realm by the time he turned fifteen, and then broke through to the Gold Xuan soon-after. Thereafter, he broke through from the Gold Xuan Realm to Jade Xuan realm by the time he turned twenty. And, he has now reached the peak of the Jade Xuan realm. He can easily be called the foremost in the younger generation after one looks at his cultivation. Not many people can compare with this man. However, it's true that you can't be considered in the same category since you can fight a Spirit Xuan with your moves even though you are only a Jade Xuan expert. In fact, you may even win with those moves of yours. You truly are a devilish talent!"

"But, this guy is a rare and exceptional talent. He may not be a legitimate son, but he still shouldn't have been treated in such a way, right? He's still of their blood even if he's illegitimate. So, what difference does it make if he isn't the heir to the family? He's still a rare and talented expert of their younger generation! In fact, it's easy to imagine that he may reach the Sky Xuan level in ten years given the speed of his current advancement, and the achievements he had already made at such a young age. Moreover, he may even reach the Spirit Xuan in thirty! Are you telling me that they're abandoning such a talent because he isn't a legitimate son? Isn't the Baili Family being very unwise?" Jun Mo Xie was shocked at what he had heard. He found it very difficult to understand such a matter.

It was important to know that such a talented youngster was extremely uncommon. And, this fact didn't hold for the powerful families of the world alone... Even the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor witnessed such a talent once in a lifetime. In fact, one would be hard-pressed to find many of them even if they searched the entire Xuan Xuan continent. Any other family would've treated such a talented person as its 'gem', and would've

guarded them very closely. In fact, such a person would receive the same care that the three Dongfang brothers divulged towards Jun Mo Xie's safety. So, one could only image the importance of such youngsters.

"That's not all; there's more to it. His father is the main reason behind all this. His grandfather is his real father. He had gotten drunk, and had raped a maid; he had thereafter formed a relationship with her. And, Luo Yan was born as a result of that relationship; and, that too as the eldest son of the family. However, the Baili Family has never acknowledged his status. Moreover, they went ahead and mistreated the youngster. His innate talent obviously alienated him even further. And, the treatment became worse as his Xuan cultivation bettered due to his outstanding talent. Therefore, his dishonored identity inside the family meant that he was treated like a servant. In fact, even servants received better treatment at times. This obviously led to several resentments in his heart, and he naturally wanted to take revenge. This sense of revenge became even more prominent once he broke into the Jade Xuan realm. And then, an unfortunate incident happened..."

Dongfang Wen Qing's face was full of pity as he continued, "But, the thing is... he didn't even initiate that incident. In fact, this matter is quite straightforward. He had just gone to his home, and the legitimate Young Masters tried to stir trouble with him. The started to taunt him, and received a very severe retaliation from him. The reasons behind his anger are easy to understand. He didn't have any status in the family even though his cultivation was far ahead of the others who took help from outside and had received the 'cleansing meridians' treatment at a young age."

"However, he still belongs to their family's bloodline. And, bloodline matters a lot. That was one of the main reasons he wasn't killed on the scene. But, some people in the Baili Family weren't willing to let him off the hook. And, this journey to Tian

Fa provided them with a golden opportunity to get rid of him."

"So... that's what it is!" Jun Mo Xie let out a long sigh. He then murmured, "Baili... Luo Yun..." a cold light flashed in his eyes. No one could guess his thoughts.

"However, we also feel that the Baili Family has caused a great harm to themselves with these actions. It's like what you had just spoken... this youngster has outstanding innate talent! He's only marginally behind you in that respect. We believe that he could become a new Great Master in thirty-to-fifty years!"

"It's important to know that a family's strength and prestige increases if they have someone as strong as a Great Master. This is especially true for powerful families. In fact, they leave behind their former peers in one giant leap!

"The Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor are no different. The chance for such a man to be born in any family comes in hundreds of years... once in several generations. So, I don't understand why the Baili Family would let go of such an opportunity... This makes me regret their decision somewhat. I mean... how could the Baili Family be so short-sighted? Perhaps they fear that he'll take revenge upon them once he's strong enough...? Maybe there's another reason...?"

Dongfang Wen Qing shook his head, and chuckled gently, "But, we aren't related to them in anyway. In fact, it's better for us that a potential Great Master will be done away so soon. Moreover, it gives us a reason to celebrate. After all, a rising hero tramples on others' bones. And, every strong person who ascends to the top has blood in his hands. We nine families certainly aren't enemies. But, we are potential competitors."

The leaders of every powerful faction had remained standing at a high altitude this entire time. But, they finally started to come down. They then decided to proceed to the hall in order to discuss the prevalent matters. Dongfang Wen Qing stole a glance into the

distance, and said, "I will accompany your Third Uncle to the meeting since those dregs from the Silver Blizzard City won't abstain from mockery. But, they won't be too reckless if I'm around." Then, he chuckled softly and left. He was gently pushing Jun Wu Yi's wheelchair towards the hall a moment later.

Jun Mo Xie looked at his Third Uncle sitting in the wheelchair, and thought... [Third Uncle's legs are fine now. But, I don't know when he can stand up properly... When will the Blood General truly stand tall-and-proud, and show the majesty of his defiance to the entire world?]

[However, everything depends on strength. Incomparable strength...!]

[And, strength is equal to... talent...]

Then, Jun Mo Xie suddenly took long strides after he had pondered a bit. And, he started to walk towards Baili Luo Yun.

The others from the Baili Family had started to head back at this time. Three men laughed and chatted freely as they entered their tent. They didn't even spare a glance at Baili Luo Yun who stood at the entrance. In fact, Baili Xiong Feng — the leader of the Family's contingent — gazed straight ahead as he calmly entered the hall to discuss the crisis.

Baili Luo Yun lifelessly gazed at the smoky sky. He was bitter inside, but he managed to force a smile. [How many days will I last in such a chaotic situation? Will these thousands of Xuan Beasts make a corpse out of me? Will this be my end?]

Baili Luo Yun clearly knew what his family had done to his fate.

"The Baili family won't rest until Luo Yun dies," this was the comment the Baili Family's Young Master had made to Baili Lou Yun's father when he had broken through to the ninth Xuan layer at the age of ten. And, Baili Luo Yun had been living in the shadow of these words ever since.

[I wonder at the irony sometimes. A child with any potential gets full support from their family. And, any man can see my talent. So, why does the Baili Family treat me in this way?]

[This matter has gone too far... In fact, that man is afraid that I might run away. And so, he threatened me with my father's life if I didn't come south to this place. What did he do that for? And, father also dodges this topic whenever I try to talk about it. The only valuable words he has ever spoken to me were "Alas, Luo Yun, your wish for revenge is too strong! It's better if you don't meddle in this matter too much..."]

["Desire for revenge?" When did I ever wish to stir-up trouble? Would I have taken any action for the fear of the consequences if those people hadn't crossed their limits? How could a man not resist the intolerable behavior I suffered that day in front of everyone? Or could it be...? Is there another reason that I don't know of?]

[I'll return and solve all the mysteries if I'm lucky enough to survive this place...]

Baili Luo Yun had an indifferent expression of his face as he turned around to enter the tent.

[They've never attached any importance to me. But then again... when did they ever consider me as 'family'? The sooner I die — the better it is for them... But, why isn't it the same for me?!]

It was right then that he saw a youngster approach him.

He wasn't familiar with this youngster, but he knew that this youth was called 'Jun Mo Xie'. He had heard a lot about this youngster. Therefore, he was aware that this youth was a bigger debauchee than his second grandfather and some of the other people in his family.

He didn't need to look twice to be sure that Jun Mo Xie was in fact approaching him. The youngster's path was clear-cut, and

there was no variation in it. Moreover, he had a very unusual expression on his face as he looked at Baili Luo Yun.

"Baili Luo Yun?" Jun Mo Xie tilted his head, and sized him up.

"Jun Mo Xie? The Third Young Master of the Jun Family...?" Baili Luo Yun's face was indifferent. He felt neither alarm, nor happiness upon the realization that this youth had come to look for him. In fact, he didn't even try to guess the reason he was being sought for...

"Do you wish to find a place to chit-chat? Follow me," Jun Mo Xie invited. It was 'technically' a 'request'. But, the tone of Jun Mo Xie's voice made it seem like an 'order' of sorts.

He had been an aloof assassin in his previous life. So, he knew the methods one must use to deal with such a socially reclusive personality even though his own nature had changed rather considerably in his present life.

One must never hope for such people to take the initiative. Such would keep their mouth shut even if they really wanted to say something. Jun Mo Xie was well aware of it because he used to be like this once...

The only method to deal with such people was to take control the situation by taking the 'absolute' initiative. The counterpart would then unconsciously move according to one's plan. In fact, they would try to match the rhythm of your movement even if they didn't wish to... even if they were unconvinced... or even if they were unwilling to accept it... This was because they wouldn't wish to seem inferior, and would try to talk to you on equal footing; or... they would at least look for an opportunity for equal footing...

"I don't talk to strangers," Baili Luo Yun indifferently turned his head, and started to enter the tent.

That very same tent which he loathed from the bottom of his heart...

"I've heard that you're one of the rarest Xuan Qi talents of the present age. So, you wouldn't be afraid of me, right?" Jun Mo Xie stepped forward.

Baili Luo Yun's straight and towering figure suddenly came to a stop.

"The rumors state that you're twenty-six years old. They also state that you have already reached the peak of the Jade Xuan realm. But, you won't dare to talk to me...? Are you afraid that I'm plotting something against you?" Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously.

Baili Luo Yun suddenly turned around. His face was still expressionless. And, his eyes were still tranquil as he looked at the Young Master Jun.

"It seems that the rumors were mistaken. And, it's not surprising... since nine out of ten rumors can't be trusted." Jun Mo Xie turned around to leave. But, not before leaving a few words, "And, I was too bold. I really shouldn't have come here," he started to walk away after he had said that. However, he didn't walk towards his tent. Instead, he walked towards the periphery.

The sound of another person's footsteps trailed him. Baili Luo Yun was calmly following after him. He stayed neither too close... nor too far.

A proud expression flashed in Jun Mo Xie's eyes.

[Talk to me, will you? Why aren't you saying anything?] Baili Luo Yun would've returned to his tent for a nap if these doubts wouldn't have arisen in his mind. And, he certainly wouldn't have followed after Jun Mo Xie like this...

Jun Mo Xie didn't even turn around the entire time. In fact, his body started to move more rapidly, and the speed of his walk increased to a shocking level. Baili Luo Yun didn't utter a word either. However, he continued to follow Jun Mo Xie. He didn't

come too close, but he didn't lag far behind either. The two outstanding Jade Xuan peak youngsters moved one after the other... as if they were in a chase. However, no one noticed these talented young men since everyone's attention was fixed at the discussions that were taking place in the hall.

The Young Master Jun gradually began to speed up. His movements became increasingly faster. It soon started to seem that he would leave the ground and soar into the sky. And, the distance between the two youths began to increase...

Baili Luo Yun had always maintained his indifference towards the world. However, his eyes had started to belie his astonishment. [This ill-reputed Young Master is faster than me?] But, he didn't concede, and started to exerted himself. Yet, he still couldn't catch up with the other party. In fact, he couldn't even reduce the distance between them by an inch. And, the distance that separated them continued to increase gradually...

[I have failed in this contest of speed.] Baili Luo Yun wouldn't have admitted it openly. But, he had clearly understood that the other person had managed to outstrip him even though he was younger in age.

At least in speed...

Jun Mo Xie led the way to a small hidden slope about five kilometers away. He quickly climbed it, and sat down in a flash. Then, he took the initiative as he patted to the grassy spot besides him and said, "Come sit."

There was no answer. Baili Luo Yun stood as straight as a javelin; just like before. He was used to staying alert for long durations of time without giving himself a single moment to relax. This was because everyone in his family was quite eager to kill him whenever they got the chance...

Therefore, he had become accustomed to remaining on perpetual guard long ago...



However, a trace of admiration had already started to take birth in the depths of his eyes.

"What do you want?" Baili Luo Yun finally asked. He was miserly with his words. He seemed to cherish them like they were made of gold. This young man wasn't accustomed to long conversations. He had always held his thoughts close to his heart. Baili Luo Yun had only asked this question because he was led to do so by Jun Mo Xie's skillful manipulation. [He's much younger than me. But, his cultivation still doesn't seem to fall short in any way...]

"You've come here to throw your life away, right?" Jun Mo Xie still hadn't turned around. In fact, he hadn't done it even once during their entire journey from the field to this place. The Young Master Jun had been very confident that Baili Luo Yun would follow him. And, not only would he follow him... he would even try to catch up.

This had obviously hit the most uncomfortable spot in Baili Luo Yun's heart.

"What's that got to do with you?" Baili Luo Yun asked in an apathetic manner.

"This truly has nothing to do with me. In fact, you won't be a threat to my family if you were to die." Jun Mo Xie smiled and continued, "But, there's something that I find very strange. Why have you come here if you know you'll die?"

"That's none of your business!" Baili Luo Yun said somewhat angrily. [This brat is spewing nonsense in front of me! What does he know of the words he speaks?]

"I guess someone threatened you to come here, right?" Jun Mo Xie muttered. "Moreover, they threatened the life of someone you care for the most...? Otherwise, why would you come here if you already knew that you will die? You don't seem like a fool from whatever I've seen so far..."

Baili Luo Yun fell silent.

The other person had guessed correctly. Moreover, they had also grasped his nature rather accurately. He hadn't spoken a word, but the opposite party had seen right through him.

This was quite surprising for someone as young as his counterpart.

"You want to be the head of the Baili Family. Is that it?" Jun Mo Xie had stuck a half-dried grass stem between his teeth. It seemed like he was speaking to the white clouds above, "You are very calm, callous, cruel and daring; and, you won't stop at anything. Moreover, your desire for revenge is very strong. And, your lust for power is substantially massive as well. You wish to take revenge, but you don't have enough strength for it. You don't have a future at the Baili Family. So, you yearn for the greatest power in the family since you can't take your revenge without it. Am I right?"

"Again, what do these things have to do with you? I can't understand what you're trying to say!"

Baili Luo Yun's voice was impolite, sickened and full of loathing. However, Jun Mo Xie knew that his words had struck this youngster's heart. Otherwise, such a recluse wouldn't have spoken so many words.

"Indeed, this has nothing to do with me. But, your desires will remain unfulfilled if you remain in the Baili Family," Jun Mo Xie suddenly stood up and turned around. He looked directly into Baili Luo Yun's eyes and stated, "However, I will ensure that they become a reality if you join me!"

"You?" Baili Luo Yun coldly sized-up the opposite party. "Why would I do that? The Jun Family's situation isn't that great either. And, the Baili Family is one of the great nine families. So, I too know what's going on with the Jun Family. Your Family simply can't compare to the Baili Family at present!"

"You're mistaken. And, my Jun Family has nothing to do with you. So, all you need to answer is — whether you'll join me or not?" Jun Mo Xie smiled, "Let's talk about your situation. You must know that you don't have the slightest bit of hope in the Baili Family. You could die ten times on this expedition for a million different reasons. So, I'm convinced that this is your last chance to avoid death. And, perhaps I may be deceiving you... But, you have to admit that you'll probably die in the upcoming battle at the Tian Fa forest if you don't grasp this final straw of a chance. In fact, I presume that even your bones will become a sumptuous cuisine for the Xuan Beasts!"

Baili Luo Yun silently gazed at Jun Mo Xie. And, Jun Mo Xie returned that gaze with a smile. It remained like this for some time. Then, the former tilted his head before he finally broke the silence, "How does it matter if I live or die? Life and death don't mean much to me. My life in this world hasn't been a happy one. And, death would certainly mean freedom. In fact, it would actually mean a much needed freedom for someone like me."

"Freedom? But, I'm different. If I were to die... I would choose to die after I had taken my revenge," Jun Mo Xie calmly replied.

"Revenge..." it seemed like there had been a sudden explosion within Baili Luo Yun's eyes. This word had spoken to his heart. So, he turned to look directly at Jun Mo Xie and said, "I have two conditions. I promise to join you after the conclusion of this matter with Tian Fa if you agree to them.

"First — you must defeat me. You must defeat me with your own strength! I know you're quite strong, but I still need to confirm. After all, I will only join the top talent of this generation.

"And second — a total of five people from the Baili Family have come here to the Southern Heaven City; four Sky Xuan experts and me. I want the four of them to die.

"I will follow you for ten years if you fulfill these two conditions.

And, I will leave if you can't ensure the fulfillment of my true desire by the end of those ten years. However, you won't just have my life at your service if you manage to fulfill them — but, also that of the entire Baili Family!"

Jun Mo Xie heard those two conditions. Then, he straightened up and looked at Baili Luo Yun with a faint smile as he backed-up a step in order to leave. He didn't even turn his head until he had disappeared out of sight.

[These conditions are not a problem for me! I can easily deal with you right now. And, I can take care of those small fries from the Baili Family in a cinch! Couldn't you have come up with more challenging conditions?]

[Boy, wait till I gain control over you!]

Jun Mo Xie used his exquisite martial arts, and returned to the campsite in secret. However, he was surprised to see that the twenty-thousand forces had already pitched their tents. They had also started to secure their camp by the time he got there. These camps were inside the city. But, they were still set-up against the walls. And, they had barriers on both their sides. Ditches and traps had been dug, and the archers had been placed in wait for an ambush. Moreover, the guards at the entrances were alert. Each man was doing his duty diligently. The boundary of the camp was regularly being patrolled by crisscrossing platoons.

The shifts were divided between four teams. Two teams would simultaneously remain on one duty. One team would take charge, while the other would remain on standby. This ensured a perpetual state of preparedness.

This tight command of the forces ensured that no troops would ever have to worry about a sneak attack. And, the regular change in shifts ensured that the soldiers got ample rest.

It was a pity that they were sent to face the Xuan Beast uprising. Therefore, these ordinary soldiers had no chance of survival. Jun

Mo Xie had realized this after he had seen the organization of the Xuan Beasts. [These twenty-thousand people... with their soldiers, high ranking officers, the experts and Young Masters from various families... were merely like flies. They've all been sent here to die.]

[These guys are a hundred-percent cannon fodder!]

Jun Mo Xie sighed softly before he made his way towards his own encampment.

He had barely entered when he felt something unusual in the atmosphere.

Guan Qing Han was consoling Dugu Xiao Yi for some reason. The Young Lady Dugu's beautiful face was tear-stained. It appeared that she had suffered some grievous wrong.

"What's going on?"

"Boo hoo... brother Mo Xie... Little White... has disappeared..." Dugu Xiao Yi looked up at him. Then, she rushed towards him, and burst into tears.

"Oh, so he disappeared when I wasn't here?" Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly inside. [You brought that nuisance here. And, now it's gone. The Xuan Beast King had issued an order for all Xuan Beasts to assemble. So, Little White obviously couldn't be an exception to his command, could he? Little White is still here... and, that's a real problem!]

"Boo hoo... no... I must find him... he still hasn't had lunch..." Dugu Xiao Yi was distressed and desperate. Little White was the apple of her eye.

"We will properly... look for him... maybe... he has gone out to... play for a while and will return soon..." Jun Mo Xie consoled her weakly.

In the depths of the Tian Fa forest...

Long Crane and Big Bear were standing straight in deference.

They had two others standing behind them. The level-nine Beast Kings from every race were present as well. Then, they all squatted down on the ground in a well-behaved manner. The beasts would sweep the floor with their tails from time to time. And, they didn't allow a single speck of dust to settle in that small area.

The person in front of them was mysteriously shrouded in a black cloak. His hairs, face, body and legs... all were shrouded beneath it. Even his eyes couldn't be seen.

Even the make of this person's figure wasn't clear. So, one could forget about his facial features...

"Tell me, what's all this about? I go off to seclusion for only two years, and you create such a big mess? You have such courage now that all the great experts have assembled? Huh?" the mysterious person spoke-up. He was actually the Lord of the Tian Fa forest; the same person who had earlier spoken to Li Jue Tian.

"Eldest brother... this... this..." Big Bear and Long Crane gave a cry, and then looked at each other. They then became speechless.

"Over three million of our people had rushed out of Tian Fa, and these people were all level six or above... the full strength of our Tian Fa has been laid bare." The shrouded person sneered, "Does that mere Li Jue Tian really require such a large assembly of force to be dealt with?"

"Eldest brother, things aren't that straight with this matter..." Long Crane spoke... Then, he smacked his lips and swallowed the words he was about to say.

"What's going on?!" the person shrouded in black suddenly released his Qi in an unrestrained manner, "I want to know the full story! Tell me, Fourth Brother Bear!"

"M... me... me... me..." Big Bear trembled as he replied in a stutter.

The silhouette of a person flashed, and Big Bear howled in pain.

Then, his body was sent rolling like a ball. A burst of noise was produced as he rolled for a distance. His arms tried to hug three different trees to stop his momentum, and all three of those trees snapped before he finally came to a stop.

"Come back!" Big Bear supported his lower back with one hand when he heard those words. He then grimaced, ran back, and stationed himself in an obedient stance.

"Speak!"

Then, Big Bear pulled a pained face as he recalled how they had stolen the Level Nine Xuan Beast Core in the Tian Xiang City. He told everything in detail about what came to happen after he and Long Crane had stolen that core.

"You're telling me... that this person can make it easier for us to advance? Are you sure about this?" The Xuan Beast King also started to tremble; his shroud rippled with him.

## Chapter 333: Tian Fa's Fury

---

"Yes!" Long Crane answered confidently. Then, he continued, "I'm absolutely convinced of this. He used his Qi technique on the fourth brother and me. His special method resulted in the strength in our bodies to increase by ten times! And, even the bottleneck that had been constraining us started to loosen. Therefore, we acted like this since he would help in our advancement. I can assure you that all this is true. So, you needn't have any doubts," Long Crane answered solemnly.

"So... that's how it is..." The shrouded person mumbled in a faint voice, "It's understandable if that's the case. But, why didn't you and Fourth try to capture him? You could've been done with everything if you were to control him. It may be assumed that this person's strength is high. But, he won't be able to contend with Li Jue Tian! How many experts of such strength do you think exist in this society? You and Fourth wouldn't be considered weaker than Li Jue Tian if you were to combine your attacks! Therefore, the two of you should've at least attempted to capture the man in question!"

Long Crane smiled bitterly, "You think we didn't wish to, Elder Brother? We had proposed a competition with this very thought in our mind!

"However, you don't know how much he pressurized us! The pressure of his aura was even greater than yours, Elder Brother. Moreover, we will have the means to promote our strengths if things go well. In fact, we will have never-ending advancements after this matter ends. And, we can bid goodbye to the word 'bottleneck'...

"Fourth and I were forced to step-down with grace after the third match ended since we were no match for the opposite party...

"You don't understand the temptation this matter posed for us.



Fourth and I have been stuck at our levels for forty years! We haven't seen second brother for many years, but we can't be sure if he has made advancement either. He must've remained stuck as well! Plus, that man's conditions didn't seem very difficult. We only had to stop the Xue Hun Manor from going north, and we had to beat-up Li Jue Tian's son to a state where he'd have to remain bed-ridden for a couple of months. How difficult could it really be? Therefore, Fourth and I decided to act without consulting you."

"Indeed, this is reasonable... and not very difficult. We can take advantage of this. But, why has everything turned out like this? We've got over half of the world's Xuan experts assembled at our gates!" The shrouded person tilted his body slightly sideways.

"I had originally planned to light a fire at the Xue Hun Manor in the cover of darkness. I had planned to use that chaos as a cover to attack Li Teng Yun in order to break his legs. But then... Big Bear... he suddenly burst into the Xue Hun Manor in bright daylight, and created a clamor. Then, he began to howl about breaking Li Teng Yun's legs, and arrogantly declared to the opposite party that they must take the initiative and break Li Teng Yun's legs on their own. Even I wouldn't have been to do... so, forget about Li Jue Tian doing such a thing..."

"Third Brother Crane... why did you sell me out?! Did I not intend to finish the matter quickly? And, how much delay would we have seen if we followed your plan? Moreover, such a sneaky method isn't gratifying. Does it matter how we complete the task as long as we do it...?" Big Bear's face reddened as he shouted. He hadn't finished speaking yet, but he had started to tremble all over; he didn't dare to utter a single word thereafter.

"It's needless to say that the Xue Hun Manor didn't comply with Big Bear's threat. So, we attacked them very resolutely on the same day. We had a significant advantage. So, we managed to injure several people. But, Li Teng Yun remained hidden. So, we returned the next day to do the same. But, we then found out that the Great

Master Shi Chang Xiao had suddenly appeared at the Xue Hun Manor. And, it was naturally a bit difficult to maintain our advantage once he was there. So, this continued for a few days. However, it still wasn't a problem because the Xue Hun Manor was more or less destroyed even if Li Teng Yun hadn't yet showed his face. But then, we found out that Li Jue Tian... that dog... had also returned to the Xue Hun Manor out of the blue..." Long Crane squirmed and pursed his lips.

"You go someone's doorstep and cause trouble. And then, you ask them to hand-over their Young Master so you can break his legs? And then... you're surprised that they didn't cooperate? Then, you use your logic and you get angry... So, you go on a rampage! Then, Li Jue Tian comes and gets infuriated when he looks at his big Xue Hun Manor — the work of his lifetime's blood and sweat — has almost ceased to exist. Which family would endure to be ashamed by this?"

The man shrouded in black sneered, "Do you two really think nothing of the people in this world? This is hilarious! First... you didn't complete this task in secrecy. Then, you actually went about it so boldly in broad daylight... And, Big Bear, you really have some big guts. I genuinely wish to tear up open so I can see just how big your guts are..."

Big Bear stared gaping. Then, he hiccupped and shut his mouth.

"What happened after that?" the black cloaked man asked.

"After that... we attacked again. Then, I found out that Li Jue Tian's body had an extremely fluctuating Xuan Beast Core inside it. It seemed that he had taken a core which was at least at the ninth level. In fact, the Qi was similar to that of the Panther King's. But, it didn't seem like it was moving to separate away from its body. So, I immediately started to feel suspicious..."

Long Crane's face flared up with anger. "The Panther King had disappeared two years ago. Big Bear and I had searched for him for

a long time, but we couldn't find a single clue. Then, there was the case of the level nine Xuan Core in the Tian Xiang City. So, we didn't think much on our search for a little time. But then, we came here to stir trouble on orders from that mysterious person... only to find that Li Jue Tian's body possessed the fluctuating energy of the Xuan Panther King's core!"

"The Panther King!" he shrouded man's voice tensed up. "Was it genuinely the Panther King? What the hell is going on? Are you sure about what you said?"

Then, his voice became very cold, "I was just thinking that I haven't even seen the shadow of the Panther King. So, it seems that someone has killed and consumed him... even his core has become a part of someone's energy... huh... third brother, fourth brother... the two of you have managed Tian Fa very well in my absence... Panther King is dead... talk about mysterious disappearances... huh... good... good!"

The complexion on Long Crane and Big Bear's faces suddenly changed. They immediately knelt with a "Bang!" and, their foreheads were sweaty enough to resemble a broth. Their elder brother's intermitted words and manner of speech was enough to express his rage. It seemed that these two brothers were in for a tragedy...

"There used to be ten Beast Kings at the time of our King. They could overlook the entire world with arrogance. Even the three Holy Lands didn't have the courage to look them in the eye! The Tian Fa was the fiercest force in the entire universe! It was a scene to remember! However, the King then ascended to the heavens. And, the nine elder brothers became disheartened and went away to live in seclusion. This allowed us to rise and advance... and new Beast Kings were born in less than a century's time... and a total of twelve at that... So, I thought that this would at least be enough for us to retain our position even if we weren't able to build on it!"

"But, so much has happened in this brief period... The Second

Brother — Eagle King — had been cheated by Yun Bie Chen in a gamble. He was then forced to become that old man's mount. This has become a cause of great shame for our Tian Fa. The youngest brother hasn't appeared for a long time. The Sixth Brother — Lion King — and the Seventh Brother — Monkey King — had fought with the Great Eight Masters sixty years ago. They lost that battle, the nothing has ever been the same in these past sixty years..."

His voice was desolate. The two Xuan Beast Kings — the white Lion King, and the golden-haired Monkey King — were standing behind Big Bear. They hung their heads sadly. These were the two Xuan Beast Kings he had spoken about.

"The fifth used to manage Tian Fa until thirty years ago... but then... nine unknown and powerful Spirit Xuan experts besieged and killed our brother King Beast. Even the location of his core is unknown. That entire matter is still shrouded in endless mystery. Then, the eleventh — Panther King — died, and his core is inside Li Jue Tian's belly...? Now... only a few of us are left out of the original twelve kings... crane, bear, snake, tiger and eagle."

The shrouded man tried hard to restrain his voice as he got angrier, "This is Tian Fa, right? Tian Fa is fierce, right? Couldn't you seven Beast Kings have gone together as brothers to wreak havoc on that insignificant Xue Hun Manor? Huh...?"

He dispersed Qi around. And, his Qi went away from his body like a bomb that has just exploded. But, the surrounding Beast Kings didn't resist one bit. They didn't dare to resist, and were sent flying out by the explosion. In fact, the center of the forest was blown clear for around ninety kilometers with that blast. The trees were snapped clean from the ground. And, the air was full of wood-shavings.

That huge area on the ground was completely barren now; not a blade of grass could be seen growing on it.

The power of the angered Lord of Tian Fa had unexpectedly

reached such heights.

"Eldest Brother, you can't be so angry at such a critical time," the seven Xuan beast Kings knelt and implored their Lord.

One could've caught a glimpse of the black-cloaked person from underneath his shroud as he raised his head to the moon and sighed.

"Snake King, Tiger King, Eagle King... you three are at peak level?" the shrouded person asked. He had apparently calmed down.

A golden-clothed man, a black-clothed man, and a green-garbed young lady... bowed in unison, "Yes!" These three were also in attendance beside Long Crane and Big Bear. However, these three were in their human forms.

The White Lion King and the Golden Monkey King were also present there. However, they had a mixture of admiration and indignation in their eyes.

These two had reached that level and form sixty years ago. But, they had been reduced to their original forms due to the fight that had happened sixty years ago. And, no amount of bitter cultivation had helped them regain their peak form...

"It's finally time for the breakthrough. But, where on earth will we find so many of the Tian Fa's Sacred Fruits...?" the person shrouded in black sighed. Everyone around him became silent, and the forest became still.

"There's no going back now that the war has started! Now, the direr the situation... the better it is for us! I wish to reinstate Tian Fa's place to the foremost in the universe. The three Hold Lands may not acknowledge that, but I at least wish to ensure that Li Jue Tian and Yun Bie Chen don't just dare to stroll into Tian Fa whenever they please...!"

"Tian Fa's prestige will be re-established in this war!" the black-

cloaked person stated in a grave manner, "But, you all must know the consequences... if we were to lose this war!"

# Chapter 334: To Have the Heart of a Bear, And the Guts of a Panther

---

"Tian Fa's power is incomparable! Tian Fa's power is the fiercest in the entire universe!" Long Crane shouted as he waved his arm. White Lion King and Golden Monkey King stood behind him. They also looked towards the sky and roared as they let-out their thoughts in their own manner.

"Tian Fa won't invade the lands on the interior since we don't wish to trouble the common people. This has always been our custom, and we won't break it. Big Bear — you will command the ground forces with Tiger King, Lion King, Monkey King and Snake King. And, you will attack the resistance in the Southern Heaven City. Long Crane — you will lead the areal forces with Eagle King, and be ready to coordinate at any time. We hit them first; we hit them fast, and we hit them hard. They will be badly hurt. Then, we will decide if we should go ahead with a full scale battle. But, the final decision will always be to allow them come to me! Do you understand?"

"Yes!" the two men replied in unison.

"Fourth Brother, how's your injury?" the shrouded person inquired.

"It's fine. It was healed when Eldest Brother transferred his efficacy," Big Bear replied gratefully. "That Elusive Heart and Vein Splitting Sword Attack might have killed me if it weren't for Eldest Brother."

"Eldest Brother, there's one more thing... I think that Big Bear has been Li Jue Tian's main target this entire time," Long Crane spoke-up in a cautionary manner.

"Oh? And, why is that? Li Jue Tian isn't an unwise man. He must know that brazenly killing the Fourth would tantamount to a

never-ending enmity and hatred from this Lord of Tian Fa. Yet, he still dares to?" The shrouded person snorted.

Long Crane replied in a dispirited manner, "Or maybe... it's because the others don't know what we do. The world uses the so-called phrase 'To have the heart of a bear, and the guts of a panther' to describe the might of a person's courage. We know that such is not the case... But, maybe Li Jue Tian had brazenly killed the Panther King and taken his core with that mindset..."

"And so... he wants to take Big Bear heart as well?" The shrouded man snorted in rage.

"Yes. A man's cultivation increases considerably if he takes a Xuan Core. But, one can't absorb it properly, and Li Jue Tian would have faced this problem as well. But, if he takes Big Bear's heart along with Panther King's... he wouldn't only be able to absorb the Xuan Core... but his Xuan cultivation would also double. And, his strength would double-up again if he were to ingest Big Bear's core as well. This would lead to four-fold increase in his present efficacy. And, who in this world would be able to rival Li Jue Tian if that were to happen? So, why would he consider the enmity from the Tian Fa in the lure of such strength?"

Long Crane's face was full of loathing, "Li Jue Tian ignored me throughout the fight. And, he continued to target Big Bear. And, each of his attacks was meant to kill. So, his intention was clearly malicious! This was the main reason why Fourth Brother and I instigated this uprising!"

"Li Jue Tian!" The shrouded person trembled with anger. It seemed like he had forced those words from the space between his teeth. "No wonder he surrendered his pride and issued the supreme summon! No wonder he didn't hesitate to use that Elusive Heart and Vein Splitting Sword Attack to kill the Fourth! He had intended to kill him with one strike! That man intends to use the strength of the half of the continent's Xuan experts to achieve his ill-intended and malicious ambitions. But, he has counted his



chickens before they've hatched by using that attack!"

"You all must leave for now, and prepare for the attacks. Send the beasts of level seven or below to the Tian Fa forest. We won't use them for now. I will put them on a single-minded training schedule for now." The individual gowned in a black robe continued, "Green Hunter Snake King, your speed is comparatively slower. So, pay attention. Only level five and above Flying Thread Snakes, Golden Centipede and Seven Star snakes shall participate. The others don't need to get involved for now."

He was talking about Flying Thread, Golden Centipede and Seven Star Snakes. These three were the fastest, the most poisonous, and the most ferocious snakes in all of Tian Fa. In fact, these snakes were so quick that an average person couldn't even track their shadows.

The green-clad young lady — the Snake King — bowed respectfully, and acknowledged the order.

"Third and Fourth... you had said that that this mysterious man was very strong. That... he might even be more powerful than me. How would you judge his cultivation compared to mine? And, be honest!" the shrouded person's voice was somewhat hoarse.

"That man's cultivation is very high. I figure it wouldn't be less than yours. His cultivation would be more or less at par with you," Long Crane replied in a careful manner after he had considered it for a while.

However, Big Bear's head was perhaps stuffed with melon seeds. So, he didn't understand the meaning behind Long Crane's roundabout reply. And, he opened his big mouth, and spoke, "Third Brother, you need to open your eyes before you speak such blind nonsense. That person's cultivation was profound mystery. Eldest Brother is indeed very strong, but let's be honest... he could easily beat-up several people like you to dust... uh... in fact, I think that he could easily destroy two such people with ease... I... uh...

damn it... I... uh... damn it... I didn't mean that uh... I didn't say that damn it... You're the strongest there is Eldest Brother... damn it... I didn't mean that... damn it... I was just saying that the Eldest Brother could easily beat-up ten people like him... damn it..." lung-splitting screams were heard soon after...

He hadn't finished speaking when his entire body had started to tremble. He had then opened his eyes, and had returned to his senses. But, it was already too late. "Bang!" his entire body was hurled upside-down into the ground under the shrouded person's leg. Soon, only a faint snapping sound could be heard. And, this was because he had hit a few subterranean tree-roots... and had broken them...

"So, form your words... I can gather that this man's strength is much stronger than mine? Is that what you mean...? There's no need to mince your words; speak in a straightforward manner, and don't waste my time!" the shrouded man sounded somewhat gloomy as he nonchalantly clapped his hands, and moved his leg. One could see the two soles of Big Bear's legs jutting-out of the spot in the ground where he had been hurled into. And, the fading sounds of Big Bear's painful groans could also be heard...

"Even the three Holy Lands and those reckless old men outside it can't match my cultivation. So what's the deal with this man? How can he have such high cultivation?" The shrouded man moved his legs to and fro for a while. He was somewhat perplexed. And, a mournful groan was heard every time his steps fell on the ground...

"This man's origin is quite mysterious. And, his strength is profound. But, I can assure you that he's in no way a mediator from the Three Holy Lands!" Long Crane replied solemnly. His back was as straight as a ramrod, and his expression was also very serious. He had learned from the mistake Big Bear had just made, and had deliberated every word of his speech.

He had done this since he feared that the same thing might

happen to him.

"How can you be sure?" The shrouded person continued to move his feet up and down. But, his movements didn't even raise the dust. The power of his feet was being transferred to the ground. But, the pitiful Big Bear wasn't injured or in pain because of this — only his head continued to get pushed deeper into the ground because of this stomping...

Big Bear's skin was rough. So, he wouldn't have gotten hurt anyway. He continued to stomp till his feet stepped on empty space. The shrouded man was satisfied only when the whole of Big Bear's body had gone into the second layer of soil underneath.

"Eldest Brother, you know that those old men from the three Holy Lands have a despicable aura...? And, it's something which we can easily sense. Well... this man's aura isn't only despicable, but it's also quite a delight. I don't know why... but it also makes one wish to get friendlier with him..."

"Ahm... so... I clearly understand that this merely your intuition!" The person shrouded in black cut him off with a wave of his hand.

"Intuition...?" Long Crane's expression was unusual as he looked on. Then, he secretly mumbled a few word to himself.

"What are you looking at? What are you thinking? Is my analysis wrong?" the shrouded man asked fiercely as he let his aura loose in anger. He then used his formless aura to bind Long Crane in a tight grip.

"You genuinely deserve to be the Eldest Brother... Eldest Brother is the wisest... haha ack..." Long Crane was extremely scared. He hurriedly spoke those words, and forced a laugh before his throat started to make those chocking noises.

"Long Crane... you're quite skillful, Third Brother," the shrouded man said in a gloomy tone.

"Eldest Brother... spare me..." Long Crane begged for mercy. But, he was flung away. He then landed on the ground, and his crash created a deep trench.

Then, suddenly a little bit of dirt was thrown-up, and a huge whole appeared on the ground beside him. And, Big Bear appeared out of it; he was covered in yellow mud. But, he became extremely cheerful at the sight of Long Crane's misery. He quickly spat out some mud and spoke in a merry tone, "Third Brother Crane, you too got your share, ha ha ha....!"

Long Crane's head was covered in mud. He crawled twenty to twenty-five meters before he snorted and replied, "At least I don't look like someone who was smashed headfirst into the ground... and had then gone over ten meters underground. Your body looks like it is covered in manure and you still look pleased with yourself... Your face is covered with that manure! In fact, you had even spat some of it out a moment ago!"

Big Bear couldn't speak anymore. He knew that his Third Brother was disgusted with the stench that was coming from his body, but he himself had started to feel nauseated by it now...

"I would like to meet this mysterious man if I have time. Then, we'll see who's stronger and who's weaker," the shrouded man stated in an ice-cold voice as the other two's quarrel started to die out.

"It's a pity that it's been over a month since we made that agreement. The job wasn't that difficult, but we've crossed the time limit. Humph! That old bastard Li Jue Tian has ruined things!" Big Bear angrily stamped his feet. And, the mud that had stuck onto his body started to come off.

"However, that man had also said that we have to look for Jun Family's Jun Wu Yi after we finish the job." Long Crane suddenly thought and said, "So, we can't... and mustn't let him escape since he has said so... So, we'll find him if we continue to follow our

actions. And as far as we know... the Empire has sent him in as the commander of the forces that were dispatched to deal with this uprising. Therefore, he's inside the Southern Heaven City at the moment..."

"We will plan cautiously, and look for Jun Wu Yi if that's the case. And, we will use him to get information about this mysterious man in a very discreet manner," the shrouded man's robe fluttered as the tone of his voice changed a bit.

Long Crane and Big Bear didn't find anything fishy about it. They were already quite used to strange things.

"Eldest Brother, we must still be careful regarding this matter with Jun Wu Yi. We might anger the mysterious man if we cross a certain line. And, the losses will outweigh the gain in such a case..." Long Crane suggested in a caution manner.

## Chapter 335: Tian Fa is Shocked

---

"That is only natural!" The black clad person said, "Since this man can help you advance, I also... how can I act rashly when this man is so important to us? Do you need to remind me of something so trivial...?"

"You have spoken very wisely, Eldest Brother," Long Crane and Big Bear nodded. They were quite embarrassed. They had previously boasted a lot, but the deadline of one month to complete their task had already passed. And, this fact had left them to feel very ashamed of themselves.

[What should I say in case I end-up facing him again?]

The task of preventing the Xue Hun Manor from going north had been completed very effectively. Moreover, even the Silver Blizzard City had been forced to come south to deal with this matter...

However, there was the other task — to break Li Teng Yun's legs. And, this task hadn't been completed yet. In fact, even Li Teng Yun's face hadn't appeared in the midst of this chaos. This had confused everyone, and had lit a fire inside Long Crane and Big Bear. However, they most probably wouldn't stop at breaking his legs if they came face to face with him. In fact, they might even finish him.

Li Teng Yun wouldn't only die if this were to happen... he would die a miserable death... after suffering unspeakable pain.

They had previously been wary of Li Jue Tian. Therefore, they hadn't dared to consider the thought of killing the boy since that would create a mess which could never be cleaned up. But then, Li Jue Tian had deliberated to kill their Fourth Brother. And, this had removed any space for the two sides to mediate. Therefore, these two Xuan Beast Kings were now ferociously stirred. So, how could they let Li Teng Yun off so easily?

In fact, they were eager waiting to confront Li Jue Tian again. And, they were looking forward to using this opportunity to crack-down that old bastard...

The three individuals glanced at each other, and inferred that no other matter was left to debate upon. Therefore, they figured that it was time to go their separate ways, and start their respective preparations.

Then, a clamor suddenly rose in the distance. Big Bear frowned and spoke-up, "That's the panther group over there! They seem to have some trouble again... these folks will never leave me in peace!"

"The panther group?" The other two individuals also frowned and looked into the distance.

Two vigorous figures were quickly making their way towards them. These two figures were snow-white in color. But, their eyes flashed with a golden light; they both were Eighth Level Peak Golden-Eyed Xuan Snow Panthers. They were extremely fast, and managed to arrive at the spot in an instant.

"What's the matter?" Big Bear felt humiliated. He had been responsible for the panthers ever since the death of their King. And, he had just witnessed two of them rush-in without any semblance of discipline. So, he couldn't help but feel angry.

The two Golden-Eyed Xuan Snow Panthers whined a bit. They then prostrated themselves on the ground, and remained motionless for a bit. Then, one turned his head, and retrieved a small white creature — holding the scruff of its neck in his mouth — from his back. He put the creature on the ground. However, it seemed as if the panther still couldn't control the trembles that had overtaken its body.

The two panthers prostrated even lower, and their heads dropped further as they "whined" a bit more. Then, they quickly withdrew, and vanished into the forest.

"This is just a small Iron Winged Panther cub... It looks like it's barely over a month old. It's such an adorable little thing..." the man shrouded in black had barely spoken these words when his entire body started to shiver in shock. Then, his body suddenly became extremely stiff.

Long Crane and Big Bear also became still at the same time. In fact, their eyes almost popped-out as they stared unwaveringly at the thing that was huddled on the ground. It seemed as if they were looking at a rare treasure of their era...

That little creature was Little White...

Little White had heard the summons of the Lord of Tian Fa, and had recklessly rushed towards the forest. This was his hidden and innate nature. So, he could've never gone against it.

He had only wished to pay his obeisance to the Lord of Tian Fa, and then return. But, he had barely gotten to the panther group, and they noticed that something was wrong. So, they delivered him here. Then, he came to see the three Xuan Beast Kings so close to himself, and his natural instinct as a lower leveled Xuan Beast kicked-in. Therefore, the adorable little thing huddled and started to tremble...

"Eldest Brother! Eldest Brother! This one is just a child! Yet, he's an un-weaned Level Eight Iron-Winged Panther! Level eight! Level eight, f\*ck me! How's this possible?! I must be dreaming dammit! Third Brother, quickly slap me! I must be dreaming! This is unbelievable! My holy uncle...! This is really... ah!" Big Bear was shouting and making a commotion. In fact, he had completely neglected how he'd appear while doing so...

Long Crane's face had a hint of darkness on it.

Everyone else was completely silent.

In fact, it was almost a deathly silence.

The six pairs of eyes of the three Xuan Beast Kings were opened



round. Long Crane's lamp-like eyes were flickering like a light-bulb. Big Bear's eyes were still full of disbelief; in fact, it seemed that they were just about to pop-out from their sockets. The shrouded person's eyes were covered by the black cloth. But, his sharp eyes had started to shine through it, and had begun to glisten. Moreover, Big Bear's words were quite deplorable, and the Lord of Tian Fa would've gotten angry a long time ago under any other circumstances. But, even he didn't utter a single word at this moment...

[This is very shocking! It's unbelievably shocking!]

The Lord of the Xuan Beasts bent down. Then, he nimbly and cautiously grabbed the little creature, and held him to his bosom... like a cherished treasure that was rather brittle in make...

Little White was terrified. So, he rolled his eyes as he whimpered in fear. He could sense the opposite party's kindness, but still couldn't dare to move.

The Lord of Tian Fa held Little White's soft body in his palm. Then, he exhaled after a long time and said, "This little thing is genuinely at the eighth level! He's unexpectedly at level eight! Genuinely at level eight...! This is a miracle...! A genuine miracle...!"

These three Xuan Beast Kings could easily determine the level, rank, and strength of a newly met Xuan Beast as long as they concentrated. This was a benefit of the highest of their level. However, the lord of Tian Fa had personally and closely inspected this unprecedented little Xuan Beast with his own hands...

Perhaps it was the shock that had caused the Lord of Tian Fa's speech to be slightly odd at first. However, his speech had turned a shade of surety once that initial sense of astonishment came to pass. But, his speech had become slightly incoherent soon-after.

However, the other two Xuan Beast Kings — Long Crane and Big Bear — didn't think that his words were strange. They became

quite dignified on the contrary, and surveyed the little creature properly. Then, their mouths fell wide open, and they became speechless...

They could still feel that sense of shock in their hearts. They shouldn't have been this shocked under normal circumstances since their perception abilities had assessed the level of this little creature a long time ago. Moreover, this sense of shock should've been removed from their psyche once they had verified this fact. However, they had remained stunned to their very core even now...

And, the cause for their astonishment wasn't baseless either. This fact was too unfathomable and extremely shocking...

"The Iron-Winged Panthers usually live for around two hundred years. They start their advance in ten years, and start their progress to the seventh layer's basic level. And, it takes about seventy years for them to reach the seventh Xuan level's peak. And, the promising ones break through the seventh Xuan level if they reach its peak within those seventy years. Then, they reach the eighth level. But, that's the limit of the levels they can achieve. They have no choice but to stop there!" the black shrouded person spoke these strange words with a sense of urgency in his tone. However, his voice was somewhat sharp and somewhat intermittently gloomy as well...

This information wasn't very valuable under the usual pretext. Forget these three Xuan Beast Kings — even regular Xuan Beasts would find it common knowledge. However, this longstanding common knowledge had been 'completely and thoroughly' toppled...

"However, we have a level eight Iron-Winged Panther cub in front of us...! A mere cub!" the black shrouded man spoke with a sense of urgency, and then panted a little. His robe fluttered and swept about. He had seemingly let go of the entirety of his repressed emotions in that moment. "Third, Fourth, is it possible

that we are dreaming?"

"How's this thing even possible?" The black-cloaked man trembled, "From what we can infer... this is an Iron-Winged Panther's cub. It is barely a few months old, and it hasn't even been weaned yet. But, he has still advanced under these conditions... And not only that — he has advanced to such a high level! This is unbelievable! Unfathomable! I would've killed anyone who had told me that such a thing had happened, but I wouldn't have believed a word of it. But now... I see this thing right in front of us! Can anyone tell me how such a thing is possible?"

The Lord of the Xuan Beasts shook his head again. In fact, he had exerted the entirety of his strength to shake his head. Then, he rashly spun around twice, and looked at the little white creature again. Then, his gaze didn't move away again...

This fact was genuinely incomprehensible. It was extremely strange; so strange that the cloaked man couldn't understand it...

Long Crane and Big Bear stood astonished besides the Lord of the Xuan Beasts. Their minds had become numb, and saliva had started to drip from their gaping mouths without them even being aware of it. Then, Big Bear's majestic body suddenly started to sway after a long time, and he tumbled onto the ground. He then started to howl. He clutched the hair on his head, and pounded the ground before mournfully shouted, "Good gods! This world is genuinely crazy!"

"Could it be?" Long Crane thought of a possibility, and smacked his lips, "Elder Brother, is it possible that the Panther King had raped a level seven Iron-Winged Panther?" he spoke those words... but then, he abruptly came to a stop, and slapped himself...

The other two — including Big Bear — looked at him as if he was an idiot...

"Idiot! How's that possible? You two act like you have garbage

inside your head! Do you think I'm amazed at its level alone? The astonishing facts about this little thing aren't limited his strength alone...!"

The Lord of the Xuan Beasts then paused a moment and said, "I've inspected it very carefully. This little thing's genes are purely those of an Iron-Winged Panther... and no other high-level Xuan Beasts! Therefore, I can confirm that this little thing's advancement is entirely acquired in its nature. In other words... someone has used a strong and miraculous method to promote its advancement!"

"And, this is still not as surprising! What is really surprising is that... this little thing's innate characteristics have been completely transformed as well! So, it will surely advance to the ninth level within thirty years... and even the ninth level won't be the limit of its potential achievements..."

The man shrouded in black finished speaking in a solemn manner. Then, he recalled what Long Crane had spoken a moment ago. And, he let his leg fly. He kicked Long Crane before he started to scold him, "Would you — a majestic Xuan Crane Beast King — be ready to rape a level seven Xuan Crane Beast? What does that pointy head of yours think the entire day? Can't you think of something decent and useful for once?"

His voice contained a destitute trace of embarrassment in it...

## Chapter 336: Tian Fa's Decision

---

Big Bear was on the ground because of the shock. Then, he looked up and started to laugh since he couldn't help but take pleasure in Long Crane's misery. This was right before he suddenly shouted, "Eldest Brother... look! This little thing has a jade tied to his neck... this means it's someone's 'pet'... and doesn't it mean... ughhh..." it was obvious from his cold hiss that he had been shaken.

[A pet...?]

The black-clad man didn't ignore that comment. He turned the little creature around, and noticed that white piece of jade. It was a translucent-white in color; much like the little ones' fur. So, one wouldn't have noticed it if they weren't looking carefully. In fact, Big Bear wouldn't have been able to notice it if he weren't lying on the ground... and hadn't noticed the reflection of light that had denoted the difference between the fur and the jade...

"Tian Xiang City... Dugu..." the shrouded man read these words softly. Then, he suddenly looked up and started to ponder. It was a while before he finally spoke-up, "Again, that Tian Xiang City! It seems that we must head over to this Tian Xiang City. This little one managed to advance there in a miraculous manner. And, this matter addresses our issue as well. This little thing was able to advance despite its frail body. Moreover, there's still a lot of room for its growth. Plus, it doesn't seem that it has suffered from any side-effects. This miraculous technique is genuinely world-shaking!"

Big Bear suddenly recalled something. Then, he started to crawl towards Little White, and stopped right in front of him. He then opened his big mouth, made a whining noise, and bared his white teeth.

Little White's eyes shone. It raised its tiny claws, and made a gesture. Then, it opened its mouth, and whined feebly.

The black-cloaked man kicked Big Bear's posterior, "I forgot that you could talk to it! Why didn't you do it earlier, you fool?"

Big Bear rubbed his buttocks as he inwardly cursed; [you had forgotten about it too. Then, why did you do this to me...?] But, he didn't dare to open his mouth. He whined for a bit, and then he started to make strange monosyllabic sounds, "O! O! O! ..." repeatedly.

Little White's big eyes blinked in excitement. His two paws moved up and down. He made a chirping "O! O! O! ..." sound as well. [The opposite party is a bear, and I'm a panther... but we can still speak to each other! Isn't this great?!]

Big Bear inquired more urgently thereafter. Little White tilted his head, and looked at the opposite party innocently. Then, he whined a bit. He wanted to give an explanation, but he wasn't able to come up with one... and, his eyes were clearly relaying the confusion of his mind. So, he eventually gave up, and hung his head in a dispirited manner. The little creature stared blankly as his ears also drooped down, and he made no further noises...

Big Bear spread his hands to indicate that he was finished with asking his questions.

The man shrouded in black and Long Crane asked in one voice, "What?"

"O! O! Awwooo..." Big Bear had forgotten to switch back to the proper disposition, and had continued to speak in that monosyllabic language. It was then that he experienced a punch to his chest and a kick to his posterior. So, he shouted, and started to rub the parts where he had been hit...

"Hurry up and speak, you idiot!" The faces of the other two individuals had transformed to devilish masks. And, Little White had been frightened. So, he withdrew his head, turned, and moved towards the black-cloaked person's bosom. This little creature was quite young. But, he looked up meaningfully, and realized that the

black-shrouded person was the leader amongst the three. Therefore, he knew that he'd be the safest person to be with. So, Little White suddenly whined in doubt, opened his huge wet eyes, spun around twice, cupped his paws in respect, and then stretched his tiny soft tongue to lick the black-shrouded person.

The black-shrouded man flicked his hand like he had just received an electric shock. And, Little White cut a sorry figure as he dropped down to the ground.

"This little thing!" the black-shrouded person uttered with regret and anger. Then, he rolled-up his long sleeves and picked Little White, and held him to his bosom again. After that, he started to pat his head, "...Is too naïve!" he spoke in a strict manner.

Little White was terrified to look at him. So, he just lay prone; without making any movements.

"It said that a powerful... very powerful and nice... very nice man helped him." Big Bear panted angrily as he replied in his coarse voice. His eyes were opened round, and his expression was quite gloomy.

"I asked him how this man looks, and this thing replied — 'good, very good'. I asked him about that man's age, and he said — 'good! Very good!' ...Everything was 'good! Very good!'" Big Bear continued gloomily. In fact, his voice was almost a hiss...

"There isn't a single detail in that. How exactly did you communicate, you idiot?!" The individual in black had gotten a little anxious by now.

"There was only one other answer outside 'very good!' It said that the man's smell was also 'very good'. In fact, he said that it was better than that of its master." Big bear continued. He was feeling very gloomy since everything had turned into a mess for him...

"Be content. This little one is merely a couple of months old. So, it's a great feat that he was able to communicate this much. What

did you expect from such a young one? But, we have at least confirmed that this 'person' who can advance Xuan Beasts' cultivation... exists!"

Long Crane had a disdainful look on his face. He turned to the black-clad person, "Eldest Brother, I think that this thing is related to that mysterious black-clothed masked man. In fact, I'm certain that it's related to him. There's no one else in the outside world — excluding that man — who could've done this. Moreover, this little one has a master. So, its master and the person who promoted his cultivation must be very close. He wouldn't use this unnatural method if not for a close friend. How could that man use such a method lightly?"

"Yes, Brother Crane's assessment seems reasonable. Why don't you learn something from him, Brother Bear? So, speaking of the mysterious and skillful man's current location... it's quite possible that he's here as well. Anyway, we know that this little one's master is here to say the least..."

The black-cloaked man's eyes had started to shine brightly. He took two steps, and gave a resolute order, "Execute the plan that was decided earlier! But, don't rush at the Jun and the Dugu Family's men. If..."

He then sighed.

"Eldest brother, if we reach the climax of the decisive battle... won't it...?" Long Crane and Big bear looked at him anxiously, "You're at the fringes of the Earth Level... If it had an effect... wouldn't it be...?"

"It doesn't matter!" The black-shrouded person waved his sleeves and said, "This is a battle for prestige! And, we will have at least ten years of stability if we win this war! But, the real disaster would be upon us if we timidly decide to abstain from a fight. I will return to seclusion and assail the twelfth gate once this matter ends. Then, you two can govern Tian Fa at that time."



"Yes!" the other two acknowledged in unison.

The Southern Heaven City seemed to be riddled with confusion at that point of time. And, everyone seemed to be anxious.

That assembly of 'half of the world's experts' was no longer confident of their victory after they had witnessed the terrifyingly formidable line-up of the Xuan Beasts.

The great families and powerful factions had sent their men. Moreover, hundreds of Sky Xuan experts were present. And, there were at least forty to fifty Spirit Xuan experts present here as well. They had been brimming with confidence and had been rearing to go to battle... but that was before the Xuan Beasts had demonstrated their strength. In fact, some of them had even looked forward to exploit this battle since they had hoped to harvest several Xuan cores from Xuan Beasts by the end of the battle.

[This is going to get us a lot of wealth!]

However, those wonderful thoughts had vanished once they had come to witness the Xuan Beasts' 'show of strength'. A level eight Xuan Beasts equals a Sky Xuan expert, and level nine Xuan Beasts equals a Spirit Xuan expert. With that algorithm in place — Tian Fa's strength far exceeded their own. They had forgotten about the others, and had only seen the level nine Xuan Beasts. And, they alone numbered no less than a hundred! And... the level eight Xuan Beasts must be tens of thousands in number. [How can we possibly fight this battle? How can we do it?!]

[Still thinking about collecting Xuan beast cores? You must be dreaming!]

Moreover, there was the 'myth' that... a Xuan Beast King could equal the Great Masters. However, there were only five of them present at this battle front... that is if Feng Juan Yun was included in that count! And, what was even more unreasonable was the fact that... the strength of Tian Fa's Lord was unrivalled! Therefore,

the Great Master Li Jue Tian was at a grave disadvantage on the present day at least...

The leaders of every powerful faction had been immersed in discussions the entire day, but they hadn't taken a single countermeasure until now. If one came up with a plan... someone else refuted it. If one proposed a tactic... another overruled it. However, it was surprising that there wasn't any internal strife due to this behavior. Moreover, there were many who inwardly desired to retreat after having seen the Xuan Beasts' strength and line-ups.

Young Master Jun wasn't at peace either. It could be said that the day been a very tiring one for him. First, he had expended a lot of energy in the matter relating to persuading Baili Luo Yun. He had been mentally and physically tired by that encounter, but he had thought that he would rest once he'd return to his tent. However, he arrived in his tent, and found out that Little White had gone missing. So, he had no choice but to try and cajole Dugu Xiao Yi. And, that too to no avail...

The Young Master Jun had started to feel very tired and stuck since he hadn't been able to make headway. And, the little girl had continued to cry that she had to go and look for Little White. This made the Young Master Jun very restless. So, he eventually roared that he would tie her up like 'rice dumplings', and would send her back to Tian Xiang City.

This immediately quieted the Young Lady Dugu down. But, she was left to fume with anger. It was almost as if she would look for a day and opportunity to get back at him...

Guan Qing Han started to console her as she shot a quick and cold glance at the debauchee at her side. [This brat was quite amused with this little girl before he started to get annoyed. So, why not now...? His behavior has suddenly turned so vile. It's such a shame!]

The hostile gaze of the two beautiful women were like pins and needles for Jun Mo Xie. So, he gloomily left their company, and started to whine mournfully; [my life is full of hardships! Anyone who has a problem... looks to me... What am I... a fireman?]

Then, he ran into Doingfang Wen Jian and Dongfang Wen Dao the moment he got out of the tent. And, the two Dongfang Uncles weren't willing to let Jun Mo Xie off either. They interrogated him about what had passed in all those years; that too in detail. In fact, they interrogated him so carefully that the Young Master Jun became extremely tired... and must've added a few hundred kilos of weariness onto his already tired mind...

[Good God! Can't you let me rest for a bit?]

Then, Jun Wu Yi and Dongfang Wen Qing returned in the evening... with serious expressions on their faces. And, Jun Wu Yi returned to Jun Mo Xie's tent immediately-after he had put the military-affairs in order.

"Is it bad?" Jun Mo Xie asked. Guan Qing Han was seated on his side. She quietly opened her eyes, and pricked her ears to listen.

"It's not 'just' bad; it's horrible!" Jun Wu Yi frowned and sighed, "There will be no battle. There's no military strength here. No one is willing to agree to anything. Moreover, many families wish to retreat. I'm convinced that we'll most-likely face a rout at the beginning of the battle due to the lack of fighting spirit that's prevalent in the camp at the moment."

"What? So, nothing came out of this discussion that spanned an entire day? The situation can't be that pessimistic, right?" Jun Mo Xie was shocked. [How can people be this inefficient?!]

"Pessimistic? That's a very 'optimistic' argument to make in this situation! Do you think that such a gathering would ever come to a consensus?!" Dongfang Wen Qing overflowed with anger as he snorted, "We might've agreed upon a decision to end humanity if it were for those Great Masters' proposals. Every man present here

lacks fighting spirit and preparedness. We will collapse in a moment if those Xuan Beasts attack tonight!"

"It appears that Li Jue Tian is a very incapable leader," Jun Mo Xie sighed as he spoke.

"Oh really?! The stature of these Great Masters is truly majestic, but they're still humans. They can gather so many troops for a war, but which one of them has the ability to lead them, ah? Each one of these men has only ever concentrated on their own training. How else could they have achieved so much? But, speaking of leadership abilities... the Greatest Master Yun Bie Chen and Master Shi Chang Xiao could be considered a little better than the rest of them. However, the rest of them are dumb in this regard. Especially that Solitary Falcon... he's a barbarian!"

Dongfang Wen Qing continued angrily, "His words have completely infuriated me! He suggested that we must focus only on the Spirit Xuan experts from now on. He said that we should secretly infiltrate Tian Fa, and kill many Xuan Beast Kings before making a quick retreat. I wish to wipe his arrogance away. He's genuinely a pig-headed individual!"

# Chapter 337: They Wish to Entrap Me? They Should Make Preparations For Their Own Funerals!

---

Jun Mo Xie was shocked. In fact, he was dripping with sweat. [Solitary Falcon is too fearless! I hadn't anticipated that this man would be capable of something like this!]

[Tian Fa can even track a rat's movements within its territory in this time of war. So, how can a team infiltrate with utmost stealth?]

[Let's suppose we do adopt Solitary Falcon's plan, and a team infiltrates Tian Fa in secrecy. They would certainly be surrounded by the enemy forces... And then, the enemy will use their superior strength to annihilate that team in its entirety! This outcome is an absolute given.]

[To die is to die... but this team would basically be killing themselves if we take this course of action...]

Jun Mo Xie had come to realize that he had been too conservative in estimating Solitary Falcon's IQ; he had overestimated it by too great a margin. It seemed that this man's head had become like a gourd after training every day with the Snowy Mountain Eagles. So, his intelligence had come to resemble that of the eagles by now...

"There has been no gain today..." Jun Wu Yi sighed, "Tian Fa has declared war. It has given us a preparation time of three days before it initiates a full-scale decisive battle. And, we're still considering the commander-in-chief..."

"Speaking of the candidates for commander-in-chief — your Third Uncle is quite popular." Dongfang Wen Qing snorted coldly. He then continued in an angry manner, "The Silver Blizzard City immediately recommended him. They then vigorously praised the

abilities of the Blood General. Then, the Xue Hun Manor's Young Master — Li Teng Yun — also got up and recommended him... It was almost decided on the spot! Those shameless bastards! They're trying to kill with a borrowed knife! They want to use your Third Uncle's popularity to endanger his life!"

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes, "What are your thoughts about this topic Third Uncle?"

Jun Wu Yi raised his eyebrows, "We've come here to settle this matter. So, how does it matter if these people aim to 'kill with a borrowed knife'? This Xuan Beast Uprising is a threat to the entire mainland. So, it must be contained and stopped. Moreover, the upcoming decisive battle is 'key' to all of it! Great men don't do things out of convenience! Someone else will take my place if I don't step-up! Moreover, it's not inevitable that I'll die if take-up this post..."

"Huh...? You mean you accepted it?" Jun Mo Xie stood up, and asked cautiously after he had taken two steps.

"I sure did." Jun Wu Yi replied calmly, "Only I could've been nominated; there's no one else. And, the prestige of the Jun Family would've been hit hard if I were to fear for my life in such a situation and turn the offer to lead this war down. In fact, our family's prestige would've dropped to a freezing point! All the glory and honor of the past — which your grandfather, father, Second Uncle and your two elder brothers earned for the Jun Family — would've been washed away. And, I would've ruined it if I were to covet my life and fear death like this! Therefore... I am duty bound to not retreat even if I may die! A great man earns his name for a reason!"

"They called your name since they were aware that you wouldn't say no; there was no other reason except this one alone. They were well-aware that you won't back down!" Dongfang Wen Qing groaned, "You know that it's nothing but a trap. And yet, you're still ready to jump into it? Is this what you call a 'great man'? This

is nothing but a fool's behavior!"

"Then, I will die without regrets!" Jun Wu Yi's expression was cold, "The Jun Family's reputation is everything as far as I'm concerned! I don't matter in front of it! And, I will never allow our family's reputation to fall!"

"Idiot!" Dingfang Wen Qing scolded sharply, "You going to war is just a meaningless sacrifice on your part; nothing more!"

"Real men have to shoulder their responsibilities. And, the Jun Family's reputation is my responsibility!"

Jun Wu Yi frowned. But, he had a determined expression on his face, "The Jun Family will never fall. Father and Mo Xie will still be there... even if I'm gone. So, the Jun Family will never fall! And now, I will step forward for my family as a 'Jun'. Anyway, I'm not doing this because I wish to fall into the trap... or to come across as a hero — This is only for my Jun Family's prestige! The Jun Family will never fear the enemy or act cowardly!"

Dongfang Wen Qing trembled angrily from head to toe. He stamped his foot and cursed, "I've never seen anyone so brain-dead in my entire life! You say something Mo Xie!"

"I haven't crowned my hair in ten years. And, every night I look at the moon and hope to come to Tian Xiang... but I know that the life doesn't go in reverse!" Jun Mo Xie chanted loudly. He suddenly raised his head, and spoke in a sinking voice, "You'll do it in spite of this, Third Uncle? This matter of prestige is alien to me — I don't care about it! And, I'm sure that even grandfather is the same! Your life is more important for us! Also, don't forget that there's someone who awaits you on that snowy mountain. She has already waited for ten years because of her feelings. And, she'll continue to wait..."

Jun Wu Yi's body started to tremble violently, and his face convulsed with pain. His expression became dark in a split second. Then, he tilted his head, and his cheek vanished in the darkness

left by the flickering candle. The man then spoke-up in agony, "It's not about prestige alone. The battlefield has taken millions of corpses since ancient times. Which one of them didn't have aged parents? Who didn't have a lovely young wife? Am I — Jun Wu Yi — special? Am I treasured gold? Isn't this enough of a reason?"

"I've made my decision. Elder Brothers, the three of you need not urge Mo Xie. Anyway, I'm convinced that my being the commander-in-chief will have a huge effect. I can at least do better than those good-for-nothing stubborn people," Jun Wu Yi smiled strenuously.

"It's okay if you're going to fight. But, is it necessary that it's just you alone? Can't others go to fight as well?"

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes, "How can you lead the ordinary troops and clash with this enemy head-on? It would be considered suicide if you were only to lead ordinary troops. But, many of the powerful families have sent their people to Tian Fa. And, you will need several thousand elite troops for this battle. Moreover, several of them would need to be at Earth Xuan level, and thousands will need to be at Jade Xuan if you wish to win. How do we find so many of such warriors in the ranks of ordinary troops...? So, you must ask them for these elite soldiers as well. In fact, you must even force the Xue Hun Manor and the Silver Blizzard City to dispatch their elites in the troops you'll lead to the battle..."

"Huh? What do you mean?" A bright light flashed in Jun Wu Yi's eyes.

"We can also kill with a borrowed knife!"

Jun Mo Xie's white teeth became visible as he flashed a faint smile. And, they started to glitter in the flickering light of the candle. In fact, he looked like a man-eating beast as he put his hand down, and ferociously said, "This conspiracy to kill you will come with a heavy price. They want us to be finished?! But then, every



powerful faction will meet their end with us! Who else wants to leave this world? Who dares to mess with my Jun Family?! How can we allow their plans to work so smoothly? Their fate will accompany ours if we lose even a single drop of blood!"

"And, here is where you should be taking the advantage, Uncle! You should reply on your position in this matter!" Jun Mo Xie's eyes narrowed as a murderous aura surged out from his body, "They plan to send our Jun Family to its funeral, but they shall make their own preparations for the time we emerge victorious in this plot!"

"It seems like we'll be throwing away our lives if we agree to this. So, we must have others to die alongside us! These Xuan experts want you to die by sending you to lead only ordinary soldiers. So, we will keep that as our condition! And, we won't agree to do anything if they don't agree to this demand. Because... that will be a blatant entrapment! And, why should we go to hell when they won't? How come their lives are more precious than ours? And if they do agree, then... he he... who knows who will die..."

Jun Mo Xie gave a cold laugh and said, "Rest assured, Uncle... it'll be alright." Then, he turned and left.

The three Dongfang brothers glanced at Jun Wu Yi, and walked out as well.

"Your Third Uncle has... the heart of a man who desires to die." Dongfang Wen Qing looked at the full moon, and took a deep breath. And, the sharp smell and aura of the forest entered into his nostrils.

"If only I had known earlier..." Jun Mo Xie said gloomily, "His heart has been showing signs of depression for a while now. If grandfather wasn't that old... or I hadn't been such a waste in my early days... then, Third Uncle would've perhaps... He had been suffering from that loss for so many years. Anyone else would've killed themselves numerous times by now...And now, you have

arrived. That tantamount to protection for me... in fact, it's equal to me getting a tyrannical patron. So, Third Uncle... perhaps can't bear it anymore..."

"That's also true..." the three brothers sighed as they spoke, "It's hard to guess the blow that matter must've dealt to your Third Uncle. Didn't he always have pride as a 'great man'? We would've gone mad long back if we were in his place. Yet, your Third Uncle has been suffering that torture for over ten years now!"

"This ordeal of his' won't last long — I've decided it!" Jun Mo Xie had gone silent for a while before he softly came to speak these words. The other three suddenly raised their heads to look at him. And, their eyes were full of amazement.

[He would have to face the Silver Blizzard City if wants to erase Jun Wu Yi's suffering. Does he think it's easy?]

"I'm going to sleep. I'm really tired," Jun Mo Xie spoke those few words, turned, and then walked away.

[What?] The uncles were shocked. They felt as if their heads would explode from the confusion. [We were discussing such a grave topic... and yet, this brat says that he wants to sleep? That... he's tired? Doesn't he know that the Jun Family is at the edge of ruin at this juncture?]

"How is this brat so heartless?!" They shook their heads in unison, and walked away.

Jun Mo Xie blew out the lamp. He then thought of a move. Then, he disappeared from the tent; he appeared like an illusion as he quickly moved towards Tian Fa.

He was suddenly outside the Southern Heaven City. Jun Mo Xie then felt at ease, and initiated his Yin Yang Escape at its full force. His body seemed like a meteor as his incorporeal shadow moved onwards.

[It's obvious that Third Uncle is determined to participate in this

battle.] Jun Mo Xie settled his thoughts. [I must find Long Crane and Big Bear... and, as fast as I can. It will turn out to be a case of an 'accidental friendly-fire' if those two bastards dared to attack Third Uncle's regiment since they'll unknowingly end-up attacking the people who are on their own side!]

[And anyway... you people think that I can't kill with a borrowed knife? I'm much more adept at this kind of game than you are!]

Jun Mo Xie obviously couldn't act as himself at that time; nor could he show his real face. So, he would have to change his identity into that of the 'Mysterious and Skillful' expert. And, he felt quite happy about this; [it's not going to be easy... even when this skillful expert gets involved. It seems that I will have to work very hard and very ferociously once again.]

Jun Mo Xie felt like a dragon at sea... or a tiger in the forest the moment he entered Tian Fa. In fact, he had crossed around twenty-five kilometers in a single moment.

It was extremely relaxing for him. And, very easy!

Whether it was his outer body or inner soul — everything felt extremely relaxed. And, this relaxed and extremely satisfied feeling started to increase his fondness for the Tian Fa forest.

This was the most dangerous and cruel place in the entire Xuan Xuan Continent as per the common legends. However, this territory was still giving a sense of comfort to Jun Mo Xie's heart!

# Chapter 338: Fortuitous Encounter in Tian Fa

---

There were waves of Xuan Beasts on treetops. And, there were numerous more that travelled to-and-fro on the ground. They relayed information back-and-forth in a continuous manner. Then, there were beasts in the sky to keep an eye on the Southern Heaven City. They would circle above the treetops for some time, and would then return. They would then be replaced by another group of Xuan Beasts. It was evident that these new arrivals were meant as a change of guard. And, this entire routine had been deployed in a strict manner. In fact, the tightness of their defense wasn't any less competent than that of the humans.

It wasn't known how many Xuan Beasts were there hidden in the dark of this forest. In fact, it could be said that each-and-every nook-and-cranny of Tian Fa had transformed into a fatal trap.

However, the fatality of these traps didn't do much harm to the Young Master Jun.

For example, the Young Master Jun had just stepped on a level-nine Xuan Golden Tiger's head. However, it was a pity that the said-Xuan Beast didn't notice a thing. So, it merely continued to chat with the few Golden Tigers who sat next to it...

"Growl... growl, growl? (Did you find anything or not?)

"Oh, oh, growl..." (No, I haven't.)

"Growl, growl, oh, umm, ack..." (I want to eat meat.)

"Oh, oh, ack..." (I also want to eat it.)

"Oh, oh, growl, growl, ack?" (Did your wife find out about your mistress yet?)

"Oh, ack, growl..." (He proudly replied... This is so much fun... There's no way that faded-old woman can find out...)

The Young Master Jun couldn't understand them even though his abilities were exceptional. In fact, he couldn't get a single thing. However, he had glanced at them while they were making a lewd wink-like gesture at each other. So, he couldn't help but halt out of curiosity. After all, it wasn't common to see two Golden Tigers with such a lewd expression on their face. However, Jun Mo Xie certainly didn't possess that great a 'translation' capability...

Jun Mo Xie was unable to understand them in the end. So, he had no choice but to leave. He was just about to depart when he deliberately used some force to kick down on the Xuan Beast's head. The Xuan Golden Tiger's head dropped down as a result. In fact, it almost hit the ground. "Roar!" it got up with its tail straightened like an iron rod. The beast then looked around in an uncertain manner, and shook its head. It then looked around again, and bared its teeth, "Growl, growl, ummm?" (Did you see anything? Why do I feel like something hit my head?)

"Growl, growl, ack!" the four other Xuan Golden Tigers turned towards their comrade. Their expressions were full of disdain as they rolled their eyes, "Growl, growl, ummm, ack..." (You're going mental! Did you have another sleepless night? You look brain dead!)

"Ummm, ack, growl!" (Bullsh\*t! My body is in great health...!) The Xuan Tiger then stretched his hairy paw, and touched his head. He then tilted his head, and pondered for a bit. But, the Xuan Beast still couldn't understand what had come to happen. So, he decided to forget about that mysterious event, and lay down on his stomach once again. He then resumed sharing his knowledge and experience about picking up females with his friends...

Deep inside the Tian Fa forests...

"Did you deliver the battle-challenge?" the black shrouded person was holding Little White as he asked in a low voice.

"Ahem, I reckon these arrogant humans will take up this

challenge!" Long Crane winked his delicate eyelid.

"I'll go into seclusion now. It's important that no one disturbs me!" The black-clad person sighed, "I've been feeling the onset of a breakthrough of late. The strength inside my body has accumulated to the limit. And, it's becoming extremely difficult to keep it at bay... this battle has come at a very bad time."

"Be at ease, Eldest Brother. Your breakthrough is most important. You can't be careless. Leave everything to us. Nothing bad will happen," Long Crane and Big Bear replied in unison.

"Ahem, so it is decided. But, you take care of this little thing first. And, try to find its master as soon as you can... before the decisive battle starts. I'm pretty sure that there's a huge chance that its master is one of the people from Tian Xiang's Dugu Family. This can become an opportunity to do some investigations about making breakthroughs."

The black-cloaked man then placed Little White in Big Bear's arms. Big Bear grinned, and put him on top of his head. It looked as if a black gorilla had worn a snow-white hat. The scene was very funny.

The black-shrouded individual laughed for a while, and then his towering figure suddenly disappeared. The speed of his movements was extremely fast.

"Eldest Brother's Xuan skills are becoming increasingly exquisite. He will overtake the Lord of the old days if he breaks through the twelfth layer, right? I can only look hopefully and wait for the rest of my life to tread on that route," Long Crane's voice was full of unbounded admiration and sadness.

"Huh! We both are losers! We're still stuck at the tenth level. We've burned the midnight oil our entire lives, and we've only reached this tenth level!" Big Bear hung his head, and continued in a dispirited manner, "And, we had finally found someone who could help us advance after going through so much difficulty."

Moreover, the conditions for his aid weren't very difficult either. But, that bastard Li Jue Tian had to interfere... I'll catch that old man and eat him raw!"

He got angrier as he talked. Then, he grabbed Little White and suddenly opened his mouth wide like a basin. He then brought Little White to his mouth, and it seemed as if he'd toss the little creature into his mouth. Then, he straightened and jolted as he sneezed with an "Atchoo!" His mouth sprayed spittle as he sneezed, and the spray reached a great height. Then, he raised his head once again, sneezed again, and sprayed more spittle.

Little White was frightened by Big Bear's mischievous antique. So, it squeaked and shouted. But, the two Xuan Beast Kings nevertheless broke into laughter. Apparently, playing with little balls of fur wasn't a pastime of common bears alone; it was also enjoyed by Xuan Beast Kings.

One look at Big Bear was enough to tell that this was a rather typical behavior of his'.

"Enough! Stop teasing it! You'll be in trouble if you frighten it to death! This thing's master and the Mysterious and Skillful Masked Expert are certain to have a close relationship. So, you'll be caught unprepared if you're accused of anything..."

Long Crane then looked at a particular direction inside Tian Fa. Then, he spoke in a thoughtful manner, "I was unaware that Snake King was looking for Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit. How can she do it at such a time?"

"Pondering over it is useless. We anyway can't have it. Our power is at the breakthrough level again. So, our bodies will explode if we act stupidly and take one. And, Eldest Brother had said that only they should have it. In fact, we wouldn't be able to consume it at our stage even if we were allowed to. But, I don't know if they can withstand it either." Big Bear caught the frightened and dispirited Little White, and placed him on his head again. But, he didn't dare

to mess with the little thing another time.

Then, Big Bear suddenly became furious and stamped his feet, "This is all because of that bastard Li Jue Tian! That bastard and his jinx of a son! Would such a huge force have assembled here if we had been able to complete the task earlier on? It would've been great if we had made a breakthrough with the help of that mysterious man, and had taken the sacred fruit thereafter. But, this father-son duo has made us miss this extremely rare opportunity. This makes me uncontrollably angry. I may not be able to handle the father, but I'll kill the son if I get the chance...!"

"We've certainly missed the opportunity. So, there's no use pondering over it; especially at such a critical time. Several Xuan Beast Kings had exploded and died after consuming the sacred fruits when they had appeared the last time since they weren't able to handle the power. And now, if..." Long Crane's eyes were full of worry, "How will it be any good if we lose several more of them at such a critical juncture?"

The two of them became quiet. They then looked at the depth of the forest with thoughtfulness and worry on their minds.

Jun Mo Xie rushed like the wind. He had been searching for Big Bear's aura for quite a while. However, the forest was too vast to make it easy for him to find the Xuan Beast King. He was moving fast when he suddenly noticed something, and came to a stop.

This was because he had noticed that the air in this specific area was very heavy. Moreover, it was full of myriads of wild and ferocious poisons.

[This is an extremely poisonous area.] And, this was an understatement in the Young Master's eyes. Even an extremely powerful Xuan expert would die due to the poison if he wasn't on guard and breathed the air of this vicinity. These poisons were absolutely exceptional.

[What kind of poison can be so tyrannical?] Jun Mo Xie broke



into a cold sweat. [It's a good thing that I was using the Yin Yang Escape. Otherwise, I would've fallen and turned into a pile of dried bones with the negligible strength I possess.]

Then, he noticed a rustling sound in the distance while he was thinking of this, and his eyes suddenly turned forward.

There was a flash of green light, and a young lady dressed in green suddenly appeared under a tree. Her face seemed full of excitement as she bent down to look at something...

The young lady's skin was exceptionally fair in tone. Her face was pretty, elegant, and indescribable. She exuded an innocent and charming aura. Moreover, her figure was quite seductive. To speak honestly... her figure was the best amongst all the young women Jun Mo Xie had ever seen...

The front of her body was convex in shape, while the rear portions stuck out. Her figure was streamline from her jade neck to the ankle. It seemed as if it had been engineered by the heavens. In fact, the aforementioned convex areas stuck out to an exaggerated degree. But, the concave area that followed this natural rise nevertheless seemed very smooth; the sight of her body was extremely thrilling to one's heart.

[She looks seventeen or eighteen from her face. I don't know how these people mature... But, she has an angel's face, and a devilish figure!]

He had been stunned for barely a little while when he suddenly became even more amazed at another fact — this young lady had appeared out of nowhere in a place as dangerous as the Tian Fa forest; and, that too at such a dangerous time! However, he was even more amazed by the fact that she didn't seem to be scared of the extremely dangerous poisons that filled the air! And, the thought of this catalyzed Jun Mo Xie's interest in her even further...

An extremely strange plant grew under the tree. It was quite

strange in shape, and had a multicolored stem; this stem was as thin as a finger. Nine leaves sprouted out from it. Each leaf sparkled with a different color, and each one had a drop of dew on it. The dew drops rolled back and forth, but they never dropped off the leaves. A sparkling seven-colored exotic fruit had grown on top of the plant. And, it slowly exuded a concentrated and wonderful smell.

The seven colors gradually converged into one as the scent in the air became more concentrated. And, the various poisons in the air became similar to storm winds, and formed a whirlpool — with each scrambling to get absorbed into this exotic and strange fruit.

# Chapter 339: The ‘Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons’ Fruit

---

[Good God! That fruit has absorbed a lot of poison! I’m sure that even a Spirit Xuan expert would die after he eats this fruit!]

The color of the fruit became richer with the absorption of the poisons. It had become white — pure white. However, it continued to absorb the poisons in a frantic manner.

[Could this be... the ‘Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons’ Fruit...?]

Jun Mo Xie was shocked. His mind was in a bind, and his eyes had nearly popped-out. [I didn’t expect such a fortuitous encounter inside this Tian Fa forest! I’ve actually stumbled upon this nefarious fruit! Moreover, this fruit is nearing its final form!]

As its name suggested — the ‘Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit’ was a fruit with an unimaginable level of toxicity. Jun Mo Xie was convinced that no living being would be immune to its toxicity. [I reckon that even the legendary and respected immortals wouldn’t be immune to such a miraculous and fiercely poisonous fruit.]

This plant needed an area with extremely concentrated levels of poison to grow. In fact, it needed highly venomous liquids to irrigate it at its birth; let alone grow. Even the air itself required to have a dense presence of poison in it for the plant to have a chance at growth. The most extreme prerequisite was that it required an increasing amount of poison as it grew. Otherwise... it could wilt at any time.

Moreover, the growth cycle of the plant was relatively short. And, it could mature in time as short as one year. However, it needed to absorb vast quantities of poison during this time. Even the ten-thousand kinds of poisons accumulated in this area would

be absorbed in a period shorter than one year. In fact, a thing that was extremely poisonous before its poison was absorbed by this plant... would become a pile of trash afterwards.

Additionally, this fruit couldn't stop the process of 'ripening' once it had started to mature. In fact, it would wilt or wither if it were forced to do so...

The fruit would usually turn white at first, then pink, blue, green, yellow, cyan, purple, silver, and finally... purple-gold during the process of its maturation.

However, the 'Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons' fruit would no longer be poisonous in nature once it had achieved the final color of its transformation. In fact, it would then be capable of curing any poison in the world. Moreover, it could increase one's cultivation to a legendary degree...

This miraculous change was quite reasonable. Nothing in this world can be considered as 'absolute'. And, anything which has reached a negative-extreme would turn into something positive since things can only move in the opposite direction once they've reached one extreme. Therefore, there could only be joy after extreme sadness. Consequently, this Thousand Evils and Ten Poisons Fruit would turn into a great cure for poison...

However, the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit couldn't be ingested directly once it had attained the purple-gold color. And, even a powerful Xuan expert would explode if they did so since the power in that now-medicinal plant would be greater than that of countless nuclear bomb explosions.

The Hong Jun Pagoda's information on medicines stated that the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit was the sixth amongst the extremely efficacious medicines. Moreover, it was an important ingredient for the Ninth Firmament dan. As the name suggested — Jun Mo Xie could refine this efficacious dan once he reached the ninth level of the Hong Jun Pagoda.

The sixth, seventh and eighth layer of the Hong Jun Pagoda could also use the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit to refine the efficacious dan if needed. However, some portion of this fruit would be wasted in these levels after the refinement had been completed. And, that would tantamount to wastage of a very precious raw material.

This plant would've been called the 'most efficacious plant' if it weren't for its overbearing reactive nature. Therefore, it needed to be preserved in a Xuan Containment box once it has matured... in case it wasn't being used immediately-after. In fact, even the wonderful White Jade Containment box would corrode if the plant were to be stored inside it.

The Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit would wilt after merely one days' time if it wasn't stored in a proper manner. Its branches would then go underground. And, the area spanning hundreds of kilometers around this wilted plant would become a barren wasteland. Moreover, the vitality of that region wouldn't revive even after a hundred years had come to pass...

As for the method of intake... that was simple. One only had to consume in accordance with one's cultivation. For example, a Spirit Xuan expert could take only a drop of its juice; and, that would be it. Just one drop of that juice could advance ones cultivation considerably.

However, one would die if they got greedy and ingested more than the prescribed amount since they wouldn't be able to handle the immense power of this fruit's efficacy. And, there was no room for error in this regard...

Therefore, this fruit was desired by every expert. They hated it, and they loved it. But, it was a headache since they would have to resist the temptation of taking an extra drop; their bodies would explode, and they would die if they succumbed to this temptation...

In fact, death wouldn't be the end of their misery. Even the skeleton of the deseeded would burn to ashes and disappear without a trace. And, they would 'genuinely' cease to exist.

However, would anyone who had the opportunity to obtain this fruit be considered a peerless expert? Most of people weren't strong enough to handle the fruit's overbearing power, and would explode to their deaths...

Therefore, one could well-imagine the fruit's violent characteristics.

Moreover, the abilities of this fruit as an antidote were far from just a 'narrowly saving ones' life' situation.

Jun Mo Xie would've never imagined that he'd enter the Tian Fa forest, and stumble onto such a legendary spiritual existence soon after. However, this was like a case of 'dark' providence. And, Jun Mo Xie felt endless regret at this point of time because the fruit had already turned white...

In other words... the fruit had reached the stage where it had started to mature.

Several poisons must've given sustenance to the fruit in order for it to reach this stage. Therefore, the toxicity in the air was nearing the state of getting fully diminished. However, it still needed to change eight colors before it became ripe.

This final conversion would require a huge amount of poisonous substances for sustenance.

However, it was clear that the available poisons didn't amount to much. In other words... this event with the 'once-in-a-thousand-years-appearing' Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit stood to end in tragedy.

It would become a Spiritual Fruit after it had ripened. But, it was the most nefarious poison in all the three realms before it reached maturity.

[What use will this be now?]

Jun Mo Xie stamped his feet, and beat his chest in regret. [I would've become obsessed with this if I had known of this earlier. And, I would've plundered all the money required to buy poisons to help this mature. The greatest divine dan in the whole world is in front of my eyes...!]

However, Jun Mo Xie was unaware that this fruit had another resounding name in the tongue of the Xuan Beast Kings of Tian Fa.

Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit!

It was unknown how many fierce and toxic Xuan Beast inside Tian Fa had been aiding the growth Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit.

The fruit had turned pure white and florescent. In fact, its outer layer had started to become light pink in many place. The process of the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit's maturity was like the rolling of the wheel of history — it wouldn't stop once it had started.

Jun Mo Xie nearly spat blood.

His life had become very depressing all of a sudden. Nothing could surpass the sorrow of seeing the greatest treasure in the world at an arm's reach... only to be constricted to just looking at it! And, his misery didn't end at that. He was constricted to looking-on helplessly as it turned to waste...

[I would use-up all my wealth... sacrifice everything I have... even sell my blood to get enough money to buy poisons to sustain this fruit if the heavens let me re-live this life!]

[Oh heavens! Oh mother earth! Why did you let me see this ruined fruit...?! It would've been better if I had never seen it!]

[Let me die!]

Jun Mo Xie had been extremely depressed for a long while by the time the green-clad girl with the indescribable appearance

suddenly issued a hiss. This was followed by a wave of hisses which echoed from the surrounding bushes. Then, a strange stench and aura suddenly surged up. Jun Mo Xie's blood ran cold. And, he couldn't help his hair standing up.

One could look around, and tell that the entire area had become an ocean of poison.

All kinds of vipers, small centipedes, scorpions, three-foot striped toads, four-stinger snakes — every creature which Jun Mo Xie knew to be poisonous — had arrived in densely packed groups. However, they then stationed themselves in proper and neat formations, and arranged themselves in an ordered manner.

This wasn't over yet...

The sky then shook with loud voices...

Poison Cranes, bat falcons, seven-colored eagles... every kind of poisonous flying Xuan Beast arrived in huge numbers....

Jun Mo Xie was shaken... [so this Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit was actually being cultivated by Tian Fa! ...I must pay my obeisance to them! They've actually saved several hundred years' worth of poison for this fruit?!]

[How much physical and mental strength have they meticulously spent on this?!]

[This is really daring!]

Jun Mo Xie's heart calmed down at this realization. He then began to cheer; [it seems that the ripening of this Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisonous Fruit won't be a problem! So, I'll just sit back and wait.]

As for Long Crane and Big Bear...

I'll wait till this matter is over. The decisive battle is still three days away. So, there's still a lot of time. But, who is this green-clothed girl? Could she be a Xuan Beast King? Possibly the one



who's in-charge of the poisonous Xuan Beasts? But, this is outrageous! Long Crane and Big Bear have repulsive appearances! So, how can she look so good? This is shocking!]

The toxicity level in the area had become increasingly low, and the air was about to clear up soon. However, the green-clad girl whistled, and suddenly flew thirty meters into the sky. Then, the Xuan Beasts in the sky swooped down in orderly formations, and opened their mouths to let-out poisonous emissions. This poison dropped to the ground surrounding the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit. Their poison then gave rise to a thick mist that had a very pungent smell.

The Xuan Beasts seemed dispirited after they had spat-out the entirety of their poison. In fact, it even seemed as if their constitution had been ruined. They wouldn't be able to recover even after many years. After all, this was the very essence of their lives... which they had saved up.

The Xuan Beasts which had spat the venom came to a stop. They then flapped their wings, and flew away into the boundless horizon of the opposite direction. They made crackling noises as they left, and it seemed as if they were bidding farewell. And then, they disappeared...

Then, another squadron of flying Xuan Beasts swooped down, and spat venom before they flew away. And, these actions were carried-out in proper order. In fact, there wasn't even the slightest bit of chaos. However, it happened very quickly; it took only a moment of effort. Thousands of Xuan Beasts had spat their venom, and had flown away. However, numerous beasts were still left in the air. And, their numbers weren't decreasing with the passage of time either...

## Chapter 340: I'm Stealing this Sacred Fruit for the Sake of Doing a 'Good Deed'

---

The figure of the green-clad girl suddenly flashed. And, two long chains shot out of her sleeves. They went in the midst of a group of Seven-Colored Eagles, and wrapped around one of them that had dived down in front of her. She then used the chains to snap its skull off. The eagle twisted for a bit, and then died a violent death.

Jun Mo Xie had clearly seen that the eagle had dived down. It had opened its mouth, but it hadn't spat any venom. It had acted with narrow-minded intentions, and hadn't expected the green-clad girl would notice its slyness. In fact, it hadn't even started the rise of its flight when it was pulled down by the chain.

[So, humans aren't the only ones who act mischievously. The Xuan Beasts do it too...] Jun Mo Xie sighed as he thought this.

Then, the green-clad girl spoke a few sharp words to the other beasts. Her beautiful face was brimming with anger. So, it was clear to Jun Mo Xie that she had given a warning to everyone else. And, it didn't matter whether if it were the beasts in the sky... or the ones on the ground — they all trembled with fear.

[She's genuinely a Xuan Beast King!]

[Who except for a Xuan Beast King could have such an effect?]

Countless Xuan Beasts spat their venom around the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit. A puddle of poison had appeared because of it, while the concentration of toxicity in the air had become increasingly denser. Moreover, the puddle of poison was multicolored in its make.

The fruit was in the process of turning pink. However, the ground — which was filled with multicolored poisons — began to lose its toxicity, and started to become grey. Then, it slowly resumed its original shade. All the colorful poison had been

absorbed in such a short period of time!

[This fruit has clearly reached the second stage of its transformation — the sparkling pink!]

The extreme topmost tip of the fruit was so small that it couldn't be seen with the naked eye. And, it had already turned blue.

[The third stage will start so soon?!] Jun Mo Xie was startled.

The green-clad maiden pursed her lips, and whistled. And, the scared Xuan Beasts started to dive down from the sky again.

The plant changed its color three more times, and became yellow. However, no Xuan Beasts were left in the sky by now.

Then, the Xuan Beasts on the ground started to spit their venom under the girl's command.

The green-garbed maiden's face became increasingly nervous — yet increasingly happy — each time the fruit changed color. However, it had soon reached the final phase of its transformation, and had started to turn a light purple-gold in color.

The Xuan Beasts on the ground had finished spitting the entirety of their venom by this point. But, the task of spitting the required amount of venom had also been completed.

"That was close!" The green-clad girl patted the pit of her stomach, and stuck her tongue out in an adorable manner.

[That was close! It wasn't nearly enough!] The same thought came into Jun Mo Xie's mind as well. The two people stationed in the area — one in the open, and the other hidden — felt pangs of relief, and sighed in unison.

Jun Mo Xie was in hiding. But, the look of desire and longing on his face for that fruit was the same as the one on the green-clad girl's.

The Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit began to transform again...

And, it started to turn Purple-Gold this time!

The Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit had finally started to turn purple-gold in color!

This meant that it had nearly ripened!

Then, the fruit blossomed, and shone as brilliantly as the countless stars. And, it seemed as if the shining stars in the night-sky had suddenly descended to the forest.

The beauty of that moment was incomparable, and can't be described in written words.

It resembled a proud and generous King who was overlooking all living things!

The event had been a brief one. However, Jun Mo Xie was certain that he'd never forget the sight of it...

[This spiritual ripening of the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit is the most majestic and beautiful sight in the entire world.]

The green-clothed maiden seemed to be bewitched as well. In fact, she couldn't even suppress the fanatical expression that flashed in her eyes. [I should put this into the Xuan Jade Case. Then, we can all advance and break through the shackles of the peak of level-nine, and officially enter the tenth level! We only need to wait for Eldest Brother's arrival to start!]

This process carried a lot of risk since it was a very treacherous procedure. However, she would still go ahead with it. And, she wouldn't regret attempting it even if her body were to explode in the end.

The Young Master Jun had adjudged correctly. The green-clothed girl was genuinely a Xuan Beast King. She was a level-nine Xuan Beast King of Tian Fa. And, she had been in pursuit of this fruit for the past year.

In fact, the Lord of Tian Fa had made several preparations for this Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit. He had planted multitudes of toxic plants to create this poison valley. And then, he had purposely cultivated a myriad of poisonous Xuan Beasts. Moreover, he had been doing this for the past three-hundred-and-fifty years.

Three-hundred-and-fifty years!

The Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit needed only one year to mature. However, the preparations needed no less than three-hundred-and-fifty years. Moreover, the conditions in Tian Fa were exceptional, and quite convenient for its growth.

Speaking of Xuan Beasts... the poisonous ones weren't in majority. In fact, there would only be one or two poisonous beasts in every ten. However, the Xuan Beasts of Tian Fa had prepared for something as important and big as the Sacred Fruit for three-hundred-and-fifty years.

And, millions of Xuan Beasts had labored in those three-hundred-and-fifty years. Some of them hadn't even lived long-enough to witness this magnificent event. But, they had regularly poured their venom into that area until they had died of old age. In fact, even their corpses had been buried in this area.

And... this had all been done for that fruit!

The Xuan Snake King — Green Hunter — was greatly moved. The labors of the past three-hundred-and-fifty years for Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit had come to fruition! She couldn't help but be shaken inside.

[It's ready at last!]

Then, the young maiden slowly took out a fist-sized Xuan Jade box from her bosom. She then opened its lid, and calmly stayed till. The entirety of her actions were clearly indicative of her the caution she was treading with. It seemed as if she didn't wish to

disturb the seemingly inanimate Sacred Fruit of Tian Fa.

[One must wait for Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit to fully ripen and fall. Plucking it even a moment ahead of time will cause problems.] This thought came over and over into Green Hunter's mind.

[Don't be impatient... don't be impatient... careful... be very careful...]

The extremely bright glow from the fruit eventually started to subside. However, its rich smell didn't vanish. In fact, it became even more delightful and elegant. And, it lasted for ages as it transmitted outwards...

[King of fragrance! No doubt... it's the King of all fragrances!]

Then, the branches above the Sacred Fruit trembled in a graceful manner. And, it seemed as if it was unwilling to fall. However, the stem beneath the purple-gold fruit suddenly withered, and turned to ashes. This left the Sacred Fruit to hang in empty air for a moment before it gracefully fell down...

Green Hunter excitedly opened the lid of the Xuan Jade Box to catch it. And, the fruit was about fall into that box...

When suddenly...

The Xuan Beast King — Green Hunter — opened her beautiful eyes wide at the unbelievable sight that had just occurred in front of her eyes...

There was nothing in the empty air!

Not a single thing!

Those untold hardships, the hundreds of years of labor and preparation for Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit... and then, that miraculous thing had suddenly disappeared without a trace.

Counting the ascended and the buried — she was one of the most powerful Xuan Beast Kings in existence in her generation. And yet, that fruit had disappeared from her sight... without so much as a

sign!

[What is going on?]

She was extremely shocked, angry and annoyed. Then, she quickly turned the Xuan Jade box to look inside it, and confirmed that the fruit had disappeared. Then, the Beast King soared into the air, and stationed herself on top of a tall tree. Her voice was stern as she shouted, "Where has this uncouth scoundrel come from? Be smart, and show yourself! Let this Xuan Beast King see who has the cheek to steal the meticulously nurtured treasure of Tian Fa!"

The entire forest echoed with these words as they surged-on like waves...

Jun Mo Xie became speechless in his hiding place. [This Xuan Beast King is very ferocious!]

[But, I won't come out and show myself; I don't know how badly I'll provoke this crazy woman if I do. So, why would I appear in the open and get into trouble?]

[I'm not a fool!]

This coldly executed plan had left the Xuan Beast King fuming. The very abled and skilled Young Master Jun had secretly arrived, and taken away the fruit... right from under her nose. He had been drooling over that Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit. So, he took it and placed it into the Hong Jun Pagoda.

It couldn't be kept outside. Even the Xuan Jade Box might not have been able to hold it for a long period of time. But, it would never rot inside the Pagoda.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had a huge advantage when it came to the matter of exploiting the fruit.

[I'm very sorry little girl, but I had no choice but to borrow this thing. It's a very useful thing, but it's a pity that its usefulness wouldn't be exploited in your hands. This thing is truly a divine

object... and, not only in name at that!]

[It's a pity that I was left without a choice when it came to taking this away from you. But, I did it to avoid a huge calamity. And, it could also be said that I'm helping you. That's right! This fruit is amazing, but the wrong dosage will make your body explode! I have put it away from your reach, and I've saved several of your people's lives as a result! This elder brother is a great person! So, you needn't thank me! I only did this 'good deed' for the sake of it!]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt himself to be a righteous philanthropist at heart. He didn't feel that he had stolen a treasure. In fact, the Young Master Jun felt that he was actually saving countless lives... as if he was as benevolent as Buddha. He even wondered how a person as fine as him could be born into this world...

However, this obviously wasn't the right time for the 'living embodiment of Buddha' to appear in the open since he wasn't sure how she would feel about him taking the Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit. In fact, he was worried that she might shred him to pieces in this precarious situation...

"Come out!"

She could neither see... nor hear anyone as she looked around. It was obvious that whoever had stolen Tian Fa's treasure from her would have some tricks up their sleeves. Moreover, he had to be courageous to make such a bold move.

The Snake Xuan King looked around in a flustered and angry manner. She then suddenly let out a severe roar. And, it was as frightening as a thunderclap! She had shouted from the big tree she had stood on. But, her shout was so powerful that trees for miles around — in all directions — toppled over.

The shocking effect of the courage, ability, and skill of the Young Master Jun's actions on the Snake King's psyche... couldn't be described in mere words. In fact, it was so lifelike that even the usage of movie-like special-effects wouldn't be enough to portray it



properly. But, that woman genuinely deserved to be called a ‘Xuan Beast King’! No one else’s shout could’ve had such an effect. In fact, one wouldn’t be able to find someone like her... even if they chose one horseman for each of the four directions, and sent them off in search of another individual like her. No other individual could shout like this... even if they screamed to the extent of damaging their vocal chords!

# Chapter 341: Tian Fa's Millions Depend on the Success or Failure of One Person!

---

"You dare to come here and steal our treasures? You've courted your death! I'll chase you to the ends of Tian Fa, and kill you!" There was still no reply. And, this had made the Xuan Beast King — who was chief of all the poisonous beasts — extremely mad.

[Two generations of Lords had wished for it for hundreds of years. Millions of Xuan Beasts had labored for three-hundred-and-fifty years to grow this. Many of my brothers and sisters had been anxiously waiting for hundreds of years for this fruit. Could it be that I've lost it?]

[This isn't good! I'd rather die than allow this to happen!]

The Xuan Snake King — Green Hunter — was losing it due to the anger. Her beautiful eyes had turned a miserable shade of green. And, her green clothes had started to flutter even though there was no wind. She then looked up, and let out a world-shaking hiss. The Xuan Beast King had brandished her jade-like arms, and had released the entirety of her strength; she hadn't held back even a bit.

This was the full strength of that generation's Xuan Snake King.

The target of that unleashed strength was a circumference of over three-hundred meters with her at the center. And, no living creature could avoid it if they were within those limits.

"BANG!"

This attack was no different than an atom bomb's explosion in magnitude. And, the dark night was suddenly covered with a slowly rising mushroom-like cloud.

It seemed as if this explosion had shaken the entire night-scene. In fact, it seemed as if a slumbering demon had just opened his eyes! It seemed like a huge black whole had appeared to engulf

everything in this space.

Meanwhile, the Xuan Beasts — near and far — trembled and hissed as her furious roar travelled into the distance.

The entire Tian Fa forest was suddenly set into movement. The flying beasts quickly rushed over. And, the Tian Fa forest started to resemble a giant creature that had just woken up from its slumber.

An incomparable burst of vitality and tremendous strength had burst out in a short moment!

Then, two other roars emanated in unison. And, they seemed to be in-support of the Xuan Snake King. The roars hadn't yet died-down when Long Crane and Big Bear arrived besides the Xuan Beast King, Green Hunter. The three stood together in a tripod formation. Each of their faces appeared dignified.

A rare beast's footprints could be seen in a secluded nook of the Tian Fa forest. A thick white substance floated in the air like a dense mist would've. And, that white fog had enshrouded a humanoid entity in its midst. The mist was so thick that it almost seemed solid. Any knowledgeable individual would've been gob-smacked to witness this sight.

It was unexpectedly...

The heaven's spirit was being used to move the earth!

The level of this individual's Xuan cultivation was very deep. In fact, this level of cultivation had already reached the peak as per the common beliefs in the Xuan Xuan continent. In fact, no more than ten individuals would possess such power even if the secretive families and the three Holy Lands were taken into account...

The white mist had started to revolve with increasing urgency. And, it had soon taken the shape of a whirlwind. A "xiu" "xiu" sound was being emitted from time to time from this whirlwind. This individual had obviously reached a critical juncture in his

practice.

The wild hiss of the Snake King Green Hunter was full of terror, anger and worry. And, her wrathful scream had travelled a long distance to reach this place. Therefore, it had sounded very faintly in this area. However, the sound had still managed to retain its meaning.

And, the message in this sound hit this individual shrouded in the white mist like thunder from the clear sky... to speak the least of it...

The mist was somewhat shaken by this. Moreover, the mist's speed of rotation was also affected by this, and gradually became slower. In fact, it was somewhat scattered. This Snake King had unleashed this hiss with the entirety of her strength. Moreover, her voice was mournful and full of hate. So, anyone could understand that this lengthy roar was full of inexhaustible sorrow and despair.

"Aaah!" scarlet blood sprayed out from inside the white mist. And, the area that was shrouded in white mist was suddenly dyed red by the blood. The white mist that had nearly reached a state of congealment had suddenly been ruined in its entirety...

Sharp breathing sounds were heard from the dense white fog as it started to dilute. A long time passed before the exhausted voice of an individual was heard. And, this infinitely dismal voice said, "This is the will of the heaven... the will of the heavens has played with us... that's all..."

Then, the voice made a few coughing sounds. And, it seemed as if its owner had become weaker in health as he murmured, "The old Lord of Tian Fa had left a few lines behind at that time — 'Tian Fa won't find what it seeks. The Beast Kings will die. The Tian Fa's million will depend of the success of failure of one person'! I've been thinking over the meaning of these sentences for hundreds of years, but I still hadn't been able to solve them. However, I

understand their true meaning today. These words had predicted the fate of the Tian Fa forest! Ha ha... that was completely unexpected..."

"The first part said... Tian Fa won't get what it seeks. Green Hunter was guarding the Sacred Fruit. So, I presume that something bad has happened. Why else would she lose her mind like this? The second part said... the Beast Kings will die. I presume that this line foretells our deaths. The final part said... Tian Fa's millions will depend on the success or failure of one person. I presume that this part speaks of the man who stole Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit!"

"This person has stolen the Sacred Fruit at a time when the world's Xuan experts are amassing outside Tian Fa to attack us! Moreover, I was on the verge of making a breakthrough, and had wished to suppress the surge of strength in order for the breakthrough at such a critical junction. Therefore, I wasn't to be disturbed even a bit at this moment. I would've then met that Li Jue Tian head-on. But, I wasn't to be alarmed in any manner at this critical moment. But, that scream of Green Hunter had publicly declared the theft of our Sacred Treasure. Our precious treasure had been lost... so, how could I have felt at ease? This alarm boiled my blood. And so, I was unable to continue with the final step I had so meticulously prepared for. Perhaps I will never have a breakthrough now! Ah! So, that's what the dying old Lord of Tian Fa had forecasted... okay... okay... However, I won't allow that Li Jue Tian to have an easy time either!"

The voice of that individual became softer, and reached such a low... that it was nothing more than a mere whisper. But, the flavor of resentment in his voice was extremely intense, and had even become stronger with the passage of his speech...

[Li Jue Tian! This your fault! I will kill you for sure!]

"What happened, ninth younger sister?" Long Crane asked with a sense of urgency, "What has made you this mad?"

The Snake Xuan King's face was pale; her lips trembled as she turned around. She was shook all over, and two tear drops left her eyes. Then, she spoke-up, and it seemed that she was choking with emotion, "Third Elder Brother, Fourth Elder Brother... the Sacred Fruit... it had matured... but just when it did... it was stolen..."

Even the Snake Xuan King couldn't endure such a heavy blow. She felt infinite despair. So, she started crying bitterly after she saw that Long Crane and Big Bear had rushed forth to assist her...

Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit had been related to the forest for hundreds of years, and would've had positive effect upon it for many more in the future. So, it was obviously an object of great importance. And, this obviously meant that they couldn't mess up in the regard. Therefore, the Snake Xuan King had been assigned to take care of it. But, the powerful enemy had waited till that critical juncture, and had stolen the fruit from her hands...

Long Crane and Big Bear were dumbstruck. They looked to the heavens for a good while. Then, they turned their gaze to the Snake King, "What? The Sacred Fruit was stolen? How's this possible? How did it even happen...?"

"It's true..." Green Hunter hadn't acted with the elegance of a Xuan Beast King this entire time. She couldn't help but reveal her feelings, and how depressed she felt with this matter on her mind. In fact, she spoke of the entire sequence of incidents in breaks...

"Did you set up a proper perimeter? Has there been any news of the thief?" Long Crane asked in a sinking voice.

"I did set the perimeter... it is intact... every place... without exception... everything's normal... but Third Brother... the Sacred Fruit... it disappeared without a trace..." Green Hunter started to weep again.

"Don't worry! It's true that the Sacred Fruit has been stolen post its maturity. But, our hundreds of years of work hasn't been wasted yet. We still have a chance to get it back! The fact that this

person was able to come here, and steal the Sacred Fruit without setting-off any alarms at the perimeter explains two things. The first is that this individual is far stronger than us. We would've been able to spot that person if it weren't so. Therefore, there are no doubts about their capability. We have to accept this as a fact. The stronger are always likely to prevail. So, would it have been easy for you to handle him on your own? And the second point is that that person hasn't escaped after stealing the Sacred Fruit. So, they mustn't be very far from here. And, searching carefully will help us. But, this incident has already taken place. So, there's no use worrying about. We just need to focus on solving this problem!"

No one would've thought that it would be the Bear King who'd manage to calm in such a situation. In fact, he was even focused and tactful with his approach. This was completely unexpected!

[A wise man can make mistakes when he makes a thousand decisions. And, even a fool can counsel the wise at times! Those were very wise words.] Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but praise. [That stupid bear has a streak of intelligence. This is a rare sight!]

The Bear King's words were genuinely reasonable. The Snake King and the Crane King looked on with shining eyes. They felt that those words were very rational.

Long Crane nodded, and silently looked up. Then, he let out a loud screech. And, his screech pierced through the air as he uttered a few strange syllables. Then, the 'scout' aerial beasts in Tian Fa flapped their wings in unison. And, they moved towards the three Beast Kings in orderly formations. It seemed that all of them were crowding around the area.

Then, Big Bear also roared, and the terrestrial Xuan Beasts — including those on the trees — started to arrive in a dignified manner.

The Snake King also issued an order, and the poisonous Xuan

Beasts come over...

Soon, the aerial, the terrestrial and the poisonous Xuan Beasts — the three types of them — had come over to that place. A million of them would crowd around the thief, and would prevent his escape if he was present in that area. In fact, this crowd would squeeze him to death even if he tried to cram in.

The land and the sky in that area was so densely packed by now... that it had become similar to an iron bucket. Even water would need the Xuan Beasts' permission to flow out of it... it would otherwise remain stuck there...

Every nook and cranny on the ground, the sky, and even the area underground had been densely packed with the three types of Xuan Beasts due to this move. In fact, the underground terrain was so densely packed with poisonous snakes and insects that... even the rainwater would have a hard time in seeping down to the earth...

[How many Xuan Beasts must've gathered here to create this effect? Jun Mo Xie felt his head go numb. He gazed into the distance, and felt that he was stuck in an endless ocean of Xuan Beasts.

The Beasts wouldn't even need to attack if they were to find the thief. Their saliva alone would be enough to drown him...

This kind of manpower in a search-mission could even find a needle in this vast forest... let alone a living individual.

The Tiger King, the Lion King, the Monkey king, the Eagle King, and the youngest — the Wolf King; all came rushing over at this moment. Each one of them had a dignified expression since they knew what had happened. Their arrival resulted in more Xuan Beasts being added to this perimeter.

And, many more Xuan Beasts were charging-in from the distance!



# Chapter 342: The Mysterious Master Shows Up, and Has Some Other Plans

---

The Snake King felt very guilty. She looked at everyone with an expression of regret. In fact, her expression was almost that of shame...

"Search everything carefully! Check every blade of grass, and every tree's nook! Do it even if it seems like a waste of time!" Long Crane raised his hand as he issued this command. His voice was stern, and his eyebrows were raised as if he was in a murderous mood, "There are eight of us here. So, we'll each be responsible for one particular direction. We must pay attention to each other's actions, and co-ordinate accordingly. The beasts of level nine and above must prepare themselves for a fight. We mustn't allow that man to escape if he's present here. Be warned that this man is extremely capable and skilled. So, anyone who discovers anything unusual must first issue a warning signal!"

The Xuan Beast Kings agreed in response. They had crazed expressions in their eyes. They had been waiting for the Tian Fa's Scared Fruit for hundreds of years. And, it had been stolen just like that...? Who here wouldn't be mad?

The Xuan Beast Kings were on the verge of setting into action...

When suddenly...

An extremely terrifying and earth-shattering pressure descended from the heavens with a loud "Bang!". It seemed as if the nine heavens had exerted their pressure on Tian Fa from the sky above. In fact, this pressure pressed so heavily on their heads... that one could reach out with their hand, and touch the heavens if they were close by!

This power was immense, magnificent and formidable. It felt like a lofty mountain had descended down upon them. Big Bear and the

other Xuan Beast Kings felt that they couldn't ever resist such a thing. In fact, this feeling had arisen from the bottom of their hearts. Therefore, they couldn't help turning pale with fear and shock.

The Xuan Beast Kings' cultivation still fared decent against this pressure. However, the beasts below their cultivation level slunk down on the ground in one movement. They then neatly lowered their heads to the ground, and didn't dare to make any movements! The Level Nine Xuan Beasts could barely stand on their feet. However, their bodies — including their legs — trembled. And, it was evident that they didn't have any fighting spirit left in them.

This scene was similar to one when an ordinary person would come face-to-face with a lofty God. This Great God could easily manipulate that person's life in the palm of his hand once he had appeared. So, the said-person had submitted to him, and had allowed the God to amuse himself to his desire...

Perhaps that said-person was marvelous, and might even be a royal by blood. And, perhaps he possessed overwhelming and superhuman power, and could control many people in his territory. But, it didn't matter how frightening... or marvelous... or grand he was! He would still be an ordinary mortal in front of this lofty God! Therefore, the difference between them would be such... that he would never be able to resist the God's influence!

The eight Xuan Beast Kings felt the same thing in their hearts. [The entirety of Tian Fa's strength won't be able to retrieve the Sacred Fruit if this person has taken it!]

No one had heard this person's voice. Nor had anyone seen this individual as of yet... However, this thought had already crossed the minds of every Xuan Beast King...

[This man seems to be more frightening than the heavens! He's like a God! We will die if we are rash enough to challenge him!]

The eight Xuan Beast Kings struggled, and raised their heads to look into the air. However, only they had the courage to do so...

A black figure was suspended in the air. He was clothed in black. His face... and even his feet were covered with a black cloth. However, he appeared as steady as a formidable mountain as he hovered midair. It was night time, and the man was completely garbed in black. But, it still seemed like an extremely bright sun had set forth its unending rays! This figure seemed so dazzling that one simply couldn't look at it directly!

It was only Long Crane and Big Bear who felt a familiar feeling in their hearts...

[Is it him?]

"That fruit was mine. So, I have taken it," the mysterious man announced in an elderly, sonorous, and clear voice. The tenor of his voice was enough to tell of the undeniable authority he possessed. One could discern from his voice that he thought in the following manner; [this is my world. And so, I will take whatever I so desire. This is the natural course of things.]

However, the mysterious person also explained his words, "Because this heavenly material will be too great a waste in your hands." He then let out a mournful sigh, and this sorrowful sigh lasted for ages. Then, he said, "The mere wastage of this material wouldn't have been an issue on its own. The eight of you are at an advance stage, but none of you can safely consume this spiritual fruit's essence and efficacy. I fear that each one of you will explode and die if you do go ahead, and try to absorb its efficacy. There will be no exceptions to this outcome!"

Then, he snorted in a dignified and cold manner, "It would be reckless for anyone to try and take this fruit with such a low cultivation. Such an individual must've become tired of living by then. So, such an individual might as well take a knife to his throat, and slash it if they don't wish to live-on. But, why should

such a worthwhile spiritual treasure be wasted?"

The eight Xuan Beast Kings looked at each other in dismay after they listened to those words. There were many wild and untamed hearts present amongst them. They knew that the opposite party's strength was a mystery, and they wouldn't be able to match him. However, they also knew the benefits of the Sacred Fruit. So, how could they be convinced of that one-sided story? Therefore, a bewildered clamor rose in response...

This was especially true for the Snake King. Her beautiful eyes were shooting flames, and her fists were clenched. It seemed that she was about set into action...

"Sire... did we have the pleasure of meeting you in the Tian Xiang City as well?" Long Crane waved his hand to suppress the rising revolts from his younger siblings as he asked his question in a very cautious tone. He seemed rather uncertain, and couldn't help but wonder, [this feeling is very familiar. But, this person is still giving a very different feeling. It feels that this person is far superior to the one we brothers met in Tian Xiang City. In fact, he seems far more powerful!]

Big Bear had the same apprehensions. The two brothers had somewhat realized who this individual was, but they weren't fully convinced yet...

[Could it be that the mysterious and masked person was able to make such a tremendous breakthrough in just two months? This is a very frightening speed of progress! Isn't this just too freakish?]

However, they were completely unaware that Jun Mo Xie had only revealed a small subset of his real ability when they had met in the Tian Xiang City. In other words, he had only set-off a small portion of the Hong Jun Pagoda's real aura field. However, his ability and control had increased since then. Moreover, this object was far more precious. Therefore, he'd need to create a stronger and overwhelming deterrent effect if he wanted to win this fruit

over. Thus, the Young Master Jun hadn't held back one bit, and had unleashed the Hong Jun Pagoda's aura field to the maximum potential he could achieve at his current level of strength!

The end-result wasn't very different in this case either. However, there was still a world of difference in the force he had mobilized. How could these two instances be mentioned in the same breath...?

Jun Mo Xie had showed himself for two reasons. The first was to follow his original plan. The second was the extremely distraught appearance of the Xuan Beast Kings he had gotten to see; he couldn't bear that sight. After all, how many of them must've cultivated this plant for hundreds of years? He couldn't fathom the effort and the labor which had gone into growing it. [How many generations were spent to successfully bring this plant to fruition?]

[Would it be fitting if I were to take it for myself? I should only take a small part of it. Perhaps half of it...] Jun Mo Xie had a clear conscience in this regard. However, he wasn't going to act despicable when it came to the other half of it. Jun Mo Xie wasn't going to allow the generations' worth of hard work of those beasts, and the labors of millions go to waste...

These straightforward Xuan Beasts were much better and amiable than humanity in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. Therefore, he would obviously wish to help them if he could. [How can I just look on as these high-level beasts explode to their deaths?]

[It doesn't matter what happens to my future plans or the other goals I have... It'll be a huge pity if these beasts die. It doesn't matter if I use them or not. I will do this for good karma, and because this is the right thing to do... even if I don't use these guys in the future.]

It was important to note that every person wanted to meet such a master, but couldn't. Therefore, it was obviously important to illustrate this situation in an ideal manner. And, this pretense was an optimal means to do so.

"Long Crane, Big Bear... hehe... your acts have genuinely surprised this Old Man!" Jun Mo Xie sighed like an old and decrepit man, "This Old Man didn't wish to involve himself in dealing with a matter as trivial as the Xue Hun Manor. So, I gave it to the two of you... he he... it was such a simple task. However, engaging the two of you has turned into a 'Xuan Beast Uprising' beyond all expectations; this is quite unreasonable. But, the issue still remains unresolved. Moreover, half of the world's Xuan experts have gathered here..."

"This is your business, and this Old Man has no relation with it. It had to happen, and so it happened. But, this Old Man is quite curious. When did Tian Fa's strength become so weak? This Old Man remembers that we had agreed upon a deadline. It was one month, wasn't it? Since when did one month become seventy days long in Tian Fa?"

"It really is you, Old Sire..." Long Crane and Big Bear recognized him, and burst out together. They suddenly breathed easy. But, they were also flushed with anger and shame. Their faces were hot with embarrassment. In fact, they would dig a hole and hide in it if they could...

[This is very embarrassing! This person hasn't given us any room to save our reputation in the public...]

And, as for the reasons for breathing easy...

It was rather simple. [How could such a mysterious and capable master steal something like a common thief? He presumably has some deeper reasons that we can't understand. In any case, we are certain that we won't suffer any disadvantages in this matter...]

They knew that this mysterious master was accustomed to using such methods in every encounter. They knew that his man practiced his forte of lies and deceit with an "unscrupulous, shameless, and faithless" policy at will. He would break things, hit things and what not... he would take advantage of a situation for

personal gain with ease. In fact, this man's mastery in this art was so profound that it almost came to him naturally...

And, they had guessed this right. One would rarely find any trace of conscience in the Young Master Jun...

"We're ashamed, Esteemed Sire. But, you mustn't blame us brother for this. We genuinely went over to that Xue Hun Manor. But, Li Jue Tian isn't a good man. And, he has united half the continent's Xuan experts against us. So, we were left without any other option. And, we then organized this uprising with the entirety of Tian Fa's strength. In fact, we discounted any cost or effort we may incur to complete your task. We made you a promise. So, we have decided that we would accomplish this goal even if it was very difficult. After all, the Esteemed Individual has given us a task. So, we've been going 'all-out' to finish it."

Long Crane looked at him, and hurriedly explained in his defense.

The true meaning behind his words was rather obvious — [we've gathered such a huge force here. And, we've done it just for your task. How can you disregard that? You mustn't side with the humans to deal with us now. You can't act against us now. We did all this for your task, and assembled such a large force to complete it. We've made so many efforts for you alone. But, you are such a unique and exceptional individual... so, we can't say this openly. However, we feel hurt...]

"Ah... the reason why I had given that task to the two of you is because my identity is too important to deal with the Xue Hun Manor. Wouldn't it be too excessive for Li Jue Tian's status if I went and bullied them myself? Was this not clear to the two of you until now? The two of you knew enough to gather such a large force, but you still hadn't realized something this elementary about my assignment?"

Jun Mo Xie's belly had started to cramp. But, his tone was still

steady and stable. Though, it conveyed an meaning of regret...



# Chapter 343: Whoever Believes in Me Will Live Forever

---

"Yes, it's about your status? That... you are so tough that it'll be humiliating to deal with him... you'll be bullying Li Jue Tian if you act... because that man is a real bastard. So, you can't do it yourself, and you'll lose your dignity if you do so..." Big Bear drew his thick lips as he spoke this in a fluent manner.

[This has been going on for so long that this mysterious man has also come down south. The original agreement stands voided at this time.] However, there was a faint hint in the man's voice, and it suggested that he would like them to continue. This made their hearts fill with joy. And, they were ready to follow instructions without delay.

[This mysterious man is giving us another opportunity! Doesn't this mean that we have a chance to do what we planned? This is great! Yes!]

It was just that Li Jue Tian was the Second Greatest Master, and someone like Big Bear wasn't even worth a fart to him. In fact, this comparison was an exaggeration...

"Ah, so...?" Jun Mo Xie muttered to himself.

"...And so, we're here to do you bidding." Long Crane and Big Bear's mouths hardly moved as they got up and thumped their chests. They seemed to be rearing to start with the task.

"Ah... if that's the case... good... ah!" Jun Mo Xie sighed like an old man. The tone of his voice was one of waning interest, and one of loneliness. He spoke in a desolate voice, "This old man is in no mood to deal with that young Li Jue Tian..."

"We're glad that you don't have any interest in handling this matter. But, you can feel at ease. We brothers will complete the task in a satisfactory manner for you," Big Bear clapped his hands

and responded sharply.

Long Crane had a thought; ["That Young Li Jue Tian..." Good God! This man's manner of speaking is much more mature from the time we met him in Tian Xiang!]

"This... it doesn't matter what the Esteemed Sire is interested or not interested in... the Sacred Fruit is my Tian Fa's property." The Snake King looked worried as she took a step forward and spoke, "This youngster was instructed to guard the Sacred Fruit. But, the fruit was taken from this youngster, and this will be considered as a fault on my part. Therefore, I request that you return the fruit. I will never be grateful enough if you do so, and I will never dare forget this gesture."

The Snake King Green Hunter's manner of speech was neither servile, nor overbearing. In fact, it was according to propriety. Jun Mo Xie was genuinely impressed by this... contrary to what one might expect. It was just that... would the Young Master Jun's character ever allow him to give away a good thing he had already gotten his hands on...?

"Oh? This energetic little girl is talking so sharply that it seems as if she's scolding me. Is that so, little girl?" Jun Mo Xie was employing his evil intentions with those words. His voice had sunk. But, it still had incomparably frightful and tyrannical power in its make. First, he would try to threaten with his prestige, and intimidate the opposite party. And then, he would try to frighten even further... just in case it was required.

Green Hunter's expression was of a person who had just witnessed a formidable mountain. She groaned in a depressed manner, and took three steps back. Yet, she strove to stand her ground... even though her face was somewhat pale. She stubbornly raised her head and spoke, "It's this youngster's responsibility. I can't abandon this at any cost. The senior seems to be offended by Green Hunter's ignorance, and wishes to teach her a lesson. But, Green Hunter only requests him to return the Sacred Fruit to her...

even if he does punish her later for her insolence..."

Long Crane was anxious. Green Hunter had actually offended the mysterious and skilled man. The retrieval of the Sacred Fruit was a trivial matter. However, the mysterious man could easily decide her little fate if he got angry, and raised his hand thereafter. Therefore, Long Crane had no choice but to hurriedly interject, "Please calm down, Esteemed Sire. Green Hunter is young and ignorant. She's only anxious about the fruit. She doesn't mean to offend... please ignore her remarks."

"What Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit? Why are you confusing the names?" Jun Mo Xie continued evilly, "This is obviously the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit! Don't talk nonsense if you don't understand things! Do as you may, little girl! You eight little Xuan Beasts think that you're very strong. But, I'm telling you clearly that you're not! You won't be able to handle the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit! One drop from this fruit will overcome you! None of you will be able to handle it... no matter who it is! This Old Man has revealed himself, and has done this deed out of kindness! Are you unable to tell the good from the bad? Don't tell me that this little girl doesn't recognize this Old Man's magnanimity, and is actually haggling with me...?"

[Second step. Lay it out. If this doesn't convince her, then...]

"Then, to explode and die... would be this youngster's fate," The Snake King was being stubborn. She opened her delicate and small white hand. She was hell bent on her course. And, she was consistently ignoring Long Crane and Big Bear's strong gazes, and meaningful glances.

[You're saying that we Third and the Fourth brother shouldn't be anxious? Our job is to only assist the rest of you in advancing with the use of the Sacred Fruit. But, the side-effects of the fruit are very dangerous. So, it would be excellent if we had another method. And, this mysterious person before us seems to have a better method!]

[Therefore, it'll be great if we can form better relations with the masked person in lieu of the fruit. The profit will be much higher than the losses suffered. Yet, Green Hunter is speaking her heart, and is making a complete mess out of things. The Sacred Fruit is already in his hand. And, it's obvious that he's far stronger than us. So, how can you even do this? It's not like this old man will just leave without causing a problem. It would be great if he does so! But, what if he gets mad? He can get rid of us very easily! So, why are you provoking him with your words?]

"Ah! This little girl's words are reasonable in this regard! This Old Man has taken your fruit. He did it with good intentions, but he has still taken your fruit. And, that is indeed unreasonable of him. But, it'll be a waste of resources if I let your presumptuous self consume it. Moreover, it'll be hard to avoid the threat to your life. This means we have been brought together by fate. This Old Man plans to use this fruit to refine medicine. And, he will do it right!"

It seemed that Jun Mo Xie had a pained expression on his face. In fact, it nearly seemed that he had suddenly gained weight, "This Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit is important for this Old Man in refining his medicines. And, you need this fruit for nothing more than making a breakthrough. Therefore, this Old Man will finish refining the pills, and will give you several of them. You can then rejoice, and make a non-frightening, and non-dangerous breakthrough. So...? What do you think about this? The eight of you are anyway on the verge of exploding to your deaths. So, what do you have to say about a non-frightening, and non-dangerous method where there's no fear of death?"

This was the third and the final step. Jun Mo Xie would run out of all possible means if she wasn't convinced after this. Jun Mo Xie had a mean cunningness to him... but, he would have no choice but to leave in stealth if this didn't work...

However, his words made the eyes of the Xuan Beast Kings

present shine almost instantly. In fact, it also left the Snake King to hesitate. Her Third Brother Crane and Fourth Brother Bear were continuously staring at her. They were urging in their heart; [just hurry up and agree to this, younger sister Green Hunter!]

Every Xuan Beast King present was well aware that there was a high chance of succumbing to death due to the fruit's side-effect. They would be telling a complete lie if they said that they weren't afraid or nervous of this possibility. But, they had decided to take the risk for increased strength, and a longer life span...

However, they could now avoid this frightening and dangerous method, and could advance in a smooth and settled way if they wished it. How could they not be excited?

None of the Xuan Beast Kings would've believed these words if an ordinary person had spoken them. They would've thought... [You damned cheat! This kind of nonsense is merely a case of swindling by a crafty cheat! You think we can be swindled? You must be dreaming!]

But, who was this person before them?

[This is a very able person! His cultivation is even higher than our Lord's! And, Third and Fourth have confirmed that he can easily help us advance!]

[Moreover, there is another undeniable and shocking proof... even if Third Brother Crane and Fourth Brother Bear's testimony is unreliable or questionable! That Iron Winged Panther's cub has made it to Level Eight at such a young age! This obliterates any doubt that this man has as some miraculous and devilish methods!]

Therefore, the Xuan Beast Kings looked at the Snake King. And, Green Hunter was left to fidget in her state of dilemma.

"How about this...? You may be anxious, but do you even mistrust Long Crane and Big Bear? They can vouch for me! They thoroughly understand this Old Man. So, how about it? He he...

fanciful little girl! Wouldn't Long Crane and Big Bear wish to protect me, and vouch for my authenticity? I'll even refine one for you!"

The Young Master Jun had spoken this in the manner of an old person. He then turned to look for the Crane and the Bear Kings. He then opened his eyes in order to look for their support.

"We will vouch for him. Will you distrust us, Ninth Younger Sister?" Big Bear opened his mouth, and spoke as he took the initiative.

Long Crane was relatively cautious from the beginning. He felt something was wrong since the mysterious experts had taken the initiative to start this dialogue. But, he thought that he was merely imagining things. So, he kept quiet. [Some hope is better than no hope...]

"Agreed, then... how much time will the Senior take to refine the dans?" The Snake King hesitated for a moment since she felt embarrassed. She then bit her red lips, and asked in an awkward manner.

[Damn! She's a heartbreaker! She looked so appealing with that 'lip biting'!] Jun Mo Xie groaned inside. His mind had started to run-off by the time he hastily stabled it. Then, he extended three fingers to indicate a time of three years, "I can finish this in three years... including finding the necessary ingredients."

He was in the middle of speaking this when he suddenly thought of something. So, he searched around in his clothes, and said, "This Old Man won't take you youngsters' possessions in a cheap manner. I had said earlier... that we've been brought together by fate. So, I will help you somewhat. There's some medicine inside this bottle. I've been practicing and trifling with below-quality materials. So, taking these medicines will only increase your cultivation by ten years. Ah! I wish I had better ingredients. These things would've been more effective in that case..."

He took out eight dans as he spoke, and threw them high in the sky. There weren't many there. There was one for each individual. That is... one for each Beast King.

The Lion King and Tiger King showed signs apprehension since they didn't know if they could trust this man enough to take those dans...

However, Big Bear had no apprehensions whatsoever. So, he extended his neck, and consumed the dan. Then, he moved his aura around his body, and became startled. He then called out, "Huh?!"

He had cycled his aura thrice inside his body. And, he had already absorbed the efficacy from the dan. Big Bear was already a top-level expert. In fact, his body was extremely powerful, and no humans could compare to him. So, he could obviously verify the result. He felt startled, and pleased by the result. So, called out, "This dan can genuinely raise your strength! Ah! It has raised my cultivation by ten years at least! This is a heavenly medicine!"

Long Crane also got impatient after he looked at his younger brother, and ingested a dan himself. He was then left to seem pleasantly surprised...

Everyone looked at Long Crane and Big Bear, and figured that this wasn't a scam. So, the remaining Xuan Beast Kings looked at each, and then consumed their dans. And, they suddenly stood erect the next moment. Then, they all looked at Jun Mo Xie in unison... their eyes were fervent.

[Good God! This world actually has a miraculous dan that can increase one's cultivation like this! It really exists!]

[My God! This doesn't even have any side effect!] Each and every Xuan Beast King's eyes had become even more fervent upon this realization.

[He's such a skilled person!]

[Now I'm convinced that this mysterious person is extremely skilled, and can refine those dans from the Sacred Fruit!]

[What did this senior say earlier? "I've been practicing and trifling with below-quality materials. So, taking these medicines will only increase your cultivation by ten years. Ah! I wish I had better ingredients. These medicines would've been even more effective in that case." Good God! What kind of dans will he be able to refine if his dans from below-quality materials have such an effect?!]

[The facts have been laid out now. What's there to be uncertain about? This is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity! We don't have to make a life or death decision to advance anymore. This is such a great thing! It wasn't even this good in our dreams!]

Jun Mo Xie's cloak fluttered as he floated in the air. He put his hand behind his back, and stylishly floated-up like the world's top-most expert of this era...

[Humph! Whoever believes in me will live forever!]

[I've finally gained control of these foolish beings!]



# Chapter 344: Bumper Harvest!

---

Jun Mo Xie sighed with relief. But, his mouth twisted as he implored. [I will be able to cross the sixth or seventh layer in three years. But, I've showed a bold face and made claims to finish their task in a time period of three years...]

"Oh yes, there's another thing which I had almost forgotten about." Jun Mo Xie put his hand behind his back in an eloquent manner, "I heard that there will be a decisive battle between you and the Southern Heaven City. Is this the case?"

"Yes. There's a battle. And, it's scheduled to take place day after tomorrow," Long Crane replied in an even more respectful tone than before.

"Ahem! Tian Xiang City's Jun Family and the Dugu Family have a somewhat special relationship with me. I hope that their people don't get hurt. It is a matter of honor for me." Jun Mo Xie had put this sudden request forth in special manner; it would seem to be a modest request if one were listening casually. But, one would realize that it was a direct command if they paid careful attention.

"That won't be a problem." Long Crane chuckled, "We had never intended to deal with them anyway." He thought for a moment, and took out a green bottle before he continued, "Sprinkle the powder from this bottle on the men from these families before they take to the battlefield. We will surely recognize them if we come across them on the battlefield if this powder is present on their body. And, we won't fight back even if they attack us."

"Thanks a lot for this." Jun Mo Xie smiled slightly. He showed neither happiness nor relief. The Young Master merely maintained a regular, mild, and easy appearance.

The Xuan Beasts suddenly saw a flourishing spectacle. The shadow of the mysterious man couldn't be seen in the sky for a moment. Then, he had returned to his original position a moment

later. The green bottle in Long Crane's hand had also disappeared at that exact moment.

[Such a magical move...!]

The Beast Kings had started to admire him even more.

He then considered the two objectives complete, and decided to return. But, Jun Mo Xie naturally spoke a few words before he left; for he feared that the Xuan Beasts might think that he'd go back on his word if he vanished abruptly...

However, he hadn't gotten far when he thought to himself; [the decisive battle takes place day after tomorrow. That's still a while away. But, I've stumbled upon this Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit here. How surprising! How many other miraculous treasures might I find in this place for ingredients? How could this Young Master forget the main reason he came to this place?]

An unbearable itch overtook his heart as this thought came to his mind.

He initiated the Yin-Yang escape. His body flashed, and he leapt deeper into the forest.

Within the forest...

"Third Elder Brother, Fourth Elder Brother, quickly tell me who that mysterious man is. And, how are you two so familiar with him? You vouched our Tian Fa to him without even batting an eyelid. And, you even guaranteed out our treasure...?"

The Snake King Green Hunter asked in a doubtful tone, "I understand that this person's power is unknown, and he's far more powerful than us. But, I wish to know why you were so eager in his presence? Could it be that you have that much faith in him? This fruit was the jewel of our forest... we had labored for over three-hundred years to procure this fruit!"

Everyone else also looked at Long Crane and Big Bear after they

heard this. Their heads were muddled to be honest. The Young Master Jun's alter-ego had displayed a tremendous strength. It could even be said that he was the strongest in the whole world. But, he was no threat to Tian Fa. Long Crane and Big Bear had talked about him before as well. However, the Xuan Beast Kings wouldn't have cowered and given way... even if Jun Mo Xie was difficult to deal with, and could kill each one of the Beast Kings...

Long Crane and Big Bear had a proud look on their faces. After all, their relation with this unrivalled master had provided their siblings a means to advance without any dangers of a backlash. Therefore, they had effectively done a great service to their Tian Fa.

All of them could advance. That too without any worries or fears! Therefore, their eyes were already full of the boundless prospects of the future...

[Something this good has never happened in the Tian Fa forest!]

[This event will create history!]

The two joyfully opened their mouth in order to show-off and speak a few words to display their superior personality. [Won't having such a wide circle of friends mean having superior personality?] But, they immediately shut their mouths after they opened them since they were struck by a realization...

[Yes ah! Who knows who this mysterious person is?] The two elder brothers of the Xuan Beast Kings only knew him as Feng Qing Yang. But, little did they know that this name wasn't real. As for who this person was... or where he lived and how he behaved...? These two didn't know what to say about any of that. In fact, the two Xuan Beast Kings hadn't discovered this most critical problem until this moment...

[My God!]

[The two of us have trusted someone we know nothing about

with such a big guarantee!]

[We were both so eager... and we did as was ordered!]

[But, how will us two brothers find him for getting the dans which will help everyone advance if we get no news and if there isn't any communication from him after three years...?]

[Consuming the sacred fruit did have a huge risk. One could explode from doing so. But, it's a sure method to increase one's strength! The no-risk and absolutely safe method did seem attractive, but it's only like a bread drawn on paper at present. It won't mean anything if we didn't get to eat it. I don't know how we'll find him if this deal falls through!]

They didn't know what to do after they thought it through clearly. The two Xuan Beast Kings looked at each other; they were at a loss as to what they could do...

The two had been caught unprepared.

The rest of the Xuan Beast Kings looked to the two for answers. But, the two weren't making things clear. In fact, the others could also see that their complexion wasn't good. So, they nervously asked, "What's the matter Third Brother, Fourth Brother? Why don't you speak? Why are you keeping these things hidden from your younger siblings...!?"

[Why? You think we wipe his uncle's...? You're asking us for answers, but who do we ask?]

[Damn! He won't betray us brothers, right?] The thoughts of both the brothers were getting increasingly muddled at that point.

Long Crane was depressed. He couldn't help but flip his eyeballs as he spoke-up, "Your anxiety isn't worth a fart! That man is a top-class expert with amazing cultivation. He may even be regarded as the strongest master ever born! Why would he diminish his reputation for a matter as trivial as taking away the sacred fruit from us? Anyway, do you think we could've resisted if he had

wanted to take it from us by force? You need to be patient if you want this benefit. Why are you in a rush? That master said that he'll finish our assignment in the next three years? What's three years for us Beast Kings? We can sleep for a period longer than that! Now, why don't you guys start acting like Beast Kings again? Go about your own business! We have a battle upcoming in two days' time!"

Big Bear hastily cut-in, "Exactly! Looking at your morose appearance is a pain in the ass! Hurry up and get lost! What are you waiting for? Just go! Raise your spirits! Not many enemies will be able to match you in the future!"

The other Xuan Beast Kings felt discontent and unhappy. They cursed in the secrecy of their hearts; [you looked morose yourself! You think you are the only ones who are allowed to feel that way? How can we not feel bad, huh?] Though, they could do nothing else after they looked at the serious expressions on their two brothers' faces. They then scattered, and went away. But, the prospect of that beautiful dream continued to linger in their hearts. [Ah, we'll make a safe and seamless breakthrough in three years!]

Long Crane had spoken the truth. Three years was nothing to these Xuan Beast Kings; it was a very short period of time in their eyes. They had extremely long life-spans. They weren't immortal. But, their lives were tenfold longer than those of an ordinary person. Perhaps much more than tenfold...!

[Three years' wait for advancement and longer life...! This is very profitable. It was like heavenly meat had fallen from the sky. Sure, there are some doubts, but this mysterious expert deserves complete trust. Moreover, he had displayed his amazing cultivation. Moreover, everyone experienced a 'ten year leap' in their cultivation by merely taking those dans of his'. Forget about eating or even seeing such a magical thing... no one has even heard of something like this before!]

[Those dans have increased our cultivation by ten years. That's simply against the natural order of things! Could anything be impossible for this mysterious man?]

Therefore, it was only natural that Long Crane and Big Bear didn't have any misgivings regarding the mysterious person. Moreover, Jun Mo Xie had never intended to renege on this deal either.

This was a chanced-upon opportunity for him, and would be good for him as well. Wouldn't they owe him a big favor if they all managed to advance through their bottlenecks safely? [Wouldn't that mean that I would acquire many powerful thugs for free?]

[Moreover, each one of them would be an apex-level warrior! Ah...]

The Young Master Jun felt free of worry... and pleasant with that treasure in his hand. His entire journey forward had been pleasant and full of surprises since he had left the Xuan Beast Kings...

[This Tian Fa forest isn't a fu\*king treasure in name only! This has gotten me very excited! I couldn't find any of these ingredients in Tian Xiang City. My efforts failed even when I had searched the entire place so painstakingly, and had exerted the entirety of my strength. But, I can find everything here en masse! No ingredient is rare here. I can find anything I want... as long as I look for it seriously. And, they aren't present in a small number either... their quantity here is huge!]

[And, it looks like no one has ever collected any of them!]

[This is great! This is really great!]

[There are so many ingredients for the Peak Level Nine Xuan Dans! Like Tri-Colored Spirit Mushroom, Heavenly Star Grass, Level Nine Xuan Root. I've already stumbled upon these three herbs. They are few of the rarest herbs of the age, and can't be easily found. In fact, I've actually found some Heavenly Star Grass!

This is only second to the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit! And, such a legendary grade medicine actually exists here in abundance!]

This had come as a huge surprise to him! He had seemingly got the ‘cherry pick’.

Jun Mo Xie felt warm inside. He continued to use the Yin Yang Escape as he went deeper into the forest. He saw many rare ingredients, and stored all of them inside the Hong Jun Pagoda. But, he hadn’t gone very far when he started to feel that something was off...!

This was because there were no traces of any Xuan Beasts in the area that lay in front of him. There were no birds in the sky. And, the ground was so clean that not an ant could be seen crawling on it. What was really unreasonable was that he couldn’t even feel half an earthworm inside the ground.

[This place is too silent and desolate!]

[Don’t tell me that there’s another Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit here?!]

Jun Mo Xie looked around at the flowers and trees. They were all lush. He circulated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven’s Fortune, and breathed the air in. It was fresh, and there was no hint of poison in it. Moreover, there was a spiritual influence at play there. And, it was surprisingly in abundance.

[This area is so vibrant. But, why isn’t there a single trace of any beast here...?]

[This is extremely strange!]

Jun Mo Xie carefully drifted forward a bit, and then walked inside. The trees and the flowers got increasingly lush. But, there was no sound of activity... same as before. The air too got increasingly fresh and pleasant.

Jun Mo Xie finally stopped the Yin Yang Escape, and showed

himself in the woods. He looked around as he walked forward, and then inhaled a lung-full of the comfortable air. There were bright purple and red colors all around him. It was late autumn. But, everything still seemed very lush in this vicinity. This place was seemingly unaffected by the seasons. The vegetation was still extremely lush...

It was extremely quite there. Then, Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt a subtle sensation. It was like his mind had grown fickle and impatient in this world. Everything had become quiet in the blink of an eye.

Everything was so quiet that it made one revel in the past. It made one's mind feel at ease, and made them feel like their souls had been cleansed...

The ground Jun Mo Xie had just stepped-on had a silky feel to it... like the grass of a meadow. It rustled softly as he moved forward. He felt like he was walking in dreamland. The myriads of problems that had clogged his mind disappeared, and he felt his mind going empty... like he was sleep-walking.

Jun Mo Xie walked as if he was unconscious. He then involuntarily walked over to a lone tree, and sat down beneath it. And, he did this with extremely gentle movements; as if he was afraid that making any noise would ruin the tranquility of his mind.

The young man remained seated very calmly. There was perplexity in his eyes as he brought a hand to his chin while he looked ahead. He couldn't see properly. It seemed as if the area was covered in mist... or he was drunk...

Hostilities had filled his soul for a long time. But, some of it had seemingly started to slip away from his body via a drip. He then had a mysterious feeling. Then, he felt disappointment... as if a butcher had laid down his knife. The Young Master then felt aloof... like he had transformed into a Buddha-like state of mind...



A small blossom revolved as it floated down from the tree. It silently fell down on his shoulders, but he didn't become aware of it because of the flurry he was in. There was a light breeze. And, the hair at the edge of his hairline started to sway gently...

It seemed like centuries had already passed. But, it also felt like all of this had happened in a brief moment...

"The flower bud swiftly falls on the lone man." Jun Mo Xie sighed slightly, and raised his head. He then shaded his eyes to look ahead at the picturesque scenery. He took a deep breath, "This is so beautiful that even a blood-soaked killer like me feels elated and detached in its seclusion!"

Jun Mo Xie reluctantly looked around at the surroundings. His mind opened up. He chuckled and spoke-up in self-mockery, "Staying in this serenity for merely one day can be life's greatest pleasure. But, such an elegant paradise isn't suitable for a killer like me."

His figure then floated up without touching the moist and soft grass underneath. Jun Mo Xie relished the soft breeze for a bit, and then suddenly rushed forward.

There was thick growth of trees ahead. In fact, there was no gap between them. They were maybe hundreds... or perhaps thousands of years old from the looks of it. They crowded together with no gap between two trees. In fact, it seemed as if they were growing on the same place. They were seemingly fencing something from the surrounding area, and had effectively formed an enclosure...

"How can someone reside in such a place?" Hit-man Jun was curious. But, he possessed the caution of an assassin. So, he initiated the Yin-Yang Escape, and entered it as light as a feather.

"My Heavens! What a beautiful place!" there was a small valley within those closely packed trees! There were no constructions in it, but it still had some natural and muddy hovels within. It

seemed as if this place had been made by the heavens. In fact, this place was extremely shocking and amazing!

A burst of faint and wonderful scent was coming from flowers hidden at a distance. This scent hit Jun Mo Xie's nose, and he couldn't help but eagerly stretch his neck to breathe it in. He suddenly felt a burst of extreme comfort, and his spirits rose up. He followed the scent, and hadn't gone far when he saw something. It made him want to shout out, and he eventually had to cover his mouth with his hand...

There was a massive and solid tree in front of him. It grew on gravel. However, the gravel was exuding three bright colors — gold, red and white. These three colors glittered so splendidly that they took Jun Mo Xie's breath away.

It appeared that the treasure — the Tri-Colored mushroom — grew there. Moreover, there weren't just seven or eight of them under that tree's trunk... several grew in every nook and cranny; they were practically growing there as if they were cabbage in a farm. And, one could also find many other rare herbs there...

[I'm not dreaming, right?]

Jun Mo Xie was suddenly overcome with a great sense of happiness. He had coveted this mushroom for a long time. He could rise to the third level, and refine the Cleansed Marrow Dan. He hadn't even found ten ingredients in Tiang Xiang City... despite his thorough search. But, he had collected even higher-level ingredients in merely one night's time after he had set foot inside this forest. Moreover... he had collected them en masse!

Jun Mo Xie was very depressed some time ago. He could've made a breakthrough. But, he didn't have the medicine which could supplement it. This had given him a huge headache. He had never thought that these things would line-up like 'cabbage in a farm' after he'd arrive at Tian Fa. But then, he had found this unfathomable and mysterious place!

[This is indeed inexplicably amazing! It's unknown how many rare and amazing treasures one could find in this vast Tian Fa Forest. This would tantamount to immense strength in the future!]

Jun Mo Xie went wild with joy and stepped forward. He then started to pluck those herbs as quickly as he could. The Young Master Jun picked a great number of them. But, he hesitated once only the last two trunks of that tree remained laden with this treasure. And, he eventually decided against it. [You can't make a living from hunting if you burn the forest! Too much of anything isn't a good thing either!] Jun Mo Xie wouldn't show a moment's hesitation when it came to destroying something right down to its root cause. However, the Young Master Jun inadvertently found himself abiding to 'appropriate behavior' inside this heavenly abode.

[Too much of anything is never a satisfactory thing either!]

Jun Mo Xie looked around, and was amazed to discover that a natural 'cultivation base' was somewhat concealed in the embrace of that tree. And, one could actually find every kind of precious ingredient in the underbrush...

[Is this the source of that spiritual influence?]

Jun Mo Xie felt apprehensive, and looked around with greater care.

One would find a cave if they took a detour from the trees. But, there were trees which leaned forward to cover the entrance of the cave. In fact, he was convinced that even wind and rain wouldn't be able to affect the area inside this cave. [This cave must be unusually dry!]

Then, the Young Master Jun heard an extremely faint sound from the mouth of the cave. [Don't tell me... someone actually lives here? But, my spirit sense had detected no abnormality in this area...?] Jun Mo Xie suddenly became alert. He quickly initiated the Yin Yang Escape, and floated inside the cave in a state of

invisibility...

He went forward, and took a look inside the cave. His mouth immediately opened a round "O" with astonishment.

Something he could've never anticipated had appeared before his eyes. He had thought that this place was extremely secretive. He had anticipated that even a bird wouldn't be able to come here. So, he had naturally assumed that this place would be the abode of some big boss! Or... that it was at least an abode of a Xuan Beast King in human form...

Only that kind of talent and strength would deserve such an environment.

However, what appeared in front of him was a bare room made-up of cold stone. In fact, there wasn't even a bed inside it. It was only worthy of being called a 'dump'. There was a black gown on the center of the floor. It laid there like discarded trash. In fact, it couldn't even be called a 'black gown' from Jun Mo Xie's standards. That thing was more like a massive piece of black cloth. He felt that even an elephant would look slender in that "gown." And, as far as a human was concerned... that cloth would cover any human in their entirety... even if the cloth had been folded a few times...

The black cloth had a small blood stain on it. It was unknown where it had picked that stain from. A barely-alive and tiny white animal was laying on top of that black cloth. Jun Mo Xie shot a quick glance towards this animal. That animal almost looked like Little White at first sight...

However, he looked more carefully, and realized that this little creature wasn't Little White. The beast in front of him was half the size of a person's arm. Its body was entirely white, and had no fur anywhere. But, that white creature gave-off a very comfortable feeling, and looked very elegant as well...

The frail thing looked at Jun Mo Xie as he appeared in front of it.

However, its eyes didn't display a single trace of fear. It merely turned to look at him with eyes that were filled with tranquility, clarity, and even an indescribable sense of arrogance...

Then, the tiny creature seemed to have resigned to something, and lowered its head. It had suddenly gone so quiet that it seemed as if life and death had no meaning in its eyes anymore. However, that small body was curled-up so helplessly in that black gown that the sight of it could evoke a strong feeling of tenderness in one's heart.

Jun Mo Xie held nothing against animals. But, his temperament had never been of a man who'd be fond of pets. He didn't exactly like or dislike Little White. But, he suddenly felt a strong urge to protect the little creature that lay in front of him.

And, it was a fantastic feeling...

"Poor thing, are you hurt?" Jun Mo Xie asked in a rare gentle voice as he softly sat down while looking at the tiny beast.

The little thing lowered its head indifferently. It seemed uninterested. It wasn't clear whether it couldn't understand the words the Young Master Jun had spoken... or had simply ignored them from the start...

Jun Mo Xie saw this creature's lazy and adorable mannerism, and suddenly recalled why Dugu Xiao Yi had come to Tian Fa. She wanted to hunt a Snow-Ferret. She then wanted to use its skin to make a garment her grandfather could wear on his wounded waist.

That small creature looked like the legendary and thunderous Xuan Beast — Snow Ferret — from the looks of it.

However, Jun Mo Xie couldn't detect even the faintest trace of a Xuan Beast-like aura from it... despite a careful inspection. Therefore, it obviously wasn't a Level Eight Snow Ferret... or anyone from its genus. In fact, it might not even be a Xuan Beast to start with!

[Could it really be an ordinary tiny Ferret? But, why does it look so beautiful?]

Then, Jun Mo Xie slowly extended his hand, and touched the little creature lightly. However, the creature still hung its head low... same as before. The creature was motionless, but its body had become stiff.

"I know you're scared, little thing!" Jun Mo Xie smiled, "Don't worry; I'm a good man... a very good man. Come, amusing little thing... I will see to your wound. I will give you a tasty medicine!"

A good man...? This was the first time that Jun Mo Xie had called himself a 'good man' in the combined time frame of his two lives so far...

However, he was truly a good man in this little white creature's eyes...

He circled his aura around the little creature he now held in his arms, and inspected it for a bit...

However, there was something Jun Mo Xie hadn't come to notice. He had held the creature for barely a second when its ears had become erect. It had then opened its eyes in a wide stare. In fact, a sharp glint had arisen from the depths of its eyes. But, it then sensed the wonderful Qi that was coming from the Young Master Jun's body. It had then stared blankly for a second. In fact, it looked extremely confused at first. But, it slowly closed its eyes shut soon after...

## Chapter 345: Extremely Vile!

---

Jun Mo Xie clicked his tongue, "I don't know how you got this injury, little thing. Tch, it's very harsh. Your meridians are like a hundred-year-old bark; they're brittle, and full of cracks. They'll break the moment you make any movements... but you're lucky that you met me... Anyone else's hands would've been bound even if they had wished to help you. However, I seldom turn down the chance to do a good deed."

He slowly let out the dense and pure aura he had amassed in his palm while he talked.

The refreshing and innate pure aura flowed into the little creature like a bubbling stream. It then went into its meridians. That innate pure aura increased its spirits. And then, the unspeakable pain that it felt was reduced considerably as the aura continued to flow into the meridians. It instead felt incomparably comfortable; in fact, it even wanted to let out a groan...

The aura slowly mended the nearly broken meridians. It was akin to a supreme healing medicine at the time. The injuries healed slowly, and got a little better. Soon, the meridians were fixed-enough to have no cracks left in them.

"So, how did you suffer such a Devil's bite? It's a high-level devil's bite. In fact, its devil's bite only a person with a Qi Level of a Great Master can suffer. Only someone with a huge amount of Qi could make this happen. How could a little thing like you make such a big ruckus? Is my guess wrong? Are you the root of these problems? Wouldn't you be some big shot of Tian Fa if that were the case... perhaps even the Lord?" Jun Mo Xie laughed. It seemed funny even as he spoke it. And so, he burst out laughing.

The little creature turned to look at him, and its eyes revealed an expression of disdain.

"You're not convinced, little thing? Wouldn't I be the Ultra-

Super Master if you were the Supreme Lord of Tian Fa? I can kill you as I speak since you're in my hand. But, I will obviously never harm such an adorable little thing like you." Jun Mo Xie looked at it, and his expression changed very drastically. He couldn't help but smile as he moved his hand, and lightly scratched the little thing's tender nose.

A light noise came from the creature's throat, and a look of embarrassment appeared in his eyes.

The Young Master continued to tease the little beast while he healed it. It was unknown how long it continued for. Maybe it was for a short period... or perhaps it continued for a long time.

"Oh? You're feeling embarrassed, little thing?" Jun Mo Xie used the pure aura from the Hong Jun Pagoda, and eventually mended the entirety of the little creature's damaged meridians. He let out a relaxed sigh as he spoke that ridiculous tease of a line. And then, he lightly patted the little thing's tender posterior.

The little thing shivered after getting spanked. It was like it had been struck by lightning. It tried to struggle, but Jun Mo Xie held it down rather vigorously.

"The Injury is fine now. But, it'll be best if you don't tamper with it. It might go back to the original injured condition if you do." Jun Mo Xie spoke as he kneaded the little thing's posterior. He then slapped it lightly... only to find that it was extremely soft and supple. It felt as if it had no bone in it. It felt very good to him, and he couldn't help but continue to knead it.

"Anyway, you can't understand a word I'm saying..." A rare and innocent smile surfaced on Jun Mo Xie's face. He smiled, and his eyebrows shot up. He didn't notice that the eyes of the little creature were full of embarrassment until they had drooped down with shame.

"Oh?" Jun Mo Xie was too focused at rubbing the little thing since he was enjoying it a bit too much. Suddenly, a thought crossed his



mind, "Ah, you seem so embarrassed. You're not a female, are you?"

The little creature started to tremble violently. Its eyes opened wide into a circle with disbelief. The little thing then turned as red as blood. Its short and white hair had turned red as well. Then, its body became very stiff; it's didn't move at all...

"A female... you are a female, and I'm a big man. But, I won't rape you. So, what are you afraid of?" Jun Mo Xie was rather 'engrossed'. So, he reached out and teased it further.

The little creature then let out a strange scream. It hadn't returned to its state of previous supremacy since it'd need more time to heal completely. But, that vile and nasty human before its eyes was making it sick from head to toe. It twitched and shuddered... almost as if it was suffering from malaria. Then, it stretched and opened its eyes wide... to the greatest extent they could've been stretched to. It then slanted its head at a crooked angle, and fainted...

"Damn! You couldn't endure even that much? I had just touched you lightly, and yet there was such a strong reaction... Was that your weak spot?" Jun Mo Xie spoke in a puzzled manner as he caught hold of the creature's head to inspect it with bewildered expression on his face.

And, at this time...

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt like he was hit by something lofty, powerful and sharp. He was left to shudder due to the icy feeling, and the hair at the back of his neck stood up. He had reacted as such due to a murderous aura that had suddenly overtaken the vicinity. And, that murderous aura was extremely formidable. It was the strongest he had felt in both of his lives. He was called the "King of Evil" in his previous life, but his murderous aura was dwarfed by this cold and murderous one. He had been reduced to a mere 'nobody' expert in front of this aura. In fact, he felt the same

way a short grass would in front of a large tree. There was absolutely no comparison between the owners of these two auras.

This was a very destructive murderous aura.

He didn't even have enough time to pin-point where the cold murderous aura had come from in that split second. But, he felt that he had been enclosed inside it! As if he had fallen into a cold cave...!

He felt that he couldn't escape it... no matter what he did.

Jun Mo Xie was covered with cold sweat for a time. That aura was so sharp, huge, and frightening that it could penetrate into an individual's body, and could leave the said-individual's thoughts to become sluggish. So much so... that even their very soul would become stiff and sluggish.

A person's eyes would see no hope to reprieve themselves from the clutches of death once this murderous aura had shrouded their body...

Their eyes would reek of the anticipation of their end!

[There's such a terrifying and formidable strength in the depths of this forest!] Jun Mo Xie instantly became regretful. [I've been too careless this time.]

Jun Mo Xie had seen and faced many experts since the time he had come to this world. However, even a Spirit Xuan expert's murderous aura would be considered nothing compared to what he was facing at this moment. Even the Great Master Li Jue Tian wouldn't be able to compare with this...

That murderous aura was strong and terrifying enough to have surpassed the Young Master's imagination!

[Perhaps this makes sense. This place had so many heavenly herbs! So, it would be illogical to leave these heavenly herbs lying around without a powerful guardian to protect them...]

Jun Mo Xie's subconscious screamed for him to escape into the Hong Jun Pagoda, and take refuge against that frightful aura. He knew that he wouldn't be able to deal with something so frightening and powerful. He wouldn't have been able to escape this aura even if he was at the peak stage of his previous life. So, it was even more useless to talk about his present condition. Jun Mo Xie couldn't even think of a means to deal with this powerful aura if its owner were to unleash it upon him. [What kind of earth-shattering murderous aura is this person emanating? I can neither contend with it... nor avoid it!]

However, the frightening aura disappeared just when Jun Mo Xie had started to think of making an escape. In fact, that aura had disappeared without a trace... or any prior signs of doing so. Its disappearance was an unfathomable mystery...

It had disappeared as suddenly as it had arrived. The heavens and earth had now reinstated to their original state.

"That was close!" Jun Mo Xie gasped for air. But, he still had some lingering fear. So, he linked his spiritual sense to the Hong Jun Pagoda in order to connect to everything. Then, a mixture of the aura from the Hong Jun Pagoda, and his own spirit sense, spread out far and wide. He looked everywhere, but didn't discover anything unusual.

"This is very strange!" Jun Mo Xie frowned as he held the little creature. It should be mentioned that Jun Mo Xie's innate spiritual sense was quite formidable even if his strength wasn't. In fact, it was in no way weaker than that of a Spirit Xuan expert. Moreover, the aura from Hong Jun Pagoda and his innate spiritual sense had formed a formidable combination. And, this had increased the effective power by many times. But, the creature in his embrace was a supreme being. It was extremely strong. In fact, it was the strongest the Young Master Jun had faced since he had come to this world. And, it was the owner of that murderous aura. Jun Mo Xie's spiritual sense was powerful, but it was incapable of detecting

the opposite party's aura if they had chosen to hide it. Jun Mo Xie had risked a chance, and had started to search for the identity of that mysterious master. But, it was a pity that his spiritual sense had come up with nothing. His spiritual sense flowed out again. But, he found the area to be deserted once again; there was no one around.

He hadn't even noticed that the little thing in his arms had woken up. Its big and beautiful eyes were wide open. But, they had a complicated expression in them. The expression in its eyes looked unpredictable in make, but revealed a faint yet fiercely ominous glint.

The expressions in its eyes were a blurry mix. It was sometimes indignant, sometimes embarrassed. A murderous look would occasionally arise in them. And, it looked puzzled at times... The little thing had revealed many complicated expressions in its eyes. Any man would find this strange. But, Jun Mo Xie hadn't paid any attention to this because of the appearance and disappearance of that unimaginable murderous aura.

The Young Master Jun had searched every place... except for his own arms. That little creature looked like a harmless animal. However, the dark light that shone in its eyes was of a persona Jun Mo Xie should've feared the most...

The undisputed and strongest master!

"Ha ha! You woke up, you little thing! You woke up, but you didn't even move to let me know about it! You should be spanked for that! Hey, are you hungry?" Jun Mo Xie figured that the master with the murderous aura had disappeared, and wasn't a threat to him for the time being. So, he relaxed. Then, he became lively, and lowered his head to look at the tiny thing. It was then that he noticed that the little creature had opened his eyes, and was looking at him. The Young Master Jun couldn't help but laugh and lightly rebuke as he saw this.

The little creature closed its eyes tightly once again.

"You're still in a bad mood? You're acting like this even though I haven't touched your butt yet?"

Jun Mo Xie spoke that sentence with disdain, and then curled his lips. Then, "Pop! Pop!" he hit that little posterior with the palm of his hand. Then, he started to knead it, and a look of enjoyment came over his face. "This feeling... I really can't get over it! Gee, you come with me... alright little thing? I will give you tasty food every day. The others can't get the same treatment. I won't even ask for anything. I'll just rub your little buttocks every day."

The little creature looked at him with resentment and shame. This man had helped heal its meridians during its frailest of times. It would've swallowed this shameless guy whole if it weren't for that.

[What's so valuable about eating and playing with you? What's so special about being with you? What good will you rubbing my butt everyday bring? Your words are pure and utter nonsense! It's not untrue that you've helped me today. But, you have hit my body and added to my shame as well, you brat! If I don't get back at you a hundred times over... then, I won't be called...]

[You just wait for it! Humph!]

"You still don't want to? How dare you! Humph! I've been so kind to you, and you still don't want to come with me?" Jun Mo Xie continued to knead. Then, he suddenly thought of something and said, "You're a female, right? That means that you will have to breastfeed when you have children, yes? But, I can't see the equipment. Is it because they are too small? You think my eyes aren't sharp enough? Why haven't I found anything?"

The little creature quickly understood what was being said. It quickly opened its eyes wide to look at the hateful brat as it turned its slender body around. Then, it re-positioned its body with its slender stomach facing upwards... as if it was showing

something...

"Tch, what you have is so small. It's as big as a 'mung bean'. Your children will have to endure terrible hunger." Jun Mo Xie smiled wickedly as he located his next target. He then extended his finger, and pinched it. He then rubbed, and pinched it again.

The tiny creature's legs suddenly paddled and kicked. Then, it went red all over, and started to glare. After that, it let out a weeping groan in a strange voice. Then, it tilted its head, and fainted once again...

It had been made to faint out of anger and embarrassment... twice by now. That other person was too big a bully...

The tiny creature found itself being carried in the man's hand by the time it woke up; in fact, it was being swung rather awkwardly in midair...

Jun Mo Xie was in a rush at the moment since he felt the onset of a urinary urgency. However, he didn't wish to put the little thing down since holding it felt extremely comfortable and wonderful. Moreover, that little things might slip away if he put in down. So, he carried the little thing, and went out to look for a corner to ease his bladder...

The young man raised his gown, undid the trousers, and let them slip a bit. He lowered his underpants down to his feet, and revealed two somewhat hairy thighs. After that, the genitalia came out... coincidentally... in front of the little creature's eyes. He didn't have any scruples doing it in front of the little creature anyway. Don't people urinate in front of their pet dogs as well? Therefore, Jun Mo Xie didn't think much about it. Then, the bright and shiny line of water burst out with a crashing sound. It burst out joyously, and noisily. And, the young man felt extremely relaxed as a result of this...

The little creature being carried in this youngster's hand could never have imagined that this man would shamelessly undo his

trousers. The creature gave an embarrassed whimper, and covered its beautiful big eyes with its paws.

Jun Mo Xie saw that reaction, and laughed in a savage manner. He finished his business, and shook his thing. But, he didn't tighten his belt. He started acting in an even viler manner thereafter, and he pulled apart the little thing's paws with his hands. The little thing's eyes were forced open, and that huge thing appeared in front of it once again. In fact, that thing was so close to it that it nearly came close enough to touch it. The little creature screeched like a bird as its entire body turned red, and it shut its eyes close. Its two paws stretched forward despite everything. And, they moved forward with the intent to tear the Young Master's thing to shreds...

Jun Mo Xie shouted, and quickly raised the little creature upwards with a whooshing sound. Then, he again brought his thing close to its head in mischief once it had opened its eyes, and spoke with a sense of disdain in his tone, "See this? Feeling inferior? He he he..."

The tiny thing had grief and indignation written all over its face. It looked at Jun Mo Xie with shame in its eyes. And, tears had started to stream down from its eyes. It was in so much pain that it didn't wish to live anymore. It was felt horrible, and it felt like its mind had gone blank. [This is so shameful... boo hoo... please let me die... I don't want to live anymore...]

The Young Master had acted in a very tyrannical manner. He hummed, and pulled-up his trousers. But, the little creature continued to struggle in his hands. So, he threatened, "Stop this, or I'll stuff you down my trousers!"

[Stuff me down the trousers?] The little thing instantaneously became rigid as it heard him. It didn't even dare to move. [I might commit suicide out of shame if he stuffs me down his trousers... but I would still be regarded as a joke for ten thousand years to come!]

[Just look at this guy; he has acted so shamelessly! What else won't he do at this point?]

[This is the most humiliating day of my entire life! This little brat is vile to an unspeakable degree. He's extremely evil and shameless...]

Jun Mo Xie put the little creature on a rock in the stone chamber, and scolded the wide-eyed victim, "You stay here ok? I'll be going out to get some herbs, but I will be back to take you. Then, we'll leave." He turned around after he had said this, and walked towards the cave's mouth. But then, he returned the next moment with a whooshing sound, and grabbed the little creature. He then rubbed and spanked its butts a few more times as he laughed, "This is really nice! I'm addicted to it! Don't run, now!" Then, he turned and left.

[Don't run? You'll ravage me when you get back!] The little creature glared at Jun Mo Xie's back with pure hatred as he walked out. [Shameless bastard! I'm sure that you're the one who stole my Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit. And, now you've come here to humiliate me! Humph! This bastard's help was great for me. But, I... I will never let you off in any way!]

[I will make you weep a tearless cry one day... just like I did today! And then, you won't wish to live anymore! You'd want to die, but I won't let you! First, I'll fry your thing. And then, I'm going to sever it for scaring me like that!]

The little thing cried many wronged tears. It then turned around, and returned to the stone room. Then, it activated some unknown mechanism that was concealed inside the room, and disappeared.

[It has been hundreds of years since I've been born... and I had forgotten what it felt like to cry. But, I've cried so many tears of humiliation today... I just can't bear this!]

[It won't take me more than a day to make a full recovery. This speed of recovery has been made possible because of this brat's



help... but... but... I must take revenge!]

[I remember your smell! I remember your face! Don't worry, I'll find you! I'll rat you out no matter where you run to inside this continent! A person who can escape my wrath hasn't appeared in this continent in hundreds of years! Humph!]

[You repulsive brat! You shameless piece of sh\*t! Remember me, bastard!]

Jun Mo Xie eventually finished collecting enough ingredients. In fact, he had nearly wiped the area clean. He was in a happy and satisfied mood... like he was returning from a rewarding journey. He was extremely content with his achievements, and felt relaxed. But, he was then suddenly blindsided the moment he returned to the stone chamber.

The black gown was still there inside the stone chamber. But, the adorable little creature wasn't. It had disappeared without a trace.

"Crap! Where has that little thing run off to? How come it has run away when I told it not to?" Jun Mo Xie felt a rare sense of indignation, "I had cured your injuries, and had given you so much fun! Yet, you forgot what you owed me, and escaped! You're a thankless thing!"

The Young Master Jun was unwilling to give up. He carefully searched inside a circumference to see where that ungrateful creature had run off to...

"I'll see that I never knead your tiny ass again once I find you!" Jun Mo Xie took a hateful pledge. He was feeling very indignant. He wanted to take that little back with him... so he could tease it regularly. Moreover, he wanted to take that incredibly tiny and adorable creature to his house so that it might also keep Guan Qing Han happy.

However, those back-and-forth thoughts were of a man who had counted his chickens before they had hatched. This had turned

into a fruitless endeavor.

[Don't get too cocky! Just you wait! You'll be wiping my ass the next time we meet. I'll teach you a lesson! Humph!]

Jun Mo Xie cursed inside. But, he also thought of the Hong Jun Pagoda. He thought of an entire layer filled with the legendary treasures he had collected. This made him very happy. This trip to Tian Fa had been an enriching and profitable endeavor. In fact, the profits had far surpassed his imagination. It had been a bumper harvest!

Jun Mo Xie was satisfied. He sighed, and his body suddenly got up into the air before he vanished. He had already initiated the Yin Yang Escape, and was moving unseen through the forest towards his destination — the Southern Heaven City.

[Only one important ingredient is left... the Level Nine Xuan Root!]

Grandpa Jun's cultivation would be advanced to Spirit Xuan realm once the Level Nine Xuan Root had been acquired. In fact, it would go beyond the mere Spirit Xuan realm! He would be at Spirit Xuan's second level's peak in one enthralling step!

[Grandpa's cultivation is lacking in relation to the world at large. But, it's one of the top ones in Tian Xiang City... perhaps even the whole of the Empire. Tian Xiang's Emperor could think of dealing with the Jun Family despite its military prowess, but he wouldn't think about messing with a Spirit Xuan expert without fearing of the consequences!]

[No one can bear such consequences with ease. Even the Emperor of a country is no exception! A Spirit Xuan expert as an enemy can tantamount an ocean of corpses and blood!]

Then, Jun Mo Xie settled his heart, and concentrated on dealing with his Third Uncle's situation.

The Silver Blizzard City... he couldn't take out the entire Xiao

Family for the time being. But, he still had to make his uncle and Han Yan Yao meet. This was the greatest worry that had plagued his uncle's heart. This was also Han Yan Yao's greatest hope. And, Jun Mo Xie had taken it upon himself to help the two.

Jun Mo Xie returned to the Southern Heaven City the next day. But, it was already night time. In other words, he had already spent a full day and night in the forest.

"Where had you gone to, you brat? What took you so long to return?" Jun Mo Xie ran into Jun Wu Yi's question the moment he returned. His three Spirit Xuan maternal uncles were staring at him. And, one could tell from their eyes that were ready to give him a beating.

The three men had their hair turn white with worry for their precious nephew since the youngster had gone missing for a day and night. Moreover, this was the Xue Hun Manor's territory. So, Jun Wu Yi and the three Dongfang brothers would've rushed to either Xue Hun Manor... or the Silver Blizzard City to look for Jun Mo Xie if he hadn't returned in some time...

"Well... I had just gone for a casual stroll. And, I hadn't gone very far." Jun Mo Xie turned his gaze from his four uncles, slipped-away into the shadows, and disappeared without a trace.

[I can only tell you that I went for a stroll into the forest yesterday. What a joke! I had a very cheerful and friendly chat with seven Xuan Beast King. And, I've come to a mutual agreement with them. We have unanimously reached a mutually beneficial agreement to cooperate...]

The four men looked at each other. [You went for a stroll? You brat, this is your first time in this city! You're a stranger here! So, where did you go for a stroll? And, can one go for a stroll that lasts for a day and a night?]

[You didn't go far? You could've gone far enough to visit Tian Xiang City by now! You brat, don't you know that we four brothers

were worried to death?] However, Jun Mo Xie had returned, and didn't wish to discuss his whereabouts. In any case, he had returned safe and sound. So, the four elder men were in no mood to inquire further. Moreover, Jun Wu Yi was aware that his nephew possessed special powers, and not only in name at that. They were presently in Southern Heaven City. But, he wouldn't have been too worried if his nephew had gone missing for two to three days in Tian Xiang City.

## Chapter 346: Li Teng Yun's Persecution

---

"Well... I had just gone for a casual stroll. And, I hadn't gone very far." Jun Mo Xie turned his gaze from his four uncles, slipped-away into the shadows, and disappeared without a trace.

[I can only tell you that I went for a stroll into the forest yesterday. What a joke! I had a very cheerful and friendly chat with seven Xuan Beast King. And, I've come to a mutual agreement with them. We have unanimously reached a mutually beneficial agreement to cooperate...]

The four men looked at each other. [You went for a stroll? You brat, this is your first time in this city! You're a stranger here! So, where did you go for a stroll? And, can one go for a stroll that lasts for a day and a night?]

[You didn't go far? You could've gone far enough to visit Tian Xiang City by now! You brat, don't you know that we four brothers were worried to death?] However, Jun Mo Xie had returned, and didn't wish to discuss his whereabouts. In any case, he had returned safe and sound. So, the four elder men were in no mood to inquire further. Moreover, Jun Wu Yi was aware that his nephew possessed special powers, and not only in name at that. They were presently in Southern Heaven City. But, he wouldn't have been too worried if his nephew had gone missing for two to three days in Tian Xiang City.

However, the four men genuinely hadn't realized that Jun Mo Xie hadn't gone very far. He had only gone to the core of the Tian Fa forest for a stroll. And, that stroll had materialized into the collection of some precious herbs, the molestation of a little creature, and what not...

The expressions of the four men changed. They shook their head, and followed in. The four had been worried this entire time. But, their hearts were at ease now. The battle would start the next day.

So, everyone's mind was preoccupied with it. They had decided to take a quick rest. The next day was to be a serious one. It was at this moment that a soldier suddenly came with a message — Xue Hun Manor's Li Teng Yun had come to pay a visit.

Jun Wu Yi then muttered irresolutely, "Invite him in!"

The Third Master Jun had been thinking about the meeting of the heads of the families. It had taken place in the morning, and Jun Wu Yi had been designated the supreme commander for the decisive battle. That is... he had been chosen as the leader of the team that would throw their lives away.

However, the Xue Hun Manor had then proposed their Third Master as a candidate to replace Jun Wu Yi for the Supreme Commander's position... that too at a point when the heads of every family had nearly reached the conclusion of the matter; this had left everyone baffled.

The so-called 'Supreme Commander' would have no real authority. He would have no hope for a victory in this battle. In fact, the Commander would be a scapegoat in defeat, and would only go out to die in this hopeless battle. Moreover, the said-man would also have to protect his own side from the animosity-ridden plots of his opposing factions. Hence, this was truly an arduous and thankless job. Therefore, no one could understand what Li Jue Tian was thinking. Why would he send the Third Master from his family — someone with a Spirit Xuan cultivation — to be a replacement-scapegoat for the number-one contender Jun Wu Yi? Wouldn't it be too great a pity...?

However, this suggestion had come from the top expert of the coalition. So, no one dared to overrule it that lightly. Therefore, the position of the Supreme Commander had been temporarily shelved. But, the selection of the Commander would only be done amidst two people — that unfortunate Third Master of the Xue Hun Manor, and Jun Wu Yi.

And, Li Teng Yun had presumably showed-up to discuss that matter.

The powerful families had also decided to send some powerful experts to the battle in the pre-preparatory meeting for the battle. The co-origimators of this evil plot — the Xue Hun Manor and the Silver Blizzard City — didn't dare to defer from this idea either. This entire plan to push Jun Wu Yi into a desperate situation was theirs from the beginning. After all, they were the ones who wanted to push him into this pit of fire. So, wouldn't the entire world sneer at them if no one was sent from their side?

Everyone knew that the chances of victory were quite slim in this battle. In fact, they had 'almost' no chances. However, they still had to send someone... even if they were sending the-said individuals to their deaths!

Jun Wu Yi and the Dongfang Family would go in. So, the Duanmu and the Sikong Family would run the bank to mediate. The Silver Blizzard City decided to send three of their elders — the Third, Sixth and Ninth. The two Sky Xuan experts — Mu Xue Tong and Xiao Han — would also accompany them along with the 'Seven Swords' of the Silver Blizzard City. This was nearly seventy percent of the full strength that had arrived here from the Silver City. In fact, their contribution had been nothing less than generous on the face of it.

After all, sending the three elders wouldn't be sufficient in its own. The Seven Swords were Silver Blizzard City's greatest force, but their power would be reduced rather considerably if they weren't together. So, they'd all have to go. Mu Xue Tong and Xiao Han were the two unlucky ones. Several peak experts had gathered here. So, two Sky Xuan experts weren't considered much in this context.

However, this was also one of Silver Blizzard City's schemes. Sending great manpower would mean that they would be safer since they could all look out for each other. Therefore, they

wouldn't be likely to meet with their deaths... even if they suffered a defeat in the battle. And, the Silver City wouldn't suffer too much as a result of this. However, going with less manpower could mean throwing the lives away of those who were sent to battle...

As for the remaining experts of the Silver Blizzard City — the Second, Fifth and the Eighth elders — they wouldn't be going. There was a feud between Xiao Bu Yu and the Dongfang Family. Therefore, he naturally wouldn't join the rest. It would be extremely misfortunate if an internal conflict were to arise due to his presence...

Xiao Bu Yu was Silver City's lead on this assignment. And, it was rather mature of him to make this decision when one comes to think of it. There were certainly many grudges and resentments between them and the Dongfang Family. However, the current crisis could mean that humanity's end was looming close. So, it was important to act against opening old quarrels given the current scenario.

The Duanmu and the Sikong Family had friendly relations with the three Dongfang brothers. So, they invariably stood on the Jun Family's side when they saw Dongfang Wen Qing stand beside them.

Xue Hun Manor also decided to dispatch a massive force. In fact, they had dispatched over half their manpower. This included three-hundred Jade Xuan experts, one-hundred Earth Xuan experts, thirty Sky Xuan experts, and five Spirit Xuan experts. The Xue Hun Manor's team was the strongest amongst the gathered forces.

The weakest contingent hailed from the Baili Family. They had decided to dispatch two Sky Xuan experts along with the Jade Xuan Baili Luo Yun. This decision made the other families sigh in the secrecy of their hearts. And, this also made everyone look down on them somewhat...



[It's too short-sighted of the Baili Family to treat such a young genius like this...]

[No matter what level of hatred or enmities may have driven this family against this unique genius... they should've rather expelled Baili Luo Yun from the family as the most severe punishment instead of doing this!]

[Baili Luo Yun might even become a loner in society-at-large if they had expelled him. But, he would still have his family name – Baili. He would then remain a member of the Baili Family in the eyes of society. Moreover, he would've become a Spirit Xuan expert... or maybe even a Great Master if they had given him a dozen or so years to train!]

[Baili Luo Yun could've become the patron of the Baili Family then. Resentment may still have remained between Baili Luo Yun and the Baili Family in that case. But, any person wishing to mess with the Baili Family would still have to think about Baili Luo Yun's reaction. He would at least be a virtual threat! And, the unnoticeable Baili Family would've then been able to change the tide, and would've risen in the society when that time came!]

However, the Baili Family simply couldn't wait to get rid of this person. In fact, they were almost impatient to bring that rare genius to death. This left everyone to look at the Baili Family's decision-making abilities with disdain. [You're a powerful family. So, how can you not read the situation? How can you be so short-sighted? What will you gain by this?]

Some people even started to assert that the Baili Family had started to decline... and was even done for!

Jun Wu Yi — the Supreme Commander who had lead twenty-thousand men to the Southern Heaven City — would only lead around three-hundred men of his own to this battle. And, two-hundred of these men were Jade Xuan experts. The remaining were mostly at the Earth Xuan realm. In fact, most of the

assembled experts were the ones who had been sent by Tian Xiang's influential families to protect their Young Masters.

Jun Wu Yi had clearly understood the Emperor's intentions in the manner he had singled out these people. [The many Young Masters of the various families will be well protected, and won't face a mishap. But, my life is surely foreordained for doom!]

The families of the capital city were quite scattered. And, he probably desired to use this time to reorganize them. Their strength wasn't exactly that great when compared to the rest of the world. Yet, they were considered quite powerful inside the city. After all, even monkeys can become the kings when there are no tigers in the mountains.

However, the families' powers would be crippled if a majority of these men died here. And, these men were accompanying the precious treasures of each family. So, they would certainly be left to feel indignant if too many of these 'bodyguards' were to die. Moreover, these Young Masters would return home to their siblings later. They would then notice that everything would be settled and calm. This would drive them mad. And, everything would then change — whether it would be a gripe for power, or schemes for toppling the family's line of succession. And, this would eventually weaken every major family.

This step-by-step degradation scheme's genius had to be attributed to the Emperor. He would be able to hold the powerful families together in his hands in this manner. There could've come a time when the heads of the powerful families may have united to take a stand against the Emperor. But, that scenario would vanish in thin air as a result of this scheme.

This was a great and far-reaching scheme. In fact, it was an excellent and exquisite plan.

The Emperor's far-sighted plan was already at play at that time.

The Third Master Jun was immersed in these thoughts when Li

Teng Yun walked-in in his excessively 'jingly' attire. His clothes were decorated with flowers, and gave-off a shiny-bright radiance. In fact, he looked like a 'walking lighthouse'. Jun Wu Yi and the three Dongfang brothers were flabbergasted. [This brat is too coquettish!]

He would be a live target for any assassin. The said-killer could make it work even if he had bad aim. He would only need to throw his weapon at the shiny light, and that alone would be enough to make his target gurgle blood.

Li Teng Yun entered with two experts in tow. He cupped his hands, and looked rather arrogant as he said, "I've come to pay a visit, Commander Jun. I request the Commander doesn't mind this intrusion."

"The Young Master is too courteous." Jun Wu Yi remained calm and maintained etiquette, "Yet, I don't know why you've come here. To what do I owe this meet?"

Li Teng Yun chuckled gently. He then looked around. The young man was about to speak-up... but he stopped himself.

The three Dongfang brothers smiled. They were aware that he had some apprehensions. So, they excused themselves, and retired. But, Jun Mo Xie walked-in from behind the cloth flap just as his three uncles left. However, the shadows of two other people remained hidden behind the flap. These two individuals were Guan Qing Han, and Dugu Xiao Yi.

Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han had suspected the reason behind Li Teng Yun's visit. And hence, they had walked-in in advance. Dugu Xiao Yi had naturally followed after them.

"Everyone present here is family. So, the Young Master Li Teng Yun can speak freely," Jun Wu Yi smiled faintly. The faint yet cold glint in Li Teng Yun's eyes had somewhat revealed his intentions. And, Jun Wu Yi was no fool. So, he had guessed the reason behind Li Teng Yun's visit.

"This Young Master will speak openly if that's the case," Li Teng Yun smiled. His eyes had a look of great confidence in them. The just-arrived Jun Mo Xie wasn't important in his eyes. In fact, he wouldn't even care if the entire Jun Family were present there. After all, the Jun Family was nothing in front of the monster that his Xue Hun Manor was...

"This Young Master had gone to Tian Xiang City for sight-seeing some time ago. He had then met Young Lady Guan Qing Han by chance, and was startled by her celestial beauty. I've been yearning for her day-and-night ever since. Not a day goes by when I don't think of her."

Li Teng Yun smiled gracefully and continued, "It's said that the Young Lady Guan Qing Han has been living as a widow in the Jun Family for many years. In fact, her status is still that of the Jun Family's daughter-in-law — married to the eldest of the Jun Family's Third Generation... he he... but we all know that the said-marriage isn't valid. In fact, it's a marriage in name only. So, this Young Master has come to the Third Master Jun to ask for the Young Lady's freedom so that we can have a splendid marriage. Wouldn't it be the best for both the sides?"

"My Xue Hun Manor will also reciprocate if you agree and give your well-wishes," Li Teng Yun waved his hand to stop Jun Wu Yi from interrupting as he continued, "The Third Master Jun must be aware that my Xue Hun Manor has agreed to my proposition for candidature over the command of the forces for the decisive battle tomorrow. Everyone knows that this decisive battle is no ordinary battle. You'd have to face high-level Xuan Beasts. A single misstep could result in a miserable fate if one's not careful. Commander Jun is a great general. Your Xuan cultivation is... he he he... is obviously outstanding as well. This Li Teng Yun genuinely admires that about you. However, Commander Jun has been disabled for several years. We may have to square-up against the high-level Xuan Beasts in this battle. And, you must know that you won't be

very fortunate if you were to go there..."

Jun Wu Yi looked down. He didn't wish to show his rage. Then, he spoke in a lowered voice, "The Manor's Young Master's purpose to arrive here certainly isn't limited to a chat about his worry for this Jun's life. Speak your real intention!"

"Well, I shall talk plainly since the Commander Jun is in haste. You won't need to throw your life away if you agree to my request!"

Li Teng Yun seemed tired, and put-up his point rather directly, "Our Xue Hun Manor will take a strong stance, and we will forcibly take the position of the Supreme Commander. We won't let any harm come to the Jun Family's reputation. The Jun Family will be safe from the Xuan Beasts' attack under our wing. Moreover, we will also try our best to mediate with the Silver City in order to prevent them from stabbing you in the back."

Li Teng Yun's eyes had basically turned into slits by now. His expression changed as he spoke, "And, this Young Master knows of the Jun Family's apprehensions. But, we won't create any problems for Commander Jun. And, the Jun Family only has to part with one woman in exchange. Moreover, they shall only be parting with a woman they have no relations with."

"Is that what the Young Master Li means? ...that this woman has no worth?" Jun Mo Xie suddenly spoke-up in between.

"This one woman... he he... the Third Young Master's words aren't in-keeping with his family's identity. And, this is very surprising to me." Li Teng Yun looked up coldly as he said, "How much value do women have in this world? They eventually rely on the husband's merit even if they accomplish something. It's like our families exchange mates for our horses, or dogs, or... he he... a few women. That isn't usually a big deal, right? They are mere toys; nothing more. There's no need to make a fuss about it."

"Mere toys...?" Jun Wu Yi's voice was cold. In fact, it was as cold

as the winds that blow on a snow-capped mountain. "Is this your condition, Young Master Li?"

"I'm making a great offer in good faith, and the Commander is still unsatisfied?" Li Teng Yun had recognized the coldness in Jun Wu Yi's voice. He had also noticed the menacing glint in Jun Wu Yi's eyes, and the threatening texture of his tone. "Think properly, Commander Jun. You will probably die tomorrow if you refuse this gesture I've made with good will. You will have to face those crazy beasts that are anyway unmatchable foes. Moreover, you will also have to contend with others whom you can't hope to match. A mere woman in-exchange for your life and the peace of the entire Jun Family! I'm sure that one who understands this situation will know what choice to make. Moreover, this arrangement will bring the said-woman great happiness. You're faced with two roads that determine life and death, Commander. Will you choose unwisely?"

"No relation? Guan Qing Han is a part of my family! At least for now... she is!" Jun Wu Yi looked at him coldly. "No outsider shall ever be allowed to disgrace someone once they're a part of the Jun Family. The Young Master needn't worry about the life and death of any from the Jun Family's members... since you're merely a visitor!"

"Don't refuse, Jun Wu Yi! This Young Master has come to speak to you in this matter. But, he has only done so for the benefit of your reputation. Moreover, he has provided such great conditions for your sake. Do you genuinely think you're someone that great?"

Li Teng Yun stood up, and continued in a ruthless tone, "Why should I worry about you if you can't tell the good from the bad, and wish to court death! You will anyway die. So, what's the big deal? You anyway can't stop me from getting Guan Qing Han even if you don't!"

Jun Mo Xie clicked his tongue and said, "Young Master Li is very strange. When has our Jun Family ever asked you to worry about us? And, what status do you have of your own? You're merely the

only son of Great Master Jue Tian; that's all. The Young Master of the magnificent Xue Hun Manor; that's all. But, where's the virtue in that? This has indeed widened my outlook! No wonder my sister-in-law doesn't like you. In fact, I'm convinced that no woman will ever like you. And, that's because you don't have a single good thing about you... except for the fact that you are the son of the reputed Second Great Master. The Xue Hun Manor has no future!"

"Very well! You will pay for your words, Jun Mo Xie. Just you wait for your uncle's corpse tomorrow!" Li Teng Yun snorted, flicked his sleeves, and said, "This Young Master disdains the quarrel you've started, Jun Mo Xie. Your Jun Family isn't even fit to haggle with me!"

Jun Mo Xie sneered, "It's difficult to tell who isn't a 'fit' here. I can only see a toad who's trying to eat a swan's meat standing in front of me. What about you?"

"You...!" Li Teng Yun became extremely mad at first. He then suppressed his anger, and coldly stated, "I — Li Teng Yun — desire a woman. And yet, I can't have her?! Jun Mo Xie, you're in the Southern Heaven City. I'd like to see you act like this once you have lost your Third Uncle, and the protection of your three maternal uncles. Tomorrow, it'll be your Third Uncle. Perhaps, it'll be you the day after! Your three Spirit Xuan expert uncles are great, right? Jun Mo Xie, the power you rely on is nothing in my eyes! Let me tell you... a clenched fist is the greatest argument in this world!"

"I know that the clenched fist is the greatest argument! The Xue Hun Manor would've easily defeated the Xuan Beasts if it weren't for their power, right? So, I guess the 'fist' wasn't big enough. And, the Great Master Jue Tian was forced to issue the Supreme order over this, right? But, you're still so arrogant and shameless despite all this?"

Jun Mo Xie then shook his head in a dumbfounded manner, "The

Xue Hun Manor is genuinely a lame duck. I guess we will have to wait to see the Manor's funeral day after tomorrow."

"Well, we'll see whose family will have to wait at the funeral, Jun Mo Xie. You'll be the one to wear the mourning clothes, you brat." Li Teng Yun then turned around, and started to walk out. He reached the exit. Then, he suddenly stopped, turned, and asked, "You're sure that you won't regret this, Jun Wu Yi?"

"Get lost!"

That was Jun Wu Yi's answer. That shameless Young Master of the Xue Hun Manor had crossed the limit of his tolerance.

A sharp light flashed in Li Teng Yun's eyes as he snorted and turned away.

"Wait, Young Master Teng Yun!" Jun Mo Xie shouted for Li Teng Yun.

Li Teng Yun turned his head and snorted, "So, you're scared now? Young Master Jun, hurry up and tell your Third Uncle and Grandfather that there's no need to put the Jun Family in trouble because of a single woman. A wise man submits to the circumstances..."

"Ah? Young Master Teng Yun misunderstands Young Master Jun's reason behind asking him to stop. I just intend to remind Young Master Teng Yun of something in the best of interests. Your eyes reveal the oncoming of misfortune. Your left eye is green with youth, but your right one is green with envy. Your face also beckons an oncoming disaster. It's a bloody disaster that will befall in the days to come. But, you can't even run from it. Therefore, you mustn't worry about other people's life and death. You must rather concern yourself with your own safety. I'm only trying to say that... it would be very bad if the father has to watch his son die before his own doom strikes him!"

Then, the Young Master Jun slowly said, "Great Master Jue Tian



is way over a hundred years old. I fear his reproductive capabilities won't work anymore. So... take good care of yourself, Young Master."

"You..." Li Teng Yun's nose was almost crooked with anger. He turned his head, and didn't look back as he left.

"Are our troops ready for tomorrow's fight, Third Uncle?" Jun Mo Xie asked.

"Every expert from each family has been selected and readied; except for me. Our Tian Xiang Empire's military strength is the crown of the entire Continent. But, it is considered the weakest in terms of strength amongst those who have gathered here. And, everyone knows this fact. Moreover, I haven't deployed your two-hundred-and-fifty guards, or the high ranking Generals."

Jun Wu Yi smiled faintly, "What's the need to sacrifice so much in a lost battle, right?"

Jun Wu Yi hadn't explained those words, but Jun Mo Xie had understood them rather clearly. Those two-hundred-and-fifty guards would continue to live, and would become the Jun Family's future since Commander Jun would most certainly die. [My death alone should be enough. Why should these men die as well?]

Jun Mo Xie's heart was moved by this. Jun Wu Yi didn't know that the Jun Family wouldn't be touched during the battle the following day. So, he was stubbornly determined to sacrifice his life. He wasn't thinking of himself... but of the Jun Family... even at this juncture.

"Third Uncle..." Jun Mo Xie muttered irresolutely. Then, he spoke-up in a resolute manner, "Nothing can be taken for granted. The outcome of tomorrow's battle is uncertain. But, nothing will happen to you... even if we suffer huge damages. This... I assure you!"

Jun Wu Yi looked at him for a good while before he suddenly

smiled and said, "I hope so."

He then suddenly called out after having said that, "Can you come out, Qing Han? Haven't you eavesdropped enough? Come out!"

Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi came out with embarrassed expressions. They looked at Jun Wu Yi. And, their expressions changed to that of extreme worry. Especially Guan Qing Han; she was distressed.

Jun Wu Yi coughed, and then became silent. He had conflicting expressions on his face for some time, and remained silent. Then, he finally spoke-up in a hoarse voice, "There are three individuals in front of me today; one is my nephew, and one is the Jun Family's daughter-in-law. And then, there's another person... the Dugu Family's treasured daughter— Dugu Xiao Yi. You represent the Dugu Family. You will be troubled because I — Jun Wu Yi — will make you a witness today!"

Dugu Xiao Yi didn't know what he was about to speak. Jun Wu Yi was apparently about to make a serious decision. So, she subconsciously nodded.

Guan Qing Han guessed what Jun Wu Yi was about to do. So, she cried-out in sadness, "Third Uncle, don't... don't do it!"

# Chapter 347: This Thought Shall Remain Immortal in the Realm of this World!

---

Jun Wu Yi sighed and smiled. Then, he started to shake his head in an exceptionally firmly manner. He then took out a copper token from his bosom. The gems studded on its surface glittered under the moonlight, and revealed the word "Jun". And, the word "Order" was written on the back of the token in accordance to the strict parlance of the era.

It was the Order Token of the Master of the Jun Family.

"This has been handed down from generation to generation. Mo Xie, your grandfather had handed me this token three months ago. And, I — Jun Wu Yi — have been the current head of the Jun Family since then. Whatever decisions I take with this... are the decisions of the Jun Family! No member of the Jun Family can violate my orders! Do you understand?"

Jun Wu Yi finished speaking those heavy words. He then raised the token, and spoke with a cold expression, "Jun Family's Third Generation Daughter-in-law, kneel and heed!"

Guan Qing Han was a bit frightened as she looked at the Third Master Jun. His cold expression allowed no room for negotiation. So, she had no choice but to sigh, take a step forward, and kneel in front of Jun Wu Yi.

"The daughter-in-law is warm and virtuous. Her mannerism and accomplishments are of the highest degree even though she's only twenty. The parents of the senior generation had talked of making a match in the past, and had then settled on a marriage. The Jun Family's cherished Eldest Son of the third generation couldn't consummate the marriage since he unexpectedly died in battle. And, Guan Qing Han has vigorously spent her youth guarding her pure body for the past five years. She has suffered bitter hardships with the intention to preserve the friendships between the two

families this entire duration of time. But, my Jun Family can't extend this fallen marriage forever. You were considered as 'married'... without an actual marriage. You are married... yet not married. Moreover, you've been living as a widow. So today, I — Jun Wu Yi, the Master of the Jun Household — grant Guan Qing Han her freedom by the power vested to me by this token of authority. We will no longer have anything to do with any wedding you may celebrate. Dugu Family's Dugu Xiao Yi, and Jun Family's Young Master Jun Mo Xie have borne witness to this. The heavens and the earth have borne witness to this!"

Guan Qing Han had already known what he was about to say. But then, she heard those words come from his mouth... and they came without any hesitation. She heard the words in succession, and her heart ached; her tears fell like the rain.

Dugu Xiao Yi was standing beside her. The little girl's pretty mouth was opened wide. She hadn't expected to be a witness to such a great event!

Jun Wu Yi finished speaking. His face was cold as he turned to Jun Mo Xie, and called out, "Jun Family's third generation's third descendant — Jun Mo Xie! Step forward, and kneel!"

Jun Mo Xie jumped with a scare, "What is it... Third Uncle?"

"Jun Family's third generation's third descendant — Jun Mo Xie! Step forward, and kneel!" Jun Wu Yi repeated sternly.

Jun Mo Xie muttered to himself a couple of times. He had no choice but to reluctantly kneel in such a situation; he felt dispirited.

"Jun Family's third generation's third descendant — Jun Mo Xie! You are tough, open minded, and capable of bearing great responsibility. I — Jun Wu Yi — cede my position as the Jun Family's head to you! Let the heaven and earth bear witness to this!"

Jun Mo Xie had vaguely guessed this outcome. But, he still jumped in a startled when he heard the order. His hands shook as he stood up. "Don't do this Third Uncle! You're still robust, and at the spring of your life! You are still in the prime of your life! So, there's no need to pass it on to me! I... I... don't wish to be the head of the family!"

"Impudence!" Jun Wu Yi glared and scolded, "Any Jun family descendent refusing to follow the orders of the Jun Family's head is considered insubordinate! Are you still going to do it, Jun Mo Xie?"

Jun Mo Xie blinked; he had no way out. He reluctantly took on the responsibility and said, "I know you're worried about tomorrow's battle, Third Uncle. So much so that you've even steeled yourself for death...! But, I've told you that I won't take that order. I'll only perform this duty for the time being. The title of the head of the house will revert to you if you come back safe and sound."

Jun Wu Yi smiled faintly and replied, "I'll leave that to you."

Jun Mo Xie had spoken the truth. Jun Wu Yi was expecting his death in the next day's battle. In fact, he didn't even have the slightest hope of surviving it. And, that worry had incited him to take that decision this evening. Therefore, he had decided to resolve those two issues.

Then, Jun Mo Xie took a solemn vow, and made that guarantee. Jun Wu Yi regarded his nephew's words as those of comfort. How could he take them to be anything else? He expected the other Xuan experts to fly off to the fight like a swarm of bees. This would leave him – the Commander-in-chief — alone in the open. In fact, they'd probably ignore his fate in the frenzy of this battle. The countless powerful Xuan Beasts would surely charge, and shred him to pieces in this situation!

Furthermore, it was to be expected that the Xue Hun Manor and

the Silver Blizzard City's experts would try something underhanded in the confusion of the melee. So, he would effectively have to face aggression from his enemies and his presumed-allies alike. And, he would have to do so with his Sky Xuan cultivation. Even a Spirit Xuan expert wouldn't be able to return alive if he were to face such a situation alone.

"Mo Xie, it'll be great if I can return safe and sound tomorrow. But, the Jun Family will rely on you if I die due to some misfortune." Jun Wu Yi spoke in a tranquil manner. "Your grandfather is very old now. So, you'll have to look after him. Moreover, we have negated Guan Qing Han's marriage. But, she's our family's daughter-in-law. No one shall be allowed to bully her; no matter how much time passes. It won't be a big deal if anyone who does so... dies for it!"

"Yes, I'll never forget it."

Jun Wu Yi let out a long sigh. Then, he looked distant... and very sentimental as he spoke... in fact, it seemed as if he was talking in his sleep, "Also, I have another thing to entrust you with. It is very important. If you ever go to the Silver Blizzard City and meet her... tell her these words I speak..." Jun Wu Yi suddenly stopped talking...

Jun Mo Xie listened to his uncle calmly, and didn't ask any questions. He knew who that 'her' Jun Wu Yi was referring to was. It was that pitiful woman who resided in the snowy peaks. The one who was suffering bitter hardships for his love... She was also the cause of the entirety of these calamities — Han Yan Yao.

However, the matter with Han Yan Yao was quite complicated in Jun Mo Xie's mind. This was because no tragedy would've occurred if it weren't for her. [You were the Young Lady of the Silver Blizzard City! Why did you go out to the secular world to amuse yourself? Why was there a need to lead my uncle on? Didn't you know that your marriage had been set since your childhood days?]

[Xiao Han's methods of handling things are extremely wretched. But, thinking from his point of view... which man would willingly allow himself to be cuckolded? What kind of a man would sit idly if his fiancée of ten years wanted to run away with an unfamiliar man? This matter would be unbearable for any man! Who wouldn't go mad because of it?

However, Jun Mo Xie also knew that no one could give a sermon on love; it was an unreasonable emotion. It could turn the wisest of men into fools if they were struck by it. Even two people who would stay guarded and restrained would form an intimate relationship. And, who could say why such a thing happens?

What could he say about love? He could see that Jun Wu Yi and Han Yan Yao had been suffering for ten years. And yet, they still held their silly love through those bitter hardships... even if they lived far apart. Couldn't something like this move an individual whose heart was made of stone?

Jun Mo Xie knew that there was a storm raging in his Third Uncle's heart with regards to that matter. And, that vivid experience was making him go through an emotional rollercoaster at the time.

The words that he was about to give him for Han Yan Yao were perhaps what Jun Wu Yi had felt for her over those years.

Jun Wu Yi gasped his breath out after a while. He was seemingly sighing. But, that sigh seemed to be related to his lingering attachments. The corners of his mouth rose as he displayed a mournful smile. Yet, it turned extremely tender and sweet as he slowly said, "The grudges are unforgettable, but so are you. I'm love-struck, but only for you. I may travel to hell, but I shall still keep a dream. This thought... shall remain immortal... in the realms of this world!"

Dugu Xiao Yi suddenly burst out crying, and started to choke on her tears.

Guan Qing Han's pretty face was also full of tears.

They knew of his past rather distinctly. And, hearing Jun Wu Yi state those words left them to shed tears of sadness. Those verses were enough to express how deep the love between Jun Wu Yi and Han Yan Yao was. The two women felt touched, and their hearts softened. They felt overwhelming sadness in their hearts at the state of his despair.

"The grudges are unforgettable, but so are you. I'm love-struck, but only for you. I may travel to hell, but I shall still keep a dream. This thought shall remain immortal in the realms of this world!"

[I still love you despite the tragedies that have happened. And, I am now going to hell for you. But, I still believe that I won't forget you... whether I go to heaven or hell. I will never forget you! This thought will remain with me forever.]

This was 'love unchanged by life or death'! Any other oath or pledge would pale in comparison to this love.

Jun Mo Xie's heart was suddenly shaken inside after he listened to those words spoken by his Third Uncle.

Those feelings of love and hate in his uncle's heart were strong and touching. That meagerly worded verse had admittedly made Jun Mo Xie realize that his uncle's love would remain unchanged and steady till death. But, he understood its other meaning as well...

"The grudges are unforgettable, but so are you." The grudges had been unexpectedly mentioned before the rest of the verse. The grudges were clearly central in Jun Wu Yi's mind. The grudges regarding the death of his two elder brothers, and two nephews had been nagging at his heart from the beginning.

He couldn't forget what had happened even if got 'her'! He simply couldn't forget it!

This was the biggest disease that had plagued his heart.



"I'll remember it. Rest assured, Third Uncle." He had originally planned to divulge his secret to Jun Wu Yi to make him feel relieved. He would at most have to weave another bunch of lies to cover-up. He would have said that his Mysterious Master and the Lord of Tian Fa were good friends... and so on...

However, he changed his mind after he realized those two meanings. Jun Wu Yi had steeled himself for death. And, this desire had already been rooted deeply in his heart. He would still feel ashamed even after he had gotten revenge for his brothers and nephews. He would still feel very guilty. In fact, he would still feel guilty if he got Han Yan Yao. This emotion would never allow him to be happy. He was destined to be tormented for the remainder of his life.

One could easily dispel others' torment. But, dispelling the torment at the depth of one's own heart was like bashing one's head against the wall; it couldn't be done.

It didn't matter if Jun Wu Yi remained a cripple for his entire life... or lived apart from his lover for the entirety of it without any chances of meeting her again. There would still be that unparalleled lifelong enmity, and it would continue to bore down upon Jun Wu Yi. In fact, it wouldn't even let him breathe. And, that was merely the external pressure. It couldn't compare to what he felt in the depths of his heart...

Every person in the Jun Family — whether it was Jun Zhan Tian or Jun Mo Xie — could only take pity on the Third Master Jun. Even the deceased Jun Wu Hui wouldn't ever blame his third younger brother. But, the only person in the Jun Family who didn't realize this... the only person who would never realize this... was Jun Wu Yi!

## Chapter 348: Don't Snatch My Husband!

---

Perhaps it had been foreordained by the underworld. Even the Gods must have pitied such an unfortunate man. This was a time of crisis, and danger lurked around every nook in the Southern Heaven City; a strong murderous intention prevailed in the vicinity. In fact, even a chance to make a close escape seemed bleak. Therefore, Jun Wu Yi was convinced that he would die, and that there was no hope for him. However, this danger had been pre-empted by Jun Mo Xie's mediation. And so, Jun Wu Yi would return unhurt.

In fact, Jun Wu Yi needn't even worry about a sneaky stab in the back. It was guaranteed that he'd be fine, and would return safe and sound.

However, the Third Master Jun didn't know about any of this. So, he was sure that he would die in the battle the following day. But, going through mortal danger, and surviving a near-death situation could possibly result in a huge change in his attitude. Therefore, this was perhaps an opportune turn of events. And, maybe it was better that he didn't know about these turn of events.

A person who dies, and is given a new lease on life would no longer harbor the same strong and inflexible aspiration to die. They would feel as if they owed something to life. Therefore, they would look at the future with a lot of enthusiasm, and wouldn't wish to part with life very easily anymore.

This was a subtle psychological phenomenon.

Jun Mo Xie had realized that his Third Uncle needed to feel that premonition of death. Therefore, he didn't say anything to dispel it. In fact, he even spoke a few words to stimulate him.

"Those grudges... what do you wish to speak about them, Third Uncle?" Jun Mo Xie asked.

[Third Uncle has anyway decided to go over a cliff. So, I might as well add some more fire to it. That'd help him to vent it out in a proper manner. He'll feel much more relaxed tomorrow since he'd have vented it all out.]

[Anyway, these high and dangerous cliffs have already been secured with excellent safety provisions.]

"What I wanted to say regarding those grudges is..." Jun Wu Yi gave him a profound look, "...that they will be avenged. But Mo Xie, you must promise me something. I won't be able to go with an easy heart if you don't."

"What is it? Please tell me, Uncle!" Jun Mo Xie replied.

"I know your strength has already far-exceeded my imagination. But, I still want you to promise that you won't try to take revenge before your strength has reached the level of a Supreme Master. You will consign the entirety of the Jun Family to damnation if you do so. The responsibility of the entire Jun Family rests on your shoulders now. You mustn't disappoint me by any means!"

Jun Wu Yi's eyebrows shot up. There was a lot of anguish on his face. He continued to speak with a deep sense of bitterness and hatred, "Jun Mo Xie, given your wit and talent... I'm sure that the day you take revenge isn't far. So, remember me — your Third Uncle — when you've become strong enough. I don't even wish for a dog or a chicken from the Xiao Family to survive! I desire the entirety of it to be consigned to eternal damnation!"

Jun Wu Yi gnashed his teeth. His usually calm and benevolent face looked very sinister and ruthless. It was justifiable to kill an enemy as per his morals. But, he had always believed in the principle that carrying out a vendetta against a woman or child was a crime. This was his usual belief. But, he had stated that he didn't even wish the dogs and the chickens to survive... he wanted damnation for all of them. His hatred for the Silver City's Xiao Family had already reached such extremes!

"I will, Uncle. The Xiao Family's destruction has been decided. It's like you said — that day isn't far," Jun Mo Xie also gnashed his teeth as he replied in a vicious manner. He then added, "You can go with peace of mind, Third Uncle."

Guan Qing Han wasn't happy to hear those words. Her face still had tear stains as her long and shapely eyebrows shot up. [Jun Mo Xie, you bastard... how could you say such a thing...?! What do you mean by "go with peace of mind"? What are you even saying?]

Even Dugu Xiao Yi was unhappy with it. She pouted her lips as she looked at Jun Mo Xie. Her expression was also ill-favored.

Jun Mo Xie raised his hand in surrender... [This matter has emotionally touched you women... but, I didn't risk the provocation of this matter. You think I would've tried to fabricate such a tense atmosphere? I wasn't prepared for this. And, who would be more worried about my uncle's safety than me?]

Jun Wu Yi then smiled, "Guan Qing Han, you're not the Jun Family's daughter-in-law anymore. But, will you be willing to be my Jun Family's daughter?"

"Third Uncle?" Guan Qing Han was startled, but her spirits lifted a bit. She had been feeling miserable due to the annulment of her marriage. This meant that she'd have to return to the household to the Guan Family. And then, she'd have to go to the Xue Hun Manor to keep them happy. She was willing to make this sacrifice since she didn't know what else she could do.

In contrast, she would have liked to face any suffering or loneliness at the Jun Family if she were given a choice. It was needless to say that she didn't wish to marry that scoundrel Li Teng Yun. Her loathing for him had increased a great deal when she heard him from behind the flaps some time ago. Merely glancing at such a scum had been very loathsome for her. So, what could one possibly say about the prospect of marrying him, and staying with him for a lifetime...?

Guan Qing Han listened to Jun Wu Yi, and realized that his original intention wasn't to have nothing to do with her. He was merely replacing the method to give her the Family's protection. She couldn't help but be extremely moved.

"Qing Han, I — Jun Wu Yi — would like to take you as my adopted daughter if you agree to it. I probably don't have long to live. But, Qing Han will still be considered a part of the Jun Family. And, any man will be repaid with a flood of blood by my Jun Family if he dares to wrong you. Even your birthing Guan Family shan't be an exception to this."

Jun Wu Yi snorted coldly after he said that.

Guan Qing Han's lips trembled. Her delicate body shuddered violently. However, she didn't hesitate as she slowly knelt, and knocked her forehead heavily on the ground. She then spoke, "Daughter Qing Han pays her respects to Godfather."

"Good! Good! Good!" Jun Wu Yi was extremely glad. He even exclaimed thrice. Then, he took out a jade pendant, and handed it to her. "Qing Han, your godfather is giving you this pendant. It is the symbol of the Jun Household. Take this, and remember that you're not only the daughter of the Guan Family anymore... but you're also the daughter of the Jun Family. So, the Guan Family will have to consult with our Jun Family regarding your marriage!"

Guan Qing Han took the jade pendant. The words "Qing Han is our descendant" were engraved on its smooth and glossy surface. Moreover, it had been done in Jun Zhan Tian's handwriting. So, it was obvious that this had been prepared well in advance. This entire matter wasn't something which had taken place in haste. Guan Qing Han seemed puzzled as she raised her head, and looked at Jun Wu Yi.

"Ha ha, this jade pendant had been commissioned by your grandfather a few years ago. Your grandfather had said then, 'Annul Guan Qing Han's marriage. She won't be the daughter-in-

law of our family once that happens. But, she'll be our daughter!' And, I'm fulfilling that old man's wish today." Jun Wu Yi chuckled and continued, "Qing Han, everyone could see your suffering. We wouldn't let you waste your entire life. And, no man will ever be allowed to shame you as long as even one man from the Jun Household lives!"

Jun Wu Yi let out a long sigh after he said that. He then continued, "Today has passed. And, there is that battle tomorrow. So, I don't know if I will see another day after that. Also... there isn't any need to tell you that... he he... ever since you joined the family... Mo Xie... he he... has acted a bit... but, you were constraint by your position as his elder sister-in-law. But, those worldly restrictions don't stop you two anymore..."

He gave a dry smile, and didn't speak further. However, his meaning was understood by the other three... as clear as day.

This had shocked the other three individuals to the extreme. The three hadn't understood Jun Wu Yi at first. But, he had then shot a quick and secretive glance at Dugu Xiao Yi after he had finished speaking.

[This is for you to decide Mo Xie. But, I can still give you a suggestion, right? Do you wish to let go of this beauty, or do you wish to light two firecrackers with one flame. You could kill two birds with one stone. But, that depends on what you choose... I probably won't be around to witness it anyway...]

[I've spoken these tabooed words today after great difficulty. And, I've lost all respect in your eyes as your Third Uncle! How could I have spoken something like this unless I had known that I wouldn't survive in tomorrow's battle? You're my elder brother's son. So, I've replaced him when it comes to taking control of the task of matchmaking for his son. But, to have targeted my dead nephew's woman as my living nephew's wife... and that too someone I've just adopted as a daughter... It's unpleasant to hear... no matter what else it might be. You must understand that saying

this was even harder than dying, okay?]

Jun Mo Xie looked at his uncle dumbfounded. [Third Uncle, you dug up this dredge for your nephew? You're thinking about this one day before the decisive battle? I don't admire you for the thoughts you harbor at the brink of your death. But, I do admire you for the courage to say them out loud!]

Guan Qing Han's entire body started to tremble. Her pretty face had turned red. The redness had also reached her neck. In fact, her tiny white earlobe was red as well; bright red. She felt extremely embarrassed as she shot accusatory stares to her side. Her mouth was opened as big as a hippopotamus as she glanced at Jun Mo Xie. But, she hung her head low after a moment.

Dugu Xiao Yi was standing beside them. It was like she had been struck by lightning. Her eyes were opened wide, and her lovely face had become deathly pale; no traces of blood were left in it.

[I'm being referred to as a witness, right? And heavens, I have witnessed! But, why do I feel that I will never witness marital bliss? What's this feeling called?]

The little girl started to worry about her personal gains and losses. And, she became extremely nervous thereafter. She looked at Guan Wing Han, and the look in her eyes changed. That benevolent and kind-hearted spirit of an elder sister had turned into a malevolent and frightening existence in a moment's time. [She wants to take my man away!]

Every matter was open for discussion; except for this one.

The little girl was furious. She rolled her eyes, and exerted the entirety of her strength to think of countermeasures.

Dugu Xiao Yi had been very delighted this entire time since she was the only one who knew of Jun Mo Xie's good personality. Everyone else regarded him as a lecher, hoodlum, bully, debauchee and a skirt-chaser.

The little girl had always felt very pleased with this fact. It was like someone was happy since they possessed a secret stash of treasure. She obviously couldn't speak that thought out loud. [Everyone would try to snatch him away if they got to know about it. Brother Mo Xie is mine! He's meant for me alone!]

Therefore, Dugu Xiao Yi had feelings of extreme tenderness towards Jun Mo Xie. She wanted to make him her own... and, as soon as possible! She knew that gold always finds a way to shine. So, she wouldn't be able to monopolize him if others found out about this. She wanted to keep him all to herself until he was no good for anyone else. [But, what is this old man saying...]

Princess Ling Meng had suddenly come up with that blood oath that day. The motive was different, but it had still startled Dugu Xiao Yi. However, she was very fortunate since Jun Mo Xie felt nothing for her. So, that was still an acceptable thing. There was another reason why Dugu Xiao Yi was determined to accompany Jun Mo Xie to the Southern Heaven City...

As the saying goes — 'those who strike first... gain the advantage'. It would've been too late if the Princess decided to get serious, and got the Emperor to sign an Imperial Decree for the marriage.

So, she had painstakingly formulated a plan to garner his affections. And, her plan required Guan Qing Han's assistance in order to enhance her chances of success. But, her plan was suddenly struck by thunder from the clear sky when she heard Third Uncle Jun refer to Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han as a couple. The hen had changed into a duck... the helper had transformed into a rival. This had resulted in her becoming worse-off than she had started. She had become the victim of her own ingenuity.

[How is this possible?]

"This won't do!" Dugu Xiao Yi started to get angrier with every passing moment. Her tiny chest started to fill with righteous



indignation as she thought about it. And then, she unexpectedly roared out loud. Her voice was loud and fierce. In fact, it was very fierce and very loud. It shook the entire tent, and buzzed as it echoed for a while.

The other three individuals were given a fright by her roar, and jumped startled before they looked at her.

Dugu Xiao Yi couldn't be shy in this moment. She scrambled and stepped forward. She then clutched Jun Mo Xie's arm, and declared, "He's mine, and mine alone! You can't snatch him away in marriage!"

Then, she suddenly felt wronged after she had spoken that. She then started to sob incessantly, and wept as she spoke, "I've been eyeing him for a long time. How can you snatch him away from me? He's mine, and mine alone! I won't let you take him away..."

## Chapter 349: The Hero Won't Be Alone!

---

Dugu Xiao Yi's tone was that of a child whose candy had been snatched away. Or... like that of a child who had been waiting under a tree for a fruit to ripen for half a year. But then, a two people suddenly come up, and take a look at the fruit... and start to discuss how to distribute the fruit amongst themselves while completely ignoring the waiting child.

[They've forgotten about me!]

She had been driven mad, and felt wronged.

Jun Wu Yi and the other two stared wide eyed, and broke into laughter almost at the same time. The actions of this little girl were too adorable. She had completely driven-off the heavy load on Jun Wu Yi's mind, and the embarrassment that Guan Qing Han had initially felt.

The three individuals were staring at her. So, Dugu Xiao Yi couldn't help but react. She pouted, and proclaimed whilst seething with rage, "Mine!"

She finished speaking, and realized that she had completely forgotten her manners. Not to mention that she and Jun Mo Xie weren't even engaged. And so, she was in no position to make such thoughtless remarks. Moreover, the Third Master Jun was most-probably approaching the end of his life. This was another reason for her to not make such a ruckus. Plus, she had done this while acting as a witness. So, she really shouldn't have done that at that point.

Moreover, were those words sure indicators of his marriage to his elder sister-in-law? She had also forgotten her status as the only daughter of the Dugu Family.

He little girl couldn't help her face turning red with embarrassment. She quickly released her hold on Jun Mo Xie's

arm. She bit her lip, and stood embarrassed for a bit. The little girl had no idea what she could do to remedy it.

The little girl opened her mouth, but didn't know what to say. Jun Wu Yi, Guan Qing Han and Jun Mo Xie didn't know what to do to smooth things over either. The three people had been shaken by the thunderous and valiant actions of the little girl, and hadn't yet recovered from it.

The four people stared at each other wide eyed for a while; it was a deadlock. Then, the little girl screeched like a bird. She then covered her face — which was now hot with embarrassment — and rushed out like she was being chased by a dog. And then, a loud "Thump!" was heard. Though, no one knew what she hit.

"Mo Xie... ha ha... you've got quite the charm. To draw the treasure of the Dugu Family to become jealous for your affection is quite exceptional!"

Jun Wu Yi smiled in a jubilant manner. Guan Qing Han may be undecided, but he could clearly see that the Dugu girl already had deep feelings for his nephew. He could obviously let go of any worry he might've had for his nephew's marriage. Moreover, one couldn't forget about the little girl's family background. The two families were well matched in terms of social status as well. The Emperor may be against their family. But, even the Emperor would have to consider his actions better if the Jun and the Dugu Family were connected by marriage. His nephew's good deeds had been harmonious. So, the Uncle would go to the otherworld with a smile... even if his body would turn into a bloody corpse the next day. The only thing was that... it was probably a tough scenario where he'd be able to drink at his nephew's wedding.

The Young Master Jun was also quite embarrassed. He opened his mouth several times to speak. But, he was unable to say even half a word. He genuinely didn't know when he had become that little girl's private property. He eventually had no choice but to spread his hands and shrug his shoulders. It looked like he would

cry as he forced a smile, and spoke-up with a lot of difficulty, "I look handsome... this isn't my problem... how can I be guilty?"

Guan Qing Han's felt her face turn cold again. She snorted, and stayed silent for a while. Then, her face suddenly became red. In fact, it had started to resemble a bright red cloud.

Jun Wu Yi smiled in an elated manner. He also felt that he hadn't acted with the dignity of the elder generation. More so since it involved his recently adopted daughter... He smiled in an awkward manner, and waved his hands as he spoke, "You go back. I wish to think about tomorrow's battle in silence."

Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han looked at each other, and retreated. The Young Master Jun wanted to say something to Guan Qing Han, but she disappeared without a shadow as they went out of the tent since the expression on her face had become even more shy and anxious.

Jun Mo Xie let out a long sigh, and looked up at the moon in the sky. He then assumed an annoying and narcissistic attitude. Then, he lowered his head, and spoke in a coquettish and muffled manner, "I'm able to make such beauties fall for me. My spotless personality makes beautiful women blush. These women wish to elope with me." He walked forward, and returned to his tent while continually narrating narcissistic accounts of himself on the way.

Inside the tent...

Jun Wu Yi flicked his sleeve, and extinguished the lights inside the tent. The tent went pitch black. The soft moonlight started to come in after a while. The wicks of the recently extinguished candles still glowed orange. A slight smoke still rose from them... only to dissipate in the air above.

The black clothed Jun Wu Yi's silhouette slowly got concealed in the darkness. But, it remained motionless...

The three Dongfang brothers put their hands on their swords

while they stood outside. They remained motionless, and didn't utter a single word. They had decided to accompany their younger brother in silence.

That night was perhaps the last night of Jun Wu Yi's life... the Third Master Jun's last night amongst the living! Their blood-brother was going to go far into the netherworld. He would then be away from those who were close to him. But, the hero wouldn't be lonely when he was at the end of the road.

[We will keep him company!]

Guan Qing Han stood not too far from Jun Wu Yi's tent. Tears flowed down her beautiful face in silence. She stood there motionless, and didn't dare to utter a word.

[Uncle... Godfather, you won't be alone tonight.]

Her first evening as his daughter might've also been her last evening as one...

The entire field was quiet. A group of soldiers came from the Tian Xiang's army. They wore helmets, and were 'armored and armed to the teeth'. They stood tall and straight like pikes outside the tent in an orderly formation. They were real men, and their eyes had a fervent feel to them. So much so that everyone tried their best to reduce the sound of their breathing...

These men had come to fight a battle. So, they could've been asked to throw-away their lives in the process. But, the commander of their army had chosen to sacrifice only his own self.

[The Commander will go to battle tomorrow.]

[But, we will keep him company tonight!]

[The Commander shouldn't be alone! The hero shouldn't be alone!]

The Blood General was an Idol for the army. This illustrious name was engraved in the military men's hearts like his elder

brother Jun Wu Hui's name was — the White Commander! They had become immortal in their hearts!

And so had their achievements...

The Legend of the Blood General's achievements!

The beautiful and serene moonlight slowly rose and spread throughout the sky. It splendidly bathed the mountains and forests surrounding the Southern Heaven City. However, no one knew how many men's blood would spill in the battle the next day.

A faint silhouette suddenly swept in-and-out of the tent, and disappeared into the air... in fact, it seemed as if it had melted into it. The three Spirit Xuan Dongfang brothers had been station close by. They could faintly feel that something had moved above their heads. However, they were stunned to find no trace of anything...

Jun Wu Yi was in the tent. He had also noticed it very faintly. But, he didn't care; he didn't care at all.

It might've been a top assassin who had been sent to kill him. But, what's the worse that could've happened even then? He was already going down the road to the underworld and his demise the next day. So, what was the big deal?

Therefore, he didn't care about it.

And, the others weren't even aware of the traces of that movement.

Jun Mo Xie finally dazzled past the last person he wanted to save in the battle, and returned the small bottle back inside his pocket. [I hope Long Crane's bottle works. I'll have to work against a strong tide to save everyone if it doesn't.]

[But, wouldn't it be a nice surprise if Third Uncle returns safe and sound when he's expected to be done for?]

The glowing moon eventually set, and the east gradually became brighter.

The light of dawn has always followed darkness.

Jun Wu Yi slowly stood up. Then, he took two steps, and hesitantly sat down on his wheelchair. His legs had become fine by now. The movement and skills he hadn't been able to employ for the past ten years had been restored. But, he couldn't show it to everyone else at that point of time since it would mean endless trouble for his Jun Family if he did. Therefore, he would have to close his eyes and die with a contented heart in this manner only!

[The outcome will anyway be the same since I'm faced with such high-level Xuan Beasts. I will die one way or the other. So... what's the use of creating unnecessary accusations and troubles for my family...]

He slowly turned his wheelchair. Then, he motioned with his right hand. And, the ancestral sword flew through the air, and came to his hand. He opened the flaps and went out. But, something happened outside. This left him startled. In fact, it had given him a bit of a fright.

Even the usually calm and collected Jun Wu Yi was scared by the terrifying scene outside.

The Dongfang brothers were standing outside. They had been waiting for Jun WU Yi. Dangfang Wen Qing smiled as he quickly walked behind him, and started to push the wheelchair. There was a huge crowd on both the sides. Nearly 20,000 officers and men were stationed on the two sides. They stood silently in an orderly manner. They looked at him with reverence as their eyes redden with emotions.

Jun Wu Yi's eyes also somewhat redden as he said, "What's all this? Everyone ought to leave. It's not like we're parting forever! So, why all this?"

No one moved an inch. What 'not parting forever'? They knew everything!

Jun Wu Yi was silent for a while. His eyes looked at each and every familiar face on his sides. The Commander's expression was complicated. His expression then became steady as he softly commanded, "The men who shall go to war today — step forward!"

Three-hundred men stood out in an orderly manner at Jun Wu Yi's command. There were a few who hesitated a bit at first. But, they finally refused to turn back, and fell into formation. So, there was now a large square behind Jun Wu Yi.

Dongfang Wen Qing slowly pushed the wheelchair, and the three-hundred men behind them followed after with large strides. They were moving away when a loud shout interrupted their procession, "Wait!"

Jun Mo Xie had a solemn expression on his face as he waved his hand, "How can we not have wine when we send-off the brave heroes of Tian Xiang to war?! I have the best quality wine to match the occasion! Mo Xie wishes the gentlemen a safe and prosperous battle, and hopes that everyone returns in glory!"

Someone appeared from behind Jun Mo Xie; this individual held a wine jar. Others appeared and handed cups to everyone. Then, the wine was poured into everyone's cups.

There was a sense of regret in the depth of Jun Mo Xie's eyes. He may have had some conflict with a few of those men, but they now stood resolutely behind his uncle. Moreover, they stood with pride even though they knew that they were about to die. In fact, not a single one of them had cowered.

That was sufficient to earn Jun Mo Xie's respect.

They stood unchanged in the face of such adversity — whether they had been good men or bad. And, this made them heroes! In fact, only such a man can be called a Hero!

Heroes don't have good or bad personalities!

[But, I'm sorry! I could've saved you! It would've been easy for



me. But, I can't do it! People must die in a battle. Even more so in a battle we're about to lose...]

[For Third Uncle's sake... For Jun Family's sake — I can't save you!]

[I'm sorry!]

# Chapter 350: Internal Strife

---

Jun Mo Xie raised his wine cup, and drained it with closed eyes. He remembered a poem and couldn't help but sing, "What is today's death? It's tough to fight the battles of life. This is just the plot of the deceased from the past. The Kings of Hell beheads many a banners!"

Then, there was a "BANG!"... Jun Mo Xie had thrown his cup down. His body appeared tall and lofty as he sat atop his horse, and declared, "It's needless to say that the families of you three-hundred men will be taken care of by the Jun Family from now. Whether in their old age... or their marriage... they can count on our family as long as a Jun still lives! I — Jun Mo Xie — won't allow a single one of them to be wronged!"

"Many thanks, Young Master Jun! We will return this favor from the Jun Family in the next life!" The faces of all the three-hundred men were grateful. They had steeled themselves for the decisive battle. But, not only because of the lofty and heroic Jun Wu Yi... but because of martial law as well! Their parents, their children, their wives... their entire families would suffer from the stigma of their cowardly reputation if they became scared in face of battle. So, they had to keep their head up. The situation was extremely difficult, but they simply couldn't refute.

However, they were afraid of dying in the end. The great and towering heroes may have met their fates with dignity... and without any complaints since ancient times. But, they hadn't necessarily desired to die. And, it was the same for those ordinary men at this moment.

However, they felt like they were going to die for a "bosom friend" when they heard Jun Mo Xie speak! They knew that they would die in the decisive battle ahead. And, they couldn't help but wonder about their families in this moment. However, the person they had looked at with the most dislike had become the source of

their comfort. And, his solemn promise had left them to feel relieved.

What does a man live his life for? For whose sake does he toil and labor so hard? What does he fight those bloody battles for? He does it for his parents, wife and children. The thoughts of glory and wealth take a back seat... especially before a final battle to the death.

The only thing they felt anxious about was the family they were leaving behind. But, Jun Mo Xie had promised to deal with the issue. They were unaware that he had made that decision due to the feeling of guilt. But, they still felt assured.

They would face death with a peaceful mind!

The three-hundred men then took a knee, and drained their cups. Then, they gave Jun Mo Xie a profound look before they got up to their feet. They then went their way... without turning... or even looking back.

"This is just the plot of the deceased from the past. The Kings of Hell beheads many a banners!" Jun Wu Yi laughed and continued, "This is a good poem. There are indeed countless of my good brothers there!"

Then, he ordered in a low voice, "Move!"

Twenty-thousand cavalry men dismounted, kneeled, and spoke in unison, "We pay great respects to the commander! May he return safely, and with glory!"

"May he return safely, and with glory!" these words made Jun Wu Yi's body stiff. But, he didn't turn to look. The three Dongfang brothers' bodies were straight as a ramrod as they slowly pushed his wheelchair forward...

Faint sobs could be heard behind them. The twenty-thousand kneeling soldiers couldn't get up.

The Southern Heaven City's war banners fluttered.

A force of four-thousand was silently waiting at the city gates in formation. Jun Wu Yi was on his wheelchair; he looked tranquil. Whether he would live or died... was irrelevant. He had already disregarded the thoughts of his life and death.

Xiao Han and the others also stood in formation. They gave Jun Wu Yi a meaningful look. Their clever trick had succeeded. So, they looked complacent at the moment. That thorn in the back wouldn't be so lucky that day... no matter what! They needn't act themselves since this plot had worked in the coy of the most legitimate excuse. He would now be forced to go into danger, and wouldn't return from this road!

Li Jue Tian, Solitary Falcon, Lei Wu Bei, Shi Chang Xiao, Feng Juan Yun stood not too far from there. Those five men looked into the distant from their side. Li Teng Yun and the others from every powerful family stood behind them as spectators of the battle. Each individual had a differed expression on their face. They obviously had different thoughts going through their minds.

"Are the odds of today's battle genuinely unknown?" Feng Juan Yun graced black clothes, black hair and black scabbard on his body. He stood as straight as a javelin as he looked at the tranquil Jun Wu Yi who was at the head of the formation. He felt sorry in his heart. [Such an excellent man of his generation will die before my eyes, and I still can't do a thing to help!]

"There's no scope of any odds!" Solitary Falcon's face was gloomy. And, his eyes had hint of anger that was already teetering on the edge of fury. He was on the verge of exploding. He had never harbored an iota of respect for Li Jue Tian. But, his resentment towards that man had reached a point of extremity at this juncture. That day was the first time that these two men who had been rivals for half their lives — Solitary Falcon and Feng Juan Yun — were of the same opinion.

Shi Chang Xiao stood on the side. He also had an expression of eventuality on his face. Lei Wu Bei stood stoned face. And, Li Jue

Tian stood with his hands behind his back. His expression was tranquil. But, he was brimming with the arrogance. This showed his belief that only he reigned unbridled and supreme.

Li Jue Tian regarded himself as impervious; other people's point of view didn't matter to him. [I will decide whether my way of handling things is brilliant or dishonorable! I will take out anyone who refuses me! Even if you're a Great Master of equal fame... it doesn't matter to me! I'll fix you the moment you dare open your mouth! The clenched fist is the strongest argument!]

Feng Juan Yun sighed.

He suddenly became determined to become the strongest Great Master. The man couldn't understand this strange feeling. But, he was sick of Li Jue Tian's conduct. [In what way is his bearing that of the second strongest man in the world? He's overbearing when he hides his flaws, and acts in a tyrannical manner! There isn't a single good thing about him... except for his earth-shattering strength!]

Moreover, Feng Juan Yun couldn't tolerate the collaboration between the Xue Hun Manor and the Silver Blizzard City in this matter. [How could they decide to settle personal grudges at such a critical point of time?]

[You are aware that this battle will decide the future interactions between the Xuan experts of this continent and the Tian Fa forest! Yet... you're conspiring at such an important juncture to entrap that man into leading the troops. Moreover, you're even rushing to save your own high-ranking members! Where is your conscience? Where's your morality?]

[Moreover, Li Jue Tian and the Silver Blizzard City have enough power to individually retreat to safety if the Xuan Beasts win this war against the humans. But, the lives of millions of the general public will be in grave danger if this uprising makes its way to the inland!]

[It will be a huge calamity! This Li Jue Tian and the other Spirit Xuan experts can't see it? The Silver Blizzard City may retreat to the top of the mountains, and distance itself from everything. But, it can't hope to stay away from the outside world eternally!]

Feng Juan Yun was a lone and free swordsman. But, his cold exterior hid a warm heart, and a chivalrous personality. He didn't indulge in crafty plots. Nor did he use his strength to bully the weak. Such lowly tricks and schemes weren't fit for a hero in his mind. He couldn't tolerate them at all.

[What's the point of being a Great Master if one has such a temperament? Wouldn't the name of the Great Masters be blackened if we lose this war, and this catastrophe travels thousands of miles inland? How will we shed this infamy off? How will the Great Master rise to fame after this?]

"How would I know the odds of life and death in this battle? Oh.... just let those four-thousand go fight, and risk their lives? What can we do, right? So, let's just look at the drama, right?"

Feng Juan Yun sneered and continued, "I came from afar to help in the fight for the Southern Heaven City! Even the common folk around the world have lent their strength. And, the Xue Hun Manor has only sent its henchmen. Why don't you send me to fight? You have only sent some Sky and Earth Xuan experts. What's the use of that?"

He was a proud man, and had already endured a lot. But, he couldn't endure it any longer at that point. In fact, this man would've spoken candidly even if he were in front of the Emperor.

"What is the use... I'm afraid that isn't for you to decide, Feng Juan Yun. And, my Xue Hun Manor can't use a high-level expert like yourself in place of a lackey!"

Li Jue Tian crossed his hands behind his back. He didn't even turn as he softly spoke, "Brother Feng can voluntarily leave if he finds this unpleasant or wrong. And, he's wholly welcome if he

feels that I have been mistaken, and feels like teaching me a lesson for it!"

"I don't have the capability to teach Great Master Tian. I know this." Feng Juan Yun replied coldly, "I don't wish to teach you a lesson." His meaning had been clearly implied in his words... 'I will have to go looking for my teeth if I attacked you.'

"Feng Juan Yun, I respect you as a Great Master! But, you're still not happy with what you've got! Who do you think you are? Who do you think this is? Since when did you have the guts to be so unreasonable in front of my father?" Li Teng Yun stomped his foot, and shouted from behind.

Feng Juan Yun's expression became as cold as ice.

"Bang!" Li Teng Yun went flying, and somersaulting. His face had swollen.

"You impudent bastard! Are you calling Feng Juan Yun's name into question?" Two figures had flitted into action. But, the attack had been the Solitary Falcon's doing. He was the only one who could catch up to Feng Juan Yun's speed in that gathering.

He had seen Feng Juan Yun's hand move, and had understood the discouraging outcome of it. Therefore, he rushed to slap Li Teng Yun first. In fact, he had already struck Li Teng Yun by the time Feng Juan Yun's hand reached the top his sword's hilt.

Who was Feng Juan Yun? Was he someone Li Teng Yun could insult? Li Teng Yun was the son of the second Great Master. But, he was like an ant in Feng Juan Yun's eyes. Jun Mo Xie would've perhaps used an ancient poem to describe Feng Juan Yun, "Kill a man every ten steps. And, no one will be left after a thousand miles."

No one in this world would've been able to save Li Teng Yun if Feng Juan Yun's hand had reached his sword's hilt unless the Solitary Falcon hadn't moved into action. Even Li Jue Tian

couldn't have helped his own son! Feng Juan Yun had the strength of a Great Master once he had his sword in his hand. No other sword could've saved Li Teng Yun if he had attacked.

Solitary Falcon took action, and taught Li Teng Yun a lesson. He not only saved the boy's life in doing so, but he also saved Feng Juan Yun's life. After all, Li Jue Tian would've chased him around to kill him if he had killed Li Teng Yun. Then, Feng Juan Yun's life would've ended as well.

The trade would've ended with Feng Juan Yun life for Li Teng Yun's. But, that lowlife scoundrel wasn't worth it!

Solitary Falcon and Feng Juan Yun had been fighting each other for decades, but had slowly recognized each other's worth over the years. They had become natural friends as a result; despite the fact that they were rivals. Therefore, it was only natural for Solitary Falcon to diffuse the situation in his stead.

The other person who had moved into action was Shi Chang Xiao; contrary to what everyone would've expected. He had thought of the same thing that the Solitary Falcon had. In fact, he had gone one step further. The alliance would've collapsed if two Great Masters were to start fighting against each other. It wouldn't bode well for the mainland's sake if the allied forces were to witness an internal strife, and collapse as a result. It was just that Shi Chang Xiao was a step behind the Solitary Falcon in terms of speed.



## Chapter 351: Wrongly Accusing Li Jue Tian

---

Feng Juan Yuan coldly looked at the Solitary Falcon. He then turned to Li Teng Yun, and spoke in a cold voice once the boy had fallen to the ground, "You must learn who you can offend, Li Teng Yun. You are lucky. I would kill those who provoke me... even if they're the Emperor's relatives! I haven't killed you for the sake of your father's reputation. More so... because I couldn't ignore my friendly relations with the Second Great Master...!"

"Feng Juan Yun, you are truly very mighty!" Li Jue Tian finally turned and spoke-up. He didn't hide the killing intention in his eyes as he looked at Feng Juan Yun with a cold stare. Shi Chang Xiao and Lei Wu Bei moved forward to mediate the situation. [Do you have to renew your fighting when we're faced with such a formidable enemy?]

Feng Juan Yun didn't back-off either. He returned the stare, and pressed on his word. Then, a cold smile escaped the corners of his mouth after a while as he spoke while he shook his head, "It seems that I shouldn't have come today." Then, he turned around and continued, "This Feng bids goodbye to everyone for now."

His figure flew into the air as he finished speaking. Then, his stern voice resounded from mid-air, "Jun Wu Yi! We will drink wine and talk freely if you survive this day! I — Feng Juan Yun — see your tragedy and helplessness. I wish good fortune to the Jun Family for the days to come, but bid my goodbye for now!"

The echoes of his voice hadn't subsided when his body suddenly moved, and a bright sword light shot out from him. Feng Juan Yun's body shot out like a comet along with that light, and disappeared without a trace. However, he left one lingering sneer behind, "Silver Blizzard City, Xue Hun Manor... their reputations are great, but they're nothing beyond that! He he..."

His voice echoed throughout the valley, "But, they're nothing..."

but, they're nothing..."

Jun Wu Yi looked up from his position at the front of the battle formation. His cold and lofty expression was suffused with a hint of warmth as he looked at the brilliant sword light in the sky.

"Many thanks." Jun Wu Yi spoke lightly... as if he was talking to himself. His heart was flooded with warmth. He had realized that 'justice' did exist in this world. And, that good people also existed in society.

However, this event had instantly made Li Jue Tian's calm face turn ashen.

He looked his son's swollen face; blood was flowing out of his mouth. And then, he looked at Solitary Falcon and Shi Chang Xiao. They also had displeased expressions on their faces. Then, he asked with resentment, "May I venture to ask the two Great Masters if they too believe that this behaviour was 'inappropriate'?"

"Do you genuinely believe that your scheming in this matter is in accordance to heaven's will, and will be considered as reasonable? Do you actually believe that it's some sort of majestic justice?" Solitary Falcon rolled his eyes. He continued with anger, "Li Jue Tian, can't you tell the right from the wrong despite being the Second Great Master?"

"Who in this world dares to say that this old man is confusing himself between the right and the wrong?" A light flashed in Li Jue Tian's eyes as he gave the Solitary Falcon a severe look, "Solitary Falcon, don't forget that this old man has only one son! I'm willing to make the entire world my enemy to accomplish his desires!"

"Ha ha! Where was this heroic spirit of yours when you were facing that 'Venerable Mei' a few days ago? I've heard that your son is the main reason behind this debacle. Do you dare to deny it? Oh, and he's your only son, ah? Did it ache your heart when this old man smacked your son, and sent him rolling on the ground? True, I did do it. But, the palm of my hand saved his life in reality.

Otherwise, the Li Family would've never been able to continue its bloodline! So, why aren't you rushing to show this old man your immense gratitude?"

Solitary Falcon's straightforward temperament resurfaced. He straightened his neck, and narrowed his eyes as he ridiculed in a sharp manner by disregarding everything else. He genuinely hadn't held back by even though he had confronted Li Jue Tian.

He didn't flinch... even though he knew that he was no match for Li Jue Tian. Then, he pointed at Jun Wu Yi, and turned his head as he spoke, "Li Jue Tian, your son is a son. But, have others' sons cropped out of stone? Those four-thousand men whose lives you're throwing away are also father to their children, and sons to their mothers. They will turn to bones after their death; just like your son! His flesh will also smell like theirs in death! So, what's the point of pampering your son like this?"

The Cold-Blooded Master Lei Wu Bei's face turned cold as he spoke-up, "You're arguing over such trivial things when the matter has already gotten to this point? This joke isn't funny anymore! We're damned to die at this rate, but we mustn't die here. However, do you think that we can survive if you guys keep causing internal disputes like this? This old man had eleven disciples a few days back; I had trained them in stealth. But, eight of them have died due to some unfathomable mystery, and I haven't even been able to determine their killer yet. Shouldn't I also be heading over to a different place to seek my revenge if I were to take advice from your theories?"

Shi Chang Xiao also restrained his anger, and tried to calm things down. Li Jue Tian hadn't taken note of it, but Shi Chang Xiao was a respected and responsible entity in his native country. But, he had come over to this side of the border for the well-being of the common people. Shi Chang Xiao had never considered himself a good man, but he was surely amongst the best of them in this prevailing scenario; Shi Chang Xiao had rushed over to assist the

Xue Hun Manor. Li Jue Tian's words were very unreasonable, but he knew that this wasn't the time for 'infighting'.

Solitary Falcon was equally annoyed. [Damn it! I took action for Feng Juan Yun's sake. But, I still saved your son's life in the end. You should be grateful to me; you should erect a stone tablet in thanks. Yet, you have this storm of evil ideas in your head! Where's the justice in this?]

[Do you think that you can bully me because I rank last in the list? Do you think I'm so weak that you can 'daddy me around' like that? I admit that you're stronger than me. But, I have my speed. Do you think that you could even catch-up with me in case you decided to kill me?]

The first-rate experts of the Spirit Xuan realm — like Xiao Bu Yu — also went forward to mediate the situation. The four Great Masters eventually snorted in a heavy manner, and turned away.

The Solitary Falcon was very fretful. He knew that Li Teng Yun was the main reason behind this entire debacle. But, he couldn't understand why Jun Mo Xie had stopped him from going into battle alongside Jun Wu Yi. He didn't get how Jun Mo Xie had such assurance even though the Great Master himself was extremely perturbed by this. Therefore, the Great Master had no choice but to look around from time to time for a trace of Jun Mo Xie...

The Solitary Falcon had no intention to participate in this matter; he had already received Jun Mo Xie's warning.

It was just that the Young Master Jun had flown off to somewhere, and no one knew his whereabouts...

Then, a dark cloud rose from the depths of the Tian Fa forest as numerous flying Xuan Beasts quickly made their way forward. Then, a thunderous sound was heard from the ground as terrestrial Xuan Beasts rushed ahead. None who listened to this rumbling sound could tell the number of Xuan Beasts that were a part of this charging army. However, the enormous prestige and

the impetus of this charge was enough to frighten the entirety of Tian Xiang.

There was a burst of sudden fluctuation in the air as something broke at the speed of sound to greet them. It was Jun Mo Xie flying like a comet with the help of his Yin Yang Escape...

Then, a somewhat hoarse and broken voice pierced the air, "Are you ready, Li Jue Tian?"

A small black spot appeared in the sky along with that echo. It suddenly became bigger as a mysterious person — completely shrouded in black — suddenly flew over at lightning speed, and stopped thirty meters in front of them. In fact, this figure had stopped in a steady manner at that spot in mid-air.

Merely being able to stop at a precise spot after having attained such speed would've made anyone stomp the table and shout praises. However, this person had actually done so at an exact spot in the air, and that too in a single burst of deceleration. The level of Xuan efficacy required for such a display had left everyone flabbergasted.

"Venerable Mei!" Li Jue Tian cupped his hands, and saluted along with the other three Great Masters. "I trust you've been well since we last met!"

Respecting the genuine apex expert of the world would always be inevitable and reasonable in any setting.

However, Li Jue Tian could've never expected that those words of his' were about to incite an extreme reaction from the other side... a reaction that would be as explosive as the eruption of a volcano!

"I trust you've been well since we last met." These words weren't rude in their make as far as a generalized context was concerned. So, Li Jue Tian's words weren't technically a problem from a generalized point of view. However, they had meant something

entirely different to Venerable Mei — "You look like you've just recovered from a sickness!"

Venerable Mei had an extremely high cultivation. Yet, their body shuddered, and they suddenly dropped in mid-air when they heard the words, "I trust you've been well since we last met." The mysterious person was quickly able to stabilize their body, and was able to come to rest in the air soon enough. But, they had still dropped at least three meters.

The mysterious individual clenched their teeth and spoke, "Is that all you could find to say, Li Jue Tian? Three days have passed since we last spoke, and all you have to offer is, 'I trust you've been well since we last met?' I think you that don't have a brain inside that big head of yours. Or perhaps it's gone rotten. Maybe it's just full of tofu! Can't you practice using your brain once in a while? How shameless! You're a disgraceful bastard! Why don't you go to hell...?!"

This peerless expert had unexpectedly replied to others' greetings by thoughtlessly throwing abuses at them. No one could comprehend this action.

Li Jue Tian had spiralled into a maddening depression owing to excessive rage.

[Fu\*k! Didn't I only ask, 'I trust you've been well since we last met?' Why should I be held guilty for that? This one is impervious to reasoning! This person reacted like something had exploded up their buttocks! I'm still the Second Great Master no matter what! But, this one didn't leave even a single shred of honor for me, and directly discarded all pretence of cordiality in public! How can this shrew behave in such a manner? Venerable...? Bullsh\*t venerable!]

How could Li Jue Tian endure such humiliation in public given his status? So, he asked with a cold expression, "Venerable Mei... seems to be quite angry today... don't you think... that you're being too rude?"

"Li Jue Tian, you disgraceful bastard! Do you know that you're talking to your senior? Don't you know the difference between senior and junior?!" Venerable Mei's voice became extremely sharp... like that of a cat whose tail has been stepped on.

This person wasn't someone without good self-restraint. But, it was just that Li Jue Tian was having a bad day. Li Jue Tian's words had been comprehended by this venerable individual in a completely different meaning owing to the guilty conscience that this individual carried from their recent encounters.

The Venerable Mei had associated these words to the greatest humiliation they had suffered since birth...

This was like a situation... a poem had once spoken about, "One can do whatever they want, but even the water from every river in the world isn't enough to wash away the shame of a person's heart."

Venerable Mei's heart would nearly burst when they remembered that embarrassing event from the day-before. Their blood would rush against the stream into their brain. And, they would be left to seethe with anger.

[The vile, nasty, and horrible things that shameless man repeatedly did to me... only because I couldn't utter a word! This Li Jue Tian must know of it, right? Otherwise, why would he suddenly act so differently even though only three days have passed since we last met? He must've meant to poke fun at me!]

This was obviously Venerable Mei's personal psychological issue. How could Li Jue Tian know about what had happened in the forest that day? This was a 'muddle' from the start!

However, Venerable Mei obviously hadn't realized this. Therefore, Venerable Mei became increasingly furious as they saw Li Jue Tian's expression become more and more ill-tempered. In fact, Venerable Mei had soon started to gnash their teeth. [You think you can just poke fun at me?]

[This Li Jue Tian must've fallen into fungi earlier in his life!]

As far as Li Jue Tian was concerned... he had been wronged with a mountain-worth of baseless accusations in front of the entire army that entire day. Particularly this time! He had been charged with crimes he hadn't committed, and had been detained on baseless grounds like a common criminal. It could be assumed that it would start to snow in the month of June if Li Jue Tian were to die at the hands of Venerable Mei over this matter... the snowflakes would perhaps be heavens' way of offering tears of sympathy to the poor man!

It was extremely unjust!



# Chapter 352: A Frantic Battle

---

The Lord of Tian Fa was acting crazy, and had a sinister air about themselves. The shrouded person desperately wanted to wage a war. Meanwhile, Big Bear was leading his squad of terrestrial Xuan Beasts on to charge forward.

Then suddenly, a soft voice spoke to his ears out of nowhere, "Big Bear, you will lead the first play in today's battle?"

Big Bear was surprised at first. He felt that there was someone right beside him. It was as if this individual were talking to him while walking with him... as if they were right next to his ear. But, he couldn't even see a shadow of anyone's figure beside him.

However, Big Bear could feel that it was Jun Mo Xie who was walking besides him. It was only that he couldn't see him. The Xuan Beast King almost laughed as the corners of his mouth drew back. He couldn't help but sigh after he had identified who the speaker of these words was. [A supremely skilled expert is a supremely skilled expert! How many people in this world can use such an astonishing method?]

He replied in a respectful tone, "Yes, the Lion King, the Tiger King and I are going to lead today's battle. So, Lion, Tiger and Bear Xuan Beast Kings will lead our forces to battle against Southern Heaven City!"

"Uhh, I've sprinkled the powder you had given me on five people," Jun Mo Xie chuckled and continued, "Pay attention, and don't mistake their identities."

"Of course." Big Bear thought that there was something wrong with the mysterious senior. [Isn't he being a bit too verbose today? And, how could we make a mistake?] What he didn't know that Jun Mo Xie was quite anxious. So, he was acting a bit off.

Then, Big Bear suddenly felt a cool sensation as pure Qi entered

his body through the mysterious seniors'. It cycled through his body once, and left him to feel extremely comfortable. The injuries his meridians had sustained due to Li Jue Tian's 'Elusive Heart and Vein Splitting Sword Attack' had suddenly healed. He couldn't help but become overjoyed. So, he spoke-up in an extremely gratefully tone, "Many thanks, senior!"

Big Bear's injury was originally quite serious. However, the Lord of Tian Fa had treated him, and had improved his condition to near normal. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie's aura had acted like the 'right medicine at the right time'. And, it had completely cured his injury. Moreover, Big Bear had taken that ten years' dan. So, his cultivation had grown rather significantly.

He looked to his right as he heard the voice speak again, "The circumstances of those five people are far from encouraging in today's battle. They face danger from your side. And, they also face danger from their allies! There are many amongst their allies who will try to fire cold arrows at the backs of these five men. I will entrust that matter to you. Not a single one of those five individuals should be harmed in any way!"

"Please don't worry Senior. I will do everything in my power... even if I have to put my own body on the line!" Big Bear vigorously thumped his chest.

"Good! I'm relieved if that's the case! You don't need to show any mercy to the rest; especially to the people of the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor!" Jun Mo Xie laughed softly and concluded, "I will leave now."

Big Bear looked around in a daze. But, he couldn't spot anything. The Beast King would've thought that he had only dreamt of this encounter if it weren't for that comfortable feeling that had arisen from the healing of his internal injuries.

Jun Mo Xie had left using the Yin-Yang Escape. He had then crossed paths with Long Crane. He had exhorted him in a similar

manner. Then, he used the Yin-Yang Escape, and returned after he felt satisfied.

[That ought to settle everything.]

Jun Mo Xie had gained a lot in these last two days. However, he still felt quite sullen. Li Jue Tian had shielded his son. He had openly and shamelessly entrapped Jun Wu Yi. And, the Silver Blizzard City had only added the fuel to the flames. Moreover, the rest of the powerful families had simply agreed to everything. These things had made Jun Mo Xie extremely angry.

[Would my uncle be in such a situation if it weren't for their scheming? It has become difficult for him to escape death! And, this has happened when we've brought our forces to help the Xue Hun Manor! This matter has gone beyond despicable — it has become obscene!]

[You're being so heartless. So, don't blame me for any devilish injustice! I have a strong backing from the Tian Fa forest! You people will lose much more than you stood to gain if you're not careful with your schemes! You think our Jun Family can be bullied that easily?]

[Li Jue Tian and Li Teng Yun... I will prepare such a big surprise for you father-son pair that you will wish you were dead!]

.....

Venerable Mei and Li Jue Tian were in a violent fit of rage at that moment. Shi Chang Xiao hurriedly stepped forward in a brave manner. He then smiled and said, "It looks like Venerable Mei isn't in a good mood today. He he... there's no harm in taking rest for a while. We can continue to talk later in the evening after we've all taken a short break."

The Master of Life and Death had spoken those words since he had realized that Venerable Mei must've had an unforeseen accident at that day. [But, his words were too excessive. You

shouldn't have showered down these maddened abuses at him in front of his son even if he weren't the Second Greatest Master!]

[There's a saying, "Respect is as important to a man as bark is to the tree." You may be the greatest expert in the world. But, you can't bully someone so openly! Can't you see that this senior master is so angry that his lips have turned green? He has nearly become breathless with rage...]

However, the event had turned into a very dramatic one. Li Jue Tian had relied on his superior cultivation a moment ago, and had acted in a bossy and domineering manner with the Solitary Falcon and Feng Juan Yun. In fact, he had chided them. But, the roles had been reversed. And, the one being chided in a bossy and domineering manner was now Li Jue Tian himself...

The Solitary Falcon was smiling. In fact, he had beamed with joy as he had heard this. [You can be reaping great harvests one moment, and then you can be on your way to the underworld the next! Just look at this. How did the fates change over so quickly?] He blinked a few times, and felt immense joy in his heart.

"My mood isn't good? Humph!" Venerable Mei heard this and snorted. Then, they pointed at Li Jue Tian and spoke in a stern manner, "Who said this senior is in a bad mood today? It's just that this loser is courting his death! And, this 'three legged toy' is actually the Second Great Master! He's shameless and ridiculous! This loser needs a good smack across his face. Just see that sharp expression of his! He dares to flaunt his strength in front of me?! You are a sissy master! How dare you?"

Li Jue Tian became furious at this, and hissed. His killing intention raised his robes in the air even though there was no wind. His face twisted with rage, and an expression of malevolence and fury broke upon it. He roared, "Venerable Mei, I respect you as the Lord of Tian Fa. And so, I wish to keep the peace! Yet, you have humiliated me for the third time today! Do you think that Li Jue Tian fears you, and won't do a thing in response to your insults?"

Even a clay figurine has some heat inside it. However, this man was the Second Great Master! What could one possibly speak of him? He had been insulted to no end. Would he be able to call himself the Second Great Master if he didn't retaliate in the face of such a situation? His reputation would turn to waste. A soldier doesn't smell of perfume if you defecate on his face!

Venerable Mei snorted with disdain and said, "This senior is openly humiliating you! What can you do? What can you dare to do?"

The man's silhouette flitted, and nobody could stop it. In fact, nobody tried to stop it. Shi Chang Xiao, Lei Wu Bei, the Solitary Falcon, and the others were too busy watching passively to be capable of stopping him.

Li Jue Tian's body moved forward in rage; like a violent storm. He used his trademark skill called "Thirteen blade of Jue Tian". A cold squall arose from the handle of his blade. Everyone felt a sharp Qi arise from it, and strike against their faces. It made everyone's clothes flutter, and left them to feel a slight tinge of pain on their faces. Therefore, none of them could help but take a step backwards.

Li Jue Tian left a deep trench under his foot as the dust rose all around.

Venerable Mei shouted loudly from mid-air, "Well, come on then!" His large black cloak looped around as it faced resistance from the wind. Then, it turned into a thick black mist which could cover the entire world. He then loudly charged straight ahead to meet his foe instead of avoiding him.

The arrangements for the decisive battle hadn't even started in earnest. But, the top leaders of both the sides had already broken into a violent fight.

The situation had become very intense!

Li Jue Tian's heart was brimming with violent rage and indignation. Venerable Mei had suffered untold humiliation and anger a couple of days back. Therefore, the two had displayed their full strength in only three moves. Moreover, they had actually displayed their killer moves.

More than once at that!

The area of this decisive battle was a small valley between two mountains. The distance between the bases of the two mountains was at least five kilometers. However, the two men contesting for power were moving so fast that it seemed as if they had mounted the clouds. Their movements were too quick for any eyes to see. It was like a lightning strike... first here, then there... and then far-off... and then back again at the first place...

There was an explosion in the air soon after. It sounded like a thunderbolt that had been sent by a God gone insane. The sound of the explosion echoed through the air. And then, a black figure could be seen rising in the air like a rocket. Then, another figure was seen crashing down towards Solitary Falcon and the others like a comet.

The person falling was Li Jue Tian...

He had been hit by the crazy and frightening offensive of Venerable Mei. And hence, he was falling down. Nobody had seen what had happened, but Li Jue Tian was aware that he had been hit between his shoulders, chest, and guts by three palm attacks!

Great Master Jue Tian had done his best to brace for that attack, and had tried to maintain composure in order to prevent himself from cutting a sorry figure. However, his fall was too fierce, and he couldn't control it in any way. He hit the ground with a loud bang, and a large whole appeared in that spot. However, his fall hadn't come to an end yet. He continued to stagger downwards into the ground in recoil. In fact, it almost seemed as if an inverted mountain had been dug up in the ground of the hilltop he had

landed upon. His foot soon touched the subterranean rocks, and trenches!

Venerable Mei seemed as if he was in pursuit of this man's death; he still hadn't stopped.

One could hear a sharp and intense roar coming from the air. A dark shadow had shot down from the air at a great speed. Even the huge black robe he wore had been rendered apart by the wind as he charged downwards. And then, a faint blue smoke arose from the hem of those robes.

His black robes were on the verge of bursting into flames because of their friction with the air... owing to his speed.

A spotless pure white hand jutted out of the black robe. This beautiful white hand appeared like an ornate carving. But, it shot down with an endlessly fierce aim to kill, and moved towards Li Jue Tian. There was going to be no mercy for him today!

Li Jue Tian roared madly. He concentrated the entirety of the remaining efficacy in his body in order to counter and escape.

Shi Chang Xiao, Lei Wu Bei, and Solitary Falcon were quick to realize Li Jue Tian's emergency. He was a loathsome man, but these three men knew that he couldn't be allowed to die at that moment. They would lose their greatest asset if Li Jue Tian died. Moreover, it was evident from Venerable Mei's fierce disposition that everyone's life would soon be in danger.

The three men sensed each other's intention, and jumped forward with all their might. The Silver Blizzard City's second, fifth, and eight elders also caught up with them to act as a second layer of defense.

The seven experts gathered together to resist the crazy strikes; strikes that were the deadliest in the entire world!

Venerable Mei let out a sharp roar in mid-air, and coldly challenged, "Come on then!" The black-robed individual neither

dodged, nor avoided them. In fact, that person had seemingly added some more strength to his attack in a split second.

"SLAM! SLAM! BANG!"

The sounds of repeated violent strikes resounded. And then, the black shadow flitted and appeared in the sky above the Tian Fa forest. Then, it slowly floated down to the summit of a tree, and stationed itself on a finger-thin branch. It then stood facing the wind.

A few groans were heard soon after. Xiao Bu Yu and the other two elders of the Silber Blizzard City had arrived last. But, they had been the first ones to drop. In fact, those three appeared like rubber balls as they crashed on land, and rolled about in pain towards the surrounding mountains.

The Solitary Falcon had spread his arms like an eagle spreads its wings, and had soared over thirty meters before he had suddenly dropped downwards. However, he stabilized himself at a lightning-quick speed, and began to float. His situation wasn't as precarious in comparison to the others'.

The comparatively stronger Lei Wu Bei was red in the face. He had spun to evade the attack, but his spinning hadn't yet come to a stop. In fact, he had already spun his way away from the epicenter of the collision.

Shi Chang Xiao's clothes had been torn. In fact, several strands of them had started to float in the sky like butterflies. He jumped back thirty meters as he evaded the attack, did a summersault, and then jumped back another thirty meters.

However, the greatest damage was suffered by the Second Great Master Li Jue Tian. Blood spilled from his mouth as roared in a fierce manner. His body had been shot into the air. However, no one could tell where it had been sent flying to...

Then, an earth-shattering sound emerged as a mushroom cloud



rose between the eight individuals with a loud "BANG!" It sent out tons of rocks and dirt into the air. A thin layer of earth had suddenly covered the sky.

The situation was very similar to that of a volcanic eruption! Rocks in a massive radius had been destroyed, and had been sent flying into air. They had been broken into such small fragments that even their shadows weren't visible anymore. They continued to fly into the sky for a long, long time. Then, the larger of the rocks started to shower down like meteors. They smashed down into the ground at high velocities. And, loud noises were given rise to as a result of their impact against the ground. In fact, the ground itself had been left to shake from the impact of their fall.

The eight experts' Qi had struck each other at the same time. This had somewhat contained-and-delayed the effect for a bit. It was like the Big Bang had been brewing up until that moment, and had finally burst out.

That immense explosion in the air was enough to greatly shock any expert. It sent a cold shiver through their arms and legs, and left them to shiver.

Li Jue Tian and the others had stationed themselves near a hilltop. However, this piece of land had gone up in the explosion. In fact, most of it had been leveled by this explosion. Moreover, a pit had been excavated in the ground because of this event. However, no one knew how deep it went. This was because the bubbling underground water had started to spout out after having mixed with the soil. And, this had given rise to muddy gurgles...

Everyone including the Xuan Beasts who had been drawn into an aggressive formation behind Big Bear had been left extremely shocked by this. Their mouths had fallen open, and they had been left to gasp for cold air.

[This is the actual result of his power!?!]

[Good God! That's extremely formidable!]

However, Big Bear was in the worst condition amongst them.

That extremely shocking explosion had left him to open his eyes and his mouth very wide. His cheek bones stood erect like the horns of a young dragon... and then, a stone the size of a hen's egg came flying by.... either by a divine intervention... or by pure coincidence... and crashed into his mouth. "Crack!" the sound reverberated as it hit his teeth.

An ordinary person's teeth would've been destroyed, and their tongue would've turned to pulp in such a scenario. But, who was Big Bear? He was a Bear King! And luckily, the Bear King's teeth hadn't been broken by this. However, his head had been left to ring and buzz by the impact. His lips moved up and down in an unconscious manner, and crackling sounds emerged as chewed on the rock in order to crush it. His tongue rolled as he unconsciously — and for a mysterious reason — swallowed the rock. Then, he found himself choking on it...

# Chapter 353: The Two World-Shaking Swordsmen — Rainstorm, and Hurricane; Both Great Masters!

---

The seven experts had joined hands, and had attacked together. But, they were only able to square-off against Venerable Mei's offensive. Venerable Mei may have used a cheap trick. However, it was important to know that four Great Masters and three Spirit Xuan experts had attacked together.

The Venerable Mei's Xuan cultivation was at an extremely shocking level.

This type of terrible strength could be considered to have reached the greatest of heights in that world.

The dust scattered, and dispersed. Li Jue Tian, Shi Chang Xiao, Lei Wu Bei, and Solitary Falcon appeared on the remaining half of the hill. Xiao Bu Yu and the other two sat down cross-legged with ashen faces. They then slowly tried to move their Xuan Qi in order to stabilize their breathing, and recover.

Those three had more unfortunate. They were mere Spirit Xuan experts. So, their Xuan cultivation was comparatively weaker. They had already suffered internal injuries as a result. These internal injuries they weren't very serious. The lack of strength had affected them negatively in the collision. They were comparatively slower to react during that huge explosion as a result of their weaker cultivation. And, this had taken away their edge, and they were left to face one calamity after another. Strength is important at a critical juncture, and lack of it can lead one into a worrisome situation in a life or death situation. So, they quickly snatched whatever time they had to stabilize their breathing, and recover themselves.

However, their luck wasn't the worst.

Jun Mo Xie had hid himself high in the sky to watch the unfolding drama after he had made the arrangements. He had been very excited as he had looked on... particularly when the Lord of Tian Fa was deriding Li Jue Tian. The Young Master Jun had felt like breaking into a dance and loud applauds. Then, he had become very jubilant when the two apex experts had started to fight.

However, that moment of extreme happiness and excitement had quickly turned into one of sorrow. The immense Qi explosion had occurred beneath him. And, he wasn't a Spirit Xuan expert at the end of the day. He wasn't able to sense what was about to happen below, and was caught off-guard. Then, an intense wave rushed up along with a boulder that was at least three meters in diameter. This boulder suddenly struck his posterior, and took him to soar high in the sky... almost upwards to the ninth heaven...

His butt resembled a discus at the moment. In fact, it resembled a discus that had turned red with heat. The rock remained stuck to it as they went up. Jun Mo Xie had felt great pain, and had nearly screamed. He had looked up, and had felt as if he was about to die and reach the world of immortals.

[Ah... the fu\*k is happening! I was just watching when I met with this accident!]

[I'm still using the Yin-Yang Escape.] Jun Mo Xie eventually thought of making an escape after he had reached a great altitude. However, he couldn't let-off that boulder since it had maltreated him. So, he resolutely and maliciously kicked it, and split it up. And then, Jun Mo Xie took that opportunity, and went inside the Hong Jun Pagoda.

This was genuinely breathtaking!

Everybody could only look-on as a huge boulder of three meters flew upwards, but didn't come down. This was because Jun Mo Xie had mercilessly made his reprisals, and had crushed it into pieces with his kick...

Venerable Mei looked up from the tree top far of, and saw the scene with a sense of suspicion. He then directed his attention back to the four Great Masters. The Lord of Tian Fa then gnashed their teeth as their black robe rose in the sky. Venerable Mei had prepared to attack again!

"Wait, Venerable Mei!" a loud shout emanated from the distance. The Xuan cultivation required to produce that sound was very high. The sound exploded, and echoed loudly. It was earth-shattering. This voice came from near Li Jue Tian, and two black-robed men suddenly appeared in front of him. It was noticeable about them that they both wore a purple-gold belt on their waists. Moreover, both of them had swords hung from their waists. And, their swords had purple-gold scabbards, and hilts.

Those two men had a bright and handsome appearance. They were middle-aged men with elegant bearing. The black robes that stuck close to their bodies made them look even more heroic and sharp. The two men rose to the air from their positions, and turned towards Venerable Mei. They then cupped their hands, and said with a smile, "We've been gone for many years. I trust that you've been well since we last met, Venerable Mei. Do you recognize this old deceased friend?"

Venerable Mei weightlessly rose into the sky for a while before he came to a stop. Their bright eyes then scanned the newcomers. And then, the Lord of Tian Fa spoke-up in a faint tone, "It's you! This is somewhat unexpected! How can I not be well if you're fine?"

Li Jue Tian now stood behind the two men. He became extremely gloomy and rolled his eyes. [These two have asked the question "I trust you've been well since we last met." The thing is... Venerable Mei didn't get angry when they asked this. So, why did I nearly lose my life when I asked the exact same thing?]

One of the middle aged men smiled and spoke, "Venerable Mei could already roam free and unhindered throughout the wide

world. And we see that your Xuan cultivation has further increased by leaps and bounds! Therefore, we must congratulate you!"

"Congratulate me? You two should be the ones to receive the praise! You two famed warriors had disappeared without giving any reason, and hadn't shown yourselves in the mortal world for decades. But, it turns out that you've become the top provosts under the Empress of the Elusive World of Immortals!"

Venerable Mei had spoken coldly, but their voice sunk as their eyes scanned the two again, "[Lei Bao Yu](#), [Bu Kuang Feng](#)... the two earth-shaking swordsmen of those days! Bao Yu, Kuang Feng... two Great Masters have come to Tian Fa. To what does this Mei owe the honor?"

Most people couldn't understand such words. Those two names were too remote for most of them. But, Li Jue Tian along with the other Great Masters, the Silver Blizzard City's elders, and a few chiefs of some powerful families had an expression of shock and awe on their faces.

Most people wouldn't remember their names anymore. However, their names would've frightened the guts out of people sixty years ago. In fact, their mere names would've been enough to make people's souls leave their bodies like a rocket. Anyone who had reached the highest echelons of Xuan cultivation would know their names, and would tremble.

There two used to be two pairs of sworn brothers amongst the Eight Great Masters in the days of the past. And, they were inseparable as colleagues. However, the two pairs disliked each other, and there was a sense of mutual containment amongst them. They would fight every time they'd run into each other, and those fights would invariably be earth-shattering in their nature.

Moreover, the nature of those four men was quite evil. They had no scruples, and did as they pleased. Those four were responsible for much of the chaos around the continent. But then, the four

reputed men disappeared at the same time one day. Everyone had figured that they had been killed. Countless people were relieved, and had clapped their hands in joy. And, the legends of those four had faded away with the passage of time. Sixty years had passed since then. Therefore, very few were left who knew of the affairs of those days.

However, one of those pairs of sworn brothers had suddenly appeared in front of them at this time.

The two world-shaking swordsmen — Rainstorm, and Hurricane! And, both of them were Great Masters!

Their real names were Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng!

As for the other pair of sworn brothers... they were real brothers. And, they were also very famous. In fact, they were famous for being utterly preposterous.

Zhanpo Feng Yun and Zhanpo Tian had acted crazy their entire lives!

They had been such their entire lives. And, they would've remained such if they were alive. They both were Great Master as well.

No one had ever expected to even hear the nightmarish names of the Great Master Rainstorm, and Great Master Hurricane before the battle here at Tian Fa... much less see them in person!

However, there was something even more confusing than that. These two men weren't young when they had disappeared. In fact, they must've been at least eighty years old at that time. So, how could they still look middle-aged after sixty long years had passed? Could it be that they had practiced some youth replenishing techniques?

"You flatter us," the one to reply had a mole near one of his eyes. The elder generation had recognized this. It was a distinct facial feature of the Rainstorm Great Master — Lei Bao Yu. Then, they

heard him chuckle and continue, "My brother and I too insignificant for that. How can we dare to bestow honor upon Venerable Mei? It's just that we've been sent by the Elusive World of Immortals to be witnesses to the battle between Tian Fa and the rest of the continent."

"Oh? The mysterious Elusive World of Immortal was perturbed by such a trivial thing? Should this Mei feel honored by this?" Venerable Mei sneered, taunted, and laughed. It didn't matter if he'd have to fight and kill these two Great Masters as well. It was evident that there was hidden card for that as well.

"Again, you flatter us. We two brothers have merely come to pass-on the message the Empress has given us for Venerable Mei," Bu Kuang Feng replied.

"Please speak... I don't know what that hypocrite has to offer me. What did she say?" Venerable Mei asked with a sense of curiosity.

Lei Bao Yu twitched when he heard the word "hypocrite." However, he forcibly swallowed his anger and spoke, "The Empress has said this... 'It's fine that Tian Fa goes to war. We have faith in Venerable Mei's conduct. This conflict between the Xuan experts is also fine. The three Holy Lands also vie for power. But, we request Venerable Mei to be lenient towards the common people'."

"Ha ha! She has always bemoaned the state of the universe, and pitied the mankind in that disgusting tone of hers!" Venerable Mei laughed. "But, my Tian Fa has never allowed any influence from any foreign entity — even if that entity is the Elusive World of Immortals. Don't tell me she thinks that she can order my Tian Fa around? What a big joke!"

"Venerable Mei can do what they like. We won't interfere. We're powerless to interfere. In fact, we won't do anything; no matter the outcome. We will only report what we see, and the Empress will decide." Lei Bao Yu smiled.



Venerable Mei snorted and spoke, "The two earth-shaking swordsmen of those days — Rainstorm and Hurricane Great Masters — used to move through the society in an elated, unfettered, free manner. They possessed the ease, natural confidence and cruelty. I never expected them to become the harbingers of moral integrity once they became the Provosts of the Elusive World of Immortals. I truly admire the training that the Empress imparts. In fact, I wouldn't find it strange if you two weren't able to remain undefeated if you were to meet your two maddened rivals again."

These words were clearly meant to call the Rainstorm and Hurricane Great Masters 'slaves'. The words weren't spoken in a direct manner, but the meaning behind them was meant to make this an intolerable verse. Moreover, they had also been compared to their old selves. Then, it had been pointed out that their Xuan cultivation hadn't increased by much even though they appeared younger now. In fact, it had been implied that these two wouldn't be able to keep up with the greatest and maddest of their opponents.

The faces of Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng contorted. Their eyes filled with rage as they pressed their hands on their swords' hilts, and stepped forward.

Li Jue Tian's face was suddenly filled with joy. [Are these two going to pitch in? Our odds of success look much better if they do...]

However, Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng withdrew after they had taken that step... and this happened just when Li Jue Tian was thinking of their intervention. Lei Bao Yu then said in a calm manner, "Venerable Mei is a very capable person. There's no need to provoke us today. It's inappropriate for us to fight today, but this doesn't mean that we won't get a chance in the future. In fact, we two brothers can find a way later if Venerable Mei feels that today's day is a missed opportunity!"

Venerable Mei's gown issued a soughing sound in the wind. They seemingly smiled as they said, "Oh really?"

Bao Yu means Rainstorm

Kuang Feng means Hurricane

## Chapter 354: The Battle Commences

---

Bu Kuang Feng then spoke-up in a dark tone, "Venerable Mei seems to be interested in our training. Why don't they come and receive it as well...? I'm convinced that they'll change too. They'll at least be different when compared to us two brothers," the words he had spoken seemed to have a very mysterious meaning to them. Even Li Jue Tian couldn't understand what they meant.

Venerable Mei was floating at a distance. However, they seemed very angry. Their robes started to float upwards in the wind, and it seemed as if they had prepared to strike. But then, they stopped and regained a tranquil temperament. They then replied in soft tone, "I will eventually go to the Elusive World of Immortals and show your Empress the kind of end that's reserved for a hypocrite!"

Lei Bao Yu was about to speak-up when he was cut-off by Venerable Mei, "Come up if the two of you intend to participate in the war today. But, withdraw to one side if you only wish to witness. I have no interest in bickering with the two of you. Retreat!"

"Very well, we've only come here to observe. So, Venerable Mei may enlighten us of the proceedings," Lei Bao Yu replied with a cold expression.

"That's simple. We'll have three battles to decide the winner. The legions arranged in the battle formations will fight the first battle. The second battle will take place between the leaders of the groups. And, the third and decisive battle will be between the apex experts!" Venerable Mei snorted. "We'll go back to Tian Fa if you win. And, the Xuan Beasts will never emerge from there after that. But, we have three conditions if you lose. First, Li Jue Tian will return the Panther King's Xuan Core. Second, no Xuan expert will be allowed to enter Tian Fa. I'll take ten-thousand lives from the mainland even if one of them enters. I'll take twenty-thousand

lives if two of them enter, and I'll also annihilate their families to the ninth generations as compensation in that case! Third... I will break both the legs of Li Jue Tian's son. This war was started because of him. Let it end with him as well."

"That's very unfair!" Bu Kuang Feng sneered, "You only need to retreat if you lose, but we have to adhere to three conditions? Don't you think it's a bit too much, Venerable Mei?"

"How will any future disputes arise if you don't enter the forest? And, why is the Panther King's Xuan Core in Li Jue Tian's belly? Can't you tell the right from the wrong, Bu Kuang Feng?" Venerable Mei shouted back in anger.

Li Jue Tian stepped forward, and spoke in a stern voice, "This issue has been created by your Tian Fa! How are we father and son to blame for this? You've been the one to confuse the right and wrong today. Aren't you pushing the entire blame onto us? The person to have confused the right and the wrong is you, and you alone. Moreover, what does this decisive battle have to do with my son? Why does the third condition have to be breaking my son's legs? What has my son done to cause this disturbance? Don't you think that you're being too harsh, Venerable Mei? Your statements are simply ridiculous!"

Great Master Li was extremely angry. However, he also felt like he had smashed his own foot with a stone he had picked up for another. He had forced Jun Wu Yi to the battlefield because his son had requested for it. He had sent only four-thousand men even though he should've demonstrated more strength. It could be said that those men had been sent away to die for no good use. In other words, this would be a complete and utter defeat; there was no chance of success. Anyone with eyes could see that very clearly.

However, Venerable Mei had now raised the condition regarding his son's legs, and the outcome of this would depend on victory or defeat. Therefore, he was now at a loss. Would Li Teng Yun have schemed again Jun Wu Yi if he had known that his legs would also

end up depending on it?

What would be the significance of Jun Wu Yi's death if such had been the case?

"I've given a great option. It's fine if the Great Master Li doesn't agree. I will simply lead my forces to attack the rest of the continent. You can't blame me for every extreme distress of the mortal world. Anyway, I have proposed a very peaceful solution. So, I can't do anything if you don't agree."

Venerable Mei looked at Li Jue Tian. The expression in his eyes was enough to decipher that he didn't care whether the opposite party agreed to his proposal or not...

These conditions had obviously been linked to Tian Fa's prestige now; and, that was imperative.

"I won't change the three conditions; no matter what. Will you agree or not?"

He didn't believe that Li Jue Tian would leave the world to destruction... even if he was the Second Great Master. And, they could always force him to agree even if he refused to.

"I won't agree!"

"I agree!"

Two different responses simultaneously came from Li Jue Tian and Lei Bao Yu's mouths.

"Provost Lei... we must consider this matter properly." Li Jue Tian wanted to spit blood in anger. However, he knew that he couldn't provoke the Elusive World of Immortals. He had the distinction of being the Second Great Master, and held respect for this achievement in the mundane society. But, he knew that this status of his' was nothing in the eyes of the Elusive World of Immortals. Moreover, he also knew that he may not even be able to match the two Great Masters — Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng — even if he were to fight them one at a time.

"There's no need to consider this. It's equivalent to the Empress' orders," Lei Bao Yu cut him off. Then, he smiled and continued in a low voice, "Brother Li, keep calm. Do you think that someone of Venerable Mei's status would have a tough time in dealing with your young son if we lose this battle? Take a step back, and think. Your son's life won't be in danger. He will get his legs broken at best. But, the Three Holy Lands will need to find a scapegoat to pin the responsibility for the destruction caused by the Xuan Beast uprising if we don't agree to Venerable Mei's conditions. At that time, Li Jue Tian... you... he he..."

"But..." Li Jue Tian was about to say, [I've already taken the Panther King's Xuan Core. How can I spit it out now?] He was about to say this, but he swallowed the words back. He did take the Xuan Core, but it was still inside his belly. Li Jue Tian was waiting to ingest the Bear King Xuan Core. But, the Panther King's Xuan Core would remain intact until that happened. However, what would Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng think if they knew that the Xuan Core was still intact?

Li Jue Tian evaluated the situation. He then asked himself, [What would I do if I were in their shoes? I would certainly wish to take that treasure away by force... But, can I hope to compete against these two Great Masters if they joined hands?]

Li Jue Tian remained silent. So, the other two assumed that he had given his approval. Then, they turned to Venerable Mei, "Venerable Mei, can we start the battle?"

Venerable Mei nodded slowly. They didn't waste their words, and extended their hand. And then, a small golden sword flew out. This was followed by a violent gale, and an air-rendering screech emanated from the sword's handle.

It was expected that the sword would move extremely fast since it had emanated such a powerful sound; in fact, it would've been perfectly reasonable if had moved at the speed of sound. However, it was moving very slowly. In fact, it was even slower than an

ordinary arrow.

However, the sword light behind it became increasingly thicker. It seemed like a young dragon from the ninth heaven was reaching-out across the basin between the mountains with stretched hands. It continued to issue that dragon-like shrieking sound until it had reached the other side of the mountains.

This was a battle command!

Li Jue Tian raised his hand. And then, a banner made of fireworks burst like blooming flowers. His expression was somewhat cruel.

Big Bear let out a violent roar. In fact, it nearly resembled a thunderclap as it shook the nine heavens. Then, the Bear King leapt forward. He was followed by three kinds of multicolored Xuan Beasts — bears, tigers, and lions. The three Xuan Beast Kings lead their forces, and broke out of the forest like a storm.

They weren't many... just four-thousand in number.

Jun Wu Yi waved his hand for the quick waving of the signal flag from the opposite side. Then, four-thousand men quickly assembled into a cone formation. However, they remained motionless thereafter.

Jun Wu Yi didn't have the slightest idea about the inside story. But, he knew that the strength of his four-thousand men was far lesser than that of the four-thousand Xuan Beasts they were about to face. He knew that they were at a huge disadvantage. The difference in strength between the two sides was at least three-to-four times; maybe even higher. Therefore, they would have to use proper tactics at this juncture. Otherwise, this face-off wouldn't even be a 'struggle' against the Xuan Beasts... it would rather be a one-sided slaughter.

His plan started with laying a trap in front. Then, they'd wait for the attackers to come closer. The four-thousand of his men would

then launch their secret weapons once the enemy was close enough. This would blunt the opposition's forces to some extent by getting rid of the weaker Xuan Beasts. He had stationed the strongest experts in the area where the stronger Xuan Beasts would try to break through from. He had arranged them in groups of seventy-eight, and these men would attack their opponents from all sides. The rest of his men would fill-up the gaps, and do their best to provide support as the battle progressed.

Some sacrifices would be inevitable in this battle plan. However, their chances of success would increase by a considerable margin if everything went according to plan. And, they could at least give a good battle to their enemies in this manner. However, Jun Wu Yi hadn't thought on the final outcome of the battle.

However, even if they died in this battle... they'd at least die a valiant death!

It had to be said that Jun Wu Yi's strategy was very efficient even in the face of such a formidable onslaught from the Xuan Beasts. They would all die if this strategy was adhered to. However, they would achieve a great result. In fact, they could deal a great damage to the Xuan Beasts. Optimistic estimates could place at least half of the Xuan Beasts to die alongside them!

They were merely four-thousand in number, and were about to face the same number of enemies. However, the Xuan Beasts' strength was several times their own. So, this battle would be considered humanity's victory even if half of their enemies were to die by the end of it.

However, these plans would only work on paper if there were issues in implementation; no matter how excellent the plans were. Could one genuinely expect the many people assembled there to obey Jun Wu Yi's orders? Many of them had been instructed to see to his death. And, these would-be backstabbing experts made for an overwhelming majority of the stronger experts in his ranks.



The carnage which could've been avoided... or at least delayed... had arrived...

"Isn't staying holed-up in this formation akin to courting our deaths? Brothers, don't listen to that 'big coward-of-a-bullshit' Supreme Commander! Follow me to kill them! We can easily kill the level six or seven Xuan Beasts! Won't we be victorious if each man could kill one or two enemies on an average?"

A clamor arose from the back as the members of the Xue Hun Manor pushed their way forward. They were placed at the back, but were now brushing past to the front. And, they soon ended up at the front of Jun Wu Yi's formation. The battle hadn't even started, but the formation had already been broken. And, the seven-hundred men of Xue Hun Manor continued to rush forward 'despite their perils' under the leadership of their three Spirit Xuan experts.

# Chapter 355: A Strange Battle

---

They had taken the lead. The masses naturally responded.

Then, the twelve members of the Silver Blizzard City broke formation. And then, the experts from the powerful families followed in their suit. The 'once' Jun Wu Yi's formation only had a square array of the three-hundred men he had brought along. And, they were almost the only ones left behind.

It had to be said that the instigating words spoken by those of Xue Hun Manor were somewhat true. They would surely be victorious if each man managed to kill an average of two Xuan Beasts. However, did they have the strength to kill that many of the enemy's troops? How many of them were Spirit Xuan or Sky Xuan experts...?

However, it had to be admitted that the three-thousand-plus men who had rushed forward had a good tacit understanding amongst themselves. The men of the Xue Hun Manor had charged ahead first. They took a sudden left turn, and tried to outflank the Xuan Beasts. And, those from the Silver Blizzard City turned right in a similar fashion, and tried to outflank them from the other side. The people behind them didn't understand what was happening. So, they turned right as well. Some people at the back were hesitant to go right, and found themselves stuck in their predicament. But, they soon saw waves of thousands of Xuan Beasts rushing at them, and were left to jump with fright. Then, they just quickly jumped out of the way. They didn't care whether they ducked right or left... saving themselves was most important thing in that moment.

However, the Supreme Commander Jun Wu Yi's three-hundred men were left exposed to the claws of the charging Xuan Beasts as a result.

The four-thousand Xuan Beasts charged forward, and roared as

they came in!

"Shameless! Absolutely shameless!" Dongfang Wen Qing shouted in anger. The head of the Duanmu Family — Duanmu Chao Fan — stood beside him. His mustache trembled in anger and confusion as he cursed in his usual stammer, "That... that... fu\*king... Li... Li... Li... Jue... Jue... Jue... that... that... mother..."

Another family's head — Sikong An Ye — stood beside him. The expression on his face was that of a man who had been drowned in water. He roared angrily, "Dammit! I'll kill everyone in front of my eyes! And, you stop stammering! You haven't been swallowed by a Xuan Beast yet. So, stop being so gloomy!"

"Bullsh\*t! I... I still haven't finished... abusing... abusing..." Duanmu Chao Fan was very angry, but managed to speak somewhat smoothly. Especially the first word — "Bullsh\*t!" That word had been spoken articulately, and without any stammer. Therefore, that "Bullsh\*t!" sounded magnificent, powerful, and bold.

"Stop talking!" Sikong An Ye flew into a rage, and drew his sword with a sinister look. A golden tiger was charging towards them. The bite of such a tiger could rip anything. Its tail was like an iron rod, and could cause destruction once it struck its target. However, the tiger's movements were even weirder. Its fighting style made it seemed as if it had a wild fighting instinct, but it was still quite refined in make. The strong wind whistled as it moved forward in an orderly manner, and it was evident that it had mastered its own style of martial arts. The movements of its naked buttocks could only be described as 'rhythmical'!

Who stood a chance if these Xuan Beasts were to use martial arts?

They were nearly submerged in that tide of Xuan Beasts moments later. Dongfang Wen Qing and the others were now faced with several Xuan Beasts of levels eight or nine. Their spiritual senses were alert. However, they wondered in their hearts if these

extremely strong Xuan Beasts' actions were akin to some sort of a greeting. The beasts then circled around them. And then, they just...

Walked away!

The faces of everyone who was watching from the hilltop had become dark.

"Is this how you arrange your troops in an indomitable formation, Li Jue Tian? The experts have left, and have gone in different directions. They entered the battle without any commitment, and left their Supreme Commander exposed...! They've annihilated their own formation! Anyone who'd expose their Supreme Commander to such danger would've faced a criminal charge if this were an ordinary battle. Those three-thousand men wouldn't have been allowed to live if that were the case!"

Lei Bao Yu pointed his finger at the battlefield, and asked Li Jue Tian as he laughed and shook his head, "No wonder you didn't wish to accept those conditions. You never intended to win this battle! I presume that many amongst those four-thousand are your enemies...? That is a great trick!"

Bu Kuang Feng then cut-in and spoke, "That Supreme Commander is like a great expert of this generation when it comes to the 'art of war' by the looks of it. He had started by arranging the troops in the blade-edge formation. The blade-edge formation would defend against the attack in the beginning. In fact, that defense would've absorbed the brunt of it. He could then stabilize the situation... even if he wouldn't be able to defeat the Xuan Beasts. Moreover, he had laid many traps at the front in order to minimize the casualties on his side. Then, they could've taken support from each other to garner strength for a counter-attack against the beasts if they had survived the first wave of attacks. That's such a brilliant arrangement! It's simply outstanding! It's a pity that a lowlife has ruined it...! Humph!"

The word 'lowlife' obviously referred to Li Jue Tian. The Great Master Li's face suddenly turned blue and red since he had become embarrassed and upset.

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng didn't come from a military background. However, over a hundred years of wisdom, an extraordinary eyesight, and experience had given them insight. Therefore, they had been able to recognize that trap.

Li Jue Tian was evidently becoming increasingly resentful as Bu Kuang Feng added, "Great Master Li, it appears that you don't care about your son's legs much. How could you have handled things in such a reckless manner if you were concerned with your son's well-being? This is unimaginable!"

Li Jue Tian's face reddened with embarrassment. He didn't know how to reply to that. The man couldn't utter a word as a result.

How could Li Jue Tian have known that the Elusive World of Immortals would send someone to witness the battle? Would anyone have dared to say a word against him given his status in the mortal world...? Even if they disagreed with his conduct...? Anyone who'd say anything against him would obviously be made to disappear shortly afterwards. And after all, no one would wish to die for offending the Second Great Master.

However, Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng had arrived, and Li Jue Tian had become distressed as a result. He had lost face in front of the Three Holy lands this time. In fact, he hadn't just lost his face... he had also landed his son into trouble...

However, he was completely unaware that the people from the Elusive World of Immortals weren't only there to observe the battle...

Jun Mo Xie had become extremely anxious at that moment. He had forgotten about two people — Duanmu Chao Fan, and Sikong An Ye! His uncle's situation was scary, but not dangerous. In fact, it wouldn't be a big deal if he was to be surrounded by many Xuan

Beasts. However, the heads of the Duanmu and Sikong Families had been besotted with danger.

Sikong An Ye had been surrounded by five or six Xuan Beasts even before he had a single move. His clothes had become raged, and he was in a flurry. And, Duanmu Chao Fan was in an even more battered and exhausted state. The head of the Duanmu Family repeatedly roared as he chopped down with his sword. But, he would often raise his left hand, and would place it in front of his garment's lapel.

Jun Mo Xie flew down, and realized that there was huge hole in the clothing over Duanmu Chao Fan's posterior. He was completely unaware how a Xuan Beast had managed to do that, but a roughened butt-cheek had been exposed as a result. In fact, it had vague scratch marks on it...

Jun Mo Xie laughed in a good-humored manner, and hurriedly spread the powder on top of those two men. Then, he quickly retreated.

Sikong An Ye was gloomy, and was bellowing repeatedly. Then, he noticed that the pressure on him had reduced rather significantly. The Xuan Beasts who had been making threatening moves, and had been launching attacks at him until a moment ago were now looking at him with a confused expression in their eyes. Those beasts then beat their noses, wagged their tails, and went away.

The Xuan Beasts were divided into four groups. The three Xuan Beast Kings had directed them to attack from all sides, but had left only a few of them for Jun Wu Yi. However, those Xuan Beasts were at level nine, and had exceedingly high strength. In fact, they could take out a few people by merely opening their mouths. However, they didn't seem to have any intention of attacking this small group of humans.

Sikong An Ye suddenly found himself puzzled. There was only

one Xuan Beast in front of him at the moment. And, it was a very intelligent one. It faced him, winked at him, and then pulled a face...

[Winking? What are you up to? I'm here to fight a battle. So, why do you have such an expression on your face?] Sikong An Ye's eyes were wide open as he stared. He couldn't understand anything when that Golden Tiger anxiously lifted his claw, and pointed to the surroundings. The beast then roared and charged towards him. Its power and prestige was extremely terrifying, and Sikong An Ye's life seemed to be in real danger.

Sikong An Ye gathered the entirety of his strength, and moved to block the attack with a sense of uncertainty in his heart. However, he made contact with his opponent, and realized that his opponent's power and prestige was only for show; there was no real strength in the attack. The other party merely wagged its tail and winked at him again!

It was then that Sikong An Ye finally understood. [Crap! It intended a fake attack on me!] He turned his head and realized that everyone else had already understood. Each of his comrades was shouting loudly at the Xuan Beasts. And, the Xuan Beasts were roaring back. The swords would move like lightning, but would lose accuracy and miss their target. The claws would move like the wind, but would fail to hit their targets...

However, the person who had been nailed in the most difficult position was the Supreme Commander — Jun Wu Yi. He had been crazily besieged by two level Nine Xuan Beasts. But, he was safely seated on his wheelchair nonetheless. Even a hair on his head hadn't been harmed in this chaos situation. Two earth-cracking Xuan Bears — weighing over a ton each — jumped at him from either side as they roared loudly. Their paws hit the ground, and filled the sky with dust. Even an intermediate Great Master, or a Spirit Xuan expert would've had a tough time while evading that attack, and would've only managed to make narrow escape.

However, he saw the Supreme Commander Jun calmly extend his sword, and both the earth-cracking Xuan Beasts moved to avoid it. That sword-attack was no genuine victory; it was only a maneuver in a clever demo-swordplay.

The bears would pounce again in a similar manner, and the opposition would wave their sword. And then, they would retreat once again...

[What's going on here?]

Sikong An Ye's mouth gaped wide; it nearly seemed as if his jaw had been dislocated. Then, he turned and found that Duanmu Chao Fan had also been bailed out of his precarious and dangerous situation. However, he was still in a somewhat awkward position. He hurriedly peeled clothes from a dead man's body, and tied them around his waist in an attempt to make an apron. But, that apron only covered his backside...

And then, Duanmu Chao Fan threw his sword down, and used the entirety of his energy to cover himself with his apron. However, his opponent was a Level Nine Golden Tiger. The beast fiendishly rushed forward, roared, and raised dust as it jumped over him. Then, it turned around, and jumped back over him. However, it still looked mad throughout this maneuver. Then, it raised its head and roared...

It attacked the air, and it attacked the ground to display the extent of its might. However, it never once came into contact with Duanmu Chao Fan. It seemed as if the head of the Duanmu Family had some kind of heavenly Xuan Qi which would injure someone on contact...

[My word!] Sikong An Ye's mouth had opened to its greatest extent. He then heard a cracking sound. His jaw had actually dislocated! He was left to let out a blood-curdling scream as a result.

The Golden Tiger became frightened, and stopped jumping-



about. Then, it suspiciously tilted its head, and looked at his 'opponent'. [This one is so frail. I didn't touch him! But, he has managed to injure himself by opening his mouth a bit too wide. He has such a weak physique! Or perhaps I've mastered the legendary Qi technique!]

"What are you doing, [Chao Fan](#)? We're in the middle of a battle! Yet, you're more interested in wearing an apron! Do you wish to turn into fried rice or something?" Sikong An Ye seemed to be in a mood for some jokes since the danger had seemingly passed. Therefore, he rubbed his hands on his chin as he forced it up to speak.

Duanmu Chao Fan covered his posterior, and picked-up his sword in an unhurried manner. He then replied in a merry tone, "Little, little... little Sikong... my... my... name... is... Duanmu... Chao... Chao... Chao... Chao..."

Chao Fan is jokingly called 'fried rice'. This joke is derived from the word play in Chinese language, and Chao Fan's stammer. This was explained in some length by the author when Chao Fan was first introduced.

## Chapter 356: Trying to Steal a Chicken Only to End-up Losing the Rice Used to Lure it

---

"Oh God, Brother! You've got to speak faster... listening to your words becomes very hard for me if you speak like that..." Sikong An Ye groaned. He had managed to fight-off several powerful Xuan Beasts a while ago. However, Duanmu Chao Fan's manner of speech had left him injured.

They were unaware as to what was happening in that outrageous scene. However, a man of Jun Wu Yi's caliber had understood a few things very clearly. [A very able person is helping us out by orchestrating this whole drama. But, where's the director of this show?]

Duanmu Chao Fan finally wielded his long sword again. His sword glittered with silver light. He could finally coordinate better. Then, he took a graceful stance. In fact, his stance was an exhibition of excellent martial arts in itself. He then surged forward, and tried to strike the Golden Tiger. The Duanmu Chief wished to grab the tiger by its tail, but the tiger would never allow him to do that. And so, the 'war' between Man and Xuan Beast continued.

Baili Luo Yun wasn't too far off. And, his display had been even more exemplary. In fact, he seemed worthy of the 'genius' moniker since he was only at the Jade Xuan realm. He hadn't fallen into a disadvantageous position even though he was attacking and defending against an 'enemy' of Level Nine. He'd give a loud roar, and would 'fight' lustily as the dust would rise-up around him. In fact, he had even gained an 'upper hand'.

However, his two Sky Xuan uncles were rather unfortunate. They had nearly been turned into grounded-meat by several Level Eight Xuan Beasts...

These circumstances were quite ironic. The two Sky Xuan

experts had been certain that they'd be able to rely on their strength to make an escape. They only needed to confirm Baili Luo Yun's death before they left. He may have been a genius, but the youngster was still a mere Jade Xuan expert. Therefore, his death was sure to come early; he stood no chance. And, those two were simply waiting to watch him die.

However, they hadn't expected him to pick his sword, and not die when he should've a thousand times over. The two men had been left stunned by this. And then, they found themselves surrounded by many high-level Xuan Beasts. Baili Luo Yun — a Jade Xuan expert — was fighting with vigor. And yet, those two Sky Xuan experts couldn't even move. They were soon eaten alive...

Those two had died without understanding what was going on!

It was a very clever plot...

Blood-curdling screams were being heard from everywhere part of the battlefield. Those who had decided to break formation and retreat — the Xue Hun Manor, the Silver Blizzard City, and the rest of the men from every powerful family — had soon been caught in a crazy and deadly encirclement. Blood splashed every other moment, and the dismembered limbs flew into the sky. Someone or the other was dying every second...

Big Bear crisscrossed through the battlefield. Big Bear had tough skin and strong bones; so did his fellow Beast Kings — Tiger and the Lion King. They disregarded the attacks that were launched on them, and charged into the Xue Hun Manor's warriors. Then, they turned and moved-about the Xue Hun Manor's formation. The three of them continued to launch powerful attacks, and kept crashing into everyone around them. The three Beast Kings ended-up cutting a path through the Xue Hun Manor's formation as a result.

The troops of the Xue Hun Manor descended into utter chaos.

They were first divided into two groups. Then, they were forced to divide into four groups, and were eventually left to fight separately. Then, numerous Xuan Beasts made their way into their broken formation, and surrounded them. This resulted in continuous screams of despair that shook the sky...

The original plan was that Jun Wu Yi and his men would die. But, their own people wouldn't sustain many losses. In fact, the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor's people weren't even expected to receive any injuries...

The eyes of all the Great Masters and the Spirit Xuan elders had nearly popped-out of their sockets as they stared from the hilltop in disbelief...

[What's going on?]

[This is extremely unreasonable!]

"So, that's how it was! I finally understand!" the Solitary Falcon was shocked, and twirled a strand of his hair.

"You understand?" Bu Kuang Feng was puzzled, "What do you understand? Quickly explain to this old man!"

"Master Bu, can't you see?" Solitary Falcon triumphantly pointed his finger, "Great Master Li had planned a purge for his Xue Hun Manor! And, he had also involved the Silver Blizzard City in it! Li Jue Tian's original plan was —"I'm not feeling well about some guys. And, you're not feeling any better about a few of yours. But, I have a way of making us feel good even though we're feeling sad right now. And, their devastation would make me happy!' Can't you see it Master Bu? It's so obvious..."

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng spat out in contempt when they heard that. [Fool! Can't you see how shocked Li Jue Tian is? Why would he wish to purge his Xue Hun Manor? The Xue Hun Manor is his life's work! Its value is only second to his son Li Teng Yun in his heart! Li Jue Tian is no fool. So, why would he dig his own

grave?]

[But, how the hell is this happening in front of us if that's not the case?]

Li Teng Yun gaped. His face was ashen pale, and his lips trembled; he looked lifeless. He suddenly felt great regret. In fact, he could faintly feel his legs going half-dead...

Li Jue Tian's hands were clenched tightly. He felt extreme rage.

He would've been an idiot if he still hadn't been able to figure out that he had been played. However, he couldn't understand that who'd have such a heavenly skill that they could order the Xuan Beast Kings to play out such a big farce?

"Argh!" a blood curdling scream rang out. A Spirit Xuan expert from the Xue Hun Manor had been hit by Big Bear's palms and a leg. Blood gushed out from his body as a result. But, Big Bear smiled in an evil manner, and continued to attack. He quickly landed an explosive punch. Then, Big Bear threw out a kick, and made his other legs crisscross with the first one. The Spirit Xuan expert had already sustained serious injuries. His strength was nothing compared to Big Bear's. And, Big Bear wasn't done even after he had broken the other party's legs. Therefore, he resolutely kicked his lower back.

A disembodied leg flew high into the sky, and sprayed a lot of blood around. Moreover, the rest of that Spirit Xuan expert's body was kicked high into the sky... while he was still alive. Blood gushed out from each one of the seven orifices in his head. Big Bear jumped, and caught up with the body in the air. Then, he landed two quick punches. "Bang! Bang!" the punches hit that expert in succession, and continuous snapping sounds were heard. In fact, the crackling sounds had been very crisp in their make...

Big Bear roared loudly, and caught the thighs of his victim. Then, his chest muscles became taught, and he started to hiss as his arms pulled the victim's body wide. The Spirit Xuan expert was then

torn into halves in midair. His vital organs then poured out of his once-body, and crashed onto the ground.

Screams of panic and shock reverberated throughout the battlefield. However, Big Bear merely laughed as that bloodied body dropped to the ground. It seemed as if a tiger had slaughtered a sheep.

Li Jue Tian trembled, and couldn't help but take a step forward. His mouth opened a little as a look of pain flashed across his face. But, the Lord of Tian Fa was looking at him. In fact, they tilted their head as they looked at him. It was obvious that they would step-in if Li Jue Tian were to get involved!

Li Jue Tian saw the flesh and the blood of his people flying-about, and he heard their screams. He felt the urge to open his mouth, and concede defeat on many occasions. But, he used the entirety of his willpower to control himself, and didn't make this decision. His face was still calm and tranquil. It seemed as if the people getting slaughtered below hadn't been trained by his hands... as if they were merely trash to his eyes.

The human army had been doomed to suffer a crushing defeat even before the battle had started. The difference in the strengths of the two sides was too great. To explain with an example... The Xuan Beasts had prepared a force of elite experts. But, the human allied army had no preparation, and had basically assembled an inexperienced mob.

However, the Tian Fa would've been forced to pay a huge price for victory if the human army had followed Jun Wu Yi's strategy. After all, many strong individuals were present within their ranks. And, they could've made up for the difference in strength if they had been backed by a good strategy.

However, there was internal strife within the allied forced. So, they had disobeyed their orders, and had rushed forward. And, the defeat of the allied human forced had become foreclosed

conclusion from that point onwards that. They would see no luck! And, there would be no hope for change of tides!

The traps were still present on the battlefield, but there was no one to follow-up. The Xuan Beasts would fall into them, but they'd quickly jumped out. And, they'd obviously become more ferocious after that.

Li Jue Tian had become a sore loser. He couldn't even afford to admit defeat to save his forces. He was reputed as the Second Great Master throughout the continent. So, he would lose face if he admitted defeat. Moreover, the Lord of Tian Fa wasn't far-off, and that earth-shaking expert was watching him. Therefore, Li Jue Tian would have to take his consent... even if he wanted to concede.

However, any attempts to seek their consent after his display was a very ridiculous notion. It was impossible!

Therefore, Li Jue Tian was inwardly left to pray... [Why don't they just run away if they aren't a match for the enemy? The Xuan Beasts wouldn't chase them to the ends of the earth to kill them, right? They only want a victory at this point; that's all.]

However, they hadn't tried to flee in the beginning. And, it was too late if they wanted to try that now.

He had intended to entrap Jun Wu Yi. But, this had turned out like the situation where one 'tries to steal a chicken... only to end up losing the rice used to lure it'. In fact, it was like he had lost the entire jar of rice!

The three Xuan Beast Kings eyed the humans like a hunter eyes its prey. They divided had three-thousand-seven-hundred Xuan Beasts into several assault groups to attack in a vicious manner. The Xue Hun Manor's seven-hundred men had been reduced to around two-hundred. The Silver Blizzard City hadn't suffered any losses yet since their comparative individual strength was much higher. But, they had also started to become weak and weary...

The Third, Sixth and Ninth elders had formed a ring along with the Silver City's Seven Swords. These people put-together had a combined strength much higher than that of ten Spirit Xuan experts. Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong were protected inside this enclosure. Anyway, it wasn't like those two were ordinary experts either. So, the Xuan Beasts couldn't harm them either.

However, they could only protect themselves when faced with that wave of Xuan Beasts.

However, Xiao Han's eyes were already bloodshot inside the encirclement. He had become irritated, and could explode any moment like a maniac. He stamped his feet and shouted, "Why? Why so many Xuan Beasts are present here when there are none attacking Jun Wu Yi? Why hasn't that cripple died yet? I want him dead! Why isn't he dead?! Jun Wu Yi! Why aren't you dead?! Argh...!"

Jun Wu Yi's situation was rather peculiar in that bitter and chaotic battle. Xiao Han had first taken pleasure in his misfortune, but he was shocked at the moment. In fact, he could only resign himself to the Xuan Beasts' besiege as he watched from afar. Xiao Han had already been forced to endure such deathly pressure. So, his mind couldn't endure such grief anymore. And, he blindly continued to shout like a madman as result of this...

He had prepared his frame of mind to watch Jun Wu Yi's death. An outsider couldn't understand why this was such a huge problem for him at this moment.

Jun Wu Yi had wanted to kill Xiao Han with his sword... and that too for over ten years!

So, wouldn't Xiao Han also have wished to kill Jun Wu Yi the same? He too had desired it for ten years. In fact, he had wanted it for several months more than Jun Wu Yi had...

The experts sent by the other families had already died... except for some of the strongest Spirit Xuan and Sky Xuan ones. They



were still struggling with each other's support. However, the rest of the army had been wiped out.

They may have been defeated, and Jun Wu Yi may have died if they had acted in accordance to Jun Wu Yi's plan. But, these Spirit Xuan experts would've managed to survive, and would've returned safely even if their army had been defeated. In fact, more-than-half of the Sky Xuan experts would've managed to return safe and sound!

They would've been defeated, but they wouldn't have lost the core of their strength. And, Jun Wu Yi had been confident of achieving that!

However, these men were scared of Li Jue Tian and his authority. So, they had chosen to throw-in their lot with Li Jue Tian instead. They had followed after the Xue Hun Manor, but they hadn't anticipated that 'rejoicing in someone else's misfortune' and 'kicking them when they are down' would bring about their funeral.

The meaner the person's nature... the quicker their deaths would come in a battle this brutal.

Wasn't this a warning?!

That one-sided slaughter was slowly coming to an end. No one had noticed, but the screams had already become sparse. The bellowing roars also became broken. Only Jun Wu Yi's party had the same energy as before... and so did their 'opponents'. And, they were attacking hard. Their fights had become an intense event.

The Young Master Jun finally made himself visible. He walked to the top of the hillside where the Solitary Falcon stood. Everything was going according to the plan he had scripted out. In fact, things were going very smoothly.

[Damn! More than half of them are dead! And, the ones who

haven't died yet... are rather unlikely to.]

[I had once said that you'd better prepare for your funeral if you try to entrap us!] Jun Mo Xie's clothes fluttered as he walked to the hilltop. His elegant face had calm cruelty written all over it.

Who could've thought that such a frail looking youngster could possess the skills to orchestrate a dramedy of this scale?

The Supreme Commander Jun Wu Yi was in a tragic situation before the battle had started. And, he was helpless when it came to doing anything about it. And then, the situation became a comedy since the tables turned. Many people were happy with his misfortunes, and had schemed his downfall. However, these people themselves had fallen into tragic turmoil.

Jun Mo Xie was akin to unknown peak expert. He had planned this entire elaborate thing in secret. He hadn't only planned for himself, but he had also pre-empted the enemy. He hadn't overlooked anything in this entire matter.

He had Jade Xuan cultivation. But, what difference would it make if his plans could implicate Spirit Xuan experts and Sky Xuan experts? Their tragedy would never turn into comedy!

And, this kind of conduct could truly be described as —'turns his palm up, and he gathers the clouds. Turns his palm down, and he turns them to rain.'

Everything was under control!

How could he not appear now that he was reaping the fruits of his labor? How could the overjoyed director of the play not appear to accept the applause? How could he not enjoy it?

[One laughs wildly when they are frustrated. And, one should do it even more strongly when they are pleased.]

[Laughter must be hearty and unrestrained. And, one should sing loudly when they are pleased with themselves! Why have so many misgivings? Life is tough and short. So, enjoy it while you can.

And, intoxicate oneself in songs.]

[Be calm and tranquil if you're proud of yourself. Why would you act cocky if someone talks to you? I dislike those who act like pretentious pricks. Why would anyone proud of themselves act anxious? I dislike too much strain. I'm proud of myself, and I'm awesome! Who dares to take me as a madman and laugh? Ask yourself... do you have any achievements the kind this madman does? Shut your mouth if you don't! The eighteen generations of your ancestry have been sissy, and your socks had stinky holes in them! I won't even urinate in your water bottles!]

[Why should I concern myself with any of those damned matter? How's it my business?]

This was Jun Mo Xie's philosophy.

[Sing when you're proud. And, stop when you've failed. Many worries and regrets can last for ages. Live in the moment. Worry about tomorrow when tomorrow comes.]

[Those who fail to show their skill shall break. And, those who shall break will eventually break. And, I will kill them when they break. It's important to laugh at the clouds if one wishes to run amok the lands. It's important to go about one's own means. And, it's important to... go fu\*k it!]

# Chapter 357: Great Master Li Jue Tian's Tragedy

---

"Good brat!" Solitary Falcon didn't know what was going on, but he had realized that Jun Mo Xie was somehow related to all this. Why else would Jun Mo Xie have asked him to refrain from getting involved in the battle? So, he couldn't help but hold the brat's shoulders when he saw him. The Solitary Falcon then laughed as he shook Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie laughed mischievously. He then struggled to get out of the tight grip. Then, he stood at the side of the mountain. His lips pursed, and the corners of his mouth rose to turn into an arch as he watched the decisive battle that was taking place at a distance.

"Solitary Falcon, did you beat Feng Juan Yun in a battle?" Jun Mo Xie asked. He hadn't seen it happen, but he could feel that these two men had already crossed paths again.

Feng Juan Yun had been challenging him for decades. So, how could he have allowed this opportunity to slip-by? Moreover, the Solitary Falcon had just learned a new move, and could've had a chance of beating his old rival with its help. So, why would he not show it off?

"Ke ke... I was lucky... just lucky!" Solitary Falcon's mouth split open. But, he tried to keep a solemn face. However, his face was full of pride even though he was doing his utmost to hide his expression. And, that made it seem as if someone had punched his face.

Jun Mo Xie laughed in a complacent manner. In fact, he was smiling from ear to ear. He then asked, "Did you beat him convincingly...?"

The corners of Solitary Falcon's mouth rose into a wide smile as

he replied, "I did; I did! But, we're friends. So, we were just learning from each other's development. We were just learning from each other; that's all! Ha ha..." He couldn't contain his pride by the time he finished speaking. Then, he broke into laughter...

It was no wonder that the Solitary Falcon was in such high spirits. He had finally beaten his rival of thirty-forty years. In fact, he had established absolute dominance. Such a feat would leave any man feeling pleased with themselves! In fact, one could say that the Solitary Falcon was acting rather indifferent to his personal achievement when one considers his overall restraint...

"What are you laughing at? Solitary Falcon! The allied army is losing! Does that make you happy? Does it make you proud...?" Li Jue Tian turned his head to look at the Solitary Falcon. His eyes were shooting sharp swords. It seemed that he was about to explode.

Li Jue Tian was extremely gloomy. And, he needed to vent it out on someone. But, he had never expected that someone from his own side would be laughing so happily at this time. [This is a slap to my face! And, you're jeering at my loss?]

"I fu\*king am! Li Jue Tian, you're fu\*ked. But I'm not, got it?" Solitary Falcon was extremely happy at that moment. He was happy because he had notched a long-awaited personal success. Moreover, Li Jue Tian had rebuked him in front of Jun Mo Xie. Therefore, this had become a doubly-annoying situation for the Solitary Falcon. Hence, he immediately flew into a rage, "Others can't laugh because the people from your Manor are dying? What logic is that? This is the third time you've troubled me today! Fu\*k! You think the Solitary Falcon is some moldable clay?"

It suddenly seemed as if the Solitary Falcon was about to set into action! Things had clearly gotten out of hand!

[I saved your son's life when that idiot offended Feng Juan Yun! Yet, you're still mad at me? And, now you've gone overboard! I

can't even laugh when I want to? What am I... a Xue Hun Manor lackey?]

Li Jue Tian snorted. He then lifted his leg to walk over to their side.

Jun Mo Xie's expression evidently expressed his desire to watch some more action from the sidelines. He even pushed the Solitary Falcon. It was almost as if he was stating his desire — Do it for me!

"Stop, I say!" a voice full of grief, indignation and rage rang out like a thunderclap.

Li Jue Tian and Solitary Falcon were about to start. But, they were left to jump with fright at this. They looked up, and saw that Venerable Mei had somehow managed to arrive near them; without being noticed. Her eyes were watching Jun Mo Xie very attentively. The Lord of Tian Fa then trembled, and a bright light shone in their eyes. Her cheeks had nearly turned red by now.

Jun Mo Xie had barely showed-up, and Venerable Mei had already realized that he was that dirty bastard. And, that sudden and shocking discovery had almost made her faint on the spot!

She saw that handsome and elegant face, but she could only remember the nightmares she had been having for the past day... owing to the abuse she had suffered. Venerable Mei felt her heart beat in a frantic manner. Blood buzzed about her body, and rushed to her head. Her breathing became labored. In fact, she could see stars of confusion in front of her. She urgently gasped for breath, and eventually settled down a little.

This was neither a nice surprise for her... nor had she been love struck. This reaction had been derived from excessive rage.

It was extreme grief, indignation, and shame. The kind that could easily overflow to the heavens!

In fact, even the heavens pitied her.

[I've finally met this man again!]

[I will make mincemeat of him. I will give him a death by a thousand cuts! In fact, my anger won't abate even after I've given ten-thousand cuts to that filthy and despicable brat!]

She tried to control her emotions, and forcefully suppressed her anger as she floated above. The Lord of Tian Fa had tried her best to control herself, but she still couldn't stop her body from trembling a little.

However, Li Jue Tian and Solitary Falcon had recovered from the shock by this time. Li Jue Tian gave a loud shout, and started to move again. He was the Second Great Master of the world. Would he stop if someone had told him to? ...Especially when that 'someone' was his enemy?

Solitary Falcon also set into motion. He was about to face the Second Great Master. So, how could he take it easy? Therefore, he prepared himself to give everything he had in order to face this challenge...

However, the Solitary Falcon hadn't even initiated his counter-attack when Li Jue Tian suddenly disappeared from his line of sight.

Venerable Mei was extremely enraged. She had told them to stop, but Li Jue Tian had dared to continue despite that. So, she wasn't able to prevent her accumulated anger from igniting at that moment. She had angrily rushed forward, and had grabbed Li Jue Tian by his neck. Then, she had heavily pinned him to the ground. Li Jue Tian's head had smashed into a rock. He had previously been sitting on this rock. However, the rock that had previously seated his posterior had now been smashed by his head. Then, Venerable Mei smacked his face.

"Bang!" there was a loud sound.

The sound was extremely loud! And, the smack to his face had resonated throughout the vicinity.

"I told you to stop! Didn't you hear, you bastard?! You old bastard!" Venerable Mei continued to strike him in rage. She sent her hands and legs flying, and gave him a series of rapid and continuous punches and kicks. It was evident that she had become frantic, and had lost control. She roared as she continued to attack in rage, "Are you deaf? Couldn't you hear me? Am I not able to make you listen? How dare you not listen to me...? Can't you hear me you shameless thing? You cuckolded-old-filthy-shameless-lowly bastard dared to pretend that he couldn't hear me?"

The Second Great Master — Li Jue Tian — didn't have any strength to strike back. He could merely look at Venerable Mei with grief and indignation. He had been humiliated to such an extent that a sudden urge to commit suicide had started to bubble inside his heart.

[I want to die!]

Li Jue Tian's tragedy was inexplicable. [I, I... I was just fighting against the Solitary Falcon! How did I offend you by doing that? Why are you beating me up?]

He didn't know it, but his bad luck had begun since the moment he had spoken, "I hope that you've been well since the last time we talked?" And, this was obviously due to Jun Mo Xie. And then, Venerable Mei had lost her rationality to her fury when her main culprit — Jun Mo Xie — had appeared before her eyes. So, how could she not brutalize him when he didn't listen to her order?

Li Jue Tian would've understood the reason behind his own predicament if he had known this. In fact, he would've realized that the beating he was receiving wasn't unreasonable. But, the problem was... he didn't know anything about the situation...

Therefore, Li Jue Tian had been rendered extremely sadden and indignant; in fact, he had reached his limits. The strongest person in the world was continuously pummeling the Second Great Master. In fact, even his face had been struck several times!



[This is a deliberate insult! How can I face the heroes and strong experts of this world now?]

[Even bullies don't bully like this! You had flipped out when I had said those words. But, I hadn't even said anything this time around. I was merely engaging with the Solitary Falcon! What action of mine will you deem proper? What should I do to make myself pleasing to your eyes?]

Li Jue Tian wanted to shout this out in a loud voice. But, he couldn't do it. In fact, it was impossible. Because...

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng exclaimed in shock, "The Power of the Universe? The World Cage...!" They looked at Venerable Mei with awe. The two had previously planned to step up, and mediate. But, they couldn't help but take two steps back at this time.

Perhaps the Great Master Li and the others were unaware. But, how could the two former Great Masters and the current Golden Provosts of the Elusive World of the Immortals not know?

"The Power of the Universe transforms the Heaven and the Earth. The power of the Yin and Yang congeals. The Power of the Universe is in my hands. So, I'm the best in the world! No enemy can withstand me if I can freely use this power to deal with them." This was the Power of the Universe.

It seemed as if Venerable Mei's skill set had reached the peak of perfection as she dealt with Li Jue Tian. There was no room for him to dodge to. And, Li Jue Tian didn't seem to have the strength to retaliate either. This was obviously due to the 'The World Cage' maneuver of the Power of the Universe.

It was as if the world would be reduced into a cage. The opponent would become one's prisoner. And then, they could do whatever they pleased with their prisoner. This was the effect of 'The World Cage'. This explanation was somewhat exaggerated, but that's what it was...

Venerable Mei had attacked due to her infuriated state of mind, and had shown the peak of her true strength. But, it was obvious that the previous fight had barely served as a warm up for her!

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng looked at each other. They were inwardly alarmed. They were fortunate that they hadn't taken action. Otherwise, wouldn't the party being 'pinned down, and getting its face smacked' be these two instead...?

The two drew cold breaths. But, they were extremely relieved.

Li Jue Tian was being dealt with by Venerable Mei. But, he couldn't evade or resist. It had taken him a split second to realize that he couldn't even move a finger. The poor man couldn't resist at all. So, he had only looked-on in a helpless manner as Venerable Mei had grabbed him by his neck, pinned him to the ground, and smacked his face without giving him a breather. In fact, he couldn't even issue a groan...

Venerable Mei had eventually vented enough anger on Li Jue Tian. So, she tossed him away; it seemed as if she had thrown trash. Then, she turned slowly, and looked at Jun Mo Xie. Her glare was sharp, and cold. It seemed as if she wanted to crush him!

"Who's this brat?" Venerable Mei gnashed her teeth, and asked in a subdued voice. Her fingers pointed at Jun Mo Xie, but her eyes had turned to the Solitary Falcon instead.

"I'm from the Jun Family. May I know what this senior wants from me?" Jun Mo Xie took a step forward and replied. She didn't know the Solitary Falcon's temperament, but Jun Mo Xie did. Venerable Mei was unrivalled, but no one could use that tone in front of Solitary Falcon and get away without hearing 'something' in reply.

Jun Mo Xie had guessed that the Solitary Falcon would've asked in a straightforward and rude manner, "Who're you to ask?" if he didn't act quickly enough. Those words would've obviously offended Venerable Mei. And, the Solitary Falcon would've then

ended-up looking like Li Jue Tian, and would've suffered a great deal like he had.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie acted before the Solitary Falcon could. He had imagined that this Venerable Mei wouldn't have any complaints with him. So, he figured that it wouldn't be a big deal for him to speak. [Maybe this senior saw my forehead and my jawline, and wants me to carry out their legacy and be their disciple...]

[Who need I be scared of in this world if that happens...? Wa ha ha ha...]

## Chapter 358: Name Shakes the World!

---

Jun Mo Xie wasn't aware of this, but his image of himself had overreached the reality. The impression that he felt he had on Venerable Mei was baseless. She hated him. In fact, it was an undying and extremely deep hatred. So much so that she would never forget her grudges even if she lived for three lives. Her hatred was that deep-rooted!

Jun Mo Xie looked somewhat pleased with himself at that point. [Being handsome has its advantages too. This senior must've liked something about me...]

"...You're from the Jun Family? What's your name? Which one of them are you? How old are you?" these words were forced out from between her teeth. But, the other side would hear her and would think that Venerable Mei was interested in him, and wanted to take him under her wing.

"This young person is Jun Mo Xie from the Tian Xiang City's Jun Family. I'm eighteen, and yet unmarried. I'm well-versed in poems. In fact, there's nothing that I'm not good at. I've learnt the political and military strategies, and each of the four arts. This young person has also studied the various schools of thought." Jun Mo Xie chuckled a bit. He looked confident as he bragged about himself.

He wanted to add, "I'm also fluent in eight foreign languages." However, he swallowed those words just when he was about to say it.

"Jun Mo Xie... Jun Mo Xie... Jun Mo Xie... Jun Mo Xie... Jun Mo Xie..." Venerable Mei repeated those words like a groan at first. Then, her voice resembled that of a weep. Afterwards, it turned into a row of that single word. Her voice became increasingly loud, and shook the mountains and valleys. In fact, it echoed like a tsunami in the mountains near and far...

"Jun Mo Xie... Jun... Mo Xie... Jun... Mo... Xie... Jun... Jun... Mo... Xie... Jun Mo Xie... Xie... Xie... Xie..."

The sky and the forest ringed of that name for a moment. Jun Mo Xie's name had shaken the heavens at that moment. In fact, everything had shaken vigorously.

"Uh, I don't know what the senior wants to advise me..." He then started to feel an indistinct feeling in his heart... as if something was wrong. [Crap! Why does it feel like I'm hated to the bone? I've never offended you... I've never even seen this black robed Venerable Mei.]

However, Jun Mo Xie told himself that he would escape into the Hong Jun Pagoda if anything went wrong... even if it meant that he'd end-up exposing his secret.

That Venerable Mei was very difficult to deal with. [The Great Master Li Jue Tian was flipped over and pinned to the ground with just one hand of his'. So, I won't even be able to bear a single smack!]

[Li Jue Tian is extremely strong, and could've borne the brunt of that extremely strong smack from Venerable Mei. But, if I get hit with it... my body may remain here, but my head will fly to Tian Xiang City to celebrate New Year's.]

"Give you advise...?" Venerable Mei repeated the line, and was suddenly at a loss. [Right, what should I do? I'll smack him to death...? Should I kick him to death...? But...wouldn't it be too easy for him? My hatred from him won't disappear even if I kill him a thousand times!]

[I... what's to be done? This brat doesn't look like he can take a proper beating either...]

[And after all, it could be said this brat saved my life back then. Wouldn't killing him be a bit too much?]

"Advise..." Venerable Mei suddenly moved, and caught hold of

him.

They had been around thirty meters apart. And, that was a safe-enough distance in Jun Mo Xie's mind. However, Venerable Mei lifted her hand, and he felt that he couldn't move an inch of his body. Then, he felt a forward attraction force on his body. And, his body started to move on its own. He was already clutched by Venerable Mei the next moment.

Venerable Mei's entire was robed in black like before. However, Jun Mo Xie could strangely smell a simple and elegant smell. In fact, it was a very wonderful smell. He had never smelt anything as sweet as that before. The Young Master Jun couldn't help but close his eyes as he took a deep breath. Then, he opened his eyes and exclaimed, "How sweet!"

[This brat is still trying to take cheap advantage?]

Venerable Mei suddenly went through an extreme change of heart, and felt an urgent need to strangle the young man.

However, Venerable Mei felt the pure heavenly Qi coursing through his body as she clutched his throat. She then determined that the mysterious skilled person who had advanced the Xuan Beast's cultivation, had barged into Tian Fa and had stolen the Sacred Fruit, and had concocted those dans was related to this young man.

Moreover, he had appeared in the forest the same day as that mysterious expert had. Plus, they had a similarly miraculous Qi. So, it was highly probable that the two were master-and-disciple.

It wasn't that Venerable Mei hadn't thought that the-said mysterious expert and the young man could be the same people. But, it had been revealed to her that the aforementioned mysterious expert had a brilliant cultivation. But, this young man's strength was merely trash in comparison. Therefore, she would've never been able to make the connection between the two if the two hadn't appeared in the Tian Fa on the same day, and if

she hadn't felt the Young Master Jun's Qi a moment ago.

Venerable Mei's mind went uneasily around in circles. She feared a terrible fallout if she strangled him for his cheap attitude. [The beasts of Tian Fa advanced. That was a great thing for us. Wouldn't that alliance break if I killed this youngster? Wouldn't we lose a lot if I tried to take my revenge? That fallout would come with the wrath of that mysterious master! I may not care about his skills. But, what about the Beast Kings?]

"Senior...?!" Jun Mo Xie had sensed the indecisiveness in Venerable Mei. So, he had called out. His shout hadn't even ended when "Bang!" a tight smack warmed the side of his face. Everyone on the ground suddenly started to seem small as he soared up amongst the misty clouds, and continued to fly to a great altitude.

Venerable Mei had thrown him three-hundred meters into the air. Then, she jumped up and caught up with him. Her black robe filled his eyes as there was a sudden change of scene, and "Bang! Bang! Bang!" he was smacked on his face repeatedly. Venerable Mei was hitting his face mid-air... very joyfully at that.

[I won't kill you, but I will mistreat you as much as I want. What's the worse that can happen if I don't kill you?]

"Fu\*k! Are you sick?! You're hitting me without reason!" Jun Mo Xie was angry, and tried to turn his face to ask. However, he didn't try to move his face back to position at the end of it. His face would break into pieces if he was hit by that strength when he brought it back. He had to consider the pros and cons as his head was flung around. This was Hit-man Jun's resilience. Anyone else would've been crushed into pieces.

The wind at that high altitude was strong, and Jun Mo Xie's hadn't even been able to finish his creaking sentences. But, Venerable Mei had obviously understood their meaning.

[Bastard! Your bratty mouth is too dirty! It's time to fix that!]

He became silent, and bit his lips as the smacks continued uninterrupted.

Jun Mo Xie could clearly see that the black-robed opposite party had an air of excitement about them since they seemed to be beating him up with delight.

[Damn! This person is a sadist!]

[A wise man knows not to fight when the odds are against him. I will come back if I have an opportunity to strike.] Jun Mo Xie thought this, and then suddenly disappeared without a trace.

This was the Yin-Yang Escape. Even Li Jue Tian wouldn't have been able to escape safely when Venerable Mei had put her heart-and-soul and full focus on beating him up.

Venerable Mei was in a good mood, and she had moved her hand to hit him another time. However, she only managed to hit empty air. She drew her breath and became puzzled. She looked around, but saw nothing. [Strange... this brat has escaped from my clutches!]

[He's a Jade Xuan at best! So, how did he escape? This is absurd!]

Jun Mo Xie had eventually escaped. And, Venerable Mei became extremely gloomy since she no longer had a place to vent her anger. She seemed puzzled as she slowly floated down. Only one puzzling matter went round her mind... [How did he escape? This is unimaginably weird!]

Jun Mo Xie was abusing her from inside the Hong Jun Pagoda, while she wondered at this.

The Young Master Jun was extremely angry.

[This is too much bullying! When did I offend you? You hit me the first time I meet you. Do I look like someone in need for a spanking?]

[You just met me! And, yet you became filled with extreme



hatred? Did I kill your parents? Rape your wife...? Or, take your baby and throw him into a well? You're a\*s literally exploded when you saw me! Why such hatred? You may be the Lord of Tian Fa, but just you wait! I will come back one day, and I will fry you out!]

[This is utter confusing!]

Jun Mo Xie clenched his jaw as he felt the burning sensation. He had never been smacked like this in either of his lives... but, the person who did this was an apex expert. An ordinary person might've felt honored to be hit by this individual. But, Jun Mo Xie didn't feel that way.

[So what if your Xuan cultivation is difficult to deal with? I will speed up my cultivation to overtake you. And, the next time I see you — you sadist — I will scatter your plummy a\*s into eight pieces... or my name isn't Jun Mo Xie!]

The battle was over by now.

The ten Spirit Xuan Experts from the Silver City had seen a bloody and murderous time since they had to protect Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong. Those two were lightly injured. However, these people had managed to break the siege, and had escaped. None of them had died. Their injuries weren't that serious. They were merely weary. As for the Xue Hun Manor... two-out-of-their-three Spirit Xuan experts were dead. The third one had escaped by chance. However, he somehow mutilated himself, and his Xuan cultivation would see an extraordinary drop despite a long road to recovery. His mind had been thrown into a state of delusion. And, the remaining seven-hundred experts below to the Spirit Xuan Level were dead. Even their dozen or so Sky Xuan experts were no exception.

A very few men from the other powerful families had escaped with luck. The rest of the army had been tied-up as well.

However, the group that had suffered the least casualties was the

one that had stayed under Jun Wu Yi's leadership. He had over three-hundred men under his command. Around ninety-to-hundred of them had died. But, around two-hundred of them had managed to live! In fact, Baili Luo Yun — the Jade Xuan expert — had survived unhurt.

Everyone was tired. Therefore, Dongfang Wen Qing and the others knelt on their swords, and took deep breaths as they gasped for air. The Xuan Beasts they had faced hadn't had it easy either. They also put out their tongues, wagged their tails, and panted.

Even 'putting on a show' required tremendous energy.

The first round of the battle was over. And, it had ended in Tian Fa's victory.

Jun Wu Yi frowned. He didn't feel the elation of a new life even though he had narrowly escaped his certain death. Nor did he feel the happiness of surviving this besiege of the beasts... or the joy of escaping unhurt. He looked away from the Golden Tiger that stood in front of him, and focused his attention on the hilltop with a worried expression on his face.

Jun Mo Xie's name had shaken the very skies a moment ago. So, he had obviously heard it as well. And, it was for that reason that he looked anxious...

# Chapter 359: I Will Curse You Till You Die of Excessive Rage!

---

Superiority and talent may not always be a good thing. Such things can even bring upon disaster and doom upon the host of such talents. And, one wouldn't have to go too far to seek an example. Baili Luo Yun was exceptionally talented. But, he wouldn't have attracted the envy of his entire family if it wasn't for his superior inborn talents. He could've brought them a lot of fame and glory in the future if they had looked past it. However, they only wanted to get rid of him. And, as soon as possible at that!

[The wind can destroy any elegant tree.] Jun Wu Yi knew that his nephew was even smarter and more talented than Baili Luo Yun. He knew that Jun Mo Xie's future accomplishments would be amazing. But, that was also a cause for worry for him. Anyone who'd find out about Jun Mo Xie's talents would obviously try to 'nip that potential threat in the bud' if they had any misgivings about the course of Jun Mo Xie's future accomplishments.

[Wasn't that riot from the past created... for this reason alone?]

On the hilltop...

"This battle is decided in Tian Fa's victory!" Lei Bao Yu eloquently announced the result of the battle since he was the 'witness'. The outcome of the fight was a fact, and every senior who stood there had seen it.

"Wait!" a voice called out in anger. Then, it continued resolutely, "We still have military strength on the battlefield. Not all of our men have died yet. So, why has this been declared a victory for Tian Fa? Jun Wu Yi — that coward — is still in this battle. He isn't dead yet. So, why doesn't he attack?"

Everyone-present unanimously despised the idiot who had opened his mouth to speak that idiocy. In fact, that description was

‘too nice’ for him. The person who had spoken this was obviously a perfect combination of mental retardation and brainlessness.

The human army was scattered, and each group was fighting alone. And, how many casualties had they managed to inflict on the Xuan Beasts? Especially when one eliminates the few inflicted by some Spirit and Sky Xuan experts...? Eighty or ninety put together! The remaining Xuan Beasts were more than enough to take care of the human survivors. The allied human forces were anyway left with less than three-hundred men if one didn't count the injured and the dead. So, wouldn't they lose for sure if they fought any further? Shouldn't they admit defeat now? Even the thick-skinned could see this!

Everyone turned their heads to see a blood-stained face with a wolf-like expression on it. A fierce light shone in the eyes of this person as he looked at Jun Wu Yi. That man was Xiao Han. And, his meaning was clear. It wasn't a 'defeat' till Jun Wu Yi and his men had died. He wouldn't be reconciled to that fact until his rival was dead.

Everyone had understood the intentions of his heart.

Wasn't it obvious that he wanted to see Jun Wu Yi's death?

Everyone knew of the event of the past. They understood that this man's jealousy soared to the heavens. He had foolishly opened his mouth to express his jealousy. And, his words were purely unreasonable and provocative!

"The first one to run away has made his return. Doesn't he resemble a dog that has come back wagging its tail? Perhaps you should return to battlefield at the risk of your life, and show your blood-boiling heroic pride... But, doesn't it seem like the deserter is boasting that the battle hasn't ended?" a cynical and lazy voice cut in.

It was none other than the Young Master Jun. The young man had opened his mouth to dish out a resolute derision. He was now

stationed at a significant distance from Venerable Mei. He had been trampled on by her. So, his heart harbored a lingering fear of her. In fact, the Young Master Jun hadn't intended to make an appearance at this time. But, he couldn't bear Xiao Han's shameless words. Moreover, he had understood that Venerable Mei wanted to beat him up, but they didn't intend to kill him.

He didn't have to worry about his life as a result. Moreover, he had an important matter to take care of. So, he took a risk, and made an appearance.

A faint light appeared in Venerable Mei's eyes as she looked at Jun Mo Xie's sudden appearance. [This brat is very mysterious. He had inexplicably disappeared a moment ago. But, he has suddenly reappeared. Moreover, he was also able to hide his spiritual essence. This is very strange!]

"What shameful crap did you speak, you ignorant brat?" Xiao Han retorted.

"What did I say? Was I not clear enough...? Firstly, your Silver City broke formation before our side was even defeated. Then, your people ran away! This is a crime worthy of execution!"

Jun Mo Xie snorted and continued, "You just said that 'the battle isn't over yet'. So, why have your people returned? You don't have the face to say that the battle isn't over! I don't understand what kind of high quality stuff they teach you at the Silver City... You feared for your life, and ran away at the beginning of the battle. Then, you call someone who actually fought it from the start a 'coward'! Tch... the Xuan Beasts from Tian Fa are still here if you wish to go ahead with your rhetoric. You lead the charge, and I guarantee that Tian Xiang's forces will follow after. No man will stay behind. Will you dare to do it?"

Xiao Han was at a loss for words. [Wouldn't I be courting death if I go forth at this time? The Xuan Beasts will be lenient with you, but I won't get such a treatment.]

Jun Mo Xie then looked up and spoke, "Fortunately, many elders of the Silver Blizzard City are here. I would like to ask the Spirit Xuan elders present here to excuse me. But, is this shamelessness a tradition in the Silver City? Is this man the rising star of the Silver City's Xiao Family? Is the strength of your ten Spirit Xuan experts only good to escape despite being part of the allied army? Is it only good enough to protect your two Sky Xuan experts? You turned tail and ran to save only your people. Do your faces not turn red at this?"

Jun Mo Xie's words were very sharp and unkind. But, they were still fact. No one could refute it. Moreover, it wasn't that a single person of the Silver City had escaped alone. It was a collective betrayal. And, that had led to the thorough collapse of the entire battle. After all, their strength was the greatest amongst the allied forces. And, their misconduct was a collective misconduct. And, they couldn't refute anything at this moment even if these actions weren't a tradition in their Silver City.

This was only a tradition of the Xiao Family; and not of the entirety of the Silver Blizzard City. However, they were present here as representatives of the Silver City. So, even their fart could be taken as the flatulence of their City itself.

The Third, Sixth and the Ninth elders of the Silver Blizzard City were stunned; the Seven Swords were no different. They were at a loss for words in the face of this reproach from the young man. They made the same action and lowered their heads; their faces felt hot. They couldn't get angry even if they wanted to since they were in front of a thousand staring eyes. So, they chose the strategy of distraction.

Even their shadows couldn't be seen on the battlefield while the Supreme Commander himself had continued to fight. They had obviously run away for no reason. Therefore, they had no scope for any argument at this juncture.

It was unpleasant to hear this. But, it would've been considered a

‘capital offense’ if they had run away like that at a critical juncture in a real battlefield! They obviously would’ve been executed for their actions. In fact, the case wherein their family’s entire property wasn’t confiscated in light of their cowardice would’ve been considered ‘leniency’...

Moreover, Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng had also witnessed this battle. These two were the greatest experts of their generation, and they also represented the Elusive World of the Immortals. Therefore, the fact that they had borne witness to their actions had lent further weight to Jun Mo Xie's arguments...

Many elders — including the most protective, Xiao Bu Yu — felt annoyed at Xiao Han. He felt that his grandson had disgraced them all. [His life was saved. He should have laughed it off. What was the need to shout about this?]

[Would the ten of us Spirit Xuan experts need to escape if we weren’t burdened to protect you, you little brat...? And, now the opposite party is ridiculing us. And, we can't even fault his reasons. The Silver Blizzard City has lost face in front of the world's heroes and experts. This loss of reputation will sting for years to come!]

"Speaking of no shame... the Jun Family has been everybody’s target." Jun Mo Xie vehemently confronted everyone, and glanced at them in a dark manner. He then looked at Li Jue Tian, and started with his real objective.

"The very able senior heroes from the Three Sacred Lands are in attendance today. They’ve all witnessed the battle. Moreover, the heroes of the world and the powerful Xuan Beasts are also assembled here. Even Tian Fa's Lord — the Venerable Mei — has come. So, I would like to ask the Great Master Li Jue Tian a few things in their presence."

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng looked like they appreciated this. [This Jun Family's youngster is quite young. Yet, he has already

reached the Jade Xuan peak. Even we didn't have such cultivation at that age! He's very talented! It's seldom seen that someone faces extraordinary legendary experts from the past, and yet manages to act neither servile nor overbearing. This free and unrestrained manner is a result of self-training!]

[This kid will become very impressive over time! The world will witness another Great-Master-Level expert in less than thirty years!]

In fact, Jun Mo Xie could feel that his 'light flattery' had left a favorable impression on the two Supreme Masters.

"We were in Tian Xiang City. We were living carefree and unrestrained. So, would it even be worth a copper coin to us if the Southern Heaven City were to get destroyed? ...Or everyone from the Xue Hun Manor was turned into a ghost? But, Great Master Li Jue Tian issued the Supreme Order, and we forgot our past animosity. We volunteered to fight, and led our army over thousands of kilometers... over mountains and rivers to get here. But, we rushed through starry nights for the sake of what? For the sake of the Xue Hun Manor! We acted as part of humanity, and did our best for the survival of the noble society to perpetuity in order for justice to prevail throughout the world!"

Jun Mo Xie's voice was loud. It was like an attorney who was standing to accuse the guilty in a court of law. His face was painted with a sense of cold justice, "We came here warm-blooded. But, we got to suffer unfathomable pressure instead of getting a warm welcome! We were pushed around, and that high-and-mighty Great Master Li unexpectedly jeopardized the safety of the entire humanity for his selfish reasons and a long-standing personal grudge! He set up a conspiracy to carry out his desire to have us killed!

"The great Hurricane and Rainstorm Supreme Masters have discerning eyesight. They must've seen what happened with the troop formation very clearly. Even someone who doesn't know the



story behind this could've seen it plain as day! We came here from afar to lend aid to our allies in battle. It could even be said that we provided critical help in the hour of need. So, how can I not ridicule at this moment? The two masters from the Elusive World of the Immortals are present here today. So, I won't fear, and I shall speak freely. What Second or Third Great Master would retaliate now? So, I would like to ask you... where is the conscience in this? Where's the justice? Where's the morality? Could a clenched fist really oppose the world's justice and the will of the people?

"And, let me ask you something else if you're willing to make such decisions to settle personal grudges... Everyone knows that Tian Fa's victory in this war would mean a catastrophe for the common people since they can then invade inwards. So, how come you muddled such an important juncture with so many treacherous schemes? You decided to entrap the Supreme Commander of this battle! So, what are the common people to your eyes? You are each a peak Spirit Xuan expert. But, do you have no humanity? Not even a little bit of it...? Could it be that there's nothing else on your minds except for your own selfish interests...?"

Jun Mo Xie felt emotionally stirred as he continued to speak. He had planned to put on airs. But, he had become indignant by the time he had reached this topic, "Great Master Li, I will now be bold-enough to ask you this... you don't care... you don't care that we have come to help you. And, you are even willing to entrap us. So, why did you issue the Supreme Summons in the first place? Why didn't you lead the Xue Hun Manor against the Xuan Beasts alone if you have such a high level of guts? Why in the world did you act like an ostrich that tries to hide from the truth?

"Why don't you stake everything in it? Why don't you go forth and kill or be killed... plain and simple...? Wouldn't the whole world have sung praises of your strength, and called you a hero

and a towering personality if you had done that?

"However, you didn't do it. You feared for your life, and you called for help — the Supreme Summons! Did you do it because everyone on the continent knows that it can't be ignored? Bah! It's still a call for help, understand? And, you have issued the Supreme Summons. This means that you craved life and feared death! This is the first Supreme Summons in the entirety of the known ten-thousand years of this continent's history. Li Jue Tian, you're the first person since the ancient times to be cowardly-enough to have issued it! No one may be able to trump this in the future. This shall remain unprecedented! You will forever remain the first cowardly Great Master!

"Our strength is the weakest amongst the allied forces. But, we didn't withdraw from the battlefield. We stood there till the last man. The other families who fought didn't withdraw either. Their blood has been spread across the land. But, you tried to flee at the earliest! Your people are the reason for this conflict. And, the people who had issued the Supreme Summons were also those from the Xue Hun Manor and the Silver Blizzard City! And what's more... your people are the strongest! Do you have no shame as you stand here amongst everyone?"

Jun Mo Xie sneered, "You had planned to entrap my uncle! So, you won't concede this battle in defeat since you see that he hasn't died yet? Li Jue Tian, Xiao Han, I shall believe that you two are the Supreme Masters of the universe from this day forth! Because... you two are the undisputed and greatest Supreme Masters when it comes to being shameless! Who can match the two of you?! 'Supreme Shameless Masters'! This name fits the two of you! I'm sure that no one can refute that!"

The people on whom Jun Mo Xi was raining curses turned deathly white. There were many whose hands weren't clean. And, they had used this opportunity to set up that shameless scheme. However, the others had still only been swayed by the tide, and

had followed the course of the events.

Li Jue Tian had been caught by Venerable Mei a bit earlier. He was then repeatedly smacked on the face, and he hadn't been able to resist that beating to any extent. His reputation had already taken a bad hit thereof. Moreover, he was left seriously injured after Venerable Mei had finished with her moral lesson. However, he didn't have any face left to stand up. So, he merely stayed there, and remained lying on the ground. He might've had avoided the problem, and might've saved himself from this kind of an unnecessary humiliation during normal times if he hadn't received that beating. And, he wouldn't have been shamed as much in that case.

How could he not wish to retaliate? But, his skill wasn't equal to that of the opposition. So, how could he retaliate?

Li Jue Tian was still on the ground, and the people from the Xue Hun Manor were looking after him. It was then when he heard Jun Mo Xie's lengthy and reproachful question. Each sentence referred to justice; each word angled towards the essence of justice.

However, the fact that made things difficult for him to digest was that Jun Mo Xie hadn't discussed several other aspects. He hadn't discussed why many Sky Xuan and Earth Xuan experts had died... Why many Spirit Xuan experts had also lost their lives... But the many Jade Xuan experts under Jun Wu Yi's command had still managed to survive...? And then, the youngster had played the 'victim' card. He had used 'justice' to appeal to human emotions in his derides. Moreover, this person had acted bold and confident... as if the justice was on his side. His voice was powerful and resonant, and he had argued with the power of his convictions behind him. He derided the people, and he had shamed them. He shamed them so badly that they were even afraid to refute. So much so, that everyone had started to feel sympathy for Jun Wu Yi.

But then, Li Jue Tian heard Jun Mo Xie's snide, "Li Jue Tian,

Xiao Han, I shall believe that you two are the Supreme Masters of the universe from this day forth! Because... you two are the undisputed and greatest Supreme Masters when it comes to being shameless! Who can match the two of you?! 'Supreme Shameless Masters'! This name fits the two of you! I'm sure that no one can refute that!" He couldn't digest this sentence. And, it started to resonate in his abdomen and chest. He then quickly got up, and turned his head to point at Jun Mo Xie. His finger shook as he angrily retorted, "Ignorant brat! You... you... puff!"

He spat out blood the moment he opened his mouth.

The Second Great Master had been made to spit blood by the curses of Jun Mo Xie — a boy who was nothing more than an ant in his eyes.

Li Jue Tian was seriously injured. His internal injuries were critical. Venerable Mei had attacked him furiously, and in anger. He wasn't pretending when it came to that. In fact, his flesh had visibly been beaten to a pulp... even if the internal injuries couldn't be made out.

Li Jue Tian had relied on his body's Xuan Qi to protect his internal organs. He wouldn't die even if worse came to worst. And, he was very proud of that fact. After all, the Lord of Tian Fa had roughed him up quite badly. And, this entity was none other than the apex expert of the universe! He had been confined and beaten to such an extent that his bones were broken in several places, and his internal organs were bleeding very severely.

He could've easily killed Jun Mo Xie with one move even in such a seriously injured state. But, he still couldn't. In fact, he couldn't dare to. Because... Jun Mo Xie had the Solitary Falcon at his side. Li Jue Tian wouldn't have been scared of the Solitary Falcon under normal circumstances, and would've faced him with full confidence. In fact, he could've tidied the Solitary Falcon up with ease. But, he feared that the Solitary Falcon would take advantage of the injured state of his body, and would tidy him up instead.

Moreover, the two people from the Elusive World of Immortals were present here. The rights and wrongs had already been exposed. So, how could they not meddle? And, even if they weren't present here — the Lord of the Xuan Beasts still was!

He could obviously kill the opposition with ease, but wouldn't dare to. And, that's why Li Jue Tian had been forced to bear those unending violent curses from the opposition. And, the fact that Li Jue Tian had to endure those curses was the reason why the blood came out of his mouth. This matter had crossed the limit of his tolerance.

And, that very helplessness of the Second Great Master's present state... a state where he could do nothing and be resigned to vomit blood was the main reason why Jun Mo Xie had gathered the courage to abuse him so openly and violently.

And... as for later... there wouldn't be a 'later' for Li Jue Tian! This was because Jun Mo Xie had already decided to kill him. Li Jue Tian was more dangerous than the Silver Blizzard City. The Silver City had been held back, and couldn't start a conflict so openly as a result of that. However, Li Jue Tian was different. He was a lunatic. He could do anything his son asked him to...

He would act without any misgivings. And, he would act shamelessly at that. And, this was precisely the kind of trouble Jun Mo Xie would never allow to exist.

However, Jun Mo Xie's current cultivation wasn't enough to kill Li Jue Tian even if the Great Master's entire body was broken. So, how would he kill the man?

Jun Mo Xie had already decided his plan of action in that regard. He had obtained a very powerful weapon ever since he had entered the second layer of the Hong Jun Pagoda. It was something which he hadn't shown to anyone yet!

And that was — the Flame of Primal Chaos!

That pitch-black flame was the origin of entire world! It had the terrifying ability to burn anything down. And then again... Li Jue Tian was a mere mortal. However, the Flame of Primal Chaos could even burn a golden immortal, and could then scatter the remnants of their soul.

However, Jun Mo Xie's Xuan cultivation wasn't enough to control the Flame of Primal Chaos. Therefore, he hadn't dared to use it until this point. Otherwise, wouldn't he have already used it to take care of anyone he didn't like? The fact of the matter was that he could concoct immortality pills that could help him control the Flame of Primal Chaos, and still leave him with some strength to spare. However, there was a huge risk of injury if he tried to maneuver the Hong Jun Pagoda inside his body. It would cause a huge wear and tear to his body. So, he had to be very careful. Otherwise, he could end up as a pile of ash himself...

It would be like getting hurt from 'devil's bite' even if there was a backlash. He would get hurt; very seriously at that. And, his mind would suffer serious damage as well. Further, Jun Mo Xie was unaware that there was a state of mind known as the Primordial Spirit. No lengthy amounts of recuperation would reinstate his state of mind if his Primordial Spirit were to sustain damage. The consequences were grave, and he couldn't afford a single mistake thereupon. In fact, he shouldn't have thought to employ it... unless as a last resort.

However, Jun Mo Xie had no other option at the moment. It was a critical juncture, and this was his last resort.

Moreover, it was also the most fortune moment to strike. Numerous bones in Li Jue Tian's body had been broken by Venerable Mei. He was also suffering from serious internal injuries. The Second Great Master was in the poorest condition of his life as a result. This was the once-in-a-lifetime opportunity to kill him in his weak state. It would mean the end of Jun Mo Xie and the Jun Family if he didn't take Li Jue Tian's life in his most

vulnerable condition.

In fact, Li Jue Tian would never have let Jun Wu Yi or the Jun Family off... even if Jun Mo Xie hadn't rained curses at him by 'throwing caution to the wind'. The Xue Hun Manor had lost around one-third of their strength in their scheme. They had suffered a great loss for a small gain as a result. And, that loss included three Spirit Xuan experts... They would undoubtedly blame this on Jun Wu Yi's head!

Moreover, Jun Mo Xie was the main reason behind Venerable Mei's wild behavior. One couldn't blame Jun Mo Xie for it at the moment, but he was main reason behind it. This held true... especially for the second time! He had become the target of her anger in Jun Mo Xie's stead.

However, how could someone with Li Jue Tian's temperament allow the uncle-nephew duo to get away? He couldn't attack Venerable Mei. But, that didn't mean that he couldn't do the same to this uncle-and-nephew pair. In any case, Li Jue Tian would've never considered the cause-and-effect in such a matter...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had no other choice. He had decided to take the risk out of desperation.

[I must kill Li Jue Tian! I must deal him the fatal blow!]

Li Jue Tian had been forced into a corner by Venerable Mei. And, Jun Mo Xie had done the same at this time!

Therefore, the Jun Family would see its end if Li Jue Tian didn't die!

Besides, there was no better way to solve everything than killing Li Jue Tian!

Everyone thought that Jun Mo Xie was being reckless since he had continuously hurled abuses at the Second Great Master. He had continually brought-up his name in his rain of curses. In fact, he hadn't even stopped for a breath. And, everyone considered

that too be extremely reckless. However, Jun Mo Xie's thoughts were different...

[Li Jue Tian is seriously injured; in fact, he has suffered the heaviest injury of his lifetime! Moreover, he has suffered the greatest humiliation any Great Master has ever had to since the dawn of time. Therefore, his mental state would be highly incited. And, he won't be able to control it! And, his nature is anyway very vicious, and it's rather hard to control his mind. So, the harder I abuse him at this moment... the better. The more Li Jue Tian hears from me at this moment... the more irritated he will become... And that would result in an absolute loss of self-control on his part!]

[The best case would obviously be if I can infuriate him to the point where he dies of excessive anger! In fact, his internal injuries will become more aggravated even if he doesn't die from excessive anger! And, that will result in the most favorable prerequisite for a shot at success!]



# Chapter 360: How Can You Be So Shameless?!

---

Jun Mo Xie had expected that his rain of curses would be even more effective than Venerable Mei's punches if Li Jue Tian got to hear them properly. Li Jue Tian would lose control over his mind, and that would make his injuries worse. He would be enraged, and his Xuan efficacy would be damaged. This would lead to his internal organs sustaining harm. This would lead him to spit blood, and his condition would worsen.

Jun Mo Xie looked on coldly, and was delighted to see Li Jue Tian spitting blood. [This is only the beginning, old man. You will soon be delighted to see your child die in front of your eyes. Just wait for a moment, and I will show you your son's corpse. Then, I'll see that you spit more blood, you bastard!]

[Li Teng Yun, this Young Master had warned you of a bloody event. I had told you that you wouldn't be able to avoid it even if you wanted to. You hadn't believed me, right? Just wait. This Young Master will show you proof!]

[I've gotten a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity today. My name isn't Jun Mo Xie if I don't kill you!]

These successive abuses were meant to attack Li Jue Tian's psyche! It could be said that Jun Mo Xie had employed the greatest psychological tactic. He had identified the weakness in his psyche, and had caught hold of that weakness. He had then advanced to catch hold of him, and had created an opportunity step by step. Jun Mo Xie had attacked him repeatedly, and had widened the breach as a result. And thus, he had reached his purpose.

Jun Mo Xie had seen Venerable Mei beat Li Jue Tian up. And, that's when Jun Mo Xie had come up with that bright idea to break his enemy down.

He had planned to humiliate Li Jue Tian from the beginning. The Silver Blizzard City had only helped him along by giving him an opening; that's all. In fact, Jun Mo Xie would've found a reason to rain abuses at Li Jue Tian even if Xiao Han hadn't jumped-in and spoken those stupid words.

However, that idiot Xiao Han stating "we aren't defeated till they're dead" gave Jun Mo Xie a better reason to start.

A malicious thought had arisen in Jun Mo Xie's mind. [I won't spare anyone who tries to entrap my Jun Family!]

[It doesn't matter who you are... it doesn't matter if you had been forced into it... it doesn't matter if you had some difficulties. You will face my wrath if you were involved — the wrath of the Evil Monarch!]

"Ahem, this matter has ended in defeat, and it's not without reason. My brother and I sympathize with Supreme Commander Jun's bitter experience. And, we are glad that he has been lucky today, and has survived unhurt. It's indeed a matter worth a celebration!" Bu Kuang Feng's temperament was somewhat straightforward. Moreover, he had been discontent from the very beginning with respect to what he had witnessed in this battle. However, he was mainly annoyed with Li Jue Tian and the Silver Blizzard City.

This was because he had witnessed that a very tragic hero had come from afar to render aid to a person, but that person was too busy scheming to entrap this hero. But, the hero had stuck with his beliefs and duty. In fact, he had gone ahead by deciding to fight and die without any regrets! He had stuck with his duty even when he had faced imminent death. Moreover, he had given it everything he had... regardless of the schemes.

The cowardly conspirators had acted like tyrants. They didn't obey his commands, and broke ranks. But, the hero would have a clear conscience whether he lived or died. He had decided to

employ the entirety of his military prowess to protect everyone; even the people who wanted to entrap him... and this was simply because they were a part of his group.

Anyone who had seen Jun Wu Yi's formation of troops with a discerning eye could've guessed that the result would've been a loss. But, one could also tell that it wouldn't have been such a miserable one. However, no one could blame Jun Wu Yi for the errors made.

He knew it was a trap. But, a soldier is a soldier. And, a commander is a commander. Jun Wu Yi was fighting for the Continent, and not for taking another breath. This seemed stupid. But, it was enough for men to follow his orders, and treat him with high esteem and admiration.

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng had come as witnesses. But, the Elusive World of the Immortals and Li Jue Tian still had some relations. Therefore, their point of view was a little biased towards Li Jue Tian, and this side of the continent. However, they slowly and unconsciously found their point of view deviate when they saw the events unfurl in front of their own eyes.

Jun Wu Yi had made no mistakes. And, people anyway sympathized with the underdog's situation. Moreover, the envoys of the Elusive World of Immortals considered themselves to stand on the side of justice. So, they obviously and unknowingly found themselves stationed on Jun Wu Yi's side.

It was enough at that moment... even if it was only temporary.

Tragic heroes were always easy to admire. And, Jun Wu Yi was the leading hero that day. He had become the focus of many Spirit Xuan experts.

"The first battle has ended in victory for Tian Fa!" Bu Kuang Feng stated. He then looked at Venerable Mei before he asked, "Who will fight the second round from Venerable Mei's party?"

"The second round will be fought by Snake King! You can send any individual to fight this one. Regardless of victory or defeat in this round — I will fight the third round against all the senior experts present. I'm confident I will beat everyone."

Venerable Mei snorted, and stared at Jun Mo Xie as her robe swayed gently. That glare felt like piercing pins to Jun Mo Xie, and he suddenly felt a fit of pain on his face.

"Venerable Mei is indeed bold!" Bu Kuang Feng smiled and continued, "This youngster is also very good. He hasn't opened his meridians with some special medicines. Nor has he had any Spirit Xuan expert pour Qi into him. And yet, he's already at the Jade Xuan peak despite his young age! It can be said that he's a rare and talented genius... the likes of which are born once in a thousand years! Venerable Mei had approached close to him a few moments ago. Is it possible that you wish to take him as a disciple?"

He had used common sense. Jun Mo Xie's present condition was enough to determine that his skills would enhance by leaps and bounds once his Spiritual Energy underwent a qualitative transformation with the increase of levels. In fact, it would probably be ranked amongst the best in the continent. And, something like this couldn't have stayed hidden from the eyes of a person who had enjoyed the status of a Great Master for hundreds of years. In fact, he too had wanted to accept the Young Master as a disciple at first! But, Venerable Mei had acted first. Therefore, he had followed common sense, and had inferred that the Lord of Tian Fa's non-fatal non-injuring attack was merely a test...

"Huh? To take him as a disciple...?" Venerable Mei's eyes flashed around. She then smiled and replied, "Senior Bu is correct... contrary to what one would expect. It is true! I had genuinely intended that!"

[Why wouldn't I take him in as a disciple? I can mistreat this repulsive creature to my heart's content if he's my disciple! He will be tortured every day. He will be tortured every night. I will

torture him anytime and anywhere!] Venerable Mei felt quite happy as she looked at Jun Mo Xie.

"He he... congratulations Venerable Mei! This is a good disciple! I'm sure that the society will see another Great Master overtime!" Bu Kuang Feng had a sense of regret and envy in his voice. Venerable Mei — the apex expert — had decided to take this young boy a disciple. However, he couldn't help but think... [that Young Master of the Jun Family hasn't even cried and called out in gratitude to accept the privilege? That should've been a given in this case!]

"Ah... this worth the congratulations!" Venerable Mei played on the words heavily. [So, I don't have to be occupied with for now... humph!]

Venerable Mei let out a long and loud screech after she spoke that, and ordered for the troops to withdraw. But, the troops who stood in confrontation were somewhat reluctant to part. Duanmu Chao Fan, Sikong An Ye and others — including Dongfang Wen Qing — waved their hands, and the opposing Xuan Beasts also politely waved their claws at them. They then wagged their tails, and withdrew.

This extreme harmony between man and beast had left the many who were watching from the hillside dumbfounded. But, those who had returned after escaping the calamity were in tears...

[Fancy that! Jun Mo Xie had shouted all day! He had accused us wrongly to gain sympathy; that too with conviction! But, it was all just a big drama! Some people unexpectedly didn't even have a hair amiss in this chaos while the rest of us had literally carried our skulls in our hands and fought the real battle!]

Xiao Han had almost spat blood. He raised a trembling finger at Jun Mo Xie with indignation and desire to kill. He then spoke, "As it turns out... as it turns out... you guys are in cahoots... this is despicable!"

"Your mother's fart! Who can be more despicable than you?!" Jun Mo Xie retorted fiercely, "Where did you see us collude? It's called 'manners'! Do you feel nothing after having fought someone for so long? What's wrong with waving someone goodbye before departure?"

"What? How do you have the face to say that...?" Xiao Han was feeling indignant to the point of dying... "Only a few of your men had died in battle. But, you still hit-out at people's emotions. Do you have no shame?"

"Nonsense! Only a few of us have died...? We have lost around half or more of our strength! But you...? You haven't lost a single man! And yet, you still have the guts to face me on this!"

Jun Mo Xie was also very indignant. So, he glared back, "And, that's human life we're talking about! Human life is beyond value, don't you know? Do you know how much I will have to pay in funeral expenses? It will be an astronomical figure!"

[Astronomical figures? Funeral expenses? Is this guy really calculating all of that at this time?]

"You... you... you..." Xiao Han couldn't breathe. He was stuck at "You" for a long while. In fact, he had nearly fainted from excessive anger.

"You just know how to make bloody accusations! First, you covet your life and escape to save it. Then, you accuse us of being in cahoots with the enemy...! Have you ever seen a man and a tiger collaborate? Why don't you try to collude with them and show me?"

Jun Mo Xie wasn't going to let it go. He stamped his foot and rained curses, "Most people don't like this sort of a person. You don't have any achievements of your own. So, you're trying to diminish other's achievements! You... you... why can't you bear the truth? How can you be so shameless...?"

Xiao Han roared loudly with anger. Then, he suddenly fell down... face up! He had fainted due to excessive anger this time.

Everyone looked at each other and thought, [we don't know how you managed to collude with them. But, one look at that last scene was enough to let everyone know that there's something very fishy going on! We haven't seen how you collaborated, but we have never seen Xuan Beasts and men fight each other for a half a day and then become friends instead of killing each other...

Moreover, the sight of those Xuan Beasts waving their claws in farewell was the final proof. It was something which hasn't been seen for hundreds of thousands of years! I will cut my head, but I still won't believe that you didn't collude with them!]

Everyone very sensibly chose not to utter a word... even if they all thought it.

[Did you hear what he said? He said that we should try to collude with them and see for ourselves! As if we can collude like that according to our wishes...! Wouldn't we be treated like heavenly beings if we could do it?]

[Colluding with those Level Nine Xuan Beasts? Where's the collusion in that? Isn't it like sending food to them?] They had just faced those Xuan Beasts, and they had spent a great deal of energy in doing that. The stomachs of these men had become deflated as a result. [I haven't lived enough. I've just broken away from that encirclement and escaped before they tore me to shreds! Why would I go again?]

# Chapter 361: The Snake King Comes Out to Fight!

---

Sikong An Ye and the others were walking away when they heard Jun Mo Xie speak. Then, Sikong An Ye turned to Duanmu Chao Fan, and smiled. He then exclaimed, "This brat is extremely shameless. He reminds me of your youth!"

Duanmu Chao Fan got extremely angry at this. So, he grabbed the other party's arm and replied, "Me... how... no... no... no... no..."

Sikong An Ye raised his hands in surrender. He smiled even though he looked like he was going to cry. He spoke to his counterpart, but it seemed as if he was in pain, "My bad, brother. I shouldn't have irritated you. Listening to you speak is very painful. Change it for me! Why won't you? Damn it, I've tried to change this lousy habit of your speech for decades, but it's still the same!"

Dongfang Wen Qing pushed Jun Wu Yi's wheelchair ahead, and came to a stop in front of Jun Mo Xie amidst all that confusion.

Jun Wu Yi raised his eyebrows, and smiled helplessly as he looked at his nephew. Then, he gently asked, "You?"

Jun Mo Xie chuckled and replied, "Third Uncle, you're very brave! You single-handedly dealt with so many Level Nine Xuan beasts. And, they retreated! In fact, they retreated, and you aren't even out of breath after going through all of that! This is miraculous! In fact, you remained seated on your wheelchair the entire time. You didn't even move the entire time! This youngster genuinely admires you!"

"You little devil!" Jun Wu Yi stared at him and snorted. However, he didn't ask anything further. He knew that all of this was somehow related to Jun Mo Xie, but he didn't inquire. This wasn't



something that he could ask at that time. One reason behind this was rather obvious... there were many present there who could listen-in. And, the other... he was sure that Jun Mo Xie had organized this, but the method to accomplish that must've been derived out of his secrets. Therefore, the lesser others knew of it... the better it was. After all, it was a secret...

[It is better when one isn't in the knowledge of some things.]

Therefore, Jun Wu Yi chose to let it go.

However, Jun Wu Yi was proud of his nephew. Because, his nephew had made such a miracle happen. In fact, he believed that no one besides his nephew could've pulled something like that off.

It could be said that he was the apex expert of this world from that perspective.

An empty space had been left open on the field at that point of time.

An extremely pretty and delicate woman stood in the center of the open space. She seemed like a magnolia in a valley of flowers as she stood there in a calm and quiet manner. Such a beauty was rare to come by. But, that young lady's temperament was even rarer than her beauty.

A flourishing figure, a round bottom, and a waist so slender that one could almost clench it... In fact, it seemed as if a gentle breeze could break her figure. The first thought any person would get after laying their eyes on such a woman would be — she's a stunner!

However, no one got that feeling by looking at this young woman's body. She simply seemed lovely, warm, pretty, and lively.

Her eyes were as clear as water. Her facial features were extremely exquisite. The light breeze seemed to be gently caressing her long hair. This left one to believe that she was a fairy or an

immortal. The more a man would look at her... the more he'd fall for her. He'd feel that this green-clothed maiden with her fresh and pure face wasn't well-versed in the affairs of life, and that she was very innocent. And, this would leave a man to feel a strong desire to protect her.

The Snake King!

[How could such an attractive person... such a world-shaking beauty of a young woman be the legendary King of Poisons? How could something so pure have any relation with the cruel, sinister, and dreadful Xuan Beast Snake King...?! The disparity was akin to that between the heaven and earth!]

However, she was!

This green-clad young woman was one of the twelve Xuan Beast Kings of Tian Fa forest — the Snake King! She was the King of Poisons! And, she was also the most dreadful Beast King of Tian Fa — Snake King!

Green Hunter!

This was extremely unexpected in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. [Venerable Mei hasn't sent the strongest Beast King after them... that is... Long Crane...? They've sent the Snake King instead? Can it be that she's more capable than he is? Or will she use poison to win?] Jun Mo Xie thought about it, but realized that it wasn't very likely to happen.

It was important to know that the Snake King was the King of Poisons. In fact, she was the king of all poisons. However, the person she'd face would be one of the Eight Great Masters of the continent. It couldn't be said that no poison would be able to affect them... perhaps some very evil poison could infiltrate their body. But, a regular poison would have no effect on someone whose cultivation was at the peak of the Spirit Xuan realm.

It could also be said that the Great Masters were astute, and had

deep foresight. Moreover, they possessed rich and exquisite battle experience. Their lives would've perhaps been endangered by poisons on many occasions since there would've been no shortage of enemies who would've tried to poison them. Therefore, they must've come up with countermeasures to pre-empt such situations by now.

What would be the use of poisons if such was the case? Even the legendary poison that could kill a person upon coming in contact with their body would have a significantly reduced impact on someone with a Great Master's level of cultivation!

There was an intense discussion amongst the Great Masters who represented humanity. Then, a lone black-clothed figure stepped forward, and stood opposite the Snake King. That person was someone Jun Mo Xie had never expected... the representatives of humanity had sent the Cold-Blooded Master Lei Wu Bei.

The candidate had been selected much faster than Jun Mo Xie had forecasted. However, he didn't think Lei Wu Bei was the best choice. The best choice would've been the Solitary Falcon. One needed someone with nimble movements... someone who'd end the fight quickly whilst dealing with an opponent who would poison as a weapon. Moreover, the humanity required someone who could hit the target from a height, and could avoid its attack by using an aerial advantage plus agility.

The Solitary Falcon had a natural and comprehensive advantage in this situation. Moreover, his martial skills were derived from that of a bird. And, the enemy was the Snake King. Snakes were natural prey for such birds! Falcons eat snakes!

Jun Mo Xie could think of this. So, why didn't the alliance's leaders? Shi Chang Xiao and the others also wanted the Solitary Falcon to fight in this round. However, they couldn't dare to say it. The situation was quite obvious at that point. The alliance was in a losing position in this 'three round' battle since they had already lost the first round. So, there would be no need for the third battle

if they lost the second one.

The Solitary Falcon looked at Li Jue Tian and his son with displeasure. His relationship with the Young Master Jun was obvious to everyone. The fact was that the Jun Family had gone into battle with huge disparity in comparative strength with respect to their opponents. But, they had managed to return unscathed. One could say that Tian Fa had been negligent. But, who would believe that reasoning?

[They were lucky? Three-hundred men were that lucky? Did they receive the Heaven's blessings?] Only an idiot would believe that!

No one believed that the Jun Family and the Solitary Falcon would betray the continent for their personal gains. But, what if they did... just in case...? Who would bear the responsibility if that were to happen? Therefore, the alliance decided to choose their second best option, and sent Lei Wu Bei instead.

Anyway, Lei Wu Bei's Xuan cultivation was more profound than that of the Solitary Falcon's.

Both the sides had sent their contenders — the Fifth Great Master from the alliances' side... versus the Snake King!

Suddenly, a bright ray of light flashed from the other side of Tian Fa, and a vigorous silhouette rushed forward. In fact, it only left a few after-images behind. It arrived between Jun Wu Yi and Dongfang Wen Qing like lightning. It grabbed the person who stood between them — Jun Mo Xie. Then, it left with a similarly lightning speed, and only left some after-images behind.

Two blurry after-images had arrived on the left and the right side of the field respectively. They were so densely packed that they looked like two parallel lines. In fact, they resembled two squadrons of soldiers who stood in orderly formations. And then, they disappeared...

"The Immortal Incarnation of a Million Mirages! The World

Cage!" Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng cried out in alarm. The two men had been left shocked upon witnessing the endless and profound methods of the Lord of Tian Fa.

[How many hidden tricks does this Venerable Mei have in their treasure chest? Could it be that their strength has caught up with that of the Lord of the Elusive World of the Immortals?]

[But... Tian Fa is... also...] The two men barely managed to swallow their saliva.

Venerable Mei had used her profound technique to capture Jun Mo Xie. It was the same one that she had previously used to deal with Li Jue Tian — The World Cage. Jun Mo Xie had stealthily escaped from her hands a while ago. And, she was somewhat confused about the ‘how’ of it... But, she was sure that it was a profoundly mysterious technique nonetheless.

However, she had then joined the dots, and had figured that it was quite possible for this Young Master Jun to be that mysterious experts’ disciple. This would also explain his mysterious technique. She couldn’t understand that technique. Nor could she comprehend the method of dealing with it. However, being on guard against that brat, and being able to restrain her desires were two entire different matters!

Therefore, Venerable Mei used her World Cage technique to capture Jun Mo Xie. She hadn’t used this technique in her last attempt because she had sensed that the little brat’s power was as good as ‘trash’. Therefore, the usage of such a heavenly skill would’ve been akin to ‘overkill’. However, she had confirmed that his evasion skills were unparalleled in the world even though his strength was trash. Therefore, she had employed the entirety of her effort by using that sharp skill in order to capture him. She had then quickly returned to her own side of the field, and threw him buttocks-first to the ground.

"Bang!" Pain surged through Jun Mo Xie’s posterior as he hit the

ground. Fortunately, there were no stones on the ground... otherwise something would've exploded... ahm...

Jun Wu Yi raised his eyebrows. Dongfang Wen Qing hastily whispered to his ears, "The one who has just taken action was the lord of Tian Fa... the same person who took a fancy to Mo Xie's excellent aptitude... And, we had also heard that this person has taken an interest in taking Mo Xie on as a disciple. In my eyes, this matter is a good fortune rather than a disaster for Mo Xie. So, let's not be reckless." Jun Wu Yi's eyes were full of worry. But, he knew that he couldn't do anything against the powerful Lord of Tian Fa. He could only pray for Jun Mo Xie's safe return to Tian Xiang.

No one had expected Venerable Mei to move into action, or to use that skill. In fact, even Jun Mo Xie hadn't anticipated it. However, he realized that he couldn't move a single part of his body by the time he had thought of doing something in response. The Young Master had then thought of going into the Hong Jun Pagoda to escape from his captor. After all, his spirit was still connected to the pagoda. However, he was shocked to find that his body still couldn't make that movement.

His body was as inanimate as a trophy cup!

Venerable Mei could block all possible types of Qi from functioning inside the World Cage. Jun Mo Xie had reverted to the original stage inside this cage. This is... he had gone back to the first level. His spirit could enter the Hong Jun pagoda, but his body couldn't. Jun Mo Xie hated this... thoroughly! [What does this old man want...? Why is he acting with me like this over and over...?!]

[How did I offend him? Why this merciless treatment?! Could it be that you've become addicted to mistreating me? Are you a sadist?! Why would you mistreat me when there are so many Spirit Xuan peak experts around? They could make you feel much more accomplished. So, why are you targeting me?] Jun Mo Xie remained perplexed despite much thought.

"Behave! Be an obedient brat, and sit still! Else, you won't feel good." Venerable Mei slapped his buttocks. She had positioned Jun Mo Xie's body in a manner that the others couldn't see this action. Jun Mo Xie had nevertheless taken this abuse. The pain pierced his very soul, but he remained motionless. In fact, he actually had a smile on his face.

[A wise man knows not to fight when the odds are against him. Just you wait for me!]

# Chapter 362: Lei Wu Bei Fights

---

Venerable Mei's World Cage technique was extremely mysterious and couldn't be gauged.

"I want to move. But, they are controlling my movements ah!" Jun Mo Xie rained curses in his heart as he sat in front of Venerable Mei with a smile on his face. He couldn't even control his own facial muscles inside the World Cage's influence.

"Bang! Bang! Bang!" Her feet flew thrice, and three heavy kicks landed on Jun Mo Xie's buttocks. The Young Master Jun cursed in his heart. In fact, he was ready to explode with anger. [Has kicking me become a habit of yours or what...? You damned old pervert!]

He didn't know this, but Venerable Mei's mouth was silently mumbling the same thing over-and-over again behind their veil, "I'm sure you still wish to spank my buttocks every day! I dare you to knead it again! I dare you to rub my buttocks! I dare you! You repulsive bastard! The tables have turned, and I won't allow you to die that easily!"

She was silently recalling what had happened on one hand. And, she was relentlessly setting her legs loose on the other. In fact, she was milking every bit of satisfaction from kicking him. It seemed that she may even have become addicted to it since she continued to speak those lines in silence as she continued to kick him. The fight between the Snake King and the Fifth Great Master hadn't even begun. But, Jun Mo Xie's posterior had already swollen round. In fact, it had swollen to an unbearable degree, and was almost exploded-open by now.

Dongfang Wen Qing looked-on carefully from the other side. Then, he smiled in relief and said, "You see? Jun Mo Xie has been smiling this entire time! It seems that something good is happening!"

Jun Wu Yi focused as he looked. Then, he also smiled in relief



and spoke, "That brat is really blessed with good fortune! Such a high-level expert has favored him. Mo Xie is very lucky. The Jun Family is very lucky!"

"Yes. Just look at him smiling like that! It seems he's doing great! I reckon that Venerable Mei has provided him with a lot of benefits!" Dongfang Wen Qing touched his chin with his hand and laughed.

"You don't say! I too would be very happy if I were him! After all, that person is the most skilled person around!" Dongfang Wen Jian glanced at his three brothers. [Is that something that needs to be mentioned? How could anyone not feel good after being favored by such an expert at such a young age?]

[Why weren't we so lucky when we were young?] The three brothers were very jealous. [Our bloodline is very close to this brat...]

However, they were completely unaware that Jun Mo Xie was indeed "very happy"! In fact, he felt so "very happy" that he had nearly died of it. He was in so much pain that he wanted to die. His posterior had been attacked to no end, while the rest of his body had repeatedly been twisted. His entire body had reddened, and the pain had reached the depths of his very soul. He wanted to cry, but his face couldn't even show any of those feelings...

His uncles wouldn't have been so jealous if they knew what method was being used on their "very happy" nephew...

Jun Mo Xie could clearly feel that his posterior had started to resemble a bulging balloon. It had increased to no less than three-or-four times of its original size. And, it still had the tendency to expand further...

[Is this a fu\*king butt? Or is this a hot-air balloon?! I would feel like I'd be sitting on a tall chair even I was to sit on a flat land with this butt... ]

And then, there was a sound of some movement from nearby.

"The Cold-Blooded Master, Lei Wu Bei?" the Snake King's voice was quite clear and melodious. It even had a trace of gentleness to it. She blinked her eyes. In fact, she had sounded naïve and inquisitive as she had asked that question.

Her appearance and demeanor had made it seem as if she was a young girl who was naïve in the ways of the world. It had seemed like she was shy at seeing a stranger, and was too bashful to say hello. Nearly every onlooker felt a strong urge to go pat her head and say, "Little girl is a good little child. Don't be afraid. I will buy you sweets..."

However, her opponent — Lei Wu Bei — would never dare think like that!

The Xuan cultivation of the Xuan Beast Kings were no match for those of the Eight Great Masters; Venerable Mei was the only exception. But, the reason why they were as famed as the Eight Great Masters was the fact that their bodies were extremely tyrannical. In fact, normal attacks were like itches to them.

In fact, these Xuan Beast Kings could keep up with the Eight Great Masters with the help of their tyrannical bodies... even if their cultivation was slightly inferior. Moreover, they could possibly turn the tables on their opponents if they managed to employ some sinister methods.

The girl in front of him would seem sweet, petite and fragile... almost as if she wouldn't be able to stand up against a gentle breeze... as if she was a water bag... and, a very delicate one at that... But, Lei Wu Bei clearly knew that this girl's body was nevertheless that of the Snake King!

Moreover, she was one of the most poisonous individuals in the Tian Fa forest!

[I doubt if her skin would even redden if my fist struck her.

However, would I be able to endure if she struck me?]

"You're the Snake King? It's an honor to meet you!" Lei Wu Bei behaved like he was facing a great enemy. He turned his hand, and drew-out a glittering and grotesquely serrated blade. One side was bright and clear. It was so bright that it could bathe a man in bright light. In fact, it seemed similar to a sharp cutlery blade. But, the other side was densely serrated like a saw-tooth. This was clearly the more lethal part of the sharp weapon.

Jun Mo Xie finally understood the reason for Lei Wu Bei's nomination after he saw that weapon. The first reason was obviously the fact that they didn't have a better candidate at the moment. But, his lethal weapon was the most important contributing factor towards his selection. That weapon would bestow great destructive power against the Xuan Beasts even though they had extremely thick skin. Moreover, the saw-tooth serrations would be very destructive against the Snake King's exquisite skin in particular.

The Snake King — Green Hunter — stood there delicately and timidly. In fact, she seemed lovely and somewhat pitiable at that moment. She appeared somewhat shocked as she shouted, "Great Master Lei! Such a horrible weapon! You are indeed very cold-blooded!" she first exclaimed in a shock manner. Then, she moved her hand to cover her tiny mouth. It seemed like she would turn around and flee...

Jun Mo Xie couldn't move any part of his body... except for his eyes. So, he rolled them. And, he obviously made good use of them. He could see that the Snake King's clothing fit very well around her narrow shoulders. But, the same wasn't true for her sleeves. The sides of her sleeves were too wide. In fact, they almost hung down to the ground.

[That's odd. That's very odd.]

As expected, Lei Wu Bei snorted when the Snake King spoke this

sentence. Then, he made a sideways cut, and that exceptionally long weapon in his hand swiftly chopped sideways. The blade crisscrossed in the air as a result. It seemed as if two small flashes of lightning had intersected in the air as 'chi' 'chi' sounds were heard. Two small chop-stick-sized snakes were cut into four small pieces. Then, they fell down to the ground as they withered in pain.

"You are genuinely worthy of your sinister reputation, Snake King!" Lei Wu Bei snorted angrily. His dark face had become somewhat discolored. Those two snakes were extremely venomous. His 'Great Master' status wouldn't have helped him if they had bitten him. He wouldn't have died, but he would've surely been paralyzed for a while.

This paralysis would've only lasted for one or two breaths. But, that would've been enough for someone at the Snake King's level to use hundreds of moves. And, things would've been very different if that had happened...

"You accuse me wrongly! What would people make of it?!" The Snake King gave a lovely smile, "Oh, what's that? It's quite dreadful!" she spoke as she looked at a snake on the ground. Her eyes opened big and wide... as if she was in shock to see those things.

Lei Wu Bei's blade hit the ground with a "Bang!" as it struck another snake. This one was moving more urgently, and had actually attempted to target Lei Wu Bei's throat. And, that would've resulted in a very terrible but silent death. The snake hadn't even left a small shadow in the sunlight. That attack from the Snake King had almost been impossible to guard against. She would engage the opponent by speaking sweetly. And then, she would give them a wordless death by poisoning them.

Jun Mo Xie looked at the scene, and felt his back going cold. It was genuinely the case of 'not being able to judge a person based on their looks'.

One would think she was merely a young and adorable girl who was naive and pure... that she'd be harmless to man and beast alike. Who would've thought that she'd have launched three sinister attacks at Lei Wu Bei in the blink of an eye! It was like sweetly calling a man "elder brother" to his face while quietly stealing things from his pocket. Her conscience had fallen to the ground.

The situation had once again changed on the battlefield.

The Snake King twisted her narrow waist, and her beautiful body quickly spun. And then, her two sleeves suddenly started to waive. After that, their appearance suddenly changed, and it seemed as if two long green dragons had rushed out from them. In fact, they stretched for over twenty-one meters. They reached everywhere... regardless of the distance. A strong gale whistled around them as they turned into something similar to a green ocean, and shrouded Lei Wu Bei thoroughly.

This was the display of the Snake King's true strength.

And, this was just the beginning...

Lei Wu Bei's black silhouette jutted-out in-between that ocean of green like a block of reef. He stood motionless like a stone pillar amidst the turning waves.

Then, a deep roar was heard. The Snake King's offensive had become more intense instead of coming to a stop. A delicate figure then flew into the sky. And, it appeared like this figure had started to dance with grace above the waves of that green ocean. In fact, it seemed as if a fairy of the ninth heaven had descended to sky above the waves.

She then flipped her hand as she raised it. Countless shiny stars flashed about. Then, these stars suddenly flashed again, and sprinkled towards Lei Wu Bei in a watertight form. However, the Snake King's expression was still one of innocence and enjoyment. It seemed as if she was having so much fun playing this game that

she'd never wish for it to end.

Lei Wu Bei couldn't remain entrenched in that ocean of green. And, the Cold-Blooded Master was eventually forced to make a move. A dark sound was heard as his long blade crisscrossed, and an extremely majestic and powerful aura emanated from him. It slowly and ceaselessly alighted from the center of the green ocean like the sliver-white sea-spray from the ocean waves...

Blades covered in aura crisscrossed, and flew high into the heavens. The people who were watching the Great Master from the sides used their Xuan Qi to defend themselves in a firm manner. Lei Wu Bei's blades would've scuttled through their defenses if they hadn't done that, and would've fallen upon the group of bystanders like a dragon crossing a river. In fact, his blades would've paved an alley of blood in its path. One must compensate a higher amount from one's own side when they set out to hurt the others...

Lei Wu Bei gained an advantageous position as he rolled-out one counter-attack after another. However, the Snake King tried to regain full control of the situation once again. Her delicate white arms and her white jade-like legs started to move quicker. And, her giggly expression gradually transformed into a serious one. She waved her white arms. All the cold stars joined into a stream piece-by-piece, and transformed into a bright ray of light.

The field of battle which had previously borne witness to a fierce and gruesome fight had unexpectedly become pleasing to the eye at this moment. The silver-white spray continuously alighted from the middle of the green ocean, and the cold bright light continued to shine in the sky. This was a very beautiful scene...

Anyone who saw this scene seemed carefree and relaxed... even though they knew of the great killing intention inside it!

This scenery couldn't be described as one to belong to the lands of the mortals anymore.

# Chapter 363: The Third Battle

---

Lei Wu Bei suddenly let out a sharp scream. His black silhouette then broke through the green tide like a silver-white knife, and soared high. It seemed as if a fountain had emerged from the green ocean, and had shot towards the heavens. It glowed brilliantly in the sunlight, and shone over a large portion of the surrounding area. He displayed extremely strong and formidable power, and his attitude was one of 'not willing to back down' as he brazenly charged into the sky.

"The true battle starts now," someone spoke-up. The onlookers then quickly became more focused. They didn't even blink as they watched the fight.

Jun Mo Xie's expression became solemn as he looked on. He had even forgotten about the pain for a little while. The Snake King's and the Cold-Blooded Great Master's style continued to change. They moved quickly. They went forward and retreated at a fast pace. And, they dodged and weaved nimbly. Their minds would slowly replay everything that their eyes would see. It was evident that they were modifying their own styles in accordance with their opponent's. They were using the other's strength to make up for one's own weakness.

Long Crane and Big Bear stretched their necks from the Tian Fa's side. Jun Mo Xie could clearly feel Venerable Mei pinch the soft flesh below his waist from behind. They then twisted the meat into a circle. Jun Mo Xie felt the pain reach his very soul. So, he shuddered... [Dammit! Why would you pinch a man like that!? Isn't this done to women?]

Then, Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized something. [Could it be that the Snake King is facing grave danger in this earth-shattering fight with the Great Master? Why else would these three Beast Kings be so anxious?]

[But, I can only see that the Snake King is handling the fight with ease... She should 'get by' with ease...]

Jun Mo Xie was unable to deal with the pain as this thought crossed his mind. So, he opened his eyes wider to see...

The Snake King — Green Hunter — gave a loud screech at this point, and her slender body spun around. The green ocean on the ground disappeared. Then, she shot up high; she was covered in a bright green light.

And then, a silver-white blade-light shot up to the sky. This light was vaguely intertwined with a black silhouette. A sharp whistle was heard as this figure shot into the sky. In fact, this whistle could've ripped the world apart. It seemed like a raging dragon had just escaped from beneath the earth after breaking away from its shackles. This strangely combined form of a man-and-blade shot towards the sky in such a splendid manner that it seemed as if they'd shoot the sun down!

This ensuing light had an immense glare, and the faces of everyone watching from below had become deathly pale.

"The unity of man and blade! Moreover, it's not a usual unity of man and blade!" Jun Mo Xie cried out in shock, "This is the very essence of the purest form of blade technique! I never thought that the Great Master Li possessed such a trump card up his sleeve!"

Then, Jun Mo Xie had second thoughts, and thought-out aloud, "Lei Wu Bei can possess such a trump card, and that's reasonable since he's one of the Eight Great Masters. But, that young woman is also very dangerous..."

The Snake King first raised her face upwards as she soared higher into the sky. And then, she screeched angrily. Her voice tore through the air, and thousands of Xuan Beasts bowed their heads at that. Then, she spun in the air, and transformed into several cold stars as she showered downwards.



It was like two meteors had started from different points, but were about to collide in the sky.

The many people who were watching from below held their breaths as the wind howled above.

A melodious and tender cry was heard at first. Then, an oppressive snarl was heard. After that, the sounds of a huge explosion reverberated as the two rays of light collided.

After that, unceasing crashing sounds arose... like those from a battery of cannons. The earth shook endlessly as a result, while the sky looked like it had been filled with fireworks. And then, everything above thirty meters in height seemingly plunged into darkness for a moment. Only a bright rainbow was present in the sky at that moment...

Jun Mo Xie felt pleased. He felt like he had returned to his previous world, and was witnessing the fireworks at the lantern festival...

"They are evenly matched." There was another collision in the air. But, Lei Bao Yu, Bu Kuang Feng, and Venerable Mei had already come to this conclusion.

A "Bang!" sound echoed as the two crisscrossed. The towering silver-white blade-light continued to rise above like a long-tailed comet. Then, a cold and black light hurriedly charged towards the ground.

Then, there was something of a rain of blood. Countless fragments of several chopstick-sized snakes fell to the ground. And soon, a thick layer of them had been formed on the ground.

What no one could get was... how could the delicate Snake King take all those with her into the sky in order to shower Lei Wu Bei with them?

"Bang!" the Snake king hit the ground spinning. She staggered about a dozen steps backwards before she eventually came to a

stand-still. A thick stream of purple blood slowly flowed out of the corner of her mouth. Her complexion was pale, and her green dress had been torn from many places by that sharp blade. Her delicate and white arms had now been exposed to everyone's eyes since her long and wide sleeves had been transformed into green butterfly-like wings.

Then, a soft sound was heard as Lei Wu Bei dropped to the ground. He landed softly on his toes at first. And then, he pressed his legs heavily on the ground to stand up straight. His appearance was even worse. That black gown of his' was muddy and tattered with a myriad of snake bites due to that attack. Moreover, many rips were visible. They had apparently been made by a weapon. His hair was disheveled, and appeared similar to that of a beggar's. Wisps of dark red blood flowed from the corners of his mouth at first. Then, he couldn't control it anymore, and the blood started to flow more freely. His rock-like cold face had become red. It seemed as if he had become drunk. And then, it became snow-white the next instant. After that, it turned red again. It then continued that cycle of changing its complexion from red to white for several iterations.

Both of them were on an equal-footing.

The two stood staring at each other for a while. Then, Lei Wu Bei spoke-up with clenched teeth, "That was good! The Snake King is truly exceptional!"

"The Cold-Blooded Master genuinely deserves to be a Great Master!" Green Hunter smiled tenderly. The blood flowing from the corners of her mouth dropped down as she smiled. However, this didn't diminish her beauty in any way. In fact, it somewhat enhanced her beauty.

"This seems like a draw. What's your opinion about this, Venerable Mei?" Lei Bao Yu took a step forward. and smiled as he asked that question.

"A draw?" Venerable Mei gave a severe kick to Jun Mo Xie's posterior before he looked at Lei Bao Yu. Her voice was meaningful as she smiled, "That's good! It's a draw!"

Lei Bao Yu couldn't help his face from turning red.

That was true. It genuinely seemed like a draw at that point of time. The two of them were on an equal footing. Lei Wu Bei had some advantage at this point, but Lei Bao Yu knew that the Snake King hadn't shown her true power in that matter. In fact, she was yet to play her own trump card. Therefore, he was convinced that Lei Wu Bei wouldn't get-off easy if it were truly turned into a fierce battle of life and death.

But then again, even the Snake King wouldn't have it easy either... even if Lei Wu Bei were to die there. In fact, her strength would suffer a huge blow even if she didn't die instead. So much so that she would probably lose her ability to transform into a human form by the end of it. Moreover, her strength would be reduced to that of a level seven-or-eight Xuan Beast.

That obviously would've led to a case of mutual destruction. In fact, no one could say otherwise.

Lei Wu Bei's body was upright, and he was as expressionless as before. He was still cold and indifferent... like a piece of iron. However, multitudes of cheers echoed from the crowd behind him.

They resonated to the skies!

Lei Wu Bei hadn't won. But, he had succeeded in pulling-off a draw. It meant that the allied forces from the mainland had lost only the first battle up-until this point. This also meant that they could still rise from the dead. They weren't cheering for Lei Wu Bei because he was the Cold-Blooded Master. They were cheering because he had become the hero of the continent at that moment. In fact, he had become the hero of all humanity.

Many tactical errors and despicable conspiracies had taken place

in the first battle. And hence, they had suffered defeat — an unsightly and a thorough defeat. However, the second battle had been the exact opposite. Their champion had rushed brazenly with his blade, and had staked everything on the line. No ‘phony’ fighting had taken place this time.

Therefore, this draw with the Snake Xuan Beast King of Tian Fa had nevertheless given them time to breathe. It had given them some space to look for an opportunity... even if it wasn’t a victory.

Many people had believed that the allied forces might’ve had a chance if they had followed Jun Wu Yi’s excellent strategy... and if it weren’t for Xue Hun Manor and Silver Blizzard City’s rotten plan.

Then, the opposition had sent out the Snake King for this battle. Therefore, sending out the Solitary Falcon to face her would’ve been the ideal case. However, the allies couldn’t dare to count on him. Moreover, they didn’t have much knowledge about the various poisons that were available in the Tian Fa. In fact, there wasn’t any knowledge regarding the poisons that the Snake King could use. Luckily, Lei Wu Bei had done a lot of study on various poisons. And, that was why he was known as the "Cold-Blooded Master" in society. However, most people hadn’t given much thought to all of that here.

Everything depended on the third battle as the matter stood!

Venerable Mei had wished to rely on their own power. In fact, they would battle all the Great Masters at once! However, no one believed that Venerable Mei could be that powerful. After all, their side had four Great Masters.

The two individuals on the field looked at each other, and cupped their hands. Lei Wu Bei spoke-up, "It was a fluke." The Snake king snorted at that, and turned around to leave. The fact that she hadn’t attained a thorough victory had hit her hard.

Lei Wu Bei gave a faint smile. Then, he walked back. His arm

shuddered slightly. He had realized that the handle of his blade had been bent. Moreover, there were even many tiny cracks on his blade. It would still be able to endure proper use, but it couldn't withstand a 'Great Master Level' battle anymore.

The Snake King was genuinely something. She could conceal lethal weapons all over her body. And, that too in droves! Moreover, her weapons were also extremely toxic! She was a real headache.

These two people had sustained injuries, but it wasn't very serious. In fact, it wasn't even enough to warrant any action. Those two knew what was going on in reality. The two fighters had intentionally decided to stagger after that explosion in order to maintain the status quo. However, they would've ended-up taking each other down, and no clear winner would've emerged if they had continued to fight.

Therefore, the two individuals breathed a sigh of relief... even if they hadn't accepted the result within their hearts.

The ground had been a mix of green grass and stones before the battle, but it had turned black by now. There were holes everywhere on it. In fact, some places were still trying to brave the white smoke that was continuously falling down from the sky above.

Nothing would grow on that site for hundreds of years.

The Snake King's poison was indeed the best in the entire world.

A shadow flitted as Venerable Mei suddenly appeared on the field. They then stated, "It's time for the final battle. All the Great Masters present can come out for this final and deciding battle!"

Lei Bao Yu was about to speak, and the words were about come out of his mouth. But, he suddenly swallowed them, and forced a smile instead.

However, everyone could feel that there was something different

about Venerable Mei as they appeared on the field. They were somewhat irritable and unstable a while back, but they were quite calm at this moment... almost like Buddha. No one could see their face, but the aura from their body gave it all away.

Jun Mo Xie was at the sidelines. He felt his posterior and cursed; [this person has transformed my one little buttock into the size of four massive ones... ou...!]

# Chapter 364: Four Great Masters Fight Tian Fa

---

The battle was about to begin.

The Solitary Falcon snorted as he took the initiative, and cupped his fists as he said, "Venerable Mei, this Solitary Falcon is happy to seek advice from you." His voice was hard yet endlessly sonorous. The Solitary Falcon came last in the ranking of the Great Masters. But, he had always been belligerent. Moreover, he had encountered that mysteriously skilled person twice before, and he considered that the-said person was even more astonishing and frightening than his present opponent. Venerable Mei's strength must've been around the same mark as that of that mysterious person. And, this fact had genuinely astonished the Solitary Falcon. However, he didn't fear this opponent. In fact, he considered that mysterious master to superior to Venerable Mei when it came to mindset and temperament.

The Master of Life and Death — Shi Chang Xiao — closely followed suit, and gave a warm smile, "Venerable Mei, this one is called Shi Chang Xiao."

Lei Wu Bei had returned only moments ago. He stood quietly for a short period, and then slowly walked forward. His expression was cold as he spoke, "Venerable Mei, I don't think you need this one's introduction, right?"

"Very well! Is it only the three of you?" Venerable Mei snorted. She couldn't help but feel disappointed. Her three current-opponents had a combined strength of the Crane King, the Bear King, and Snake King fighting together in their human forms. In fact, these three Great Masters might even have been a bit weaker than these three Beast Kings. [One has to first have qualifications if they wish to fight the enemy!]

"Wait! This old man will also fight!" Li Jue Tian roared out with

grief and indignation. The Great Master Li then stood-up with a totter. Li Jue Tian may have suffered serious injuries, but he was still one of the Eight Great Masters. So, he wasn't going to lose his reputation at this juncture... despite the pain; he wasn't going to back down at this moment.

This was the only opportunity Li Jue Tian would get to retrieve his honor in front of Venerable Mei. In fact, it was perhaps the last chance to retrieve his honor. He would be able to wash away his disgrace if he were to defeat Venerable Mei by drawing support from the strength of the other three. In fact, he could even achieve a bit more.

However, Li Jue Tian would waddle in hopelessness if he were to introspect about fighting in public again in case he missed-out on this opportunity today.

He had sustained serious injuries with multiple fractured bones, and severe internal injuries a while ago. But, he had made his right-hand-man set his broken bones back in place while the Snake King and Lei Wu Bei were fighting. Then, he had forcefully initiated a self-mutilating method called "The Against the Heaven's Will Law". This technique would cause wear and tear to his lifespan, but it would heal him to his optimum state of health. Moreover, his exquisite Xuan cultivation was enough to hold his bones in place.

This battle was the most important final battle as far as Li Jue Tian was concerned. Therefore, he had to be the most splendid one. He needed his attacks to inspire awe in order to establish his authority amongst the people.

"Venerable Mei, the so-called fortunes have been reversed! You had bestowed me with that kind of a treatment a while back. Well, I shall bestow the same treatment back to you now!" Li Jue Tian panted with anger as he fiercely glared at Venerable Mei. It seemed like he nurtured a deep hatred. In fact, it appeared that this opponent was the greatest personal enemy he had ever come



across.

In fact, the hatred between the two was irreconcilable; it could never be dissolved. It perhaps wasn't so for Venerable Mei since she had won the previous round of their duel. But, that instance had been the greatest un-washable shame and humiliation of his life as far as Li Jue Tian was concerned. And, he felt that his honor wouldn't be remedied unless he had achieved victory over Venerable Mei.

"Are you going to go 'all-out' against me, Li Jue Tian?" Venerable Mei's cultivation was extremely high. So, she could obviously tell how Li Jue Tian had been able to stand up despite his injuries. She couldn't help but pity him as a result. She also knew that Li Jue Tian had been entirely innocent in that context. He had merely been unfortunate-enough to be caught in her moments of extreme rage on those two occasions, and had hence been subjected to those calamities.

However, she had been the gloomiest and the most pained she had ever been in her entire existence during those two moments. Therefore, she had been in an urgent need for someone she could vent-out her resentment upon in those moments of grief and indignation. Li Jue Tian was a second Great Master. And, there was stronger presence present there. Whether it was Xuan cultivation or status — Li Jue Tian had served as the most suitable candidate around!

Therefore, Li Jue Tian had suffered that tragedy.

And, this tragedy had been birthed by her mistake...

Because... a Master could be killed, but shall not be shamed!

Venerable Mei obviously understood this truth. But, she had grabbed him by the throat, and had smacked him under the gaze of everyone present. And, she had destroyed the entirety of the Great Master Li Jue Tian's accumulated respect from the past in the process.

He hadn't resisted her with everything he had in that moment. And, that had been the strangest thing. But, his strength had been hopeless in that scenario... So, how could he have done it? But, all the Great Masters were to join hands in this battle. So, how could he say no to such an excellent opportunity?

"Is it worth it?" Venerable Mei felt somewhat apologetic as she reminded him, "You're using the 'Against the Heaven's Will Law'. You should understand what kind of a price you will have to pay for this, Li Jue Tian. Won't you reconsider before you make such a huge sacrifice? You'll only need to let go if you reconsider this now. And, it will be reinstated in a few months. There's still time."

"No! It's too late! Too late!" it seemed like a fire had been ignited in Li Jue Tian's eyes as he replied in a shrill and mournful voice, "Are you afraid, Venerable Mei? You should've known that it becomes 'too late to turn around' the moment you smack someone in their face! I — Li Jue Tian — have a reputation. I also command respect amongst people. And, this is the only way I can wash away this kind of humiliation. There's no other way!"

"Oh? Afraid...? I'm afraid of you...? So, is killing me the only way to wash away your shame?" Venerable Mei laughed softly as her black robe swayed lightly.

"That's it!" Li Jue Tian replied seriously. "This is a matter of this Li's lifetime worth of reputation and status. So, I request that Venerable Mei doesn't act stingy with her life!"

"Not be... stingy with my life? You're asking me to not be stingy with my life while you're being stingy with your insignificant reputation...? You should know that your reputation is nothing in my eyes. I had advised you a moment ago. It was the mercy of a superior master. It was given in charity and pity. That was a rare act which originated from a good frame of mind of mine. And so, I had been that kind to you. But, you actually took it as fear...? You're genuinely as naïve as the frog in the well!"

Venerable Mei couldn't help but sneer and laugh. She then spoke while she shook her head, "How will you be able to take my life... if that's your skill level, Li Jue Tian? I'm afraid that you'll lose your head instead."

"Venerable Mei has decided too early regarding whose head will fall!" Li Jue Tian snorted heavily, "Venerable Mei has spoken the truth. My reputation is of little value in your eyes. But, it's much more important than my 'head' in my own!"

"I fear that the ranking of the Great Masters will change again after today's battle ends," the black-robed Venerable Mei spoke-up with a faint hint of disappointment in her tone. "I had harbored misgivings for many years regarding the reputed Rainstorm Master's life. Then, Feng Juan Yun's cultivation reached a sufficient level, but he wasn't able to become a Great Master. He he... there will be an empty spot after today. And, I suppose that Feng Juan Yun wouldn't be able to back away from the duty even if he wanted to, right?"

Bu Kuang Feng smiled from a distance, "The title of Master Rainstorm doesn't apply to me anymore. Venerable Mei makes me feel small with those words."

Venerable Mei snorted and smiled before they spoke-up again, "And, there's this Cold-Blooded Master then. He had fought one battle. But, he was still taken up arms against me! He has presumably come as a scapegoat, right? I genuinely don't know what he thought while he was taking this action. Does he think that I won't kill a Great Master?"

Venerable Mei's words could be considered as a ferocious psychological attack. She had first damaged Li Jue Tian's mental state. And then, she had drawn more blood by pointing out the real reason behind Feng Juan Yun's failed attempts to be elevated to the status of a Great Master. She had obviously intended to cripple the fighting spirit of the equally famous Solitary Falcon by doing that.

[He was as strong as me. Neither was able to step ahead of the other. You weren't better than him. In fact, he should've become a Great Master a long time ago. However, you got lucky and became the Great Master!]. It had to be said that the Solitary Falcon was shaken after he heard Venerable Mei Speak.

After that, Venerable Mei had taken aim at Lei Wu Bei, and had pointed that he had stepped-up even though he had received injuries merely a moment ago. She had indicated that he had come to fight, but he was there to add to the numbers. In fact, she had implied that he was merely a sacrificial lamb. Wouldn't he be used by the other Great Masters as a shield, and be sacrificed thereof...?

The effect of these words might not have been very evident in the case of others. But, the heaviness of anxiety and suspicion had always plagued Lei Wu Bei's heart. Lei Wu Bei had always considered every man of the world as an enemy. Hence, those words struck deep into his heart. In fact, they struck the very root of it.

In fact, this was the reason he had been hesitant earlier!

The completion between the various Great Masters had always been very fierce. So, they would be rid of one competitor if they were to sacrifice Lei Wu Bei to save themselves. Moreover, they would also be able to take cheap advantages of the ensuing opportunities, and formulate an explosive counter-attack to increase their fame thereafter...

[Wouldn't that be a great thing for them?]

However, he had no choice since he had obtained the halo of the continent's hero a moment ago. Therefore, he had to come forth even if he knew the risks...

However, these words from Venerable Mei had made Lei Wu Bei's face change color after they had emptied Solitary Falcon's. The halo of the continent's hero seemed quite glorious. But, it was nothing more than a useless decoration for a dead man...

"Venerable Mei's psychological attack is very sharp! This Shi genuinely admires it! However, I fear that the Venerable Mei is aiming at the wrong targets."

Shi Chang Xiao gave a gentle chuckle, "The four of us are veterans of hundreds of battles. One can even say that we are the originators of psychological warfare. Is Venerable Mei looking down on us by using this against us? The fact is that the four of us are the same. But, let's come back to the point. We four shoulder the great trust of millions of people. So, how can Venerable Mei instigate us against each other? Why would Venerable Mei waste their words if they have that much confidence in themselves?"

His words immediately woke the other two up.

Li Jue Tian gave a ferocious shout and said, "There's no need to waste your words! We can see the truth! The four of us wish to seek advice from the so-called frightening Lord of the Tian Fa today!" He laughed and gave a broad smile. And then, he took the lead, and came forward despite the seriousness of his injuries.

Someone always has to strike first in a battle between five people. And, that person suffers the most because he faces a head-on blow. But, taking this 'hit' could nevertheless provide an opportunity for those who remain at his side.

It seemed that Shi Chang Xiao's words had indeed dispelled the effect of Venerable Mei's psychological attacks from the others' hearts. But, they had never been afraid of Venerable Mei's extremely strong and tyrannical methods in all fairness. And, now that things had come to a head — they had no option but to fight.

Moreover, there was another major point one needed to consider... Most of the Great Masters wouldn't suffer much even if they lost this battle... Only Li Jue Tian would suffer in that case.

He had already lost half of the Xue Hun manor's strength in the battle between humans and Xuan Beasts. Then, he was humiliated by Venerable Mei. And then, it was pointed out that he had

disregarded the safety of humanity, and had schemed against Jun Wu Yi. This made his reputation hit rock bottom, and had singled him out the man who had betrayed humanity. Therefore, whatever that still remained would also vanish if he wasn't able to prevail over Venerable Mei in this battle.

Therefore, others had a choice... but Li Jue Tian didn't. So, he had no choice but to stake everything in one throw. And hence, he could only dash forward.

# Chapter 365: A Majestic Battle

---

Shi Chang Xiao, Solitary Falcon, and Lei Wu Bei didn't dare to neglect that dash by Li Jue Tian. They quickly changed positions. They took their respective places in a split second, and prepared to attack in sequence. They hadn't consulted on a 'plan of attack' beforehand. But, weren't these three veterans of innumerable battles? They had previously stationed themselves in a very casual manner at distinct locations. However, each of these had positioned themselves in a manner that would allow them to coordinate with the other two. Moreover, their positioning had been such that they were at a 'best-fit' location with correspondence to Li Jue Tian's position.

Li Jue Tian rushed out, and his figure began to fade. He was at his fastest as he sallied forth to attack. Venerable Mei snorted, and sent out an explosive punch in response.

Li Jue Tian quickly stepped-back from his powerful rush-forward towards Venerable Mei. In fact, he slid away like a slippery fish, and retreated to one side. A figure had previously stationed itself behind Li Jue Tian. Suddenly, two fists shot out towards Venerable Mei from Li Jue Tian's back. Meanwhile, the Solitary Falcon employed his Eagle-style agility, and soared into the sky at the fast-possible speed as this happened. He had displayed the first method of the 'Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon'!

Lei Wu Bei's long and glittering blade was unsheathed once again. It went drilling from besides Shi Chang Xiao's waist, and proceeded straight towards Venerable Mei's chest. In fact, this attack enveloped around five meters of area around her torso. This was the most important battle of his life. He wasn't about to be stingy with his treasured blade.

Li Jue Tian had retreated to the side. But, he quickly spun around as this happened, and returned to the fold with great speed. He took a neutral position with the help of his momentum as he had

returned. Then, he unleashed a ferocious attack from the side.

The four men had attacked without prior discussions, but their attacks were flawlessly coordinated. Their attacks had seemingly proceeded towards Venerable Mei to ‘greet’ her, but their combined ‘method’ of doing so was rather ‘uncanny’.

These attacks looked quite simple at first. But, Venerable Mei was well-aware that they could turn into a torrent of complicated strikes. She would be trapped by one of her opponents within a short period of time. And then, the remaining three would use their respective trump cards to get rid of her while one of them had her trapped.

Venerable Mei had to face the combined attacks of the four Great Masters. But, she didn’t dare be careless about it. She roared loudly as her body started to spin. First, she avoided Shi Chang Xiao’s fists. Then, her black robe whirled in the air as she missed the thrusting blade-attack from Lei Wu Bei by the smallest of margins. After that, she turned around, and leaned to the side in a simultaneous motion. She seemingly hadn’t recovered from the punch. But, she still attacked Li Jue Tian head-on. She also raised her left hand, and launched a ‘cannon-ball’ strike towards the approaching Solitary Falcon.

Venerable Mei was quite calm in the face of the combined attacks from the four Great Masters. She had negated their attacks in the blink of an eye. Moreover, she hadn’t taken these attacks ‘lying down’, and had managed to counter attack instead.

Li Jue Tian gnashed his teeth, and sped up. He knew that one of the four would have to suffer by enduring Venerable Mei’s attacks head-on. Only then could it be possible for the other three to complete their encirclement...! The others didn’t seem to have that much courage — or courage-enough — to contribute in that sense. In any case, his injury wouldn’t give him much time to end this battle. So, he had to do this himself!



It was the immense hatred Li Jue Tian harbored for Venerable Mei which had forced him to make such crazed decisions. An explosive sound was heard as he clenched his fist. A faint green gas had covered his body. It was evident that he was going to give everything he had in that particular punch. It was important that he showed no 'fake efforts' in regards to Venerable Mei this time.

He had figured that Venerable Mei's agility skills would've become a 'spent force' in her attempts to evade the continuous attacks of the other three Great Masters. Therefore, she would have no choice but to face him since she would've been trapped in such a situation! In fact, he knew that this would be the only decision that he would've taken if he were in their place.

Venerable Mei's expression turned cold. She quickly pulled back her fist, and sent them out to attack Li Jue Tian and Solitary Falcon once again. She then roared and kicked-out forty-nine times. Then, her body soared into the sky like a rocket; the three Great Masters who stood below her were still in a daze by the time she had met with the Solitary Falcon in midair, and had already exchanged a handful of strikes. In fact, their collisions had set fireworks in the sky above.

Two shadows flashed in the sky. The Solitary Falcon summersaulted through the sky, while Venerable Mei leaned and forward moved in a graceful trajectory. However, she made an about-turn with her feet while she was dropping down. Her hands extended from her sleeves as she unleashed strikes at Shi Chang Xiao and Lei Wu Bei. After that, she fiercely pounced upon Li Jue Tian!

It was obvious that Venerable Mei were moving with great momentum at the moment. Moreover, it was evident that they intended to take advantage of Li Jue Tian's injuries, and hoped to get rid of the 'toughest and most motivated' opponent early on in the battle.

Li Jue Tian screamed loudly as he drew back like a lightning. He

had hoped to face Venerable Mei with resolve. But, this attack was too much. In fact, it would be unreasonable to contend against Venerable Mei at this moment. The other three had been shaken-off by Venerable Mei's counter. So, it was likely that he would have to fight her alone at this time. Moreover, he had somewhat lost the equilibrium of his strength at the moment. His former strength had been exhausted, but he hadn't yet replaced it with a new burst. This meant that Venerable Mei could easily kill him... even if he were to attack by putting his life on the line. Moreover, Venerable Mei could easily dodge any attack under the sun after she had merrily killed him off.

The Solitary Falcon had been struck high into the sky at the moment. This obviously meant that the 'aerial threat' had been eliminated for the time being.

Therefore, Li Jue Tian could only move back in an attempt to make a blind retreat.

"That's too bad ah!"

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng were at some distance from the fight. They both clapped their thighs with their hands.

Li Jue Tian withdrew, but realized that Venerable Mei hadn't chased after him. In fact, she didn't even display the intention to chase him down; this was rather unexpected. The Lord of Tian Fa was still in the sky. But, she was rapidly proceeding in a beeline towards another target — Shi Chang Xiao. The man hadn't even recovered by the time they had unleashed a storm of kicks at him.

Li Jue Tian had never been Venerable Mei's target. The Master of Life and Death — Shi Chang Xiao— had! He was the man who posed the greatest danger to Venerable Mei since he was the only fighter amongst the three 'land-based' Great Masters who hadn't been injured in any manner.

It was obvious that Venerable Mei wanted to mete-out the same treatment to Shi Chang Xiao that she had previously dished-out to

the two now-injured Great Masters.

The color of Shi Chang Xiao's face had turned as grey as the mist. His eyes were petrified, and it seemed that his pupils had turned white. The man gave a loud shout, and hit out with his fists in anger.

However, he stood firm!

Shi Chang Xiao couldn't retreat because he had Lei Wu Bei behind him. The Cold-Blooded Master would have to bear the brunt of this attack if Shi Chang Xiao were to move aside. And, Lei Wu Bei most-likely didn't have enough strength left in him to face this supreme attack since he had already sustained injuries.

Venerable Mei's kicks sent shockwaves through the air. These strikes hadn't rooted from ordinary feet.

The four-man team would've been broken if Lei Wu Bei had been hit. And, the remaining three would've undoubtedly been defeated soon after.

Therefore, Shi Chang Xiao had no choice but to stand firm.

"Bang!"

Venerable Mei's kick struck Shi Chang Xiao's fist. Shi Chang Xiao's body trembled at the impact. He had meant to pull-back his fist. He would then unleash his full power by putting more power in his second punch. However, he hadn't even pulled his fist back by the time Venerable Mei's foot managed to stamp on his fists.

Shi Chang Xiao was alarmed. He quickly sent his left fist forth to buy his recovering body some time. However, Venerable Mei's foot stamped his right fist for the third time with a thunderous sound and great power before his body even got the time to shake properly... It was needless to say that his left fist hadn't reached its desired position either...

Those three continuous kicks barely had any breaks in-between them. It seemed as if Venerable Mei had kicked thrice in one strike!

But, each kick's power was greater than the one before. Shi Chang Xiao's body was on the verge of collapse, and he couldn't help but take a step back.

His left fist finally hit out at that moment. However, Venerable Mei was ready and waiting. They quickly kicked out with their left foot. In fact, Venerable Mei's body hadn't reached the ground till that very moment.

"Bang!"

The sound of the left foot meeting the left fist echoed loudly. And then, Venerable Mei repeated what she had done to his right fist — she quickly kicked that fist three times as well.

Venerable Mei's legs resembled parted scissors at the moment. However, each kick was powerful, and seemed to have the weight of a mountain behind it.

Shi Chang Xiao felt sour to his belly. In fact, the pit of his belly and his internal organs had been left to shake very violently. He then jumped, and staggered backwards. His nose itched as a thin wisp of blood flowed out of it.

He had suffered internal injuries!

However, Lei Wu Bei hadn't failed to act at the opportunity that Shi Chang Xiao had provided by risking his body and sustaining injuries. Lei Wu Bei's body seemingly moved in a 'possessed' manner as he dodged and rushed forward. His hand drew his long blade. Then, he waved it, and thrust it through Venerable Mei's black robe.

However, he hadn't even started to rejoice over his successful attack when he suddenly discovered that the stab he had made with his long blade felt 'empty' for some reason. His heart went crazy at this discovery, and he made a crazy horizontal slash with his blade.

However, he suddenly felt sluggish. His attack had been blocked.

Venerable Mei had stretched their hands from their robes, and had caught the blade at the sharp edge before it had moved forward.

Her hand held this nearly Divine Weapon at its sharp saw-toothed edge with seemingly no problems.

Li Jue Tian and Solitary Falcon rushed forth from behind at that moment. And, they threw themselves at Venerable Mei in frenzy. Venerable Mei held the sharp edge of the blade in her left hand, while Lei Wu Bei tried to apply a force in the reverse direction to slash her hand open. She then raised one forefinger, and forcefully tapped the blade three times.

Then, Venerable Mei's feet finally touched land after having remained suspended in the air up till that point. Her robes seemed to float around her like a sheet of iron. She then easily pushed-away Li Jue Tian's attack from behind. Then, her palms transformed into countless after-images. The wind whistled as a hundred palms made a white gem-like triangle. This formation held vast power and might. After that, this formation sent the Solitary Falcon flying into the air once again.

Lei Wu Bei's sword was tapped thrice by Venerable Mei's forefinger. However, these three taps felt like three large explosions in the pit of his stomach. It was like someone had taken a large hammer, and had struck his chest three times with it. His eyes felt a burst of pressure, and he suddenly lost focus. The Cold-Blooded Master was forced back. In fact, he trembled as he withdrew. This involuntary backwards motion of his body had happened due to the strong wind which had arisen due to Venerable Mei's attacks. This body then moved to one side, and ended-up causing an obstruction to Shi Chang Xiao's leaping body.

A light tinkling sound was heard as Lei Wu Bei's treasured blade turned into countless pieces of thin iron. These pieces then fell to the ground with a sharp noise. All that was left in Lei Wu Bei's hand was the short handle...

That was the handle of a rare Divine Weapon! However, the weapon had turned to scrap metal with the taps of a finger! Lei Wu Bei was shocked with grief!

The blade had accumulated a few scrapes in his previous battle with the Snake King. Lei Wu Bei knew of this. But, he hadn't worried much about it. [I will hold it together with my Xuan Qi. And then, I will take it for repair after this struggle of the four Great Masters comes to an end.]

[Come to think of it... Venerable Mei has broken my blade with just three taps from their finger...]

# Chapter 366: Defeated!

---

It has to be mentioned that the blade wasn't destroyed by Venerable Mei's hand alone. It was the movement of the combined Xuan efficacy of Venerable Mei and Lei Wu Bei which had destroyed it.

This had happened because Venerable Mei had forced the blade towards her right before she had tapped it with her finger. And, Lei Wu Bei had used his strength to turn it to the opposite direction. Both individuals had used the entire extent of their strength at that time. This meant that opposing forces had tried to twist the blade in different directions. And, it was then that Venerable Mei accumulated her Xuan efficacy, and tapped the blade with her finger. Her timing had been very precise!

The forces of Venerable Mei and the Great Master had been exerted on the knife at the same time. What kind of a Devine Weapon would be able to resist such forces?

The answer to that was a straightforward 'none'! At least, such was the case with Lei Wu Bei's treasured blade...

How would the blade not turn into scrap iron when the three different forces had acted upon on it...?

Therefore, it could be said that his treasured blade had been destroyed by his joint action with Venerable Mei.

Venerable Mei clasped her fist, and a thin wisp of blood flowed from it.

Her hand could be considered exceptionally 'tough'... even from the standard of Xuan Beasts! But, she had been in human flesh at that time. And thus, she had received that injury because she had held that blade by its sharp edge. However, her injuries were quite insignificant compared to the price that had been paid by Shi Chang Xiao and Lei Wu Bei. In fact, her injuries were far too

insignificant...

Because... this strike had established a narrow victory!

Li Jue Tian had been sent in a dazed state. It was only for a split second... But, Venerable Mei had reached the ground by then. In fact, she had already repulsed Li Jue Tian's attack by then. Moreover, he had initiated this attack after having redoubled his efforts. Therefore, Venerable Mei's body had been pushed into a forward motion towards Lei Wu Bei. She had then kicked his legs at their knees a few times. It could be said that Lei Wu Bei would've come to be called 'Disabled Great Master' instead of the 'Cold-Blooded Master' if those kicks had packed a serious force behind them.

In fact, it wouldn't have been very surprising if his legs had been shattered by those kicks!

Lei Wu Bei became pale with fright. He lifted his right foot. His body spun twice, and he alighted three feet away. But... he instantly regretted that move!

Because... Shi Chang Xiao had appeared behind him by then, and had blocked his path...

Venerable Mei took a turn around Lei Wu Bei over, and appeared before Shi Chang Xiao like a black dragon that had twisted around a pillar. Then, her legs pounded on Shi Chang Xiao like raindrops.

Shi Chang Xiao was very alarmed by that attack since Lei Wu Bei's body had covered everything from his line of sight. He knew that this was an anxious moment in the fight. But, he hadn't noticed that Venerable Mei had come so close to him. Therefore, he was left exposed to Venerable Mei's attack while he tried to avoid Lei Wu Bei's retreating body.

Shi Chang Xiao tried to resist in a flurry. He steeled his heart and mind despite everything, and prepared to attack. But then, he saw that Venerable Mei was too close to him. Moreover, they were



already prepared to pressurize him with their mountain-like palms. He didn't have enough time to congeal enough Xuan Qi as a result. Moreover, he didn't have enough time to retreat... even if he had wanted to. Therefore, Shi Chang Xiao could only close his eyes, bite his teeth, and wait for his fate.

A "Bang!" and "Slam!" were heard as Shi Chang Xiao's shoulders were struck. He was then sent rolling-out like a ball.

Then, Venerable Mei retreated at a lightning fast speed, and went back around twenty five meters. This allowed the strike from the air-bound Solitary Falcon to drop onto the space between them. She then faced the red-eyed Li Jue Tian, and struck him hard with her palms again; thrice!

Li Jue Tian had lost all routes of evasion. So, he could only stake his life to endure the three palm-strikes.

This was akin to bullying people!

It could be said that Venerable Mei had suffered close to no harm whatsoever. However, Li Jue Tian's internal injuries had become very grave by this point. The result of those three palms was rather obvious. Li Jue Tian's body left the ground like a ball that had gone on a wild 'bouncing spree', and flew into the sky. His mouth spurted blood in a crazy manner. In fact, it was almost as if a fountain had started to spray blood-colored water...

Li Jue Tian had used his Xuan Qi to keep his bones in place. However, they broke open, and ruptured at this moment. In fact, they had been thoroughly ruptured. And, blood spurted-out from his entire body like spikes from a hedgehog. In fact, one could say that thin arrows of blood had been shot out from every pore in his body.

Then, Venerable Mei's long sleeves wrapped around Li Jue Tian's injured body, and threw him further up into the sky in a lightening fast movement. This was a very sly and timely move! The Solitary Falcon had launched a very aggressive attack in the downward

direction at this very moment — the third move of the ‘Nine Claws of the Ghostly Falcon’!

This was the most fatal strike in the Solitary Falcon’s arsenal. And, this was also the most incisive strike of his’. Moreover, he had drawn his entire Xuan Qi for this attack. However, there was no way that he could’ve known that an aggrieved Li Jue Tian would be delivered right below his striking hand. Li Jue Tian’s mouth opened, and spurted an arrow of blood on his face.

The Solitary Falcon was startled. He quickly decided to retreat. He first evaded that arrow of blood. Then, he caught Li Jue Tian’s body with his hands. After that, he quickly moved ten meters away in the horizontal direction to evade Venerable Mei’s follow-on attack.

How could Venerable Mei not intend to follow-up with an attack if they had thrown Li Jue Tian up like that? The Solitary Falcon was quick to understand this. And so, he caught-on and evaded as quickly as possible.

The Solitary Falcon’s reaction could be considered very fast. However, he couldn’t have imagined that it was still a step too late in front of this opponent!

He felt a sudden and incisive pain in his belly. Venerable Mei had attacked with their three palms-strikes. Two of them had failed, but the third one had hit its mark. And, that strike was enough to leave the Solitary Falcon screaming in agony, and made him float away like a ‘kite without a string’. His face contorted, and he tried his best to gain control. But, he failed at it. "Argh!" he spat blood, and it spilled over Li Jue Tian’s body.

Solitary Falcon’s initial movements had been exceedingly fast. In fact, it was even beyond the reach of Venerable Mei. But, the Solitary Falcon had been forced to retreat, and had then caught Li Jue Tian. This had bitten into his Xuan efficacy. Then, he had been forced to evade an extremely strong attack. Moreover, he had been

using a lot of Xuan Qi to protect himself all along. And, his Xuan Qi had fallen to a very low level as a result of this. Then again, Xuan Qi had never been Solitary Falcon's forte. It seemed as if he had merely been grazed by this attack. However, the injuries he had received weren't light.

Venerable Mei was a capable warrior. So, how could she let this golden opportunity pass? Her body disappeared, and suddenly reappeared in front of Lei Wu Bei. Then, she began to unleash her hurricane-like attacks on him.

The Solitary Falcon was flying away in a downward slope-like trajectory at that moment. Li Jue Tian was seriously injured. And, Shi Chang Xiao lay over fifteen meters away. Therefore, the next few moments were akin to a one-on-one fight with Lei Wu Bei.

Lei Wu Bei had received a shocking injury a moment ago. His treasured blade had also been destroyed a moment ago. Therefore, his will to fight was at its lowest at that point. He couldn't help but be frightened when he realized that he would have to fight Venerable Mei on his own. But, he tried to resist, and retreated quickly.

"Bang! Bang!" the sounds echoed everywhere. It wasn't clear why... but, dust suddenly covered the entire sky, and made everything dark. Shi Chang Xiao had caught up a moment ago with the intention to help out. But, he could only discern two very vague silhouettes in that thick cloud of dust. And, both of those figures were dressed in black. Therefore, one genuinely couldn't tell which silhouette was Venerable Mei's... and which one was Lei Wu Bei's...!

He hadn't even hesitated for half-a-second when he heard an explosive sound. Lei Wu Bei's painful groan followed soon after. And then, he saw a figure spin and fall. The black clothes clung to this figure this figure rather tightly — it was Lei Wu Bei.

Blood bubbled-out from Lei Wu Bei's mouth with a gurgling

sound. His right hand was bent at a strange angle. It was obvious that his right arm had been broken. However, one could say that Venerable Mei had gone easy on him. Lei Wu Bei's arm would've been sheared-off if they hadn't gone easy. In fact, the bones in his hand would've turned into white powder, and would've flown-off to some place unknown.

The outcome of the battle had become rather evident by now.

The Lord of Tian Fa had wiped the floor with the four Great Masters!

It could be said that Venerable Mei's victory was very obvious. The four Great Masters had been defeated. They hadn't even been able to fight back in a proper manner.

The battle would've turned out much differently if the four had genuinely given every drop of their power to destroy everything that stood in their paths. They still wouldn't have been able to defeat Venerable Mei, but the outcome of the battle would've been much more favorable to them in that case...

Venerable Mei could use 'The World Cage' technique on only one person. And, it would put a lot of strain on her if she'd use it on a Great Master. The person she would use this power on wouldn't be able to move. However, Venerable Mei herself would be in great danger at that moment.

Therefore, Venerable Mei couldn't dare to use 'The World Cage' technique in this battle.

However, every one cherishes their lives! Moreover, this was a battle of 'victory and defeat'— not one of 'life and death'. And, the price to be paid upon defeat wasn't very painful. Only the Xue Hun Manor would have to pay a painful price. But, the other Great Masters wouldn't suffer much.

In fact, even Li Jue Tian himself hadn't given everything he had. So, why would the other three?

This result would be 'as expected' if these factors were to be considered...

Venerable Mei waved her long sleeves. They somewhat rolled-up in the wind. Suddenly, it seemed as if that cloud of dust was struck by a hurricane. And, that cloud disappeared without a trace as a result. Venerable Mei's tall figure was exposed to everyone's eyes thereafter. Her body was covered in that wide black robe. And, she looked-on with arrogance as her black robes floated around her.

Suddenly, a man in the crowd gasped and called-out in alarm, "Look... look at the space in the middle...!" Everyone looked at place he was pointing towards. And, everyone couldn't help but gasp. The place where the fight had begun had comprised of roughened granite. But, it seemed that someone had somehow shoveled-out a layer of earth from that spot; a very deep layer at that! It seemed to be three meters deep. And, this effect had been spread over a radius of 30 meters!

It was quite possible for the Great Masters to cause such a deep indentation in the ground. However, the issue was that... no one had seen even a single stone fall... nor had they heard the slightest of sounds. [So, how did that layer of stone disappear?]

[Did it sprout wings and fly away?]

These people were completely oblivious to the facts. These five apex experts hadn't staked their lives on this battle, but they had still used some of their strongest skills. And, these rocks had been scraped-away when they had used their powerful Xuan efficacies. These rocks had been turned into powder, and had floated away with the wind. In fact, more portions of the rocks had been scraped-away if the fight had been more intense.

However, this was the result of the fact that Venerable Mei had exercised self-restraint. The others would've been forced to use their full power if she had used the entire extent of her Xuan efficacy. And, that small hill would've turned into flat land if that

had happened.

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng sighed in unison.

They had already anticipated this result. But, they had never thought that it would happen so quickly.

Even Solitary Falcon, Lei Wu Bei, and Shi Chang Xiao hadn't forecasted this. Lei Wu Bei and Shi Chang Xiao stood in a daze; their expressions seemed to fluctuate.

The Solitary Falcon put Li Jue Tian on the ground, and walked a few steps forward. He wanted to say something, but couldn't open his mouth. Then, his face turned red.

The four Great Masters had suffered a thoroughly crushing defeat.

How could these four boastful top-experts of the world accept such an outcome? The representatives of humanity had suffered a defeat in that battle. Moreover, the prestige of those apex experts had also taken a serious blow!

Their status had lost its meaning...

# Chapter 367: Knife Thrower! Knife Thrower Appears Again!

---

Who wouldn't know the name of Venerable Mei after these events became public? Her name was known to a very few people on the continent. But, the entire world knew of the four Great Masters.

Could they ever go to a place where someone wouldn't mock them behind their backs? Their reputations had been ruined. People would look down on them and laugh. [These four people joined hands in a battle, but still couldn't beat someone whose name we haven't even heard...]

The three Great Masters who could still stand upright on their feet felt like digging big holes, and hiding in them.

[I can't afford to lose to this person!]

"Our side concedes defeat in today's war. Venerable Mei has thoroughly convinced us of the unrivalled power of their Xuan Cultivation." No one had spoken for a long time. So, Lei Bao Yu sighed and broke that embarrassing silence.

"You're throwing in the towel? Not a problem. I hope you remember my three conditions. Tian Fa is out of bounds for all of you as of this moment!" She pointed at the men of the powerful families on the continent. She then snorted heavily, "I will destroy the families of men to the ninth degree even if one of you enters Tian Fa. I'd like to see which one of you has the guts to enter Tian Fa after I do that!"

"We will obviously agree to the three conditions you had set since we've lost this battle." Lei Bao Yu smiled. Anyone who heard him speak felt that this person from the Elusive World of Immortals didn't care about the outcome. He continued, "The outcome has already been decided, but I still wish to say something to Venerable

Mei."

"What is it?" Venerable Mei asked coldly.

"The three Holy Lands have agreed to a battle at the end of the seventh month — three years from now. The Elusive World of Immortals' Empress hopes that Venerable Mei will take part in it."

Lei Bao Yu then chuckled and continued, "Tian Fa forest's name has stood at the end of the rankings for the past five hundred years... the Great Ruler has also been in seclusion for five hundred years... he he... he has presumably left the world. And, now that we speak of this... I have to inform you of another matter. Our Empress has sent these few words to you — "If the Lord of Tian Fa doesn't show up... and if Tian Fa loses — we will revoke Tian Fa's formidable status. And, the writ of the Three Holy lands will run large over the world from that moment onwards. Tian Fa would be considered nothing!"

Venerable Mei trembled. She clenched her teeth and replied, "This was the real purpose for your visit today! Mediation in this war was merely an excuse! Can't that hypocrite Empress of yours wait? Don't forget that The War for Seizing the Heavens is on the advent. Will your Empress be able to bear the responsibility when the time comes and there's no Tian Fa?"

"This has been considered by her Excellency!" Bu Kuang Feng narrowed his eyes, and a cold light flashed in them. "Venerable Mei, do you think that Tian Fa would be able to do anything without the Great Ruler? Do you think that Tian Fa's current power can do anything if it takes part in The War for Seizing the Heavens?"

"No matter how useless we will be... it'll still be better than trash like you two." Venerable Mei was unsteady. She wasn't going to take nonsense anymore. Then, she waved her hand and said, "It's time to pay up!"

A bird-like screech was heard from the sky. Then, a dark shadow



dropped down faster than the speed of sound, and shot down amongst the troops of the Xue Hun Manor like lightning.

The positioning of this creature made it rather evident that it had remained hidden in the sky for a long time. It was at this moment that Jun Mo Xie realized why he hadn't seen Long Crane since the start of the war. [So that's how it was!]

Li Teng Yun's face was covered with tears at the time. He welled-up as he crouched in front of his father. He was anxious, and didn't know what to do. He had gotten accustomed to relying on his father's formidable reputation. So, it seemed like the sky was falling down on his head when he saw his father sustain serious injuries. He genuinely didn't know what to do at that time. Li Jue Tian was seriously injured. In fact, he wasn't even able to move. But, his life wasn't in danger. His breath was weak, and his eyes were closed so that he could recuperate. He had already lost his honor. So, the preservation of his life, and the restoration of his strength was his top priority at this moment.

However, that resounding screech echoed through the air at that moment, and a black shadow shot down. The remaining experts of the Xue Hun Manor had been guarding Li Jue Tian. They couldn't help but cry-out in alarm. However, they couldn't avoid that shadow at this moment, and everyone was hit a result. After that, a pair of huge claws grabbed Li Teng Yun. This figure stopped for a second, and then shot upwards once again. He had ascended over thirty meters in the sky in a split second. Then, a few thin but iron-like feathers floated down.

Li Jue Tian's eyes opened wide in anger. He suddenly sat up, and shouted, "My son...!"

Everyone in the crowd suddenly exclaimed, "Crane King!"

It was Tian Fa forest's third ranked King — Long Crane!

He was in his original form at that moment, and was floating away with Li Teng Yun clasped firmly in his sharp claws. Li Teng

Yun's given name meant 'soaring above clouds.' It was a good name, but he had never done so in his life. However, he was genuinely soaring above the clouds at this moment. He had finally lived up to his name!

He was a pampered kid, and he had always acted like a bully. He had never been in such a thrilling situation. The young man was living up to his name for the first time, but he was so scared that he had started to lose control over both his excretory organs. He could only shout, "Daddy, save me!" He finally lost control, and started to spurt 'things' from front his front and back at the same time.

The stench prevailed in the air. Everyone who stood below held their noses, and scuttled to safety.

Li Jue Tian's heart turned cold. He recalled his wager with the Lord of Tian Fa. His body had sustained very serious injuries. So, he couldn't attend to this matter regarding his reputation on his own. Therefore, the Great Master looked towards Lei Bao Yu and shouted, "Brother, Lei! Look at this Li! This Li has spared no efforts for the Elusive World of Immortals over these past years! I ask you to save my child!"

He had used his status as the Second Great Master to back these words. However, this wasn't any different from kneeling and pleading.

Lei Bao Yu hesitated and looked at Venerable Mei. He had thought that the matter was finally over. Moreover, he had already angered the other party with the words he had spoken. So, how could he face them again at this moment, and intercede on someone else's behalf?

His nose would be whipped-away from his face if he said anything at this juncture. How could Lei Bao Yu support this man in front of the world's apex expert? Moreover, it would be even worse since it would come from a representative of the Elusive

## World of Immortals...

Li Jue Tian's expression turned into that of a man who had been overcome with despair. In fact, it seemed as if he had aged dozens of years in an instant. This brilliant and world-renowned Second Great Master hadn't put-up such an expression even when he was thoroughly beaten by Venerable Mei. His face had merely displayed his grief and indignation. However, the cruel fact that he was helpless at this time made Li Jue Tian collapse...

"Lei Bao Yu! You've reneged on your word! You had promised me that you will defend my son. You had promised that he would be fine!" Li Jue Tian called out softly. It sounded like he was groaning. Then, he opened his eyes, and stated in a ferocious manner, "I — Li Jue Tian — take a vow that I will destroy everyone present here... and their families to the ninth generation if anything bad happens to my son today!"

This was followed by a screech in the air as Long Crane laughed, "Our dream of three months has finally been realized!" He waved his right wing, and a blood-curdling scream erupted from Li Teng Yun's mouth. The air had been filled with blood in a moment. Li Teng Yun's legs had been snapped-off from the base! They then fell down with a squishing sound.

"My son! My Teng Yun!" Li Jue Tian sobbed. Blood dripped from his gut while he screamed. It was unknown where he got the strength from, but he somehow stood up. "My son, Teng Yun!" Li Jue Tian was in tears. He was in bitter pain at the moment.

However, who could be blamed for all this? How could Li Jue Tian act like a bully and be bossy if it weren't for Li Jue Tian's extreme arrogance? And, what kind of a Young Master from a powerful family would ever try to snatch the wife of someone else? Moreover, Li Jue Tian actually knew about his son's unbearable actions. However, he didn't even try to stop him. In fact, he encouraged this tyrannical behavior of his son's, and even vowed to fulfill his son's desires.

A thorough study would reveal that Li Teng Yun was bound to suffer such a dark and painful fate. And, Li Jue Tian was the man responsible for this. Was the Second Great Master truly that amazing? Could no one ever provoke him?

Li Teng Yun's legs dripped with blood, and this had revealed the greatest error that Li Jue Tian had committed.

Suddenly, matters took a drastic turn...

A golden light flashed between the tents, and two exquisite throwing knives suddenly appeared before Li Jue Tian. One of them struck his throat, and the other pierced through his chest.

Many able people were present there. But, none of them could tell where the knives had come from. Nobody could locate the person who had thrown these knives either. However, everyone was clear about the intentions of the person who had thrown these knives — Li Jue Tian's death!

Another throwing knife appeared. It had reached Li Jue Tian's eyes in the blink of an eye!

Li Jue Tian roared with anger, and raised his hand to obstruct the knife. The knife struck his hand, penetrated deep into the flesh of his hand.

His name could shake the world. He was one of the Great Masters. His skin was almost indestructible, and his bones were like steel. No one in the world could stand up to him. However, he couldn't even evade a small throwing knife with the strength that remained in his body at this moment.

"Who?" Li Jue Tian looked up and roared sharply, "Who wants to kill me? Come out if you have the guts?"

Everyone present also wanted to ask this question. [Who wants to kill Li Jue Tian? Who is throwing these knives?]

It was true that many amongst those present at the scene wanted to take advantage of the opportunity in order to kill Li Jue Tian.

He had made a threat a moment ago, "I — Li Jue Tian — take a vow that I will destroy everyone present here... and their families to the ninth generation if anything bad happens to my son today!" these words had realized into a threat to everyone present. Perhaps everyone wanted to kill him after that. But, they didn't. No one had dared to take action in order to kill Li Jue Tian in front of everyone.

After all, the Xue Hun Manor's remaining strength was still exceptional despite the fact that it had been reduced very considerably. Therefore, not many people would rashly dare to poke the hornet's nest. If they wanted to take action — they would have to do it in secret. But, this person who had openly thrown these knives was rather impatient. Or perhaps, the Second Great Master wasn't much in their eyes.

Then, an extremely powerful pressure started to emanate in the area. This force pressed upon everyone's minds, and left them to tremble.

After that, a person suddenly appeared high above in the sky. This person had seemingly appeared without any prior indication. That person was dressed in black. One could say that this person's dressing style was very similar to that of Venerable Mei's. In fact, most people would've assumed this person to be Venerable Mei if they hadn't seen the Lord of Tian Fa standing apart in the vicinity.

# Chapter 368: The Killing Blow! The Aftermath!

---

"Li Jue Tian! I must kill you!" the black-robed person stood still in the air as he spoke these words. Then, he extended his leg, and came down from over thirty meters in the sky. It seemed as if he had descended via a staircase. His hands were behind his back, and his head was tilted slightly upwards as he stepped down.

Everyone was alarmed!

[He frittered in the sky as he stepped down on the ground.]

Even a Beast King of Tian Fa — that too the King of flying Xuan Beasts, Long Crane — had never demonstrated such a wonderful skill. This mysterious person's Xuan skills were obviously at a very profound level.

Li Jue Tian's expression became dark, and he fell to the ground with a plop. He had barely managed to stand-up like the last radiance of a dying sun a moment ago. However, he got to see that incomparably amazing feat soon-after. He may have felt that he had a slim chance against Venerable Mei, but he knew that he was no match for this mysterious newcomer. This person was perhaps more formidable than Tian Fa's Venerable Mei. Much more formidable!

Li Jue Tian had lost every shred of his fighting spirit. He merely lowered his head and asked, "Why?"

"Why? Do you need to ask why? Didn't you always say that 'a clenched fist is the greatest argument'?" the mysterious black-clothed man snorted coldly and continued, "There are some people whom you can't offend... Some people whom you can't afford to offend! And, you will have to pay the corresponding price if you provoke them. Do you understand?"

"I understand." Li Jue Tian raised his head in a desolate manner,

and asked in a very gloomy voice, "I don't hope to survive this. But, I wish to know... whom did I offend?"

"Whom did you offend?" the mysterious black-robed man sneered and replied, "Don't tell me that you didn't figure out that Tian Fa's beasts spoilt your plan? They didn't attack the only person whom you had tried to entrap! Don't tell me that you don't think that the occurrence of so many unreasonable things wasn't strange...?"

"It was you! It was you who prevented the Xuan Beasts from attacking Jun Wu Yi!" A light flashed inside Li Jue Tian's mind. He guessed everything. But, he was still at a loss for words owing to the shock of this. So, he moved his mouth, but no words came out, "The Jun Family? You stand for the Jun Family...? How didn't I know this...?"

There was a huge clamor amongst everyone the moment those words came out. And, even Jun Wu Yi was amongst these people! He was gaping wide... just like the others. [Since when did our Jun Family have such a powerful backer? And, how on earth did I not know?]

However, everyone else had only one kind of expression as they looked at Jun Wu Yi — a color of admiration!

They were extremely envious. The originally low-key Jun Family had such a world-shaking person supporting them from the dark. [We absolutely can't provoke the Jun Family... we simply couldn't afford to do it...]

"The Jun Family... he he... isn't so small that people like Li Jue Tian can get away with causing trouble for it. I had vanished from this world twenty years ago. And, many misfortunes have befallen them after that. It has also led to many like you to overestimate your capabilities. And, you've acted with a limited outlook on things from thereon."

The mysterious man in black finished speaking, and inclined his

head to look at the people from the Silver Blizzard City. He had a sharp expression in his eyes. Xiao Bu Yu and the others started to feel cold without any reason, and their complexions underwent very drastic transformations.

The black-clad man then gave an ice cold laugh and spoke, "And, as for you... you needn't be alarmed. This old man will have no interest in seeking trouble with you as long as you don't make him unhappy again. 'Someone is responsible for every grievance. And, there is a debtor for every debt. Ha ha...' he gave a long and sorrowful laugh as he looked at Xiao Bu Yu with a meaningful glance. His eyes were clearly shooting warning glances.

Xiao Bu Yu forced a smile and replied, "This Xiao admires the kindness of your distinguished self."

The black-clad man snorted and spoke, "Can gratitude and grudges be distinguished that easily? I don't think so. He he... But, I'll play along from now..."

He stood motionless in the empty space. But, a pitch-black flame suddenly emanated from his body, and engulfed Li Jue Tian inside it.

The man in black laughed and spoke... as if nothing had happened, "Your behavior as a Great Master was abysmal. But, your behavior as a 'Great Master of scums' was quite impressive..."

The scene inside the flame was blurred. But, everyone could hear as the former Second Great Master let out a fearful howl...

Then, the black-clad man waved his hand, and something appeared in it. After that, there was a flash of golden light, and the two throwing knives appeared in his hands. Venerable Mei suddenly let out a loud cry at this moment, "Stop!" She had already seen that the "thing" in his hand was the Xuan Core of the Panther King.

However, she came to herself the moment she had shouted. [Why



did that mysterious man choose to extract the Xuan Core from Li Jue Tian's body...? Could it be that this mysterious man's...?]

The black-robed man snorted. But, he had completely ignored her in this moment. Then, he glanced around in a sharp manner. His actions were apparently a sign of warning... perhaps they were meant in farewell... or perhaps there was a deeper meaning behind it...

After that, he turned around and took a step. And then, he suddenly disappeared with that step!

He had vanished... just like that!

It had seemed like an invisible door had been placed in the air in front of him. He had merely stepped in, and had disappeared. After that, he had become invisible to everyone in the world...

[How... can this be possible?]

The many men and beasts lost their voices at the same time. The scene became extremely quiet. In fact, it could only be described as a 'pin-drop' silence...

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng looked at each other, but only saw the terror in the other man's eyes. A long time passed in silence. Then, someone suddenly shouted, "Li Jue Tian! He..."

Everyone was alarmed. They turned around to look, but they saw nothing at the place where Li Jue Tian had stood. He had only left a small pile of ash behind!

The Heavenly Great Master Li Jue Tian had been turned into a very small pile of ash after he had been engulfed by that strange black flame!

[What kind of move was that...?]

Even Venerable Mei stared wide-eyed in shock. In fact, she didn't even notice when the Snake King had arrived in front of her...

"Eldest..." Snake King seemed somewhat embarrassed as she

looked at her and spoke, "That person... his posterior was very large..."

Venerable Mei asked in a startled manner, "What?"

[His a\*s is big...] Venerable Mei shook her head. She didn't know whether she ought to laugh or cry. So, she spoke in a comical tone, "Snake King... that's a man. Why were you looking at his butt?"

Snake King's face turned red. She turned around to leave in anger. Venerable Mei seemingly smiled. And, she no longer paid any attention to that issue. But, she continued to ponder since she was very bewildered by one fact... [Who's that black-clothed man? What's his origin?]

[No one has ever made such a striking expression in my memory. And, how could that man remain obscure throughout my lifetime if he's capable of such a shocking feat?!] She felt like breaking her head open, but she still couldn't understand it. The Lord of Tian Fa couldn't help but be at a loss as a result.

However, she could never have thought that this mysterious skilled person who had suddenly appeared and over-awed everyone present... was the same person she had violently spanked a little while ago — Jun Mo Xie.

And, the reason why the Snake King had noticed that this person's posterior was different than an average man's... was that Venerable Mei's spanking had ensured that it would swell many times its size. So, how could it not appear abnormal in size?

'The Power of the Universe' and 'The World Cage' had let-go of Jun Mo Xie when Venerable Mei had gone out to fight. Jun Mo Xie's ability to move had returned as a result. He had then taken advantage of the fact that everyone was focusing on the fight between Venerable Mei and the four Great Masters. The Young Master Jun had been impatient to move into action this entire time. So, he quickly escaped into the Hong Jun Pagoda. And, the first thing he did after that... he quickly rub and knead his stinging

buttocks...

[It hurts a lot! ...more so because it's this particular part...!]

However, he then witnessed that Li Jue Tian and the other three had been defeated. He hadn't expected it to happen so quickly. He could've transferred the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune to his posterior, but he wouldn't have been able to eliminate that swelling in such a short period of time. Thus, he had no choice but to bind his cumbersome posterior and escape. So, he quickly eliminated Li Jue Tian, and escaped as hurriedly as possible.

However, the Snake King's peculiarly sharp eyesight made the "young woman" notice the anomaly with his posterior...

Jun Mo Xie hadn't thought that his powerful appearance had left a lasting impression on everyone. The Great Masters and the few Spirit Xuan experts only comprised of a few numbers of this crowd. Even the Sky Xuan and Earth Xuan experts were few in number. Most of the people were at the Jade Xuan or the Gold Xuan realm.

And, a person at this level would be considered an expert by the society at large. But, they had sunk to the level of ants after today's events. They were genuinely as good as ants!

Powerful experts had come from around the continent. And, each one of them was a legend in their own merit. In fact, each one of them was a character that one could look up to. They had been left a bit overwhelmed when they had arrived at the Southern Heaven City and had seen these Great Masters. In fact, they had felt that their presence wasn't of much use here.

Then, the four Great Masters had joined hands to fight this battle, but they were still crushed under someone else's hands!

Moreover, the two more Great Masters had also appeared. They were world-shaking swordsmen — the Hurricane and Rainstorm Great Masters. They had such resounding names. Moreover, they

had the status of the Chief Provosts of the Elusive World of Immortals...

They had arrived as people of the Elusive World of Immortals. And, that name was something most of those present at this scene had heard for the first time. This legend had never been talked about. Therefore, this had made everyone even more puzzled.

This was a mystery, and it had made everything even foggier for the people present. They hadn't known about it before, but they had soon come to realize that the Elusive World of Immortals was the greatest force in the entire world. And, this fact had been confirmed after they had witnessed Li Jue Tian's behavior. Moreover, the two Great Masters were merely the Elusive World of Immortals' chief provosts. So, what did that entail?

It was only natural that Venerable Mei — the person who had thoroughly defeated the four Great Masters — had been assumed as the world's greatest expert by everyone present.

However, none of them had expected that a mysterious black-robed person would also show-up at this juncture. So, they had obviously never imagined that this person would be more terrifying than Venerable Mei. This person had then gone-on to kill the Great Master Li Jue Tian in an instant!

These things had happened in succession, and in a very short period of time. And, these unforeseen events had repeatedly attacked these people's limits of mental tolerance. It was too much for their eyes to take in!

[One big mountain is replaced by an even bigger one!]

Every man present at this scene had that same thought. They had roamed the society... they had lived in seclusion in wooded mountains... some were perhaps the members of large and powerful families... but, they only felt shock at this moment. These people had been very satisfied with their respective statuses. But, they suddenly felt ashamed of their arrogance and baseless

self-satisfaction.

[What would I be considered in front of such people? A ‘joke’... right?]

[I’m still a person with a limited outlook and experience!]

In addition, most of those present at this scene had colluded with Xue Hun Manor’s Li Jue Tian and Li Teng Yun. And, they had aided that father-son duo in their plot. A few had refrained from doing so, but most were either openly or secretly involved in this plot. In fact, most people had at-best turned a blind eye towards the Xue Hun Manor’s plot...

However, the Jun Family’s fortunes had reversed. None of their family’s character had died. Moreover, that newly-arrived mysterious person had clearly indicated his patronage towards the Jun Family. [What’s the meaning of all this?]

Even Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng hadn’t dared to prove this character. Venerable Mei had some misgivings in that regard, but even she hadn’t moved into action. And, this person was backing the very-same force that almost every powerful family had been consistently plotting to entrap.

And, the thought of this had left everyone somewhat panic-stricken.

[What would we do if the Jun Family retaliates?]

Then, everyone simultaneously came up with the same idea... [We must be friendly with the Jun Family! We will inform our Family of this matter the moment we get back. Then, we’ll quickly draw up a charter, and rush to the Tian Xiang City. We shall then strive to win a favorable impression from the Jun Family...]

[Please don’t retaliate against us... we won’t dare to provoke the kind of strength you possess!]

Naturally, there were many who had thicker skin. These people had already rushed to gain Jun Wu Yi’s friendship. They had

pondered for a moment, and had then rushed towards the Third Master Jun. They were presently circled around him like flies trying to make a huge swarm.

Every kind of speech was spoken in attempts to fawn in order to win his favor. The succession of these words was rather unbroken. And, every kind of praise and words of fawn were spoken as they bootlicked. These words irrigated Jun Wu Yi's ears like the water from a massive river, and irritated him to no end. Jun Wu Yi was a straightforward man. So, he felt a headache as he listened to all of this. It was a struggle for him. However, he had no choice but to be very careful in dealing with these people.

It had to be said that this astonishing news would cause a huge and widespread shock once it had spread out in the days to come. The Jun Family's position and safety was quite assured thereafter. In fact, it had to be said that even the thunders couldn't shake it anymore!

No one would dare to provoke the anger of that exceedingly strong and terrifying man. Therefore, no one would mess with the Jun Family. And, there would be no exceptions to this!

The people from the Xiao Family of the Silver Blizzard City were obviously the most terrified ones present on the scene. Xiao Bu Yu's face seemed like it had been drowned in water. Well, the pressure on his face left him to feel as such. [Will the Silver Blizzard City's strength be enough to bear that mysterious man's revenge? I genuinely can't say...]

The mysterious man had spoken, "Someone is responsible for every grievance. And, there is a debtor for every debt". Those words had carried a hint of warning and hatred in them. How could Xiao Bu Yu not catch this fact with the decades of experience he possessed? That mysterious man wanted Jun Wu Yi to seek justice for himself... And, everyone present had been able to understand this rather clearly...

However, the main issue was still the same. What could the Xiao Family do if Jun Wu Yi decided to seek revenge? "Someone is responsible for every grievance. And, there is a debtor for every debt". This statement would apply to us if we're not careful while getting rid of Jun Wu Yi. That mysterious man would be moved to personally act if we...]

[However, wouldn't facing Jun Wu Yi's hatred be akin to coaxing a darling baby? We could support the baby with our hands, but the baby might just put our hand into his mouth and chew on it. Wouldn't we need to be very careful?]

[What the hell is this?!]

Xiao Han turned and looked at Jun Wu Yi. He suddenly felt great pressure in his chest. He felt like he was dying. It was an unbearable pain. This man was his mortal enemy. He loathed him to the extreme. This man was someone he had even dreamt of killing! This man had merely been a plaything to him. But, how did this man suddenly become so impressive at this time?

[I may wish to deal with him, but the Family will be bound to reconsider my matter! The Family wouldn't wish to offend that person... even if the Lord of the City's doesn't issue a strict order!]

[So, what should I do? Yao... is mine! Mine!]

There was a hint of hysteria in Xiao Han's eyes. His body suddenly came to the verge of collapse. He let out a cry as he spat a mouthful of blood. And then, he stood up obstinately. He stared at Jun Wu Yi without blinking, and his expression became increasingly cold and crazy.

[Jun Wu Yi! It doesn't matter who's backing you! I wish to kill you! And, I will kill you!]

A scream resounded in the air as Long Crane let go of Li Teng Yun's shattered body. The boy then fell down with a cry of shock. He had dropped from a height of hundreds of meters!

There was an explosive sound as people below scrambled to get out of the way. They effectively left a vast area vacant on the ground.

A thousand people would've rushed forward to catch Li Teng Yun if he had been dropped some time ago. However, he had turned into a 'hot potato' at this time. Who would dare to help him? Who would agree to do it?

"Bang!"

Li Teng Yun's body fell to the ground, and a large pool of watery blood splashed around. His body had been turned into a pile of flesh. Every bone from his body was sent flying. Even his fingers hadn't remained attached to his arms.

That miserable scene made everyone's heart jump and beat loudly.

Venerable Mei waved her sleeves, and turned around to leave. She roared, "You people must remember today's terms! We shall say farewell at this point, but I'm sure that we'll meet again!"

She hadn't specifically mentioned the name of any person. But, Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng understood that she had referred to the two of them. So, they respectfully replied, "Don't worry, Respected Senior! The words of a man of character carry a lot of weight! So, it's important that we adhere to the terms since we've been defeated. We won't go back on our word!"

Venerable Mei chuckled and sneered, "Who will dare to go back on their word?" Those words had been laced with threats.

Lai Bao Yu and his companion looked at each other, and forced a smile.

Venerable Mei shifted her gaze as she turned around. However, she couldn't even detect Jun Mo Xie's shadow at the place he had earlier stood. [It seems that the brat slipped away like a rat after I removed the strength of the World Cage...]



She thought about this for a moment. Then, she suddenly turned around and walked towards Jun Wu Yi. Everyone who had flocked around him saw her fluttering black robes as she made her way. So, they scatter to the distance... as if they had seen a devilish curse approach.

Jun Wu Yi finally relaxed and breathed out. He felt his entire body sweating profusely. He hadn't been fazed in the face of a mountain of blades... or woods of corpses... or even oceans of blood. But, facing a torrent of flattery had made it difficult for him to breathe.

Those people couldn't even look him in the eye for a short of period of time. But, dealing with them had unexpectedly left him to feel even more tired than he would after an arduous battle.

Jun Wu Yi cupped his fist and smiled as Venerable Mei came over, "Venerable Mei has come over. How have I been so fortunate with your presence?"

"Your nephew's moves are quite wonderful. He's quite a talent." Venerable Mei didn't beat around the bush. She spoke in a very straightforward manner, "This senior would like to take-him-on as a disciple. What do you say, Commander Jun?"

Jun Wu Yi was prepared since he had guessed their purpose. However, he still couldn't help his mind going blank when he heard those words. He became extremely happy for a moment. But, he suddenly recalled Jun Mo Xie's bewildering temperament the next moment. He nevertheless smiled and replied, "Venerable Mei, it's a great fortune for that brat that you look upon him. This Jun doesn't have any opinion on this. However, my Jun Family is very open-minded, and Mo Xie had mostly been self-disciplined. So, he's very opinionated. But, my Jun Family will have no problems in case Venerable Mei truly wishes to take him in... if Mo Xie agrees to it."

"Self-disciplined..." Venerable Mei was stunned. She seemingly

couldn't comprehend those words. It seemed from her tone that she had heard something 'outlandish'. But, she came to herself soon enough, and replied from behind her clenched teeth while she smiled on the surface, "Not bad, not bad... very good... Ah! Self-disciplined... very good..."

However, she was cursing inside. [That despicable and shameless brat can be considered, "Self-disciplined?" Where's this coming from?]

"I have my own means if that's the case." Venerable Mei was full of disdain. [This commander can look me in the eye and talk nonsense... he's your nephew! How can you boast and overhype him?]

"But, do you not know where your nephew is?" Venerable Mei asked solemnly. She was literally on the verge of raining curses. However, she stood in the face of a legend of the recent past — the genuinely unwavering Blood General. Therefore, she suppressed her anger. She would've been raining curses at this time under usual circumstances...

"Mo Xie... uh?" Jun Wu Yi was about to say something. But then, he thought and replied, "Wasn't Mo Xie at your side a moment ago?"

"Ah, I had gone to face my opponents a while back. But, your nephew wasn't there by the time I returned." Venerable Mei's spoke in a manner that concealed the redness of her face, and the fact that she was panting, "Your nephew and I had a very joyous conversation..."

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng had arranged for everyone's withdrawal whilst these two people were engaged in a conversation. In fact, everyone had seen Venerable Mei and Jun Wu Yi engage in a 'joyous' conversation. And, everyone else had remained silent out of fear. The Jun Family had added more glory to its name as a result.

No one dared to disturb these two individuals, and they left the place in silence. In fact, more than half the hilltop had been emptied in a very short period of time.

The Xuan Beasts had also retreated into the Tian Fa forest. Only a few Beast Kings had stayed behind to watch over Venerable Mei. They seemed very concerned.

The sounds faded away, and a sense of serenity spread over the wooded valley once again. Lei Bao Yu smiled lightly, and spoke-up while cupping his fist, "Venerable Mei and all the Beast Kings... we're all noble and far-reaching beings. So, I'm sure that we'll meet again. We two brothers have to return to the palace in order to submit our report. So, we must say farewell at this time."

Venerable Mei nodded slightly. She was about to speak when a majestic body suddenly came rushing from behind her. It then shouted loudly, "The provosts of the Elusive World of Immortals are truly awesome! They are leaving before they can eat my punch!"

The sound of the rustling of a celestial wind was heard at the same time. This was followed by a thunderous noise. In fact, it seemed as if a cloud had fallen to the ground. Then, a sharp voice was heard. This voice seemed so angered that it seemed as if it would murder anyone who didn't clear away from its path, "This one also thinks that the provosts of the Elusive World of Immortals are extremely ferocious!"

It was the Bear King, Big Bear. And, the Crane King, Long Crane!

Everyone was aware that the two Beast Kings didn't wish to obstruct or kill the two former Great Masters. They merely desired to create a dispute for the next time. This would set-up the platform to compare their Xuan strengths at the designated time, and see how much they differed by...

Who could say how the strengths of the Tian Fa's Lord's underlings would fare against the Elusive World of Immortals'?

Lei Bao Yu found their words unfathomable words. In fact, Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng had harbored the same idea. But, how would these beasts get another opportunity once these two had left?

Then, a screech was heard. After that, a graceful and delicate figure started to spin. The Snake King had moved into action!

Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng smiled as they looked-on. They had seemingly not even seen those two's moves. The purple-gold swords at their hips didn't even seem to move. But, something dazzling suddenly flash around them, and the sky was instantly filled with a brilliant downpour of starry objects. It appeared like a heavy rainstorm. And then, a bewildering and whimpering echo arose as another storm picked up. It turned everything into a spectacular mess as it flew through the coarse rocks.

The attacks of the three Beast Kings were sharp, but it became difficult for their attacks to make quick progress in this storm.

These two were world-shaking swordsmen — the Rainstorm and Hurricane Masters. They were the Greatest Masters of their generation. Their Xuan cultivations were extremely high, and their co-ordination was flawless. In fact, it nearly doubled their individual might!

A clear sound echoed as Long Crane rose up, and laughed, "You deserve the titles of the Rainstorm and Hurricane Master. You are indeed very admirable!"

A clear whistle was heard as Bu Kuang Feng replied, "Tian Fa also deserves its formidable reputation! We'll meet after three years! Farewell!"

They were already a kilometer away when they had said their farewells.

These five individuals had exchanged a blow. And, they had retreated after that. It seemed that the five people — the two men

and the three Beast Kings — were on an equal-footing at the first glance. But, the three Beast Kings had well-realized that the advantage lay in the hands of their counterparts.

[The Elusive World of Immortals is very difficult to deal with!]

The three Beast Kings must've been startled by this. But, Venerable Mei had foreseen the conclusion to that confrontation. Therefore, she had paid no heed to it. She merely frowned and took a step as she strolled forward. Her heart was immersed in an entirely different train of thought... [Jun Mo Xie... where has that little bastard escaped to...? I've even used my Spiritual Sense. So, why can't I find him? What's the reason for all this?]

# Chapter 369: Scatter Like The Clouds

---

Men of Jun Wu Yi, Dongfang Wen Qing and Sikong An Ye's status came forward to wish farewell. Venerable Mei only nodded in an absent-minded manner. Most of the Spirit Xuan and Sky Xuan experts were nothing in her opinion. There was nothing wrong with the Third Master Jun and the three Dongfang brothers when it came to it. However, Venerable Mei didn't wish to engage with them much since it would be rather embarrassing for someone of her status. In fact, she'd even wish to economize on the 'nodding'...

She hadn't even paid attention to what they had spoken since the worry in her own mind hadn't been settled yet. A long, long while passed in this manner. She then raised her head towards the sky, and saw a river of stars along with a bright moon...

[It's night time already!]

[I didn't pay attention that so much time passed while I was immersed in thoughts. But, what was I thinking about? What had me so entranced? This has never happened to me before? What is happening to me...?]

Then, she turned around, but noticed that only three people remained there. The Tiger and the Lion Beast Kings had already led the Xuan Beasts into the forests in a calm and quiet manner. A faint cloud of dust could be seen in the depths of the sky above the forest. The faint dust that had spread in the air was obviously due to the retreat of the Xuan Beasts...

[This is very unusual. So many Xuan Beasts have retreated. They may have retreated in an orderly and peaceful manner. But, they still must've made a tremendous noise. But, I still didn't notice any of it. I haven't been this absent-minded for nearly a hundred years...]

Venerable Mei didn't care about the human allied forces. They

had also retreated in a neat order some time back. Even the dead bodies on the ground had been taken away. The only exceptions were the bodies of the father-and-son duo — Li Jue Tian and Li Teng Yun. One had turned to ash, while the other was a pile of meat. The allied forces had buried them in haste. In fact, they had basically piled-on a mound of earth on top of them. The setting sun had shone upon that mound, and a white plank of wood stood upon it. This plank had obviously been chopped from a nearby tree. It looked rather conspicuous. A barely legible line had been carelessly written on it — "The tomb of the Li father and son."

Not a single word was written apart from that.

He had been one of the Great Masters of his generation. He had been well-regarded in the past. But, he had been very arrogant. And, he had unexpectedly met such a miserable and gloomy fate in the end...

Venerable Mei became clear-headed when she saw that plank of wood. She decided to take a closer look at the plank. Then, she laughed bitterly before she muttered, "The Second Great Master is dead. His reputation is gone too. He's just like a common beggar who's hungry and cold."

She sighed and her eyes flitted around. Only the four of them were left amidst this grand mountainous forest.

Over a month of fighting, blame, and grievances had come to an end. The heroes and experts from around the world had gathered there. But, they had also dispersed like the scattering clouds.

Everything was back to the way it used to be. However, the number of the living had reduced...

There was still a faint scent of blood in the air, and this made this wide expanse of open area seem even more miserable.

"You fought Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng. How do you feel about it? You've measured the four Great Masters who had come

here. How do you feel about the strengths of the Eight Great Masters? I wish to know where you place the strength of our Tian Fa against the Elusive World of Immortals..."

Venerable Mei placed her hands behind her back, and looked into the distance for a long time after she had asked this. It seemed that the three individuals who stood beside her had been asked a very dull question. However, the three Xuan Beast Kings felt an immense pressure.

"Those two men... were very fierce... and quite difficult to deal with..." Long Crane had carefully thought about the situation of the battlefield a while ago. So, his flat and long mouth expressed his view, "Their strength was greater than that of the four Great Masters who had arrived today. In fact, they were stronger than Li Jue Tian — the greatest of the Four Great Masters. Moreover, their swords worked in perfect harmony when they joined hands to fight. Their strength was also increased by many-folds when that happened. The chances of victory are lesser than that of defeat if we three fought them... even if we were in our original forms. And, this is merely an assessment based on the strength they had displayed in that one instance..."

"I agree with what the Third Elder Brother has spoken. The Elusive World of Immortals' Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng had only displayed the tip of the iceberg when it comes to the determination of their strength. Their true strength would be somewhat higher than that of our Tian Fa." The Snake Queen stroked the hair in front of her forehead, and the expression on her face became serious.

"'Somewhat higher than us...' Is too conservative an argument! I won't dare to exaggerate our hopes! I feel that their strength superior to ours. In fact, it's much higher than ours!" Venerable Mei slowly turned around, and spoke in a chilling manner, "Your progress has been very slow! I'm very disappointed in all of you!"

The faces of Long Crane and the other two Beast Kings turned red



as they lowered their heads.

"The Three Sacred Lands are very fierce... and the Tian Fa forest... has been declining very fast over the past few years... Perhaps we'll end-up losing the title of a Fearsome Place in the near future. What a shame! He he... Big Bear and Long Crane!" Venerable Mei sneered and continued, "The two of you had guaranteed me something when you lost the Sacred Fruit. What would the two of you do if we have no news of it after the three years have passed?"

Venerable Mei's tone had become very sharp.

Long Crane and Big Bear straightened-up their bodies, and replied in a solemn tone, "Rest assured, Eldest. We two brothers will remove our heads if things go south when the time comes!"

"Humph!" Venerable Mei said in a dark tone, "Do you two think that your heads are... that valuable?"

Everyone remained silent for a while.

How could the heads of the two Beast Kings not be valuable? However, what would significance would the removal of their head bear if the things took a turn for the worse? It would only reduce the strength of their side for no reason. One genuinely couldn't understand what these two were thinking...

Venerable Mei looked up and thought in silence. ['Tian Fa won't find what it seeks. The Beast Kings will die. The Tian Fa's million will depend of the success of failure of one person'. What profound meaning was hidden behind these words? 'Tian Fa won't find what it seeks'. This line's meaning has already been cleared out. But, what did the other words mean?]

Venerable Mei figured that they next phrase indicated a major change in the circumstances regarding the Beast Kings' fate. That would explain "the Beast Kings will die" part. It would certainly seem so, but one couldn't be sure. However, the last part regarding

"The Tian Fa's million will depend of the success of failure of one person" was still a profound mystery.

[What does this mean at the end of it all?]

"Eldest... since you wanted to receive that kid as a disciple... so why not..." Snake King asked.

"I obviously have other means," Venerable Mei leisurely looked into the distance and spoke slowly, "How can I let him escape so easily from my palms? Wouldn't it be too much if I can't even educate him on his behavior?"

She had become very cold and gloomy by the time she had spoken those last few words. In fact, her teeth had started to gnash with anger within her mouth. The three Beast Kings had known her for many years. So, they trembled as they thought about how she would to take her revenge. They couldn't help as they looked at each other in dismay. [Eldest wants to take him in as a disciple. But, she wants to take revenge? What kind of a sinister and ocean-deep hatred do you possess for this kid?]

"I'm on the verge of a breakthrough. I had a flash of realization during today's battle. The path of non-penance is the better option if one wishes to break through the final barrier. One must travel this world!"

Venerable Mei then laughed a bit and spoke, "Bear King, Crane King... the two of you will guard Tian Fa properly. You won't leave it for the next two years. Meanwhile, Green hunter and I will go and explore the world."

She sighed after she finished speaking. One would see that Venerable Mei's clear and limpid eyes were full of loss and contradiction if they could go beyond her black cloth and see her face.

Big Bear and Long Crane bowed and agreed.

Venerable Mei remained stationed in a calm manner as the

curtain of night descended upon the land below. The biting-cold wind started to rise on the top of the mountain. Venerable Mei wasn't using her Xuan Qi to protect her body. There was a fluttering sound on the summit as her black cloak left her body, and fluttered away in the wind. The figure that had been hidden underneath it was surprisingly the exquisite figure of a woman. In fact, this figure could bring a 'rise' within any man even if they saw it vaguely from the side...

That peerless beauty could awaken feelings of first love...

The mere outline of her figure would leave the entire world to mutter, "What a beautiful woman!". The other women would be left to feel inferior. She hadn't revealed her true features, but the manner in which she stood in the wind had already displayed her peerless and refined structure. In fact, the moon in the sky had already lost its luster in front of her beauty.

The sky had turned dark by now.

The most refined and elegant creation still remained gracefully upright on the summit. She didn't move herself, but her elegant body swayed magnificently in the night-wind...

A person had seemingly been sighing softly for a long time. That person's voice seemed low... as if they were talking in their sleep. And, their voice became even fainter as it wafted through the air...

"I... how should... I treat you...?"

The whistling night-winds breezed away, and those words lingered continued to linger within. Then, that magnificent and exquisitely beautiful figure flashed. And, darkness truly descended on the world after that...

The last touch of light had apparently gone out. The sky had become dark a while ago, but the figure on top of the mountain had seemingly emitted the radiance of a green lotus that grew atop a snowy mountain peak. And, that last bit of light had also

disappeared after she left...

The greater part of the allied forces had already scattered after the humans had returned to the Southern Heaven City. They had suffered a crushing defeat. And, the strongest faction of the humans — the Xue Hun Manor — had been thoroughly crushed. Even Li Jue Tian — one of the Eight Great Masters — had died. However, the final outcome of the battle was that the Xuan Beasts of Tian Fa had returned to their forest. Moreover, they weren't going to trouble humanity anymore. Thus, the basic aim of the allied forces had been achieved. No one was idle at this time. Each person was moving about, and was bidding their farewells.

However, the person who had been most in the limelight during that war — Jun Wu Yi — had a worried frown on his face.

Jun Mo Xie had gone missing!

The Young Master had mysteriously disappeared, and hadn't returned since. And, this had frightened everyone! Everyone was very worried. People like the Solitary Falcon and Dongfang Wen Qing searched everywhere, but they couldn't even find a trace of him. So, Jun Wu Yi helplessly decided to postpone the return trip, and planned for everyone to rest in the meanwhile.

However, he was completely unaware of the things that were happening in the world while he was recuperating. The Xuan experts from every powerful family which had participated in this war were wantonly propagandizing the Jun Family's might after they had departed from the Southern Heaven City. Therefore, the Jun Family's reputation had sky-rocketed to the top in the brief time of a few days...

The Jun Family had always been regarded as a famous family. But, that was mainly due to its military prestige. A common family of the society couldn't provoke the Jun Family. However, this didn't mean that the other families couldn't... especially when it came to the families which had Sky Xuan or Spirit Xuan experts to

keep watch over them...

The factions that nobody would provoke weren't many in number. The Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor were amongst the handful of factions that no one would dare to provoke...

However, the circumstances were different now. In fact, they were entirely different. Who wouldn't know that the Jun Family had a patron in a man who could be regarded as the 'strongest under the heavens'? And, this shocking news had spread like a storm across the entire continent...

# Chapter 370: The Devil's Bite of the Flame of Primal Chaos

---

Guan Qing Han was inside the tent. She had her hand on her cheek as she stared at the flickering candle. She then let out a long sigh.

"Elder Sister Qing Han, are you thinking about brother Mo Xie?" Dugu Xiao Yi was sitting quietly at her side. The little girl hadn't seen him for a few days, and had become somewhat thin as a result. Moreover, her eyes and face showed the indescribable and extreme worry that she had on her mind.

She became extremely frightened after she spoke those words. She didn't know whether she wanted the answer from her elder sister Guan to be a 'yes' or a 'no'... Moreover, she felt that calling out Guan Qing Han's name together with that of Jun Mo Xie's in that manner made them faintly seem like a couple. So, she immediately corrected herself, "Could it be... that you're thinking about him?"

Guan Qing Han turned and smiled gently, "Why do you ask this, Xiao Yi? What do you want my answer to be?"

Dugu Xiao Yi pouted before she replied, "Ah... Third Uncle Jun had tried to pair the two of you some time ago. So, who else would you be thinking about? No one thought highly of him earlier. Only I had chosen him! So, why's everyone coming to snatch him away now...?" she felt extremely wronged by the time she finished speaking, and couldn't prevent the rim of her eyes from turning red.

A light flashed in Guan Qing Han's eyes before she replied, "Don't worry, Little Sister Xiao Yi. It's just that he had gone out a while ago, but hasn't returned since. That's the only reason I'm worried about that man. I'm worried over a member of the family member in the capacity of an elder daughter-in-law. There's no other

reason to it."

Dugu Xiao Yi pouted even more before she spoke, "You're not his sister-in-law anymore! You're his close relative now! You could use your proximity to him to your advantage... it's only obvious that you needn't think about it... humph! That guy has gone missing in accordance to his whims. But, I must be careful when he comes back, and..."

Then, she suddenly shifted her gaze; the little girl had come-up with an exquisite idea. So, she stopped mid-sentence, and her face became red. Then, Dugu Xiao Yi became very restless, coy, and ill-at-ease for a moment. After that, she hastily stood up, "I have to leave... there's this thing..." she said this and quickly flew out.

Guan Qing Han seemed puzzled as she watched Dugu Xiao Yi leave. She eventually couldn't help herself from smiling lightly. However, she become awash with worry again after she was done smiling. She sighed, and looked at the flickering candlelight in a perplexed manner as she muttered, "What should I do? What... should I do? I'm in such a fix..."

Everyone was very worried about Jun Mo Xie. But, he was also faced with a great crisis at this time...

He had taken a risk, and had used the Flame of Primal Chaos in order to deal with Li Jue Tian. The attack had gone smoothly. In fact, things had proceeded so well that even he couldn't believe it at first. Li Jue Tian had been turned to ash with ease! However, the attack had been too successful! And, he had received a devil's bite from the Flame of Primal Chaos as a result. In fact, things had taken such a dangerous turn that Jun Mo Xie might've gotten himself killed!

Li Jue Tian hadn't been able to strike him back when Jun Mo Xie had attacked him. But, the Young Master Jun was aware that he was in the presence of the three other top-experts. Moreover, they were watching his movements very closely.

Those three experts were namely — Venerable Mei, Lei Bao Yu, and Bu Kuang Feng.

Killing Li Jue Tian wasn't a difficult thing in-itself when he got the opportunity to ambush him. But, the greatest problem was that there was a huge chance of his true identity's exposure in the process of killing Li Jue Tian in such a public manner. Those three experts would've moved into action, and would've exposed his true identity if his method to kill Li Jue Tian didn't keep in accordance with his presumed identity of a mysteriously skilled top-expert...

And, the Jun Family would've genuinely been drowned in calamity if that happened. In fact, there would've been no means to rescue them from that situation.

However, any effective and mysterious method would bring no small amount of danger with it. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie eventually took the risk, and used the Flame of Primal Chaos. Jun Mo Xie went all-out to get rid of the disease named Xue Hun Manor.

He had by-and-large prepared himself to face the devil's bite from the Flame of Primal Chaos. However, he hadn't expected that the devil's bite would take affect so quickly. Moreover, it was extremely intense as well! In fact, even the tough and incomparably steely-nerved Jun Mo Xie was also nearly unable to endure it.

Jun Mo Xie had always boasted of his endurance ability. In fact, he had genuinely believed that no amount of torture could break him. He was confident that he could withstand any kind of torture. He had believed would die before he'd break. Jun Mo Xie had undergone tough anti-torture training in his previous life. Therefore, he had believed that he could endure any kind of a punishment...

Therefore, he had always bragged that any form of torture was nothing more than a life experience in his eyes!

Jun Mo Xie had never given much regard to any sort of physical



or mental pain as a result of this firm belief of his'. And, he had always acted without restraint. This was the reason why he had always acted the way he had. This was the reason he had followed an 'author's fantasy' approach to life, and had always treated life as a game. [I'll do what makes me feel happy!]

[Nothing in this world can scare me! So, I have nothing to fear!] This was the reason he could act like a debauchee in the Emperor's presence. And, this was the reason he could dare to abuse a Great Master despite the fact that he was merely at the Jade Xuan realm.

[What can you do to me?]

[What would you do even if you could mess with me?]

[I've endured the most extreme pain in the world. And, I'm not afraid of death. So, why should I be afraid?]

It was similar to the case of being a 'pretentious prick'. But, one needs power to be that as well. One could nurture a strong mental state and could act with arrogance if they had power. However, one would only mock themselves at the thought of acting with arrogance in case they didn't have power.

A country's princelings could act like pretentious pricks in a country's marketplace... or anywhere else in front of the common people. In fact, they could act in any manner they so desired without any misgivings. Even the rich could treat the poor who served them in a horrible manner without worrying about it...

Why?

It was because no one could threaten them. They weren't afraid of anything. Those people wouldn't have to worry about any repercussions even if they did were to shoot their mouths.

However, could a beggar act forcefully in front of a rich businessman? That scenario was unimaginable.

Jun Mo Xie had the strength to back it up. So, he obviously acted like a pretentious prick. [Why should I worry or care? I have the

Hong Jun pagoda. The experts of this world can't kill me even if they all were to join hands. So, why shouldn't I act pretentiously when I have such power?]

[I've achieved a level of cultivation that people struggle to attain even after they've spent a dozen years in practice. And, I've only been here for a few months! Why can't I be a pretentious prick when I have such a strong advantage? Who will dare to call himself the first genius of this world if I call myself the second one?]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie acted in a proud and wildly arrogant manner. He always looked askance at the world and its people. He even thought that heaven and hell were of no threat to his existence. He wasn't scared of anything. So, he harbored no worries.

However, he knew that he had made a mistake this!

And, it was a massive mistake!

There was a kind of pain that even the spirits couldn't bear... let alone a living man!

Jun Mo Xie could smile and wave-off the physical pain that related to the breaking of hands and legs... and even the 'setting right' of the broken bones. But, even a golden immortal would crumble when faced with a pain that could torment the soul of a person.

And, this case was an example of that...

The devil's bite from the Flame of Primal Chaos!

He was inside the Hong Jun Pagoda at this point, and he was covered in thick Aura. He was holding his head, and was rolling-about in pain.

He could've never thought that the devil's bite from the Flame of Primal Chaos would have such a tyrannical effect.

There were some things which no one should ever try... even if

they had no choice but to take the risk.

Jun Mo Xie hadn't felt any discomfort or pain when he had used the Flame of Primal Chaos. In fact, he had even felt slightly rejuvenated. But, felt his entire world had toppled by the time he had retrieved the Flame of Primal Chaos into his body after having killed Li Jue Tian.

And, these words entailed for his spiritual and conscious world alike!

The Hong Jun Pagoda could cure any kind of pain or sorrow. However, this was one kind of horrifying pain which even the Hong Jun Pagoda couldn't help with...

And, that's because the Flame of Primal Chaos was the flame everything had originated from...

And, this flame was burning a major part of his soul's core at this moment...

Jun Mo Xie had clenched his teeth tight in pain. And, his face was contorted. He felt every inch of his soul disintegrate and burn. A small flame seemed to be burning inside his heart. That flame burnt neither fast nor slow. The flame was slowly burning his fragile heart, but it still kept him conscious. And, this meant that he would have to live through the most cruel and unbearable torture he had ever known...

The inside of his brain had stopped burning since it had been turned to a pulp at one point. But, it had started to burn again. It was almost as if the ashes had caught fire once more. It had started slowly at first. But, it had then sped-up to such an extent that the inside of his brains had started to boil...

And, he had been fully conscious this entire time...

Moreover, the pain in his nerves had been magnified by ten-million times!

He had rolled-up his black robe, and had stuffed it into his

mouth. In fact, he had already chewed it to shreds by now. Jun Mo Xie had thought that he would faint at one point of time, but he couldn't dare to. This was because there was a chance that the devil's bite from the Flame of Primal Chaos would burn him like Li Jue Tian in case he fainted.

And, that would be tantamount to shooting oneself in the foot.

Therefore, he could only support himself with rigidity at this moment! He could only support his spirit! Jun Mo Xie would cease to exist in this world if he were to lose his consciousness during this hardship!

In fact, he would cease to exist in any world that had ever existed!

The pain of being tortured with poisonous bamboo sticks that had been inserted in one's twisted fingers seemed like a rainy day's bliss compared to the devil's bite of the Flame of Primal Chaos.

In fact, the aforementioned example was probably better explained as the difference in pain from a mosquito bite and the kind that entails after one's leg has been smashed. The disparity was huge!

Sweat flowed out of his body like a stream. In fact, it evaporated and turned into mist the moment it flowed out.

"Argh!"

Jun Mo Xie looked up and screeched. He stood straight up, and then his face turned downwards. After that, he turned upside down with his face positioned upwards. He was like a zombie. His body contorted into extreme positions on the ground. In fact, his body had violated all laws of nature with its contortions...

And, that kind of pain continued for a day and a night!

The dark-flamed Flame of Primal Chaos jumped-around in a cheerful manner as if it was boiling noodles in a stove. In fact, it seemed as if Jun Mo Xie's pain and suffering was only adding to its pleasure...

It was just that the Art of Unlocking Heaven's Fortune was flowing through his meridians. Moreover, that thick aura inside the Hong Jun Pagoda was flowing through his meridians as well. It repeatedly washed over them. And, it was far higher than it had ever been before. In fact, it was greater than the sum of the entire amount he had witnessed in his previous life...

The dense milky-white aura in the air resembled a huge suction-whirlpool. And, there was an incessant sound of jeering as it would break into Jun Mo Xie's body. In fact, the aura entered his body in an endless stream... never-ending waves-upon-waves of it...

## Chapter 371: Profits From Disaster, and Breaks Through a Third Time!

---

The majority of the aura entered through the pores, and gushed out from Jun Mo Xie's feet. It then disappeared without a trace. It seemed as if the aura was only passing through his body. However, the aura continued to cleanse his already clean body iteration-after-iteration. In fact, it seemed to be striving for perfection in that regard. Therefore, not even the slightest of impurity had remained after some time.

However, Jun Mo Xie hadn't realized this. And, that was because he was immersed in excruciating pain this entire time.

Jun Mo Xie had used the Flame of Primal Chaos, but he hadn't anticipated that its unexpected devil's bite would entail the kind of pain that no living man could endure even one percent of! In fact, it could be said that this was the most excruciating of all pain that existed. Young Master Jun wouldn't have been able to endure this pain if it weren't for his enhanced state of mind... and if he hadn't initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune... or if the aura wasn't nourishing his body... Jun Mo Xie would've died if any one of these things had been amiss. His soul would've scattered away, and he would've never attained peace if that were to happen...

It was the devil's bite of the Flame of Primal Chaos! How could it be weak?

There's an old saying — good and bad fortunes are interdependent. And, these words have never been false!

This was because a person could reach a level which ordinary people can't if they are able to endure pain which the latter couldn't. Consequently, they would benefit from advantages which an ordinary person wouldn't even be able to imagine...

One has to pay the corresponding price if they wish for some

advantages. However, one is reborn, and reaches a new level after one pays the price with their conduct.

In fact, no entity in this world is an exception to this if rule!

One's sorrows would eventually turn to joy if they endure extreme pain and suffering through hard-will.

Jun Mo Xie had initiated the Flame of Primal Chaos. So, he was dealing with its devil's bite at present. But, he had stuck to his will in order to survive it. However, the reward he'd attain after such an exceptionally enormous punishment would also be exceptionally great...

That grim punishment was the most severe test. And, it was a very feasible price to pay. One aspect of this pain attributed to hell, but the other corresponded to heaven.

Why else would the insignificant second layer of the Hong Jun Pagoda possess the Flame of Primal Chaos?

Everything has its purpose. Every obstacle on the road to the top has its reason. Everything has its own usefulness...

Jun Mo Xie's body had been cleansed to its very essence when his body had obtained the Hong Jun Pagoda. It had become brand-new at that time. Therefore, his physique was far better than that of an ordinary person. But, he was still in the category of a 'mortal'. However, his body changed in its entirety as he underwent this thorough cleansing process.

One could attempt to draw an analogy to explain this better. Jun Mo Xie's body had been like a trashy bag of meat when he had passed through to this world. But, his body had become a skilled one after he had received the Hong Jun Pagoda. It had become outstanding, but it was still within the scope and cognition of many people.

That means... it was within the range of human understanding. And thus, their ability to scale...

However, Jun Mo Xie's shell couldn't be described as a "body" anymore. It would be a bit of an exaggeration to say that the Young Master Jun's body was now like that of the enlightened Tang Dynasty monk who had journeyed to the west to learn the Buddhist scriptures.

That monk's body was obviously made of flesh. The above explanation wasn't given to show that the Young Master's physique was equal to that of the monk's. Rather, the Young Master had emerged stronger in comparison. The monk's body had obviously accumulated far more aura than an ordinary person could imagine. The Young Master's body had also accumulated a terrifying quantity of aura. However, the inner quality of his body had also far transcended that of an ordinary person's...

And, this would hold true whether one could discuss in terms of temperament or the spirit...

His physique had been strengthened, his meridians flowed unimpeded, and the aura flowed dense throughout his body... and even... through his internal organs! And, that was because this transformation had changed him into something entirely new!

The Young Master's previous speed of cultivation was already enough to be labelled as 'abnormal'. But, his speed would probably become several times faster after these events. Moreover, there would be no possibility of an accidental Devil's Bite on his journey further...

This was because there was no chance of a Devil's Bite after this. The meridians of his entire body had been widened further. In fact, they had been widened to the very limit the meridians of a human body could've been...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie's further practice would only be a process of 'accumulation'; that's all.

For example, the capacity of an average person's Dantian was equal to that of a well. But, Jun Mo Xie's capacity had become



equal to that of a lake. However, there was very little water in that lake at present.

However, the misty waters of this lake could stretch beyond the horizon once it had been filled. But, this would obviously happen after a long process of accumulation...

Jun Mo Xie had recovered after a day and a night's time...

Some fear still lingered in Jun Mo Xie's heart as he slowly opened his eyes. He had felt as if the eighteen layers had simultaneously opened themselves up for him during that ordeal. And, this feeling had left even the fearless Evil Monarch's heart to tremble...

[It hurts very badly!]

He tried to move his finger, but found himself to be completely helpless.

He felt like every muscle in his body had seemingly been turned into cotton. He had no strength left in his body... except for the amount he'd need to pant.

This was similar to a person feeling that their entire body was functioning normally, but they had still been paralyzed for some mysterious reason...

Jun Mo Xie panted as he exerted a great effort to slowly initiate the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. He then focused and cycled his Qi. However, he suddenly opened his eyes wide in astonishment.

[This is unreal!]

A cycle of the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune required few breaths' time to work inside his body. However, it had happened in a blink of an eye this time. He had thought about the idea, and had merely initiated it... but the entire thing had already cycled through his meridians, and had returned to his Dantian.

It had happened at a lightning speed.

The greatest advantage to that lightning speed of movement was that he'd never have to be worried about his Xuan Qi not being enough. Moreover, he'd never have to worry about running out of it...

That is to say that Jun Mo Xie could fight endlessly if he so desired. In fact, he could fight forever!

...As long as he didn't starve... or an extremely powerful expert didn't cut-off his head...

[What does this mean?]

Jun Mo Xie was already a genius. But, this meant that he had now transformed into an inexplicable monster.

Jun Mo Xie was ecstatic!

He couldn't understand everything at this time, but he still knew that he had been fundamentally reborn. And so, he contained his excitement with difficulty. Then, Jun Mo Xie initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune since he still hadn't regained any control over his body. And, he wanted to break-away from that state of affairs. After all, what use would his remarkable physique be if he remained paralyzed?

Fortunately, his strength to gain control over his body also started to increase with each cycle of his Xuan Qi. And, he felt a comfortable sensation every time his Xuan Qi cycled through his body.

His practice had now become pleasurable; not painful or difficult.

Jun Mo Xie's excitement rose each time his strength increased. His Xuan Qi had cycled seventy-two times by this point. It stopped cycling after that, and Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt a surge of explosive power throughout his body. In fact, he felt that he could destroy anything as long as he wished to...

Jun Mo Xie straightened his back and slowly got up. Then, he stretched his legs. He was about to cut-off his connection with his

Xuan efficacy when his Xuan Qi was set into motion. And, it had been set into movement without the aid of any cheats either...

The Hong Jun Pagoda's aura stormed out with a violent blue light, and vanished into nothingness.

[Damn!]

Jun Mo Xie's posterior touched the ground.

He had spiraled into a state of absolute shock!

[Mother... What could that blue light possibly be? I'm going crazy!]

[I was at the Jade Xuan peak before this flame devastated my body. So, how am I at the initial level of Sky Xuan realm? Even sitting on a cultivation-rocket couldn't have advanced my level this fast, right?]

This great surprise... had been an accident in reality!

He stared blankly for a long time before he was able to come back to himself. Jun Mo Xie half-believed he was dreaming. So, he waved his hand. And, a blue light emanated from it. Moreover, it was a bright light-blue in color. [This is definitely Sky Xuan realm's initial level!]

[But... how is this possible?]

[Don't tell me that using the Flame of Primal Chaos has produced such a great effect?!] The Young Master Jun couldn't help but be immensely pleased with himself. In fact, he had even forgotten about how terror stricken he had been a while ago...

One must know that the Flame of Primal Chaos was the best flame for concocting pills. Moreover, it was also the origin of the fires of the world. And, it was the most destructive flame. No other flame in this world could surpass it.

The Flame of Primal Chaos existed inside the Hong Jun Pagoda. And, the Hong Jun Pagoda existed inside Jun Mo Xie's

consciousness. So, he would have to transfer it from the Hong Jun Pagoda if he wished to use it. In other words, the Young Master Jun would have to transfer it into his conscience from the Hong Jun Pagoda. And, as everyone knows... one's conscience resides in one's mind... not in one's posterior...

It must be known that extracting such a dangerous entity into one's mind, and then allowing it pass through one's meridians could've easily caused extensive damage. In fact, it was even riskier than walking on a tightrope ten-thousand feet above the ground.

Jun Mo Xie knew that he was taking a risk when he had begun to use it. However, he hadn't expected the danger and difficulty to be that immense. It was only due to the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune that he was successfully able to extract it. And, it was with the help of the Hong Jun Pagoda and the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune that he was able to safeguard his fragile meridians. Else, he would've died on the spot. He had been extremely lucky.

Each and every condition had been indispensable.

It must be said that he was ignorant and had experienced such a terrible situation thereof. But, his luck had also been unrivalled in this instance!

It was as if a poor beggar had gone off to a desolate area in order to defecate. Then, he had extended his hand to grab a piece of stone in the hope of using it as a replacement for toilet paper. However, he had suddenly discovered a giant heap of gold instead of dog sh\*t around him...

The Young Master Jun's situation was similar to that person's... lucky...

Jun Mo Xie was flabbergasted. He had just met with an accident. But, he had also reached the initial level of the Sky Xuan realm. And, this fact was undeniable.

A seventeen-year-old Sky Xuan expert!

His cultivation had reached the Sky Xuan realm in four months!

He was a mere level-three Xuan practitioner four months ago. But, he had become a Sky Xuan expert in four months. His speed was so frightful that it was almost like sitting on a rocket and shooting up...

Jun Mo Xie was overjoyed. Then, he suddenly remembered, [my Xuan cultivation has taken such an astonishing jump. What about the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune? What level would the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune have advanced to?]

# Chapter 372: Breaking Through to the Third Level!

---

"Ah... this is great!" Jun Mo Xie took a deep breath as he muttered. He was brimming with energy. He summersaulted and roared loudly in an unrestrained manner to give vent to his excitement. Then, he steadied his excited state of mind, and operated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune.

One must vent their feelings of joy or sadness since it would only affect their meridians if one forces them down, and pressures oneself to stabilize one's mind. And, this would in-turn mean that one would overreach themselves, and their condition would turn for the worse as a result.

However, Jun Mo Xie was very clear about this. He was anxious about the extent of his present advancements. But, he didn't operate the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune in a hurry to examine himself. Instead, he first dealt with the issue just mentioned. And, the Young Master Jun acted in a crazed manner, and gave vent to his excitement as much as he could...

The physiological condition of the body wouldn't come into effect since there would be a sense of "I've already vented" to provide a subtle mental nudge once a person unburdens themselves. And, this would greatly reduce the chance of a devil's bite during the practice.

[What problems will I have if I dispel the chance of a devil's bite?]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie's practice proceeded without a hitch. And, the entirety his aura cycled within his body at extreme speeds. Then, Jun Mo Xie started to inspect his own internal state of affairs. And, his jaw dropped once again!

"Fu\*k Fu\*k Fu\*k..." a succession of cuss words exploded from his mouth. Jun Mo Xie didn't know what else to do or say. His mind

was a confused mess, and only those extremely vulgar words were left in it.

"Truly... Ah!" he shouted fiercely at first. And then, he extended his hands, and started to beat his chest. Jun Mo Xie's actions made him seem like a black bear that was showing-off his strength. It could be said that the Young Master Jun was ecstatic to the extreme.

No one could see what was inside the Hong Jun Pagoda in any case. And, no one would also know that the Young Master Jun had been completely cleansed from the inside. Moreover, he didn't have a thread of clothing upon his body. The Young Master's body had originally been covered in clothing. But, he had torn his clothes to shreds when he was going through that pain and suffering.

The Young Master Jun was thoroughly shocked!

It was because he had found a clear and thin essence flowing inside his meridians. And, this substance looked very similar to mercury. In fact, that matter seemed to have a somewhat flickering shine to it, and it was obvious that it contained a huge amount of power!

His aura had been invisible, and had exhibited no particular character as it had flowed into the first level. And, the aura and spiritual essence had taken on a somewhat misty appearance inside the Hong Jun Pagoda's second level because of the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune.

However, that spiritual essence and aura had disappeared, and this mysterious substance had appeared shortly after. Therefore, it was obvious that his spiritual essence had transformed. Moreover, this indicated that his essence had remained the same in quantity, but had undergone a qualitative change.

This obviously meant that his Xuan efficacy had undergone a substantial change. And, that slender and silvery thread declared

that Jun Mo Xie had set foot in the third level of Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune!

This meant that he would see another breakthrough at last!

Jun Mo Xie got a hold of himself, and concentrated as he started to cycle his Xuan efficacy over his body again. The speed became increasingly fast, and the thin silver string started to make a noisy sound. It seemed to be vibrating since it was giving-off a buzzing noise...

First cycle... second cycle... and then, he was at the peak of the second level. Jun Mo Xie proceeded further, and he clearly felt that the layers ahead were becoming as frail as paper. He felt that he would only need to exert himself a bit, and he would get through...

And, it would be an entirely new realm when the time would come!

Jun Mo Xie slowly breathed in and out as he stabilized his mental state. And then, he gently increased the speed as he impacted the bottleneck.

He didn't wish to congeal his full strength and break through because he believed that success would only come under the right conditions. And, that moment had presented itself since the conditions were ripe. So, trying to be too fast wouldn't be good. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie didn't feel anxious. Moreover, he didn't dare to take the risks again.

Who knew what harmful side-effects may be unleashed if he broke through by force? Perhaps there would be a violent and harmful devil's bite... like he had seen in the case of the Flame of Primal Chaos...

It had to be said that the devil's bite from the Flame of Primal Chaos had made Jun Mo Xie very cautious...

Jun Mo Xie eventually started to feel that the gate to the next level was being pushed back due to the impact of his strength.



After that, it became a bit thinner, and eventually became transparent...

[Finally!]

A very faint sighing-like sound arose. And, a very small opening appeared at the gate to the third level. It seemed like a balloon had come into contact with a very small needle, but... it finally burst.

Jun Mo Xie still didn't advance at a rapid pace. He pushed forward slowly as he gently poured-in his aura, and cautiously proceeded forward. And, finally...

"Bang!"

Jun Mo Xie felt the explosive sound inside his mind, and felt like the world had turned upside down. He felt the entire Hong Jun Pagoda revolve for a moment. The Furnace of Good Fortune flickered on his left at one time, and then on his right. And then, he found that it was place above his head. The steadily burning Flame of Primal Chaos also moved about...

Jun Mo Xie remained unmoved by this. And, he stabilized his mind once again as he moved forward in a firm manner.

And then, at last...

There was an unexpected impact of a massive force. This force was extremely powerful, and had crossed Jun Mo Xie's expectations by-far! Jun Mo Xie felt that his meridians had suddenly swollen. And then, an illusionary image appeared in front of him without any warning...

The illusionary image slowly floated downwards, and became stable as it got down. Then, it turned into a real doorway!

Jun Mo Xie stood in front of that doorway.

He felt that the spiritual influence within his body could shake mountains and call tsunamis with a cheerful voice. Jun Mo Xie's heart was very moved after he examined his spiritual influence.

Then, he finally initiated the Third Layer of the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune.

And, he opened the third level of the Hong Jun Pagoda after that!

Jun Mo Xie smiled as he recalled the pain he had suffered a while ago. It had seemed like the pain from the entire eighteen levels of hell at once.

[Only a real man can endure the most devastating of pain and hardships! These aren't merely empty words!]

It was only natural that someone with Jun Mo Xie's persistence would be able to endure that kind of pain and suffering. But, not everyone could endure it. In fact, most people wouldn't be able to endure it. They would be terror-stricken, and would never be able to evade the dark of their fates.

So, it was extremely fortunate that Jun Mo Xie had survived it. He had met a number of people in his two lives. But, the number of people who could've survived that ordeal could be counted on five fingers.

And, that was enough to make him proud!

He had the persistence of an Evil Monarch. And, he had the crazed endurance of an Evil Monarch. But, that was also his greatest asset!

An indistinct and vague chant suddenly appeared in Jun Mo Xie's mind.

"There's a road to the sky above, but it takes an age to set upon it. Raise you head and look at the beautiful trees. A heart with a mountain of spirit is only a lake at the foot of an immortal. One can take this road after nine transformations of the soul..."

The aura in the third level of the Hong Jun Pagoda spanned heaven and earth.

He had finally broken through another barrier! A bright light had

flashed at the time he had broken into the second layer of the Hong Jun Pagoda. And, his cultivation had broken past the first nine levels of Xuan Qi cultivation when that had happened. But, he had jumped from the Jade Xuan Peak to the initial level of Sky Xuan this time. And, this breakthrough was equal to advancing another one of the four barriers of Xuan Qi cultivation! This was astonishing. In fact, it was terrifying!

They were only four major barriers in count. However, the progress was exponential with each stage.

Everyone knows that the time required to breakthrough to the succeeding levels increases as a person's Xuan cultivation reaches a higher state. Moreover, the arrangement of levels is very clearly organized. Therefore, a person would have to face four major difficulties or barriers in their journey. The first would be to 'break the nine' barriers. This entails to the first nine levels of Xuan Qi cultivation. And, this is what differentiates a Xuan Qi practitioner from an ordinary person.

The second was the 'Jade Xuan' entrance barrier. This was important because it was the true starting point for the future. Jade Xuan was certainly not a very high level. However, a person would never be able to break into the Jade Xuan realm if they didn't possess sufficient innate talent for Xuan cultivation. So, to be able to reach the Jade Xuan realm at an early age was indicative that the said-person possessed excellent innate talent. And, this obviously dictated that they had a high probability of achieving greater things in the future. For example... Baili Luo Yun was merely a Jade Xuan expert. But, this was the main reason why countless high-level experts were surprised at the sight of him.

And, the third major breakthrough would happen when a person would advance from the Earth Xuan Peak to Sky Xuan. There was a massive difference in the strength of these two levels. In fact, the difference in power after the break through was so great that it couldn't be calculated. It required a lot of effort and time besides

mere innate talent to become a Sky Xuan expert. It was said that reaching that level was somewhat like going from Level-One Xuan realm to Earth Xuan peak!

As for the fourth breakthrough... that's to the realm of Spirit Xuan. Any Sky Xuan expert who has cultivated at that level for thirty years or more could reach the Spirit Xuan realm. However, most Sky Xuan experts get very old by the time they reach the Sky Xuan realm. Therefore, another thirty years of cultivation is often beyond their imagination by that time. However, a person would reach an entirely different level of strength once they had ascended to the Spirit Xuan realm. In fact, most people couldn't even dream of touching them. And, that was because they had already cleared all the four major barriers!

To sum matter up... the Young Master had suffered greatly. In fact, it would be an exaggeration to say that he had barely managed to survive that painful ordeal. However, the rewards he had received in return were also quite generous. This advancement was a huge leap. And, his advance had been unprecedented as far as the history was concerned. In fact, one could reckon that this feat would probably never be achieved again!

Jun Mo Xie silently went over the mantra he had just received. Then, he recalled the mantras he had received at the previous two levels. He recalled the mantra at the first level; "the soul that undergoes nine refinements won't fall into hell." The second level had proclaimed, "Nine loyal transformations will stabilize the soul." Then, another mantra had appeared at the third level as expected. And, it had said, "One can take this road after nine transformations of the soul...."

These three mantras had one thing in common — the words "nine" and "soul". Jun Mo Xie nodded in silence and thought... [Is there a deeper meaning to this?]

The number 'nine' seemed to important. The Hong Jun Pagoda had nine layers. The Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune had

nine levels as well. Moreover, one would encounter a mantra every time they would advance through each one of these levels. And, each of these mantras had the number 'nine' in them. He hadn't reached the top level yet. But, Jun Mo Xie was certain that he would encounter the number 'nine' in each of the mantras as he'd advance further.

[What could this be hinting at?]

Jun Mo Xie recalled his previous two advancements. His soul had neither undergone nine refinements, nor had it witnessed nine transformations. [My soul hasn't seen nine of anything. But, why did I still advance?]

# Chapter 373: What Kind of a Medicine is it?

---

Jun Mo Xie pondered for a while, but could not understand anything. So, he decided to let go of it. The Young Master then felt his aura surge rapidly. His aura had become extremely lively. This also made Jun Mo Xie's spirits rise ceaselessly.

[I'm no longer a weak shrimp from this moment onwards. The strength of a Sky Xuan initial level expert isn't exactly 'formidable' when compared to the top experts of the mainland and the forest. However, it's powerful and unreachable when compared to the usual Xuan experts. Moreover, I have many other methods to surpass the hierarchies!]

[Now, I can act openly and freely with this strength. I can deal with matters the way I want to. I don't need to rely on my mysterious identity and the enormously imposing power of the Hong Jun Pagoda like I previously used to...]

[After all, a clenched fist is the absolute argument!]

[I do like that high-profile feel, but it's not my real strength at the end of the day. What would happen if my strength is able to reach that realm someday?]

There was a faint yet hopeful look in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. The Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune had brought about so many nice surprises. What would it bring next...?

He still remembered how he used to watch those fictional martial arts shows on the television in his previous lives. It had experts cutting down small mountains with a mere push of their palms, while their swords could behead several hundred people at once. He used to watch those shows with dull enthusiasm at the time. In fact, he used to feel that it was pure nonsense. [Where does such abnormal martial art exist in the human world? I am the King of Assassins. And, even I can't accomplish such feats. So, how can someone else?!]

However, he had seen Venerable Mei in action. He had seen Li Jue Tian, Lei Bao Yu, and Bu Kuang Feng. He had even seen many of the Xuan Beast Kings...

Cutting down a small hill with a push of their palm was nothing for them. They could perhaps flatten a huge mountain if they wanted.

This wasn't fiction. He had witnessed this on his own. So, what could be considered as impossible?

Then, Jun Mo Xie smiled as he mocked himself, and thought that every world has its own limits.

He put that chaotic train of thoughts aside, and took a step forward to go in.

And, that step forward brought him to the third level of the Hong Jun Pagoda.

[Would I get a mysterious gift here as well?]

[The first level had the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. The second level had the Flame of Primal Chaos, the Furnace of Good Fortune, and the Yin-Yang Escape Technique. So, the third level would have...?]

[What nice surprise would be waiting for me?]

Jun Mo Xie felt heavy the moment he stepped in. In fact, he felt an unfeigned heavy sensation. It was like a treasured blade had cut across his face with a uniquely cold chop. It felt as if his body had been chopped by a Divine Weapon, and had been dissected thereof.

A wisp of a golden strand floated as Jun Mo Xie entered through. Then, it seemed like thousands of ghosts had suddenly found a host. They seemingly jeered as they rushed with lightning speed. They flew forward without a halt, and entered Jun Mo Xie's forehead from the space between his eyebrows.

Another wisp of light — this time a brilliant and shining green light — approached floating quietly, and entered Jun Mo Xie's head in a similar fashion...

Jun Mo Xie's entire body started to feel very exuberant. And then, a burst of 'killing intention' arose, and rapidly integrated with his existing murderous aura. After that, two messages appeared in his head...

The first message was, "Turn ordinary metals into wonderful gold. Obliterate everything into nothingness. This is the power that controls Gold amongst the Five Elements."

The second message was, "Change occurs at a moment's notice. But, it covers the heavens and earth. This is the power that controls Wood amongst the Five Elements."

[The power of gold? The power of wood? What's this?] Jun Mo Xie's head felt foggy with confusion. [What do these two lines mean? Wasn't it quite simple when I had received the Yin-Yang Escape? But, this is very strange.] However, the aura from the pagoda suddenly started to enter Jun Mo Xie when he was pondering in his confusion. And, it filled him to the brim within a moment. It revolved inside his body, and Jun Mo Xie realized that this power and the strength within his body were completely different.

[It appears... to be somewhat special...?]

[Is this another special ability like the Yin-Yang Escape?]

Jun Mo Xie continued to circulate that power for a moment, and suddenly formed an understanding of it. This was because his aura had become very lively and many times stronger when compared to the time before he had circulated this new aura. In fact, it felt as majestic and powerful as a massive river!

His mind was set into motion, and his mental strength erupted like a hurricane. Jun Mo Xie had instantly reached an



understanding...

This was a mental attack! This force could encompass the mind!

He closed his eyes, and calmly digested it all. And then, Jun Mo Xie's eyes flickered bright as he opened them.

[I will take on the entire world by merely raising eyebrows, and I will decide the outcome with a wave of my hand.]

[I possess a genuine combat advantage now!]

Inside Southern Heaven City...

Dugu Xiao Yi was subconsciously pacing back and forth inside her tent. Her good-looking face seemed dark as she gnashed her teeth and talked to herself, "Humph! I've had my eyes on him for a long time. Brother Mo Xie is mine! I found him first. So, why would I cower now? Argh! So what if you're trying to use your proximity to him to your advantage? I have my own means!"

She then clenched her teeth, and shouted resolutely, "Come in! I want a few of the Dugu Family's guards to come in! I have an important task for them!"

The guards rushed about in a hurry for a while. They looked anxious. The Young Lady had never issued such an order before, but they nevertheless convened quickly. [She looks worried. Has a major event occurred?]

The vassals and men affiliated to the Dugu Family abandoned whatever they were doing, and hurriedly rushed over and stood before Dugu Xiao Yi.

Dugu Xiao Yi regarded the family guards in a calm manner. She acted dignified, and her graceful eyes had a solemn look as she glanced around. Then, she coughed twice, cleared her throat, and spoke, "I've called everyone here because I've run into a problem with a medicinal drug I was trying to manufacture."

Those men looked confused. So, they looked at each other in

dismay. [Since when did the Young lady start researching medicines?] But, they replied in unison, "Young Lady, you can command us to do whatever you wish, and we will obey without exception! But, will you let us test them first?"

"You should consider that properly," There was a supercilious look on Dugu Xiao Yi's fair face. She solemnly nodded with her small head, "Listen to what I'm going to say. I've been wrapped up in studying medicinal methods of late. And, I've made some big discoveries. I had just recalled something my sister had said when I was in the Capital. And, that has made me worried. So, I've called you here to discuss it."

"We don't understand what the Young Lady is talking about." The leader of the Family's troops was a forty year old middle-aged man. He couldn't help but become cautious after he saw the seriousness with which Dugu Xiao Yi was speaking. The Young Lady had covered a lot of ground with her speech. She had first spoken about her research on medical issues. Then, she had jumped onto another topic. [Could it be that the medicinal research and this other matter are related?]

"Ah... actually... it's nothing major... It's just that..." Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes turned into beads. She couldn't find the right words. Then, she finally resolved her heart and spoke, "Several sisters have told me that there's a medicine in this world endangers us females very greatly. It possibly leaves us with life-long regrets, and makes beautiful women suffer unhappy fates. And then, it leaves them to commit suicide out of resentment. So, I'm preparing to manufacture an antidote for it. And, I plan to distribute it far and wide to all the women in the world once it's ready. The women won't need to fear this matter thereafter. And, a great deed would hence be done."

Dugu Xiao Yi put a lot of effort in order to seem like a dignified person who was concerned with the world at large. She had desired to put up a 'deadpan' facial expression in order to seem

serious. However, it was a pity that her face had turned red before she had even finished speaking.

Everyone became pensive after they heard those words. They had somewhat guessed what Dugu Xiao Yi was attempting to convey, but they couldn't believe it. The leader of the troops then braced himself, and asked with a stammer, "I don't know... uh... what kind of a medicine is that?"

"Ah...what kind of medicine...that is..."Dugu Xiao Yi's powdered became somewhat red as she looked embarrassed.

"What kind of medicine?" The men of the family grabbed their hair in confusion. They were still apprehensive about confirming it. So, they asked carefully, "What kind of medicine is it? Please tell us its name, Young Lady."

"You are very stupid and incorrigible!" Dugu Xiao Yi's face turned red as she flipped out. Then, she lowered her head and spoke in a low growl, "Aphrodisiac... that's what! Do you understand it now?"

The ten Dugu Family's guards were left dumbstruck and flabbergasted. They could've never thought that they would hear their Young Lady speak that word!

[Huh? Aphrodisiac...? My God! It's the biggest taboo in society! Even the hoodlums and thieves wouldn't use it! So, how did this daring little girl come up with this idea?! This is frightening!]

Dugu Xiao Yi's face turned red. She pouted before she flew into a rage of humiliation and shouted, "Why are you looking at me like that? I'm doing it for the myriad of sisters around the world — the common people! So, I ask if you have it or not? And, quickly hand it over to me if you do! I will study it. Then, I shall devise an antidote!"

[What?] Dark lines had stretched across everyone's forehead.

[That aphrodisiac thing... would any be open about it and take it out even if they have it? Wouldn't they want to save their

reputation in public? And, would they give it to the Family's Young Lady even if they didn't have any honor? Forget about that man... would even the ninth generation of his family survive if something happened to her because of the medicine?]

[Also... you say that you need it for research... but, God knows what you'll really do with it! It'll be extremely bad if you ask us to consume it so that you could personally experience the results for your research! In fact, it will be very bad for the ten of us as well!]

[This matter is no joke! My great aunt...] Everyone had the same complaint in their hearts...

[As for preparing an antidote... I never knew that this thing would need any sort of an antidote. The only antidote that thing requires is a man's work! We haven't heard of any other method besides that. Even drenching oneself with cold water doesn't work...]

They all looked at each other in dismay. It seemed as if they were foolish ducks who had been struck by thunder, and had become demented as a result.

"You don't have it?" The eyebrows of the Eldest Daughter of the Dugu Family shot up, "Are you not men that you don't have it? Are you not men?"

It had to be said that Dugu Xiao Yi had to be a very bold person to speak these words!

And, that boldness had left everyone cold and trembling. [My Mother! What is this?]

## Chapter 374: I Want to 'Cook Rice' with You, Jun Mo Xie

---

[What's the reason behind a man carrying an aphrodisiac on him? What could be the possible reason behind that? We have our wives and concubines. So, that should be enough to get the thing in our pocket working. Then, there are famous brothels everywhere. And, one could easily settle their physiological problems there. So, why would a man require an aphrodisiac? It can only be regarded as a tool of the vilest men!]

[Wouldn't a man who'd pull out an aphrodisiac at this time be telling everyone that 'I am an extremely rogue character?']

[Wouldn't things become crystal clear? How would that man save his honor after that?]

The ten huge warriors stood with their mouths open and shoulders slumped. And, they had a confused expression on their face. They didn't know how to respond to her. In fact, they looked like wooden figures...

"I only wish to study this so I can prepare an antidote; that's all. This act stems from benevolence. There's nothing wrong with it. Why do you have such an expression of your faces?" Dugu Xiao Yi stiffened her mouth as she tried to convince them in a patient manner, "Besides, I will study the aphrodisiac, and form an antidote if you give me a sample of it. Then, all the women around the world wouldn't need to worry anymore. You don't know how many sisters will be grateful to you. You men will have provided a great service to the world!"

Everyone remained quiet as their faces turned dark.

[You obviously won't do anything bad. Because... you don't have the skills required to do anything bad even if you wanted to. Besides, you won't gain anything from this... apart from making us

look bad...]

"C'mon, hand it over, hand it over. Hand it over at once!" Dugu Xiao Yi had a fervent expression on her face as she stretched her hand.

"No, Young Lady!" the leader of the troops replied.

"You give it to me, and I won't tell anyone that it came from you. That should make things easier for you," Dugu Xiao Yi became even more amiable.

"I don't have it! I genuinely don't, ah!" The leader of the troops broke out in a cold sweat. [I will be relieved of my duty the moment I return home if I give her the aphrodisiac. Moreover, there's no guarantee that someone won't torture me for it. So, I won't relent from my stance even if I'm beaten to death today. Besides, I don't even have it with me at this time...]

"We don't have it!" the ten guards stood perfectly straight, and replied in a cold and loud manner. They were very clear on this point.

Moreover, they were all men of the military. So, they could suppress their desires for these rubbish things. There were still a few who couldn't. But, wouldn't the heads of such individuals be considered rotten?

"Fu\*k!" Dugu Xiao Yi cursed sharply. She cursed ten more times, twisted her mouth, and slanted her eyes. Those men could've never imagined that this little girl could've cussed like that. "So, none amongst you powerful men has it...?"

The ten men nodded like 'chicken pecking on rice grain'.

"All of you will be punished since none of you have it. Someone, come here!" Dugu Xiao Yi had a murderous look on her face as she said, "I want you to drag these men out, and give each of them a hundred heavy strikes with a military rod!"

Everyone was left dumbstruck by this.

[We don't have the aphrodisiac on us. So, does that mean that honest and good individuals have committed a sin? We're good men! In fact, we're soldiers! We're soldiers of the battlefield! Aren't we being wronged here? What kind of logic is this?]

[Oh God, what reasoning is this?]

Special bodyguards entered like a pack of wolves after Dugu Xiao Yi gave that command. These men had been selected from the special team of Jun Mo Xie's. The ten stupidest warriors from his platoon of two-hundred-and-fifty had been assigned to look after Dugu Xiao Yi. However, they were all toughened warriors. None of them cared whether the Young Lady's orders were reasonable or not. And, they simply followed her order, and dragged her guards out in order to implement their punishment as per military law.

"Wait!" the leader of the troops was covered in cold sweat. [The others and I will be done for if these guys use those rods to give us a hundred strikes for military punishment. We just need to satisfy the Young Lady's conditions, right? We can report this to Young Lady Guan Qing Han later on, and we can request her to keep a close watch over our Young Lady. And, there won't be any accidents in that case. However, it would too unjust if we were to die over this matter...]

"Oh? You have it now?" Dugu Xiao Yi waved her hands, and signaled the special guards to leave as she asked in excitement.

"Skinny Monkey, you have some, right? I remember that you delightedly stashed some of it away when we left the Tian Xiang City. Get it out!" the leader of the troops gave a sharp stare to the skinniest of the ten guards, and spoke-up in an unquestionable tone.

"I... I... " that guy called 'skinny monkey' blinked in a pitiful manner. The man didn't know how to respond to this situation. And, he couldn't believe that his own leader would betray him in the face of a threat of this punishment by a hundred military-rod

beatings.

"What are you doing? Hurry up, and take it out!" the leader urged in an angry tone. He even scold 'skinny monkey' hatefully, "You're a useless guy!"

"Uh... I got this to consume for myself. I thought that this 'Tian Fa matter' wouldn't be a genuine military expedition. So, I had prepared for a relaxing return trip..." Then, he looked at his leader resentfully. His face reddened as he choked with rage and embarrassment.

Some people couldn't help but make a grumbling noise as they smiled.

Explanations are given when one needs to conceal. And, one only needs to conceal the truth. What kind of a man would keep aphrodisiac on his person? One needn't think too much to answer this question...

"Is this what men eat?" Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes gleamed. "That's excellent! Ah... that amount is barely enough. Hurry up, and hand it over! I'm anxious to research it!"

Skinny Monkey's face looked gloomy and ashamed. He trembled as he put his hand in his bosom and fished out a small item wrapped in paper. The soldier was handing it over, but he had some misgivings. He could clearly feel his companions looking at him with a strange expression on their faces. Skinny Monkey felt like digging a hole, jumping into it, and burying himself therein.

He was indeed as good as dead!

He didn't know how much money he would have to spend to shut the mouths of his companions. It would've been fine if only these guys knew about this. After all, they were all brothers. But, he would have no choice but to take out a knife and slit his throat with it if they talked about it to the others...

Dugu Xiao Yi realized that the man was still somewhat shy. She



became impatient, jumped forward, and snatched the item away. She seemed very happy as she smiled mischievously. Then, she remembered that she had to maintain her appearance. So, she asked solemnly, "This thing... how does one use it?"

Skinny Monkey's face became red. Even his neck turned a deep shade of red as he struggled to respond to that question, "You'll have to pick it with your nails. Then, you'll have to dissolve its contents in wine and drink it..."

"Pfft..." the group of men who stood behind him couldn't help but burst out laughing. They quickly put their hands over their mouth, and started to cough as they choked their laughs. However, their bodies continued to jerk. And, their facial muscles soon started to twist with the effort they were making...

"Oh?" Dugu Xiao Yi nodded in a graceful manner, and inquired further in a professional tone, "And, what will be the reaction? Will it have any harmful side effects on the body?"

"There won't be... but the reaction... uh... the reaction..." Skinny Monkey's forehead was covered in dripping beads of sweat. He genuinely didn't know how to explain the specifics. And, his face had become the color of melted wax as a result...

The men who stood behind him acted in the same manner — they covered their mouths tightly with their hands, and clutched their stomachs as their bodies trembled...

"Oh! Got it, got it. You don't have to explain further. All of you can leave now!" Dugu Xiao Yi's face became red. She seemingly understood that her question wasn't appropriate, and waved her hands. She had anyway made a wild guess. Everyone had started to leave in haste when Dugu Xiao Yi said, "Wait!" Everyone immediately stopped as they heard her.

"This matter is a secret. Do you understand? This is related to the happiness of millions of women. You can't tell this to anyone!" Dugu Xiao Yi continued in a very dignified manner, "Especially my

elder brothers. They particularly can't come to know about this, alright? Ahem... I'm worried if they consume it... yes, that's right... if they consume it... and given how much they eat... what might happen?"

[Huh? You're afraid they'll consume this? The sons of the Dugu Family don't need to consume this.] Everyone's complexion became strange. Dugu Xiao Yi's brothers would've fainted after crazily spraying blood from their mouths if they had heard those words. They would've screamed... [We're normally functioning men...]

However, these men saw Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes go wide, "So, they mustn't come to know about this! I'll get mad if anyone tells them, and I'll... I'll swallow all of it! Did you hear or not?"

"We heard you!" Those men exited the tent as fast as they could. And then, they all threw themselves to the ground. After that, they burst out laughing, and started to roll on the ground. In fact, those men were laughing so hard that it seemed as if they'd die before they'd come to a stop.

"You... you..." Skinny Monkey was extremely angry and embarrassed. He stared wide-eyed at his leader. The skin of his cheeks trembled, but he couldn't speak any further...

"Ha ha ha! This is so funny... I'll die! Skinny Monkey has been that kind of a man all along! So that's why you used to go missing whenever we would go to those brothels! Ha ha! Many Young Masters also consume such things! You should be proud of yourself brother!" Many clutched their bellies as they rolled on the ground. They suddenly broke into an even louder laughter as the bunch of them continued to roll on the ground.

Skinny Monkey's face had turned swollen-purple by now. He shuddered slightly. Then, he grabbed onto a tree trunk, and started to hit his head against it ferociously...

He wanted to cry, but no tears came out...

They all laughed for a long while. Then, the leader of the troops coughed and spoke in a solemn tone, "We have laughed as much as we wanted to. Now, I request that no one leaks out today's matter to anyone else. We all know the consequences if this matter gets out. All of us would be done for! None of us would've been able to endure those hundred lashes today. So, you can imagine your fate if we receive the martial punishment for this matter. Do you understand?"

Everyone nodded to express that they'd keep this matter a secret.

"I must go and look for Young Lady Qing Han. I'll request her to keep a careful watch over our Young Lady. We mustn't have a mishap on our hands because of this!" The leader of the family troops hurried away.

Dugu Xiao Yi took the item, covered the item in her handkerchief, and kept it in her chest pocket. She then looked around with a guilty look before she broke into a proud smile.

"Humph!" Dugu Xiao Yi felt very happy. In fact, she almost wanted to sing. She exposed her white teeth as she laughed, and bounced to the front of the mirror. The little girl then carefully inspected her teeth and muttered to herself, "I have my eyes on you. Where can you run off to? Jun Mo Xie, this Young Lady will force herself upon you. And, we will then 'cook the rice'. And, it'll be too late to change anything after that happens. Can you still run from me? Humph! Elder Sister, don't begrudge this little sister for not being straightforward. He he he... how will you snatch him away this time?"

She seemed very pleased with herself. She smiled with delight as she pulled a face.

Dugu Xiao Yi had grown up in a big family, and didn't understand such matters properly. Witnessing Jun Wu Yi speaking to Guan Qing Han in that regard had made her panic. So, she had come up with this strange plan...

# Chapter 375: Turning Ordinary Iron into Wonderful Gold!

---

This had come to happen because Dugu Xiao Yi had heard someone say that a man and a woman they could never be separated once they've 'cooked rice'. The man would then have to take responsibility of the woman. Dugu Xiao Yi obviously had no idea about how this particular 'rice' was 'cooked'.

Moreover, she had no idea about the effects the aphrodisiac would have. Dugu Xiao Yi only knew that the aphrodisiac would help her with the cooking of this rice. And, that's why she had created such a huge drama.

"Brother Mo Xie is mine; he's all mine! Humph!" Dugu Xiao Yi opened her luggage trunk, and started to pick out some clothes. And then, she started to try on her clothes in anticipation of what clothing would be more effective in making Jun Mo Xie cook this delicious rice.

The Young Master Jun was in a cheerful mood at that time. But, he was inside the Hong Jun Pagoda. So, he couldn't have anticipated that a little witch had marked him for 'cooking rice', and was preparing the boiler pan for the same...

In fact, Dugu Xiao Yi wouldn't have needed to make so much effort if he had known about it since he would've made the 'cooking' preparation on his own. Moreover, the end result is always softer if the weapon is hardened by its own effort...

Dugu Xiao Yi hummed a song as she continued to look for the appropriate clothes. Then, the curtain behind her suddenly opened, and an elegant fragrance filled her tent. It was Guan Qing Han.

The leader of the troops had gone looking for Guan Qing Han. He obviously hadn't dared to speak about the aphrodisiac scene. The

man had only stammered that his Young Lady had been acting quite strangely for the past few days. And, he had added that her mood seemed to be quite odd. Moreover, he had told her that he was worried that some accident might take place since she may have some illness and so on...

The more he stammered... the more Guan Qing Han became worried. And, she started to think that Dugu Xiao Yi may have some strange illness. She heard him as he spoke with great difficulty, and then rushed over after he had finished...

"What's the matter, little sister Xiao Yi? Are you unwell? Quickly tell your elder sister!" Guan Qing Han anxiously asked the moment she came in.

Those sudden questions scared Dugu Xiao Yi out of her reverie. She jumped and shouted in shock. Then, she turned around, and asked in panic, "Why are you here sister Guan? Do you also want the medicine?"

"Me? Medicine...? I'm not ill. What will I do with it?" This had given Guan Qing Han the confirmation that Dugu Xiao was indeed not feeling well. [Why else would she take medicine? And, why would she ask me to take it too?]

"Ah!" Dugu Xiao Yi relaxed and breathed easy. Then, she patted her chest in fright. After that, the little girl asked in a tone which evidently portrayed the fears that still lingered, "I thought you had come over to contest with me from making the 'cooking' preparations. But, you haven't. Thankfully, you haven't!"

"Cooking? What are you preparing to cook?" Guan Qing Han called out in shock. She had an extremely concerned expression on her face. The young woman moved her hand, and felt Dugu Xiao Yi's forehead, "What's wrong with you, little sister Xiao Yi? What're you talking about... why are you being so incoherent?"

[Ah, first she asked me if I want the medicine. And then, she wants to know if I'm going to stop her from making her

preparations? But, how can the two of us prepare medicine in this military encampment? Moreover, Dugu Xiao Yi is preparing medicine? Isn't this too strange?]

"I'm fine. It's nothing. Ha ha ha... it's nothing... nothing at all... ha ha ha ha..." Dugu Xiao Yi gave a hollow laugh. But, she looked somewhat frantic. In fact, the guilt of her conscience made her reach out and feel the item that lay wrapped inside her clothing. Then, she became determined, and slyly looked up at Guan Qing Han and stammered, "Oh by the way... has he returned, elder sister Guan?"

"He's not back yet," A concerned expression emerged on Guan Qing Han's face. But then, she continued in a consoling tone, "Don't worry, okay? It's nothing. He's powerful, and he has so many tricks up his sleeves! So, what could possibly happen to him? I think he'll be back in some time."

Dugu Xiao Yi chuckled for a bit. She then spoke with relief, "Exactly! That guy's skill is amazing! I'm sure he won't have any mishap! I'm just waiting for him to return because I need to look for him over something."

"You're waiting for him to return? What are you looking for him over?" Guan Qing Han asked. [It's unlikely that Dugu Xiao Yi would be overly worried. So, isn't this too weird?] The more she thought about it — the more she couldn't help getting worried.

"I was waiting for him to return so that we can cook... ha ha ha... uh..." Dugu Xiao Yi almost blurt-out everything. But then, she quickly changed the topic, "I'll go out and see if Little White has returned or not. I haven't seen my sweet little thing for so many days. I really miss him."

Her face had reddened by the time she managed to lower it. She then picked at the hem of her jacket with her chin she walked out of the cramped tent. She reprimanded herself as she walked; [Dugu Xiao Yi, oh Dugu Xiao Yi... why did you have to lose your cool like

that? If the plan got leaked... what would have happened to your pre-emptive move if sister Guan found out...?]

Guan Qing Han had secretly determined a course of action. [Dugu Xiao Yi seems to have a real issue. She usually doesn't behave in this manner. She's not making sense. Her actions are strange. I will follow her closely, and I'll keep watch over her.] Then, she walked out of the tent as well.

It was already the noon of the third day by the time Young Master Jun stopped the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune and came out of the Hong Jun Pagoda.

He continued to ponder over something as he returned to Southern Heaven City. [The 'power of gold' and 'power of wood' seem to be very magical. It's a pity that I don't know how to exploit them...]

[Turn ordinary metals into wonderful gold. Obliterate everything into nothingness. This would mean that I can turn normal metal into a Divine Weapon with the help of this power? Isn't this the only way I could obliterate everything into nothingness...?]

However, Jun Mo Xie scolded himself the moment he thought of this. [Could something like this even exist in this world? Won't that be tantamount to touching a normal item and turning it into gold? Isn't that something very unnatural? That's merely a divine magic technique from the legends.]

Pitiful Young Master Jun... he didn't even know that the skills he had mastered until this point were no less than a divine magic in their own merit. They were ultra-powerful techniques.

Being able to practice and cultivate to the top in a smooth manner wasn't something unprecedented in history. But, the extremely rapid speed of his cultivation would leave many men to break their skulls for failing to comprehend the strangeness of it...

Jun Mo Xie figured that it had been around two days since he had

disappeared. So, his Third Uncle must have been worried. Or perhaps, he wasn't. After all, his Third Uncle knew of his methods. But, the same couldn't be said for his three maternal uncles. So, he couldn't tarry for even a moment. He went straight to the Southern Heaven City, and ran straight into Dongfang Wen Jian thereafter. He was obviously admonished to great lengths, was then sent to Jun Wu Yi's tent with an armed escort.

The news of Jun Mo Xie's return obviously became the most important one. And, it was eventually passed onto Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi as well. Guan Qing Han was very relieved. In fact, it could also be said that she felt a little pleased. Dugu Xiao Yi had suddenly started to blush when she found out about his return. Her little heart had skipped a beat, and was unable to stabilize for a long while. No one could tell what that little girl was thinking...

Jun Mo Xie dealt with the indiscriminate admonitions by Jun Wu Yi. The Young Master Jun's skin was obviously thicker than the city's walls. So, he smiled through the entire lecture. He disappeared like smoke after it came to an end, and escaped to his own tent.

Jun Mo Xie sat up straight, and started to think about his newly acquired capability. Then, he took a blade that was hung in his tent, and decided to test if his new and miraculous magical power had any worth to it...

Jun Mo Xie exhaled deeply as he held the blade. After that, he half-closed his eyes, and started to move the "Power of Gold" within his body. It moved to his palms through his meridians, and then onto his fingers. Then, it was transferred into that cold and shining blade that he held in his hand.

A strange transformation for occurred in a blink of an eye.

A faint golden light started to flicker. After that, the entire blade was illuminated by a splendid and starry-sky-like reverie.



The bright light flashed for a moment and disappeared without a trace. And then, a green smoke smoldered for a while. Then, it disappeared as well. Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes, and couldn't help but be dumbstruck as he saw what he held in his hand.

[My God!]

The half-a-man sized broadsword in his hand had disappeared. And, it had instead been replaced by a tiny toothpick-sized one.

It perhaps couldn't be called a blade anymore. It was more like a needle. Moreover, it was like a needle, but it weighed ten times the weight of a normal one.

However, it was distinctly visible that this needle was in the shape of knife. And, that was precisely in accordance with what Jun Mo Xie had wanted it to be. Jun Mo Xie had wanted the shape of this broadsword to be altered into a 'very small' knife at the time he had initiated the 'Power of Gold'...

The only difference was that it had shrunk thousands of times in size.

And that was all!

Jun Mo Xie was between laughter and tears. He had started to believe the line, "turn ordinary iron into wonderful gold," to be true. However, the existence of such a method was in defiance of heaven's will. Moreover, it wasn't that a piece of iron that been turned into wonderful gold. Rather, this piece of iron had been compressed to its highest strength. There was another great advantage in addition to this. This piece of metal could take any shape he desired it to take.

Jun Mo Xie was puzzled. So, he took hold of another blade, and tried to use that miraculous magic again. However, he watched the transformation process with rapt attention this time. So, he saw everything happen very clearly this time.

[My original guess was actually right! It unexpectedly shrunk!]

He had seen the golden light flicker in the air. The light had then flashed brilliantly. And, it had disappeared after that. This was followed by a faint green smoke; this smoke had smelled like vomit. The blade had disappeared with the rising smoke, and had been replaced by a tiny toothpick sized "pocket knife."

Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly at this result. He would perhaps need a mountain of refined iron if he wanted to build a proper sword which possessed the same quality that these two tiny ones did.

Moreover, these two new blades were surely toothpick sized, but they weighed several times more. [Wouldn't a properly sized sword of this quality weight hundreds of pounds? It would be a Divine Weapon in more than just its name. But, who would be able to wield it?]

Jun Mo Xie's hands loosened, and the two toothpick-sized blades slipped through his fingers and fell down. He only heard a faint sound as an unbelievable event occurred in front of him. The willow wood table in front of him was pierced by the two tiny blades. In fact, they punched holes in it with the same ease a hot knife would pass through butter. He couldn't tell where they had gone at first. But, he then heard them run through, and pierce into the ground. Even the handle of the blades weren't visible above the ground anymore...

Jun Mo Xie was left dumbstruck by this...

# Chapter 376: I've Come to Cook!

---

"My God!" Jun Mo Xie's eyes had become round. He hastily reached for the handles of the two "tiny blades", but realized that the blade hadn't come to a stop yet. They were dug at least two feet inside the ground. Moreover, they were still penetrating further into the ground.

"This is really awesome!" Jun Mo Xie looked at the handles of the two "tiny blades". He had a look of admiration on his face.

Jun Mo Xie clearly understood knew that the two blades had fallen down in a 'freefall' state when he had loosened his grip on them. He hadn't put any force behind them at that time.

However, the blades had penetrated the five-inch wood in the same manner that a hot knife passes through butter. In fact, their movement was so effortless that it seemed as if they were piercing through the air.

[What's the meaning of this? What extent has the sharpness of these two blades reached?]

[These are divine weapons... weapons which all men dream of!]

[Wouldn't the fighting abilities of my Grandfather, Third Uncle, and other people be upgraded to an exaggerated degree if I use this method to forge blades for them? It is simply unbelievable that a piece of weaponry can increase fighting capability to such a degree...]

A normal person wouldn't be able to handle the weight. But, his grandfather was a Sky Xuan peak expert. His Third Uncle was also at Sky Xuan. So, they wouldn't need to expend much of their energy to lift a hundred-and-fifty kilos of weight. They would be unfamiliar with the weapons at first, but they would get used to them after ten days or so...

Such sharpness may even be effective against the extremely

tough skin of a top Xuan Beast King. In fact, even they wouldn't be able to compete against it. The outcome would've reversed if Lei Wu Bei had used these divine weapons instead of his treasured blade against the Snake King that day. Even that fight with Venerable Mei could've gone either way...

[If this dangerous weapon falls into the wrong hands...] Jun Mo Xie smiled an extremely evil smile. There was a flash in his eyes as he thought about a number of ways he could use to deal with his enemies. He obviously felt very happy at these thoughts...

[This is good! This is very good!]

[My throwing knives will become unstoppable in the true sense of the word from now on. Who in this world can contend against such a powerful and divine weapon?]

The answer to that was — nobody.

Someone could perhaps dodge it. But, no one could face it and live to tell the tale.

[I could kill God if I meet him! I could kill Buddha if I were to come across him!]

Jun Mo Xie laughed in a mischievous manner. He was very happy at this moment. The Young Master suddenly realized that his body felt rather powerless. In fact, he felt as powerless as he had when the Flame of Primal Chaos's after-effect had nearly left his body paralyzed. So, he started to absorb the aura around him, and the condition of his body started to recover.

[Ah, there are no free meals in this world. Forging even these two "tiny blades" has drawn such a massive amount of my strength...]

However, Jun Mo Xie hadn't realized that he had managed to use this ability twice in succession even though he had just received it. He had managed to gather enough power to carry out the process twice without any problems. This wasn't an easy task in itself...

This was very similar to the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's

Fortune. One needed to go step by step to make any progress. It was as delusional as believing that one could become as obese as Fatty by merely eating a lot of food... how could something like that happen so easily? Even an immortal with top-notch Xuan cultivation wouldn't be able to do it...

Jun Mo Xie's head and shoulders were covered in cold sweat. He moved his Xuan efficacy, and started to move around in small steps to exercise his body. Then, he bent from the waist. However, the speed of his Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune had increased. So, his strength restored at a relatively quicker pace...

"Brother Mo Xie, have you returned? Are you in there?" Dugu Xiao Yi's sweet voice came from the entrance. It was somewhat bashful and embarrassed. She then grabbed the entrance flap, and opened it. Dugu Xiao Yi then sneakily entered with a delicate bottle of wine in her hand.

[Don't tell me... has the "demon" drawn the bow for a game?]

Dugu Xiao Yi was somewhat guilty, and a bit annoyed. And, that's because... [He had been gone for a very long time. He returned in the morning. Why couldn't he have returned in the evening instead...?] This had left Dugu Xiao Yi very disappointed since she had been preparing to 'cook' with him...

She cocked her head and pondered for a while. Then, she decided to explore his attitude before she'd make her next move. [I won't 'cook' with him if he commits to me without it. But, if he makes excuses then... humph! Then, we'll 'cook' on the spot... no matter what he says. I'm already prepared for both the situations!]

Dugu Xiao Yi had also prepared for other contingencies along with the arrangement of this drugged wine. [Daddy always says that preparation leads to success in battle...]

Therefore, Dugu Xiao Yi had thought of every possible method, and did her best to slip away from Guan Qing Han. Then, she sneakily headed here...

"Ah, sister... Why are you here?" Jun Mo Xie waved weakly. His strength had resumed to some extent. But, he still seemed reluctant to move his hands and mouth. The Young Master Jun had been pushed to his limit. So, he was quickly cycling his Xuan efficacy to restore his strength at a rapid pace.

"Uh... I have to cook... No... You're asking me what I'm doing here... You had been gone for such a long time. Plus, you hadn't even told anyone about it. And then, you returned so sneakily! Don't you know how worried everyone was?!" Dugu Xiao Yi wasn't aware of it, but her manner of speaking carried the traces of a housewife's...

The little girl was anyway very nervous at this time. Moreover, she was shocked to see that Jun Mo Xie was in poor health. So, she rushed over in a fright, "What's happening? Why do you look so ill? Are you injured?"

Jun Mo Xie snorted and replied, "It's nothing. There's no need to make a fuss. I just want some water..." He recalled that he hadn't had a drop of water in the last two days. Moreover, he had been in the Hong Jun Pagoda while he had dealt with the Devil's Bite of the Flame of Primal Chaos. And, it couldn't even be estimated how much he had sweated during that time. So, it wasn't very surprising that he felt very unwell. In fact, he was rather lucky that he hadn't died of dehydration by now.

He was extremely excited after his breakthrough. However, he had considered the fact that he had been out for two days. Moreover, this area was unfamiliar to him. Plus, this territory had been gripped in the chaos of war. Therefore, it was only natural that his Third Uncle must've been worried. And so, he had rushed back to camp.

Jun Mo Xie was very curious about his new capabilities. So, he finished explaining everything to his Third Uncle as quickly as he could have. Then, he recklessly initiated that "turning ordinary iron into wonderful gold" twice in quick succession. And, that

consumed all the energy inside his body. Therefore, it wasn't surprising that he felt extremely tired at this time.

Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly. [It's not surprising that I feel so tired right now. I can't believe I made such a rudimentary mistake. I got carried away because everything was going in my favor. Such a careless attitude is intolerable.]

Jun Mo Xie had always been like this. He had seemed haughty on the outside, but he was very meticulous on the inside. This was especially true for his shortcomings. He would never gloss over them, and would be on the lookout for them the moment they occurred. And then, he would make sure that he would never repeat such a serious mistake. This had been one of the greatest strengths of the King of Assassins in his previous life.

Caution had become a basic instinct for him given he led a life of dangerous living... where one could die anytime.

Dugu Xiao Yi was burning with impatience. She turned around, and placed the wine bottle on the table that was in front of Jun Mo Xie. Then, she went to fetch water.

Jun Mo Xie saw the wine bottle, and wondered... [Is that little girl foolish...? A fabulous drink is already present here. So, why would she bring water?] He unscrewed the cork, and the fragrance assailed his nostrils. Jun Mo Xie was very thirsty. So, he didn't think much as he picked-up the bottle, and started drink the wine. In fact, he nearly looked skyward as he took big mouthfuls from the bottle. The bottle had obviously been inverted as a result...

Jun Mo Xie hadn't drunk many drinks from this world. Plus, the drinks in this world didn't have any other good points apart from the fact that they had excellent smell. How could the wine-makers hide the uncouth taste and smell of the wine if it weren't for the addition of those fragrances? The wine craft of this world was far behind when compared to his old one. But, Jun Mo Xie was thirsty and empty inside. Anyway, who would think so much inside a

military camp?

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie held nothing against it in that moment. And then, he had even smelt a hint of honey in the drink. And, that had made it smell better. However, he hadn't realized that Dugu Xiao Yi had added the extra honey to reduce the chances of Jun Mo Xie finding out that something was fishy instead of making it tastier...

It was a pity that the man who had been extremely cautious in both of his lives had fallen flat in broad daylight to the trick of a little girl...

Could this be considered the case of 'the wise man who calculates every scenario can also fail at times'?

Perhaps, nature can fool any man.

Jun Mo Xie drank the bottle clean. But, he felt thirstier instead. However, the Young Master Jun didn't see anything wrong with that. After all, wine wasn't used to quench thirst; it only added to the fire. The more one had it... the more they would thirst for it.

And, at that moment...

"Bang!"

Dugu Xiao Yi had just returned with a cup of water. But, she saw that Jun Mo Xie had drunk the wine clean from the bottle. He had finished the entirety of it, and had placed it back on the table. He had done so in the blink of an eye. She got frightened since she wasn't mentally prepared for it. Therefore, that cup of water fell from her hand with a "Bang!", and smashed against the ground. The quality of the cup obviously wasn't very great. So, it shattered into fragments as it hit the ground.

[I... I... I still haven't determined if we should cook, but, he has already drunk it! What's to be done now...? What do I do now? Should I cook or not?]

The little girl's bright eyes opened wide as she stared blankly at



Jun Mo Xie. She didn't know what to do. She didn't know how to proceed and "force herself upon him". She didn't know what to make of this situation. Therefore, the little girl's eyes went dark. She was completely clueless...

Jun Mo Xie had finished drinking the wine. His throat was still dry, but his strength had restored to a considerable extent. Well, at least his regular bodily functions didn't seem to be affected anymore. So, he was rather surprised when that little girl dropped the cup of water. But, he also knew that the Young Lady Dugu had a rash temper. So, he wasn't very shocked at that. He stood up, walked over to her, took the water bag from behind her, and merely drank it down. He drank until it was empty as well, and put it down with a content frame of mind. He then panted, and breathed out. His throat was very dry before. But, his body's condition had restored to a considerable extent in the blink of an eye after having drunk that water.

He then looked at Dugu Xiao Yi, who looked as if she had been hit by lightening. Her eyes were opened wide, her eyebrows had shot up high, and her rosy lips were slightly parted-open. She looked adorable, but also a bit ridiculous. Jun Mo Xie touched her head with his hand, and lightly stroked it as he asked, "Why are you looking at me like that, little girl? You let the water cup fall to the ground and shatter. That can happen sometimes. But, why do you look so frightened? Are you afraid that I will scold you for it?"

Dugu Xiao Yi blinked for a bit. And then, she came back to herself. The little girl refused to acknowledge Jun Mo Xie as she rushed towards the desk and picked up the bottle. She shook it with the entirety of her strength, and realized that the wine bottle seemed weightless. The little girl shook the bottle very hard, but no sounds of movements were issued from within.

It was evident that Jun Mo Xie had drunk it clean. Completely clean!

## Chapter 377: I Won't Play, Would You?

---

Dugu Xiao Yi wanted to cry but had no tears left. [What do I do? There was a lot of that stuff in it. That was a lot of it ah! How did he drink all of it so quickly...? I only wanted him to drink a little cup from it... I just wanted him to drink a little bit...]

Who wouldn't have thought about the occurrence of this error? An ordinary person tries to take every factor into account. But, Dugu Xiao Yi's mental state had gone to trash. So, she had put a massive amount of the drug into that bottle of wine. Who spikes a person's drink so heavily? Other people would've shaken their heads if they had seen this happen. Forget about others... Jun Mo Xie would've shaken his head to no end if he had known about this...

This had turned into a matter of life and death. However, the main question was... whose life and death? Dugu Xiao Yi's brain had gone completely blank at this time...

"What's wrong, little girl." Jun Mo Xie felt odd after he looked at Dugu Xiao Yi's strange expression. So, he asked her.

"No... Nothing... Why?" Dugu Xiao Yi was rattled. She sized-up Jun Mo Xie several times. But, nothing seemed different about Jun Mo Xie. She felt that there was something amiss. And, she wanted to assess the situation. Therefore, Dugu Xiao cautiously asked in a hopeful tone, "You... feel nothing?"

"What could I feel, ah? I'm... good. I just felt a bit parched a moment ago. But, I'm fine after having drunk all that," Jun Mo Xie felt a little mystified. He felt that he didn't understand something. [There shouldn't be a matter with the amount I've gulped down in one go. There's definitely something else going on.] So, he obviously felt that the little girl's unusual actions must've had some reasons to them.

"You're fine? You're really fine? I mean... you're not even feeling

a little hot? ...like you're being cooked or something...?" Dugu Xiao Yi relaxed to some extent, and asked in a scientist-like tone. The little girl had had some expectations in her heart. But, she couldn't have guessed that the-said development would make her feel like crying...

"Feel like I'm being cooked...? No..." Jun Mo Xie felt even stranger. [What's wrong with this girl today? She's talking in a very strange manner. I'm not something one can eat. So, why would I be cooked?] The Young Master Jun then extended his hand, and touched Dugu Xiao Yi's forehead. And, he determined that she didn't have a fever. So, he asked, "Are you unwell little girl? You're acting very weird today."

"That's good! That's very good! Not having that feeling is excellent!" Dugu Xiao Yi patted the pit of her stomach, and breathed a long sigh of relief after she saw Jun Mo Xie's reaction. She was looking forward to seeing Jun Mo Xie getting thoroughly 'cooked'. But, she was also anxious about inciting some mishap since he ingested a large quantity of that item. However, she became extremely relaxed after Jun Mo Xie reacted in a normal manner. She had barely relaxed when she suddenly recalled something, and a scowl appeared across her face as a result of this realization. So, the little girl cursed inwardly, "That's so despicable! That young soldier gave me a fake item!"

He obviously hadn't given her a fake item. The thing was that the little girl had never seen such things. So, she was unaware that such things didn't take effect immediate-after they had entered one's throat. Which drug in that world would work so quickly... except for the one used by the Emperors to bring about the death of an enemy?

The little girl obviously didn't realize the seriousness of that matter once she saw that the Young Master Jun didn't feel very different. Therefore, she left the entire topic after she had sighed for a while.

"Fake? What's fake...?" Jun Mo Xie sighed helplessly, and rubbed his temples as he considered her words. He had vaguely understood that there was an eighty-percent chance that the little girl was playing some scheme with him. The Young Master then felt his head ache as he thought about this, and said, "What's wrong with you today, little woman? Why are you saying stuff which others can't understand? Can you talk properly or not?"

Dugu Xiao Yi looked-on as Jun Mo Xie questioned her, but her heart was filled with the thought that she had been cheated. And, she got angrier as she gave more heed to that thought. Therefore, the more she pondered over it... the more she felt cheated. So, she suddenly shouted, "That's very despicable!" And then, she rushed out. Her posture made it rather evident that she had rushed out in powerful fit of rage. [That Skinny Monkey was dead the moment he gave me that medicine!]

Dugu Xiao Yi was acting on impulse. She had been looking forward to 'cooking' the Young Master Jun and fulfilling her desires thereafter. Speaking of the effect — the medicine would slowly start to show its effect after it had been ingested. Its effect wouldn't be fast in the beginning. But, it'll have a huge effect later on. It obviously wouldn't have made much of a difference in the beginning when one takes Jun Mo Xie's physique into consideration. But, it would start to flow through his blood vessels with the passage of time. And, it would spread throughout his body thereafter. Then, its effect would become increasingly fierce with the passage of time, and the effect would spread rapidly throughout his body. And, Jun Mo Xie would start to experience the effect once that time would be upon...

Jun Mo Xie's innate aura had good resistance against most drugs. So, Dugu Xiao Yi's terrifying medicine wouldn't have had much of an effect on Jun Mo Xie if he hadn't drunk the whole thing in one go due to extreme thirst. He would've at most become 'excited' for a moment under normal circumstances...

However, the situation was different in this case. Jun Mo Xie had been very thirsty at that time. So, he had drunk the whole thing in a go, and had finished the entire bottle in a second. And, his blood vessels had been filled with the medicine's essence as a result. Moreover, this drug was meant to increase a male's libido. It was unusual in its nature, but it couldn't be classified as a 'poison'. So, the aura inside the Hong Jun Pagoda was completely helpless against it.

The Young Master Jun seemed to have been 'cooked'...

"Who is too despicable? Tell me. I'll help you vent your anger." Jun Mo Xie reached out to stop Dugu Xiao Yi as he saw her leave. He found this amusing. His interest had been piqued by that girl as a result. [You haven't said why you want to leave...? You think you can leave like that?] Jun Mo Xie wanted to know what had made Dugu Xiao Yi abandon her plan.

"They are too hateful! I, I, I..." Dugu Xiao Yi's face had reddened since she couldn't control her rage anymore, "I had planned to cook something, but they didn't give me the real thing... they're big bullies! They figured that I wouldn't understand this matter. So, they cheated me! Did they genuinely believe that it would be fine to deceive this little girl?!"

Dugu Xiao Yi was eager for a fight. Her long and shapely eyebrows shot up as she spoke. Then, she instinctively felt that something was wrong. So, she immediately stopped speaking. Then, the little girl looked at Jun Mo Xie. She then blinked, and asked in surprise, "Huh? Why is your complexion so red, brother Mo Xie?"

Jun Mo Xie felt that something was wrong as Dugu Xiao Yi asked this. Moreover, his body had suddenly started to feel feverish. Then, he felt a tumultuous and raging fire burst forth inside his dantian, and his eyes started to turn red. The Young Master then felt a volcanic-eruption-like sensation in his chest. After that, he suddenly felt that an impulse had started to rise within his body...

[What's going on?]

Jun Mo Xie had always been an astute man. And, he had experienced two lifetimes. So, he had already understood what that thing was. He clenched his teeth, and lowered his head. He replayed everything in his mind, and realized what had come to happen. Then, the Young Master Jun reprimanded Dugu Xiao Yi from the bottom of his heart, [Girl! Oh, little girl! What you did isn't good! You shouldn't have done this to me! The purity that I've conducted myself over these two lifetimes has been destroyed by you!] He looked at Dugu Xiao Yi as he thought about purity. And, the more he thought about it... the more his blood vessels opened. And, he started to lose control. Jun Mo Xie felt as if he was suffering the pain of fighting against the heavens. And, his expression also got increasingly sinister...

"You... you... you... what's going on? You... don't scare me... I..." the little girl started becoming scared. And, she drew back with debilitating fear. Dugu Xiao Yi's unfathomable womanly intuition started giving her warnings of an impending crisis as she looked at Jun Mo Xie's sinister expressions. The little girl's courage to 'cook' fled her soul as she saw Jun Mo Xie getting 'cooked'. Dugu Xiao Yi thought about this strange coincidence, and realized something as she looked at him... [He's being cooked by the medicine I gave him. I want to go home!]

Jun Mo Xie's breathing became increasingly heavy. He tried his best to control his inherent male instinct. But, the more he tried to resist... the more enticing the attraction from that green-clothed Young Lady's fragrance became for him.

The attraction was extremely hard to resist!

He couldn't endure it.

Controlling himself was becoming extremely difficult...

"You put some medicine inside that wine bottle...?!" Jun Mo Xie stepped forward. His nostrils were flared, and he breathed out

warm air. It seemed like his nostrils were on fire.

"Yes, I wanted to cook rice with you! I had no other intention!" Dugu Xiao looked at him in a miserable manner. And, she stepped back as he advanced. The Young Lady looked frenetic and confused as she looked at Jun Mo Xie's sinister expression. In fact, she was frightened-enough to cry out.

"You wanted to cook rice with me? What does that mean?" Jun Mo Xie's mind was in chaos, but he still became startled for a subtle moment. However, he thought about it for a moment, and realized its meaning. [Of course... that's what 'cooking rice' means!] He couldn't help but smirk in anger. He couldn't prevent his heart from harboring further scruples. Then, the Young Master gnashed his teeth, and mocked her, "You wanted to 'cook rice' with me... so, you gave me that medicine? You thought you would just wave your hand, and I would be 'cooked'? Do you know what the true cost of that matter is...?"

"...I can see... that you still haven't been cooked. You... stay away from me!" Dugu Xiao Yi was trembling. In fact, her body had nearly cringed. She had already retracted her steps to the corner of the tent. So, there was no place left to retreat...

This made Dugu Xiao Yi feel very aggrieved.

[Why?]

[Why? He has obviously taken the medicine. So, why is he behaving like this with me? He's also come close to me... is it a good thing or not? I'm extremely afraid! I'm scared... I'm very scared! He looks so fierce...] Dugu Xiao Yi's body had frozen. She felt that matching her gaze with Jun Mo Xie's was giving her electric shocks. And, this was making her even more frightened. Dugu Xiao Yi couldn't bear it anymore. She was at her limit. And so, she finally cried out, "I'm sorry! Let me go! I shouldn't have messed with you! I don't want to mess with you!"

The little girl had genuinely come to regret her actions at this

time. It had turned out like a situation where she had started a car, but couldn't stop it no matter what she did. However, that wasn't all there was to this situation. Jun Mo Xie had been enduring a lot of pain at this time. In fact, his condition was that of an arrow which was off its bow — there was nothing the arrow could do to retrace its trajectory. And, this situation was nothing like what Dugu Xiao Yi had expected it to be. [Boo hoo! Why didn't anyone tell me about this?]

Soon, a real hand-to-hand fight had broken out inside that tent.

Then, suddenly...

"Jun Mo Xie! What are you doing?" a sharp voice echoed.

Guan Qing Han had suddenly arrived like a divine savior to rescue Dugu Xiao Yi at that crucial moment.

"Huh? Jun Mo Xie! You, you, you despicable man! You let Xiao Yi go right this instant!" Guan Qing Han shouted. Her entire face reddened as she rushed forward.



## Chapter 378: Must Have a Clear Conscience

---

The two people who were present inside the tent were almost... intimate. One look at the scene, and it was evident that Jun Mo Xie was using force since Dugu Xiao Yi wasn't willing. It was an 'embarrassing' scene to look at...

Dugu Xiao Yi and Guan Qing Han had been sitting together some time ago. Dugu Xiao Yi had sneakily taken out her musical pipe, and had asked if Guan Qing Han would take a closer look at it. The art of playing musical pipes had been one of the greatest interests of Guan Qing Han's life. And so, she had gleefully agreed, and had taken that so that she could take a look at it.

However, Guan Qing Han hadn't begun to inspect it when Dugu Xiao Yi suddenly clutched her stomach. And, she then said that she needed to leave. She had hurriedly fled the tent after that. Guan Qing Han obviously hadn't suspected her of anything at that time. In addition, Dugu Xiao Yi had reddened all over, and it had genuinely seemed that she was at her limit. Moreover, she had also made a strange sound. Therefore, Guan Qing Han let her go, and started to inspect the musical pipe instead. She looked through the slender hole, and tested the sound for a while. And then, she started to wait for the little girl to return.

However, she didn't return in the first minute... or the second one. There was no trace of the little girl in the third or fourth minute either. So, Guan Qing Han couldn't help but become anxious. She then finally went out to look for Dugu Xiao Yi, and asked the soldiers if they had seen the Young Lady Dugu. The soldiers merely pointed their fingers in the direction she had fled to...

She followed their directions, and asked along. And, she got to know that Dugu Xiao Yi had gone to Jun Mo Xie's tent. She found this rather amusing. But, she also felt another indescribable sensation in her heart...

[I had suggested that the two of us would go together to meet that guy. But, I never anticipated that Dugu Xiao Yi would use such a trick to ditch me, and would run away to his tent alone...]

Jun Mo Xie was already there. So, there would presumably be no danger to Dugu Xiao Yi. Therefore, Guan Qing Han had hesitated outside the entrance, and had decided to go back. However, she suddenly heard something strange at that moment — Dugu Xiao Yi had shouted for help...

[This can't be good...?] Guan Qing Han suddenly remembered that Jun Mo Xie had acted like a complete debauchee until a few months back. So, she became nervous as she thought... [Could it be?]

Dugu Xiao Yi's shouts became increasingly shrill, and had soon turned into weeping. Therefore, Guan Qing Han finally made up her mind, and rushed in.

She knew she had to rush in, but she had never expected to witness such an awkward scene inside the tent...

Guan Qing Han felt her heart break, and became extremely disheartened. In fact, she became teary-eyed as she spoke, "You've really disappointed me, Jun Mo Xie!"

However, it didn't matter how Guan Qing Han felt. Jun Mo Xie had lost his mind by now. He couldn't hear what she was saying. In fact, he wouldn't have cared or understood even if he had heard it in his present state of mind...

"Hurry up and save me sister Guan! Boo hoo..." Dugu Xiao Yi cried as she implored. Her tear-stained face was grief-stricken, and looked very pitiful.

Guan Qing Han became extremely angry, "You beast! You still haven't release her!" she spoke those words, and rushed forward. She then started to push Jun Mo Xie on his side. But, she couldn't move him despite having used the entirety of her strength.

Dugu Xiao Yi somehow managed to bend her legs from underneath Jun Mo Xie's body. And, she exerted with every ounce of force she had inside her body. And, she was somehow able to push away Jun Mo Xie to the side with Guan Qing Han's help. What was revealed thereafter... was that the translucent white skin of Dugu Xiao Yi's top half. In fact, it seemed as if her skin was blooming with flowers. However, the fact was that... Jun Mo Xie had wreaked havoc on Dugu Xiao Yi's tender skin, and had covered it with love bites...

Jun Mo Xie was confused and muddleheaded in this moment, and couldn't use any skills because of that. Otherwise, even ten Guan Qing Hans would've been of no help.

Dugu Xiao Yi was terrified. She felt ashamed. She used this opportunity to crawl away with difficulty. Then, she threw herself into Guan Qing Han's embrace, and burst into tears.

"What's going on?" Guan Qing Han grabbed the side of Jun Mo Xie's fallen robe, and covered Dugu Xiao Yi's body with it.

However, Dugu Xiao Yi hadn't even had the time to reply when Jun Mo Xie pounced at them from behind like an evil wolf.

The Young Lady Dugu cried out in fear. She was frightened out of her wits. She wrapped the cloak tighter, and tried to escape in a frantic manner. Dugu Xiao Yi had gotten very frightened...

Jun Mo Xie's condition was like that of an arrow which had been shot from a bow... but had lost its target. What could the arrow do? The arrow obviously didn't realize that its original target had been replaced with a different person. Therefore, he pounced like a tiger, and grabbed the new target.

Guan Qing Han's delicate body shuddered as she shouted sternly, "Jun Mo Xie! You've gone mad! You still think I..." she hadn't finished speaking when she suddenly saw Jun Mo Xie's reddened face, his red eyes, and his confused expression. It was very unlike the calm and collected appearance of the past. It was evident that

he had lost his sense of reason. She couldn't help but become shocked at realizing this...

[What's going on?!]

Guan Qing Han was a maiden herself. But, she was older than Dugu Xiao Yi. And, her knowledge was much more profound than the little girl's. She hadn't noticed this when she had stepped in. But, she had seen the anomaly now, and could guess what had happened to Jun Mo Xie.

[Aphrodisiac!]

[Moreover, it looks like a very fierce dose! Things wouldn't have turned out like this otherwise!]

Guan Qing Han wanted to draw her sword to scare Jun Mo Xie away. But, she hesitated for a moment. She was anyway a step too late. Jun Mo Xie pounced like a predator, and caught hold of her. Then, he puckered his mouth to kiss her...

Guan Qing Han was suspicious, embarrassed, and worried at that moment. She shoved and jostled with everything she had. But, how could her strength compare to that of a grown man like Jun Mo Xie? Moreover, she could obviously see the danger Jun Mo Xie was in. And, her heart couldn't endure the sight of that. So, she simply didn't know what she should do...

[Just look at Jun Mo Xie's current condition... He may not be able to give vent to his urges if I leave... Would he be able to bear the effect of such a strong drug? His mind might shatter, and he might even lose his life...]

Guan Qing Han had always carried herself in a frost-like cold manner. And, she hadn't regarded Jun Mo Xie in a good light either. But, he was her younger brother-in-law at the end of the day. And, he was also the last surviving member of the Jun Family's younger generation. Moreover, that image of him fiercely standing up to the world for the wrongs that had been done to her

was still deeply engraved in her mind.

The lonely heart of a twenty-year-old woman started to throb again. [This outstanding youngster has been so protective towards me! Will I just look-on as he goes through such torment? Also, he might suffer some grave consequences...]

[Jun Mo Xie had dared to stand against the entire world by setting himself against the Xue Hun Manor for my sake. He didn't shrink back even once! Shouldn't I repay the affection of his friendship?]

[The Jun Family didn't care that I didn't belong to their family. They still took action under those circumstances, and made every effort to protect me. So, how can I just look-on while the sole heir of the family suffers like this from an aphrodisiac?]

[Even my foster father — Jun Wu Yi — was humiliated in a hundred ways by the Xue Hun Manor these past few days in this Southern heaven City. He was even entrapped by them. And, all of that had happened because of me. He barely managed to escape with his life. But, he would've died in this battle if he wasn't lucky... and if someone hadn't secretly rendered aid.]

[All of that was for my sake!]

[And now... Jun Mo Xie has been poison to such a degree... can I really walk away from this...?]

[Jun Mo Xie has had a favorable impression of me ever since I've come to the Jun Family. And, he had tried to express his feelings with his debaucheries and mockeries. However, I've now come to realize that he had deliberately disguised himself like that. But, why did he do that? Why did he confess at that time?]

[Such kind of feelings are very rare to come by nowadays... can I remain indifferent to that?]

[Rare gems are easy to find. But, a paramour is hard to come by.]

[How could the so-called 'young talents' of the other aristocratic

families compare to Jun Mo Xie's heavenly genius...? And, I have freedom over my body now. But...]

The tide within Guan Qing Han was unexpectedly fluctuating in a crazed manner at this time.

It had to be said that Jun Mo Xie's acts of 'deep friendship' were a misunderstanding on Guan Qing Han's part. Because... this wasn't the original Jun Mo Xie inside that body! Jun Mo Xie's body was the same. But, the soul inside had been exchanged with another person's. Therefore, everything related to the previous Young Master Jun had no relation to the current Jun Mo Xie.

However, even the body appeared to be different at this time.

It couldn't be said that Jun Mo Xie didn't have a certain degree of affection towards Guan Qing Han. However, the cold-blooded killer's feelings were somewhat distant. In fact, they were nothing close to those of red-hot passion. Moreover, they were distant-enough to negate the very thought of a marriage.

The current Jun Mo Xie's nature was unruly and unrestrained. He was unscrupulous as well. But, he would never take initiative on his own to confess his feelings. In fact, he would stay unmarried if it weren't for the women chasing him... or his grandfather forcing marriage arrangements on him.

This was because the current Jun Mo Xie's way of thinking was that of his previous life's King of Assassins'. And, getting married was an inconceivable luxury for an assassin!

Guan Qing Han was lost in her own thoughts when she was alarmed by something. And then, she saw the fire of lust burning in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. But, a tender feeling arose within her...

[Oh, oh...]

[Let me use this life to repay the great kindness the Jun Family has bestowed upon me.] Guan Qing Han quietly closed her eyes, and beautiful tears flowed down her cheeks.

She had already abandoned all resistance...

The little girl had been scared out of her wits, and had escaped to her own tent like a wisp of smoke. She then quickly changed her clothes, and rested a bit since she was panic-stricken. Her entire upper body felt feverish, and awful... very awful...

[My God!] Dugu Xiao Yi patted her stomach since a sense of fear still lingered over her psyche. She recalled the fierce appearance on Jun Mo Xie's face. It had looked like he would've eaten her... like he would've swallowed her whole...

[Thank heavens for elder sister Qing Han...]

[Ah! Elder Sister Guan!]

Dugu Xiao Yi immediately stood up. Her beautiful eyes were opened to their limits. [How could I just escape and forget about elder sister Guan? Brother Mo Xie has been cooked since he took that medicine! What if he hurts elder sister Guan? How can I let Elder Sister suffer like that? And, that too because of my sins?]

Dugu Xiao Yi became restless, and rushed out from her tent like a tornado. Nothing mattered at that time. She used her skills, and madly rushed towards Commander Jun Wu Yi's tent.

Jun Wu Yi, Solitary Falcon, and the three Dongfang brothers were discussing the withdrawal of troops when they saw the tent flap open. Dugu Xiao Yi rushed in breathlessly, "Third Uncle Jun... ke ke... Brother Mo Xie has had an accident... in his tent... hurry up and go there... if you're late... it'll be bad for elder sister Guan..."

# Chapter 379: As Furious As the Claps of Thunder!

---

The little girl had hurried on her way, and had forgotten to breathe properly in her rush. She was gasping for breath, and had been barely coherent as she had spoken those words to express the urgency of the situation. Then, her tongue shot out of her open mouth, and she started to pant. She had lowered her hands to her small knees for support. Her delicate body was covered in sweat, and she was unable to stand up straight.

"What happened?" Jun Wu Yi turned pale with shock, and stood up. The other four also looked at Dugu Xiao Yi with an inquisitive expression.

"Hurry... Go..." Dugu Xiao Yi choked and coughed as she weakly waved her hand in worry.

"Go!" the five men flew out as that word was spoken, and disappeared.

Dugu Xiao Yi panted for a moment. Her hands and feet trembled as she walked after them. The little girl was very worried. [How would the two of them be right now? Nothing is going to happen, right?]

[Indeed hateful!]

[Those guys had clearly said that eating that item wouldn't cause a problem. But, why did it seem like that brother Mo Xie was unwell? It doesn't make any sense! What's the matter... My God...]

Jun Wu Yi had fallen behind the other experts. The Solitary Falcon was obviously the fastest of them, and had covered more distance than the rest in a blink of an eye.

Jun Wu Yi and the other three hurriedly arrived outside Jun Mo Xie's tent. But, they saw that the Solitary Falcon had an extremely strange expression on his face. Moreover, he stood there



motionless. In fact, the man didn't even motion to go in... or to go back. [What's going on here?]

Then, the Solitary Falcon quickly blocked the way of the four men after he saw them impatiently trying to rush inside, "Don't go in!"

"Why?" the four people asked at the same time. However, they didn't need Solitary Falcon's reply. The four men were grown-up adults. And, the sounds coming from the tent were far from faint. The four of them were experienced men, and there was no way they couldn't have understood the meaning of those sounds. A dark line suddenly creased across their faces...

Jun Wu Yi looked up at the sun in the sky. His face reddened as he sighed. [My nephew's behavior is extremely absurd...]

Commander Jun thought of something, and shouted in a loud voice, "Every man must listen to this order! You will move out, and go to the training ground for a drill practice! Any man who isn't able to do this before half-of-the-incense stick burns out will be shown no tolerance under martial law!"

The bugles started to blare loudly as soon as that order was given. The men had been scared out of their wits, and hurried to the large ground as a result. No one dared to delay.

The Solitary Falcon narrowed his eyes, and followed the Third Master Jun and the others to the trees in the distance. Then, he sat down and sighed, "The Commander Jun is very smart. That order should get the boy out of his tent. But, that youngster's 'extravagant' actions aren't that big a deal at his age..."

Dongfang Wen Qing and his brothers started to laugh. Everyone believed that Jun Mo Xie was only acting a bit 'lasciviously' in the middle of the day. And, that was a bit preposterous to think of it. But, they couldn't think of anything else with regard to this matter...

Jun Wu Yi's face reddened as he looked at his nephew's tent and frowned, "The sound of such a huge military activity must've been heard inside as well. Why is there no response from the tent? Military orders must be obeyed. He shouldn't..."

"He he... I would've also pretended that I hadn't heard the order if that were me in his place. Mo Xie is only a boy. Right, Elder Brother? Dongfang Wen Dao spoke those vulgar words, and moved his neck back to flash a mischievous smile.

"Perhaps you would act like that, but Mo Xie usually doesn't. I've always thought that there's been something strange about him. I've always felt that there has been a weird side to him. But, I've never been able to understand it properly..." Jun Wu Yi frowned and pondered in a serious manner...

Dugu Xiao Yi eventually arrived at this time...

She was astonished after she looked at the strange expressions on the faces of the five men who stood there. After that, the little girl looked around, and got extremely angry since she didn't see Guan Qing Han...

"Where's elder sister Guan?" Dugu Xiao Yi asked in nervousness and anger, "You haven't rescued her yet? Brother Mo Xie isn't his normal-self right now... An accident might occur!" Dugu Xiao Yi seemed anxious and agitated as she mumbled those words while pacing two-and-fro...

"Xiao Yi, did you say that the woman inside is Qing Han?" Jun Wu Yi's complexion underwent a drastic transformation in great alarm. This matter would turn into a big deal if the woman inside was indeed Guan Qing Han...

He looked at the distant tent, and snarled with hate, "That bastard! He doesn't know any shame, and does such despicable things! I... I will never forgive him!"

The "bastard" in-question obviously wasn't Guan Qing Han. It

was obviously the ‘violently attacking’ Jun Mo Xie.

However, it was too late now.

How could Guan Qing Han be able to live without shame if they rushed inside to stop it in the middle...? That wouldn’t be rescuing Guan Qing Han... it would be more along the lines of pressuring her to commit suicide. So, they could only deal with the aftermath, and hope that Guan Qing Han didn’t commit suicide...

Jun Wu Yi felt a searing headache for a moment.

He thought that it didn’t matter much if Jun Mo Xie acted absurd or made some trouble. Who hadn’t created trouble when they were young? But, he had suddenly realized the seriousness of this matter...

[Guan Qing Han has a very cold and aloof attitude. How could she be making love with Jun Mo Xie in broad daylight? Didn’t she say that the two of them were never that close...? And, Guan Qing Han would never do such a thing in broad daylight even if they had been married off!]

However, none of that mattered because this was happening right in front of him. But, how could he explain that? It had only one explanation — Guan Qing Han was being forced. This obviously led him to believe that the mistakes had been made by Jun Mo Xie alone...

And, Jun Wu Yi’s hair stood up in anger as a result!

[This is a huge scandal!]

[Guan Qing Han has been given freedom over her body, but this edict hasn’t been announced to the world yet. This issue would obviously be seen as a case of brother-in-law and sister-in-law having immoral intimate relations if this news gets out and spreads. How can that be good for us? The Jun Family has been well-reputed for several decades. Won’t that name be destroyed?]

"Jun Mo Xie, that little beast! I, I, I must kill him!" Jun Wu Yi’s

face was becoming purple since he was unable to contain his rage, "He's shamelessly ruining the family's name! He's very... retched! I have to kill him!"

The Third Master Jun looked like a ferocious beast that had been trapped in a cage. And, he kept pacing back and forth with a fierce and upset expression on his face.

[Breaking off Jun Mo Xie's legs would be too light a punishment if this goes out! It won't stop at breaking of his legs alone! This is lasciviousness to the extent of being the greatest taboo! Jun Mo Xie is violating a person. Moreover, the person he's doing this to... is his own elder sister-in-law!]

Jun Wu Yi could also imagine the extent to which his father would get enraged...

"Brother Wu Yi, the matter has already reached to such a point. It could already be too late. So, we could take Mo Xie and make him hide with our Dongfang Family if need be. And, we can deal with this matter once your father's anger calms down," Dongfang Wen Qing stroked his beard as he made this proposal. He seemed prepared to clean-up his nephew's mess.

He also understood Jun Zhan Tian's temperament very well. And, things didn't look very optimistic. But, one of the individuals involved in this matter was his own nephew. So, how could Dongfang Wen Qing allow him to suffer hardships? His younger sister had already suffered enough...

"Exactly! Which real man doesn't have three wives and four concubines? What is the big deal about playing with a woman? How can such a trivial matter incite such hostilities?"

Dongfang Wen Dao's words had nothing to do with his nephew's situation, "What are you fussing about? There's nothing strange about this! Others won't speak of this, but let me tell you something... Eldest Brother used to have more than twenty concubines at one time. What came of it...? There was still no

scramble over that...

The Third Dongfang Brother hadn't even finished speaking his 'well-intentioned' words for conciliation when his eldest brother gave him a murderous scowl, "You shameless thing! What crap are you talking?"

Dongfang Wen Qing's elegant face had deformed with anger. And, he looked at his third brother like he wanted to crush him. The Eldest Dongfang Brother clenched his fists so tight that they made cracking noises...

Dongfang Wen Dao pulled-back his neck, and retreated a few steps to hide behind Dongfang Wen Jian. He then continued somewhat fearlessly, "What did I say...? I just stated the facts... who doesn't know about the matters with you in those days...? Why get mad at something like that... Have I said something wrong...? You can't say that I'm speaking crap...

Everyone laughed and sneered.

"You evil creature!" Dongfang Wen Qing shouted and pounced.

"What's going on? What are you... don't tell me that brother Mo Xie?" Dugu Xiao Yi's big eyes blinked with innocence.

"Don't take that evil creature's name! It infuriates me!" Jun Wu Yi started to pant heavily in anger.

"Why are you cursing brother Mo Xie? Third Uncle, why are you cursing him like that when he has nothing to do with this matter... but, you're cursing him in such an unpleasant and vulgar manner," Dugu Xiao Yi seemed embarrassed. She had somehow summoned her courage. But then, she lowered her small head again.

"What?! He's not related to it?" The five experts were stunned once again.

"He's not related to it!" Dugu Xiao Yi's head was still lowered, but her voice was firm.

[Good Heavens! How can you say that he's not related to it? What else can you say is related to it?] The Dongfang brothers weren't very familiar with her, but they knew that the little girl had affections for their nephew. [We reckon that she's trying to help him. You may have feelings for him. And, you may wish to help him, but you can't invert right and wrong! That brat has done such an outrageous thing. And yet, this little girl still says he isn't related to it! Then, whose doing was this?]

The Great Master Solitary Falcon was even more stunned. [You guys deal with this matter between these children!]

The Third Master Jun was extremely angry. But, the enraged man still managed to speak-up in a very calm manner, "Do you know what's happening, Xiao Yi? What's the matter here?"

"Oh! It's true that brother Mo Xie didn't initiate this matter. Actually... it's me!" Dugu Xiao Yi's face was red. She fiddled with her clothes as her head remained lowered. She was so embarrassed that it seemed as if she would go into the ground.

"What's the matter? Little Xiao Yi, you explain it carefully. And, you can speak slowly... you needn't worry about anything," Jun Wu Yi's eyes flashed. [Is it possible that this matter might have some other reasons as its cause?] The Third Master Jun was calm, but how could a man of his generation understand that little girl's anxieties? She was anxious and wanted to speak up. But, she couldn't speak because about the matter because it wasn't something she could tell this man about very easily...

"I... I... That day when Third Uncle Jun had talked about pairing brother Mo Xie and elder sister Guan... I... I... I had become very angry!" Dugu Xiao Yi's words weren't very clear. But, she felt extremely wronged as she spoke of the 'anger' she had felt at that time. And, her anger suddenly bubbled up. And, her voice suddenly became very loud, "I was extremely angry! Very, very angry!" she said fiercely.

"Ah, I get that you were quite angry. Very, very angry... but, how is that related to this immediate matter?" Jun Wu Yi was a little confused. [This matter relates to Jun Mo Xie. So, why is this girl trying to take the blame? How are these two related?]

# Chapter 380: Courageous Little Girl

---

"I was the first one to believe in Brother Mo Xie. And, I'm obviously the first one to like Brother Mo Xie. He's mine! No one can take him from me!"

Dugu Xiao Yi declared that loudly in anger. In fact, she had forgotten what was happening at that time. And, she had also forgotten that she was the instigator of this huge matter...

"Uh... yes. He's yours, he's yours. But..." Jun Wu Yi sweated profusely as he nodded repeatedly, and tried to placate that visibly emotionally stirred-up little girl.

"Don't interrupt! Just listen to what I'm saying!" the emotionally stirred little girl screamed those orders. This stupefied Commander Jun, and shut him up.

"I had to take steps to prevent Brother Mo Xie from getting snatched away from me. So, I... I... I... I..." Dugu Xiao Yi came back to herself as she was speaking those words. And, she was somewhat embarrassed thereof. The little girl had just told them 'not to interrupt her', but she herself was unable to speak thereafter...

Jun Wu Yi, Solitary Falcon, and the three Dongfang brothers — the five experts looked blankly at the valiant little girl while they waited for her to continue. And, they could only think of one thing... [The young ones will surpass us in no time!]

"...So, I... So... I..." Dugu Xiao Yi glanced around as she stammered. She had been an angry and courageous little girl a moment ago. But, she was suddenly at a loss for words, and became very miserable. This sudden transformation made the eyebrows of the five experts to shoot up wildly. [This is strange...]

"...So, I thought that I should cook rice with Brother Mo Xie! Then, he can't leave me, right? And, no one will be able to snatch



him away from me!" the red-faced Dugu Xiao Yi had closed her eyes as she had shouted-out her heart's desires.

The five experts had seemingly been struck by thunder. And, they started to sweat like waterfalls. They eventually sat down with blurry visions. But, they couldn't take their eyes off this bold little girl who stood in front of them; they had been left dumbstruck.

"I summoned my family guards, and made them bring me the aphrodisiac. Then, I poured it into a wine bottle, and went to look for Brother Mo Xie. It so happened... that he was very thirsty at the time. So, he drank the bottle empty..."

Dugu Xiao Yi didn't feel shy or embarrassed as she continued to speak about the matter from the start. In fact, her demeanor was quite the 'jar-breaking' and imposing, "But, Brother Mo Xie wasn't cooked properly, and went mad instead. Then, he tried to force himself on me, and tried to do indecent things to me! I panicked and screamed for help. It was then that Elder Sister Guan arrived to save me. And, I escaped. My actions may have caused harm to Elder Sister Guan... Boo hoo..."

The five great experts were covered in sweat. And, they had been rendered speechless. In fact, it seemed as if they had been hit by lightning. They were flabbergasted, and could only stare at her blankly with their mouths opened-askew, and their eyes narrowed.

It had been a roller coaster ride to hear about this bizarre matter from the mouth of this little girl. They had never imagined that she could be the initiator of this matter. [What is going on? She wanted to 'cook'. So, she prepared for the other person to get 'cooked', but didn't 'cook' at the end of it. After that, a third but disinterested party ended up doing to the cooking...]

[She has indeed cooked an interesting dish ah!]

The five great experts acted at the same time, and put a hand to their forehead. Their faces had been riddled with dark lines, and

they had been rendered speechless...

They had known that the little girl was very bold. So, they had never thought of underestimating her. But, they had hugely underestimated her at the end of the day! [This little girl is already as tough as fierce woman!] A fierce woman...? It was nothing like that in reality...

To slip aphrodisiac into the drink of her object of affection in order to "cook rice" because she was jealous of a third party... this wasn't entirely incomprehensible. But then... she became scared, and escaped. This is unheard of!

It was like setting fire... and running away...

The 'Great' Dugu Xiao Yi's actions had no precedence in the entire Xuan Xuan Continent's history. In fact, this unsurpassed and magnificent feat was a huge piece of pioneering work...

It was genuinely amazing!

"I'm thoroughly shocked! Do you even understand what 'cooking rice' means, little girl?" Dongfang Wen Dao opened his mouth and asked. His eyes were opened as wide as bells, and his eyebrows had jumped off his face.

"Of course I know. 'Cooking rice' means that a man and a woman's hearts become one, and can't be separated." Dugu Xiao Yi pouted and stamped her foot. And, she then continued in a fierce tone, "And, no one can take him away after that!"

The five men felt like fainting in this moment.

"Your... ahm... ahm... medicine... what's it called? And, what quantity was it?" Jun Wu Yi swallowed his saliva with difficulty, and asked with a glimmer of hope.

"That medicine is called... it's called — Erect 150mg..." Dugu Xiao Yi tilted her head, and wondered. She felt somewhat annoyed, "It's a very eccentric and awkward-sounding name. It's hard to pronounce it properly. I don't think I'd be able to since my

memory doesn't serve me that well..."

"What? Erect 150mg..." The five men sighed and shook their heads.

This was one of the best special-quality drugs for men. It had an extremely intense 'boosting' effect on the libido. Moreover, it could ignite a man's sexual drive to its greatest extent. It could even make them lose their minds. And, they wouldn't stop unless they had burned out the drug's effect.

The scariest thing was that... this medicine was extremely potent! Only a little bit of it could be very effective.

Jun Wu Yi's complexion changed as he asked with trembling lips, "This... ahm ahm... Xiao Yi, forget about the useless name of the medicine... You tell Third Uncle... how much of it did you put in the wine bottle? How many fingernails?"

[How many fingernails...?] A strange expression emerged on the faces of the three Dongfang brothers and the Solitary Falcon. They hadn't expected the Great General would know the correct usage. So, this development was genuinely unexpected for them. However, they were very concerned about Jun Mo Xie at this time. Otherwise, they would've laughed...

"How many fingernails...? I don't know. That's difficult to guess. It was around one full packet." Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes had taken a round shape as she gestured with her hands to mimic a packet, "I put it all of it into the wine. I only wanted him to drink a cup's worth of it. But, Brother Mo Xie was very thirsty, and drank all of it in one go. He had finished the entire bottle before I could do anything! He drank it down extremely quickly!"

"You put all of it in the wine, and he drank the entire bottle?" the five men exclaimed in alarm, and looked at each other in dismay.

[Good Heavens! This matter has genuinely gone to shit...]

"You, you... you... little girl... how... you've caused trouble... you

genuinely caused a big trouble!" Jun Wu Yi had gone into a panic. [A person who'd consume so much of that drug would explode!] Then, he continued in a stern voice, "Your... your family guards are absurd! Why would a soldier march to war with aphrodisiac in his pockets? This is very shameful behavior! And, this is a violation of military discipline! Such a horrible conduct can't be forgiven!"

Jun Wu Yi was somewhat flustered. His expression was as fierce as someone who was about to peel the skin off a rabbit or a dog. But, he also looked a bit scared. [Such a large amount of Erect 150mg would obviously create a problem! If Mo Xie really... damn! Then what...?]

[Can we expect to get out of this... but, the possibility of that is very low. And, what will happen to the Jun Family? Moreover, Qing Han... she's considered the Jun Family's daughter-in-law, but she's still a maiden. How can she endure that? What's to be done if she's unable to endure it, and vanishes like a falling star?]

Dongfang Wen Jian also panicked and suggested, "How about we burst-in and force those two apart...? That poison will be forced-out if we transfer our efficacy. I wouldn't have thought of doing that unless the matter was so urgent..."

"You're a pig! An aphrodisiac is not a poison! Poison flows within blood vessel and meridians, but can be removed! An aphrodisiac penetrates the very being! It tempts the very basic instinct of a man! How will you force that out?" Jun Wu Yi had seemingly lost his mind as he showered down curses.

"And tell me again... what will we do about Qing Han if we burst-in? What will we do about Mo Xie? You pig head! Urgent matter... bullshit urgent!" Jun Wu Yi had been driven mad.

However, Dongfang Wen Jian knew that Jun Wu Yi hadn't meant it. He understood the Commander's frame of mind... because his own was the same.

Solitary Falcon thought for a bit, and tried to calm things down,

"Everyone calm down. There's no need to muddle the situation. We can't forget that Jun Mo Xie has inherited his master's amazing fighting and medical skills. And, those skills are very miraculous. So, we needn't worry since his master has taught him those amazing things. Mo Xie will be fine..."

Jun Mo Xie's temper slowly began to stabilize. However, his eyes were brimming with worry as he said, "I hope so."

The three Dongfang brothers became curious, and asked, "Mo Xie's master? Who is that? Since when did Mo Xie have a master?" The three of them had become extremely curious about the words "Mo Xie's master" since these words seemed to carry a miraculous effect. In fact, these words had even made the half-crazed Jun Wu Yi to calm down. [But, why?]

"You've already seen his master. He's a genuinely skilled man!" Solitary Falcon's face was brimming with admiration. And, the three brothers could tell that this sense of admiration came from the depths of his heart, and wasn't fake.

"We've seen him...? Who is he? How come such an expert didn't leave an impression on us?" The three Dongfang brothers were somewhat startled. It had to be mentioned that the Solitary Falcon was one of the Great Eight Masters. Moreover, he was also one of the most arrogant ones. But, he still harbored such respect for that person. Dongfang Wen Qing had never anticipated that someone in this world could've been worthy of this feat...

"Mo Xie's master is the mysterious black-clothed man who got rid of Li Jue Tian!" the Solitary Falcon replied with a tone of acclaim.

The other four became speechless. Even Jun Wu Yi hadn't known that the aforementioned extremely formidable and mysterious black-clothed expert was Jun Mo Xie's master!

[No wonder such a senior had showed-up to rescue the Jun Family!] The biggest question in the Third Master Jun's mind had finally been answered. [That mysterious black-clad expert is Mo

Xie's master!]

Dugu Xiao Yi was left somewhat puzzled as she saw everyone's reaction. So, she asked, "What's happening everyone... was the medicine bad?"

"Bad?" Jun Wu Yi looked at Dugu Xiao Yi weakly. She had a puzzled expression on her face. In fact, the adorable and silly little girl was still looking to Jun Wu Yi to guide her on the right path.

"The medicine wasn't good? That's not the point here, little girl. The crucial point is that your 'cooking rice' idea didn't go as planned..." Dongfang Wen Dao smiled and continued, "You wanted to cook the rice. You put the rice in the pot, and then you added water to it. After that, you put it to boil. However, you refused to have the rice when once it was ready. And, you left. Your rice is cooked, but it's being consumed by someone else. So, your laborious efforts are being taken advantage of by others..."

Dongfang Wen Dao sighed, "It's like you worked hard to find the right clothes, but someone else wore them to their marriage. Good luck ah..."

Everyone's hearts had settled down once they had learned about the identity of Jun Mo Xie's master. In fact, Dongfang Wen Dao was now in the mood to joke with the little girl...

"What? Who is eating it?" Dugu Xiao Yi became very infuriated, "I cooked that rice!"

## Chapter 381: A Trace of Guilt

---

"Your elder sister is having it..." the Solitary Falcon couldn't help but laugh. But, he felt that this little girl was very bold and adorable.

Dugu Xiao Yi was dumbfounded. It may be assumed that she gave the matter some thought before she asked, "Elder Sister Guan... that can't be... is cooking rice the same as undressing?"

The men were left to stagger. [This girl is too naïve! She still doesn't understand it!]

"Young Lady! How is undressing not the same as cooking rice?" Dongfang Wen Dao stared back. It seemed as if he wanted to impart some education to her. After all, she wanted to cook with his nephew. So, he couldn't help but worry since he was the youngster's uncle. [I'm only trying to enlighten you so that you can 'cook' with my nephew properly the next time.]

However, he hadn't said much when Dongfang Wen Qing kicked him into the distance and said, "Get lost! Such an old man talking like this... don't you know that those words are taboo? Don't corrupt a child!"

However, Dugu Xiao Yi still stood there dumbfounded. Two tears streamed down her cheeks after a while. She then sat down on the ground on her haunches, and burst out crying since she was broken-hearted, "Boo hoo...! I don't want to live... boo hoo... I spent so much effort! But, it's those two who are cooking rice! Boo hoo..."

Everyone burst into laughter once again...

The sun was setting in the west, but no one had come out of the tent yet. Moreover, the faint sounds were still emanating from it. The five people had slowly started becoming worried with the passage of time. Dugu Xiao Yi had spent her strength in crying, and

was sitting there with a blank expression on her face.

"Still not done...?" Solitary Falcon looked at the sun impatiently. "Those sounds are proof that the two of them are still at it. But, hasn't it been too long? Isn't this too much?"

Dongfang Wen Qing smiled in an awkward manner, but remained silent.

Dongfang Wen Jian didn't cross his limits either, and remained silent as well. No one said anything...

Dingfang Wen Dao smacked his lips. His face twitched as he muttered, "He's too fierce... even for someone who has eaten that medicine. I feel a bit inferior now..."

...

A long time had passed. The moon was high in the sky...

The sounds of activity inside the tent eventually came to a stop. Those five great experts stood outside like clay models, but remained at a distance. Their bodies were drenched in sweat, and their foreheads had a weary color...

[It's been so long... this Young Master Jun... he has persisted for too long even if he has taken that medicine... good stamina... ah!]

Jun Wu Yi looked anxious. He was anticipating that the two people would quickly come out of the tent. But, he didn't know how he would deal with them once they had made their way out. Moreover, he was afraid about what he would be able to do if those two couldn't bear the shame...

After all, this was unfortunate coincidence, and a freak accident. And, no one had been prepared for it. It was true that Guan Qing Han had suffered as an innocent victim. But, Jun Mo Xie hadn't been at fault either. He too had suffered as another victim. And, the fact that was most unbelievable was that... Dugu Xiao Yi had been the culprit behind the entire incident.



This had left everyone speechless...

Even the wise and far-sighted Jun Wu Yi couldn't help his head go around in circles at the thought of such a complicated matter.

[But... who can I blame for this? Can I blame Dugu Xiao Yi?]

[That's right. She is the main cause for this evil. So, she is the main culprit. But, she did this out of love for that brat. Moreover, she didn't realize or understand what she did. And, the little girl has also realized that she has run into a disaster, and her tears haven't stopped since then. Do I have the heart to scold her?]

[Moreover, Qing Han... that poor girl! She couldn't have done anything to resist Jun Mo Xie if he had forced her after having lost his mind. But, she didn't even call for help. What does that mean? She must have understood that something was wrong with Jun Mo Xie. In fact, she might've realized that an aphrodisiac was at play. So, she must've wanted to save Jun Mo Xie. That may be reason why she has endured everything in silence...]

[I don't know what those excessive toxins would've done to Mo Xie's body if it weren't for Qing Han's sacrifice. This means that Qing Han has sacrificed her virtue to save Mo Xie, and has done a huge act of kindness towards the entire Jun Family!]

[So, how should the Jun Family reciprocate? After all, her identity is very ambiguous. Perhaps the more appropriate question is... how do we treat her?]

[This issue is giving me a headache!]

[Qing Han's status must be announced to the entire world without delay!]

The Third Master Jun's mind was in chaos. It could be said that he was finding it very difficult to make a decision. But, how could the others share his thought process? For example, the Dongfang brothers would only be concerned with Jun Mo Xie. And, they wouldn't have a problem as long as their nephew was alright. Why

would they care about their nephew's wife? [We're a wealthy family. Can't we afford to raise another person? We can even afford to raise a hundred children without any problems!]

[Moreover, having a multi-talented daughter-in-law is always a good thing since it means better qualities in the future generations. This Guan girl is obviously very good for us in that respect. She is beautiful. She is courageous, and daring. Plus, she can also take responsibility for her actions. We know Mo Xie's paternal uncle well. Wouldn't he consider these points in a good light?]

It was hard to say how much had passed...

Jun Mo Xie finally woke up in a leisurely manner. He felt very comfortable. A pleasant aftertaste still lingered inside his head from the events of the past. He looked around with a distracted look on his face, and it took him a moment to sober-up.

The Young Master Jun swayed, and shook his head. Then, he slowly remembered what had happened, and couldn't help but groan. He sat up. But, he heard a pained and frail moan the moment he moved. And, this sound had come from beside him.

Jun Mo Xie turned to look, and couldn't help but become startled.

There was an elegant and divine beauty next to him. But, her pretty face seemed to be in profound pain. Her breathing was labored. He leaned over, and saw that her delicate skin didn't appear white anymore. It was green and purple... as a result of the havoc he had inflicted on her.

However, the Young Master Jun wouldn't have been so startled because of this fact alone. His astonishment was more strongly attributed to the fact that the said-woman was...

[Guan Qing Han!]

Jun Mo Xie got goosebumps due to the shock.

[What's going on?]

[I clearly remember drinking the wine which Dugu Xiao Yi had brought me. And then, I had realized that she had put aphrodisiac in it. After that, she had said I would cook rice with me. Then, I felt a burning desire, and I soon turned into a ravaging wolf. After that... after that... I don't remember what happened after that...]

[But, how come I find Guan Qing Han next to me now that I've woken up?]

[This is a strange mystery!]

However, Jun Mo Xie then saw the bruises on Guan Qing Han's body, her pained expression, and her faint breathing. And, he couldn't help as the strand of a strange feeling emerged from his heart.

[The little girl had given me a very powerful aphrodisiac. Even my special physique couldn't resist it, and I had lost my mind. Heavens know how much pain Guan Qing Han was forced to endure!] He looked up to the sky to figure the time, and was left shocked once again.

[It's this late at night?!]

[I remember drinking wine from that bottle. But, that had happened in the morning. So, did I torment Guan Qing Han the entire day? How could her delicate and soft body endure so much of it...?!]

"I'm genuinely wretched!" Jun Mo Xie let out a long sighed. His mind was in chaos. Jun Mo Xie wouldn't have felt this way if he had found Dugu Xiao Yi there. After all, it was her medicine that had done this. And, she had also talked about "cooking rice". So, that would've been natural and logical. But, it was Guan Qing Han instead... Jun Mo Xie felt extremely guilty...

He wouldn't have felt any remorse if he had killed someone... or if he had committed arson.

But, this was a woman's innocence!

Moreover, it had to be said that Guan Qing Han was completely innocent.

Jun Mo Xie hurriedly got up, and started to look for his clothes in confusion. He found them under his and her bodies. A few scraps of green and white clothing were also present there. And, there were also a few blotches of bloodstains on them...

Jun Mo Xie was vexed. And, he hammered his head with his fist. The light green clothes belonged to the little girl. But, where was Dugu Xiao Yi?

Jun Mo Xie tried hard to recall everything, but he could only remember bits and pieces. However, this situation was enough to allow him to guess that Guan Qing Han must've arrived to save Dugu Xiao Yi. However, he had lost his mind under his urges, and must've held Guan Qing Han there by force...

Jun Mo Xie sighed and walked over to the table. He then picked up the water bag, and drank some water from it. His footsteps felt light. In fact, he felt like he was floating. But, he still needed support for his tired body. Then, the Young Master Jun carefully picked up Guan Qing Han, and gently put her down on the bed.

His body had undergone a great change, and his physique was unusually strong as well. Moreover, his physical ability to withstand powerful toxins was also quite strong. Any other individual would've died due to excess release of the aphrodisiac... even before the drug had managed to reach their belly. The man would've at least been gravely injured if not dead. And, the possibility of permanent impotence couldn't be discarded either...

Jun Mo Xie looked at the painful scars on Guan Qing Han's body... even her lips had been bitten, and left behind in a bloody and injured state. He felt extreme tenderness as he looked at her. The Young Master Jun hadn't felt this way in either of his lives. It would've been okay if Guan Qing Han had merely saved Dugu Xiao Yi and left. But, she didn't leave. [She must've seen my condition.

And, she must've figured out that I was affected by a heavy toxin. So, she must've figured that the consequences would've been dire if I didn't give vent to them. And so, she must've sacrificed herself...]

How could Guan Qng Han not have anticipated the things she would have to bear... especially given her sensitive identity as a woman?! It had to be understood that this world's society deemed a woman's chastity to be more important than her life. And, losing it in such a manner was worse than dead to a woman...

And, Jun Mo Xie felt guilty because he had wanted to take it.

He had felt so much guilt for the first time in either of his lives. In fact, the guilt pierced the very bottom of his heart.

For the first time... he felt as if he owed someone...!

Jun Mo Xie looked at the staunch woman who had nearly died while saving his life. But, he couldn't understand what he felt in his heart. He felt pained. This feeling was complicated and painful. And, it was something he couldn't put into words. This was the first time that he had developed such a large soft-spot for a woman in his heart.

Jun Mo Xie gently covered Guan Qing Han with a quilt. Then, he took the water bag, and softly moved it to her lips in order to make her drink the water. But, she had been devastated, and had lost her consciousness long back. So, the water from the bag refused to go down her throat since she was unable to take it in.

Jun Mo Xie hesitated a bit. Then, he finally made a firm decision. He faced up, and took a mouthful of water in his mouth. Then, he looked down, and lowered his lips to hers. He then transferred one gulp of water... then another... then another...

He had transferred a lot of it before he finally felt her heartbeat stabilize. He stopped after that happened, and gently held her hand. And then, he started to transfer his extremely exquisite and

pure innate aura into her body.

Guan Qing Han's breathing eventually stabilized to a normal level after a long time passed. Even a bit of color had been restored to her face. She soon slipped into deep slumber. Jun Mo Xie stopped transferring his aura once he felt reassured. He then saw Guan Qing Han slender face. Her face was usually cold and aloof, but it appeared like a thing of unmatched beauty at this time. Suddenly, a trace of tenderness welled-up in his heart.

Tender feelings!

This was a new and different feeling for Jun Mo Xie!

## Chapter 382: The Responsibility and Farce

---

Jun Mo Xie had never had time for genuine emotions in his previous life since he had been a hit-man. So, he had never experienced romance. He would merely spend silver and gold to buy a good time if he wanted to satisfy his physiological needs.

And, that was because he couldn't afford to love...

He couldn't afford it despite being the King of Assassins.

One's heart is bound to fetter if one falls in love. And, having a family can be of grave disadvantage against any opponent since the enemy can easily make the said-family a target. Jun Mo Xie had been assassin. So, it was hard to tell how many families he had seen fall to tragedies by the hands of assassins...

He wasn't afraid that his family would harm him. Rather, he was afraid that he would cause harm to his family!

The pain of losing one's loved ones... whether oneself or close relatives... is extremely painful torment.

Therefore, he didn't dare to do it. He genuinely couldn't dare to do it.

He had run into many beautiful women ever since he had come to this world. Guan Qing Han, Dugu Xiao Yi, Princess Ling Meng, or even that Silver Blizzard City's Princess Han Yan Meng — each one of these women were one amongst many. And, it was very rare to find such peerless beauties. They may have been cold and aloof, lovable and cute, graceful, or even very intelligent... but, each one would be the considered the finest woman around...

Jun Mo Xie admired their beauty. In fact, he had a very favorable impression of them. But, he had always ensured that he never crossed the line with them. He was fully aware that Dugu Xiao Yi liked him to the bone. But, Jun Mo Xie still wavered, and found it difficult to decide...

It wasn't that he was 'wavering' when one comes to think of it... it was more like he was considering different aspects...

He had a special feeling for Guan Qing Han in his heart. But, Jun Mo Xie had never revealed it.

This was because Jun Mo Xie hadn't yet realized that he could start a family now... Perhaps he wasn't prepared for it in his heart.

However, he would never have thought that he would lose his mind due to some unfortunate circumstances and freak accidents... And, he would then forcefully snatch-away Guan Qing Han's virtue. And thus making her his first woman!

...

Jun Mo Xie wouldn't pay much attention to a woman who was very pretty... or even visually captivating. He may have enjoyed himself by means of flirtation, but he would forget her once he had turned his head away. But, he could never do the same to Guan Qing Han. Jun Mo Xie had opened his eyes, and had seen her besides him. He had then tried to assess the cause-and-effect of that incident. And, his heart had filled to the brim with an acute feeling of responsibility and tenderness once he had realized the matter...

[Responsibility! Responsibility towards a woman!]

Jun Mo Xie clearly understood that this feeling wasn't something he was going to reject... even if he couldn't understand it properly. In fact, this emotion felt particularly warm on the contrary.

He was unaware of Guan Qing Han's opinion on the subject. But, Jun Mo Xie had already decided that this woman would be 'his woman' from this day onwards! The first woman the Evil Monarch had accepted!

Jun Mo Xie gently caressed the soft and long hair that covered the pillow her head rested upon. And, he felt a touch of tranquility inside his heart. [I've finally found a companion in this world.



And, it feels like I don't have to worry about getting separated from her...]

[This is a very wonderful feeling.]

[These fetters... these feeling of tenderness... aren't as awful as I thought they would be.] The corners of Jun Mo Xie's mouth drew back into a smile as he looked at Guan Qing Han's face. He then drooped down her face, and gently snuggled her forehead as he said softly, "I'm sorry... and thank you."

After that, he got up and decided to leave. He went out without saying anything. His body's innate quality was genuinely amazing. He had been in an extremely fatigued state a while ago. But, things had improved very significantly in a short while. He had recuperated to a considerable extent, and his aura had also been reinstated. His spirit sense had detected five or six people outside. And, he could tell that they were standing there with a foolish expression on their faces. Jun Mo Xie knew who they were... and why they were there...

[The sounds of activity in my tent mustn't have been faint. Moreover, it had lasted for a very long period of time...]

[Therefore, it would've been very strange if the Third Uncle and the others hadn't taken any measures.] Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly. He had already guessed the dangers he would face once he'd leave his tent...

[After all, the fact that Third Uncle had freed Guan Qing Han from her matrimonial ties to the Jun Family hasn't been made known to the world. So, everyone must've thought that Guan Qing Han was still my sister-in-law. So, my actions tantamount to forcing myself on my sister-in-law...]

However, Jun Mo Xie didn't wish to escape from this situation. In fact, he wouldn't escape. If he had done the deed... then, he had done it! What was the worst that could happen? A real man would admit his fault. And, how could he not support his woman's

happiness? How could he be called a 'man' if he didn't?

[I will face it. It may be a raging storm, but I will face it! In fact, only I can face it!]

Guan Qing Han's eyelids softly blinked at first. Then, they slowly opened as Jun Mo Xie walked out. Two lines of tears flowed from the corner of her eyes. However, her face had a faintly satisfied smile on it...

[Is this what having a 'family' feels like?]

[Is this what having a 'husband' feels like...?]

[This feeling... is amazing. And, it's something I don't wish to let go of.]

She had suffered a lot. And, she had lost face. But, she didn't have any regret in her heart. She hadn't been able to stop herself once she had guessed Jun Mo Xie's circumstances. It could be said that she had a choice in this matter at first. And, she could've left in the beginning if she had wanted to. Therefore, it could be said that she had voluntarily opted for this...

Then, Jun Mo Xie had been very gentle and considerate a moment ago since he thought that she hadn't woken up yet. And, that had made her feel happy... very happy. And, that's because he had done that whilst believing that she hadn't woken-up yet. This indicated that those gentle feelings had genuinely emerged from his heart. That was tenderness from a real man. And, this had raised huge waves of chaos in Guan Qing Han's heart.

This was a feeling of being taken care of by someone.

[This felt genuinely nice and warm... so warm... I think I'll cry...]

Tears streamed down Guan Qing Han's face as she smiled. Her face resembled a rosy flower that had been moistened with the early-morning dew. Her smiling face was like a beautiful blossom. It was a very touching moment. But then, she recalled her embarrassing identity, and suddenly became sad...

[What should I do? This is... a sin...]

Jun Mo Xie was covered in cold sweat as he walked out.

This cold sweat hadn't arisen from the physical exercise he had done with Guan Qing Han. Jun Mo Xie admittedly felt uncomfortable on a physical level, but he was more worried about Guan Qing Han's suffering. [I have a robust physique, and that wretched medicine had a huge effect on me. I had lost consciousness due to that drug, and those movements had continued for the entire day. How could Guan Qing Han endure all that?]

[I don't even know how berserk I had gone!]

He had later noticed that Guan Qing Han had nearly died. So, it was rather fortunate that he hadn't continued any longer. In fact, Guan Qing Han's fragrant and delicate body would've been vanquished if he had continued for even a quarter of a day more...

[That was a close call!]

[It was quite risky!]

[Dugu Xiao Yi's medicine was indeed fierce, but it fortunately wasn't too excessive. Moreover, Guan Qing Han's body isn't too feeble either. Her physique has always been good since she has been trained to fight since early childhood. So, her physique is much better than normal women. And, that's why she was able to endure that frantic torment. Otherwise, the situation could have taken a turn for the worst...]

However, Jun Mo Xie was completely unaware that the drug which the little girl had given him wasn't too excessive — it was far beyond the realms of excessive! Dugu Xiao Yi had feared that her rice won't be properly 'cooked'. Therefore, she had gone all-out when she had added the medicine to the wine, and she had thus emptied the entire packet.

Jun Mo Xie had a special innate physique, and Hong Jun

Pagoda's aura had also nourished his corporeal body. These factors had neutralized a part of the medicine's effect. Otherwise, it was quite possible that he would've been engaged with Guan Qing Han still...

The Young Master Jun smiled bitterly as he went out. His body had recovered to some extent, but it still felt empty under his feet. In fact, he felt like he was walking on cotton-like mist. He could feel that his feet were still weak as he walked...

[Damn! This is so exhausting! I was feeling so good a moment ago...]

Jun Mo Xie hadn't realized that he had been working non-stop for the past ten hours. And, the fact that he was able to stand and walk after that intense high-rate and continuous exercise... was a huge miracle in-itself.

This may be hard to imagine for some. But, the said-individual may try doing push-ups for ten hours without a break. It could be guaranteed that the said-individual wouldn't even be able to get up after that...

Jun Wu Yi and the others appeared to be gloomy... and at a loss. Then, they looked at Jun Mo Xie as he staggered out owing to the weakness he felt in his legs. Consequently, they didn't know whether to laugh or cry, and their expressions became strange. The little girl was seated on the ground with a blank expression on her face. And, she started to tremble when she saw Jun Mo Xie. She then burst out crying with sorrow and regret...

Jun Mo Xie was startled at this. [You gave me that medicine, and started the fire. Then, you ran away. And now you're crying? You are the one to feel wronged here...?]

He was unaware that Dugu Xiao Yi felt as if she had 'come-off worse while trying to gain an advantage'. She had tried to do a skillful maneuver, but had been clumsy and had dropped the stone on her own foot instead. She was scared because of the reversal of

fortunes. And thus, her heart was full of complex feelings she couldn't endure...

She had originally planned to 'cook rice', and monopolize him. Consequently, the rice had been cooked thoroughly. In fact, it was boiling. But, she didn't like it because it was scalding hot. Therefore, she didn't eat it, and was unable to take advantage of her plan... how could she not be depressed?

And then, she saw Jun Mo Xie emerge from the tent, and recalled that Guan Qing Han had been taking "advantage of her plan" this entire time. This made her feel wronged and angry. In fact, she wanted to say something, but was unable to. She wanted to shout at first, but she started to cry instead...

Jun Mo Xie had barely moved out of the tent when he saw the Solitary Falcon give him a 'thumbs up'. And then, his three Dongfang uncles gave him a very strange stare that reeked of innuendos... which were very meaningful indeed...

However, Jun Wu Yi didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he saw his nephew come out. He looked at Jun Mo Xie through the dark circles that surrounded his eyes, and asked, "You've come out? How are you? And, how is Qing Han?"

The Third Master Jun wasn't worried about his nephew in reality. The Young Master Jun looked weak and unstable. In fact, his face even seemed a bit lean. But, he was still safe. So, Jun Wu Yi was actually worried about his adopted daughter — Guan Qing Han. The Third Master Jun had figured that Qing Han would've wanted to help Jun Mo Xie since was suffering from that unbearable toxin, and may have decided to staunchly endure him. However, it would a horrifying scenario if she became depressed over losing her virtue, and decided to end her life because of it...

"Uh... I... am fine... my legs are a bit sore... uh... and, sister-in-law... uh... Qing Han is still sleeping... she's also fine..." Jun Mo Xie scratched his head. He felt extremely embarrassed as he answered.

The Young Master Jun had called Qing Han 'sister-in-law' out of habit. But, he had immediately realized that she wasn't his 'sister-in-law' anymore since he had decided to acknowledge her as his 'woman'. [How can I still call her 'sister-in-law'? That felt very strange...]

Jun Mo Xie wasn't met with a scolding the moment he came out. And, this was rather strange and rare of his uncle's nature. He had expected his uncle to hurl abuses at him... In fact, he wouldn't have been very surprised if his uncle had broken his legs. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie couldn't grasp the reason behind his uncle's current reactions...

[Could Third Uncle be confused because of his anger?]

"Even the feet the mightiest of men would've become weak after such a long time..." The Solitary Falcon rolled his eyes, "But, this brat can still walk. His endurance is amazing."

"Great, my nephew! Simply amazing! Ten hours! Ten full hours! This Third Uncle of yours admires your lower back's strength, and prostrates himself! It's genuinely exceptional!"

Dongfang Wen Dao grinned as he patted Jun Mo Xie's shoulder. He then smiled while his eyebrows shot up, "You have proven yourself to be the son of the White Commander! You will have many children in the future. The future of the Jun Family is indeed bright and glorious! Your uncle has high hopes from you!"

Jun Mo Xie was feeling very weak at the moment. So, he was nearly slapped to the ground by his uncle's hand. And then, his face became dark when he heard those words.

[What? What are you saying Uncle...? How is today's matter related to being the son of the White Commander?]

Dongfang Wen Qing obviously got agitated at this remark, and spoke, "Third, you will be disciplined after we return! You're his uncle! How can you say such things?! Do you have no shame? You

are a very filthy creature!"

"Brother Mo Xie..." Dugu Xiao Yi rushed over, and hugged him tightly as she continued to cry, "I'm sorry... I didn't know... I, I, I shouldn't have left..." Dugu Xiao Yi was feeling extremely sad. [I prepared the rice, but someone else ate it...]

However, the Little Girl was unaware that the dose she had given Jun Mo Xie was far too strong for her own good. Guan Qing Han's body was stronger than her own. But, even Guan Qing Han had barely been able to endure the medicine's effect. So, it could be reckoned that a tragedy would've struck if Dugu Xiao Yi had replaced Guan Qing Han...

And, it would've been a great tragedy at that! In fact, it could've changed a lot of things... One could try to imagine if Grandfather Dugu were to find out that his precious granddaughter had survived the battle... but had later died... in bed... The consequences would've been unimaginable!

Jun Mo Xie's body felt very weak at this time. Therefore, he hadn't been able to dodge her. Consequently, he had first felt the soft body of a maiden in his embrace. And then, he saw Dugu Xiao Yi's tears fall like raindrops. In fact, she had cried herself breathless. Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel his heart softening...

"Sigh... I have already learnt the cause and effect of this incident. And, I'm aware that you didn't do this on your own free will... So, first of all..." Jun Wu Yi moved his lips for a long time, but couldn't add anything to it. He eventually waved his sleeves and spoke, "Never mind. I will write a letter and inform your grandfather of the matter. And, I will also put my suggestions in that letter. However, your grandfather will decide on how you should be dealt with in the light of this incident..."

He finished and turned around to walk away. He walked a few steps, and suddenly turned his neck around. After that, he gnashed his teeth and spoke, "You little beast... You better behave in the

days to follow! Your Daddy will break your legs if there's even one trivial incident! Do you hear your Daddy clearly?"

The Third Master Jun had actually referred to himself as "Daddy", and had rained down a mouthful of curses. The severity of his anger was rather evident from his words... especially in those last words. Moreover, the tone of his voice had been extremely strict. After that, his face turned ashen as he walked away.

Jun Mo Xie repeatedly promised in reply. And, his embarrassment was visible on his face...

[Ah! So, Dugu Xiao Yi has already confessed everything. No wonder I didn't get any scolding. But, this is extremely absurd...]

There was a whooshing sound besides him as Solitary Falcon and his three Dongfang uncles disappeared into the shadows. However, they parted with a few words — 'Recuperate properly. Don't lose your kidney.'

"Brother Mo Xie..." Dugu Xiao Yi was still hugging him tightly. She looked up miserably and asked, "You... you're not mad at me, right?"

[Mad?]

He was mad when it comes to it. In fact, he was very mad. He had never been so miserable in either of his lives since he had never fallen for an amateur's trick like this one. Moreover, he had fallen for a trick that had been planned by someone like that little girl... this was extremely humiliating for him!

However, he couldn't deny that he was somewhat delighted in the secrecy of his heart.

[I'm very popular! This little girl even went to the lengths of drugging me to get me...?]

[Besides, I would've never done that with Guan Qing Han if it weren't for this...]



[Wouldn't this be considered a lucky stroke? Didn't I end up profiting from a disaster?]

Guan Qing Han would turn twenty-one years old that year. That would make her four-and-a-half years older than Jun Mo Xie. And, Jun Wu Yi had already annulled her marriage to their house. So, the two would have to worry about her marriage now. After all, a twenty-one year old unmarried woman was considered quite old for a marriage in this era. So, how could he not be anxious?

In any case, Jun Mo Xie felt that the opportunity to nominate himself for marrying her didn't exist. This was because she had once been his sister-in-law. Her marriage may have been annulled, but no one could deny the fact that it had once happened. Therefore, their union by marriage was impossible to happen given his grandfather's antiquated opinion, and that of the public around the world...

The society would attack and break such a scandalous relationship up. And, what would they say if they got to know such a couple existed? "That brother and sister-in-law were having an affair this entire time. They're so indecent!" and so on...

He had no choice but to think about such matters. Jun Mo Xie obviously didn't care about such things. But, would the two great families not care about this? Would Guan Qing Han not care about this?

Therefore, it could be said that those two individuals had no hope left. It was a case of *fait accompli* at this time. However, they didn't know how many difficulties they would have to face.

Guan Qing Han had been subjected to this because of the curious coincidence Dugu Xiao Yi's actions had evolved into. How could this woman run away from it?

[We shouldn't think of ways to evade this matter. Instead, we should consider methods to get through it... one aspect is positive, while the other is negative. There is a different of heaven and

earth between these two aspects. They can't be compared on any level.]

This event has been an unfortunate accident, but it had reduced the future variables very considerably.

[Fu\*k that! I will continue to do what I want to! Who will dare to gossip like that? Who can control who or what I wish to love? Other people's views and society's opinions are nothing in my eyes!]

Something odd had come to happen...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie was a bit depressed, but he also felt a little invigorated. In fact, he didn't feel very angry either. Besides, Dugu Xiao Yi had only intended to strengthen her hold on him by the means of this plan. She didn't want someone to snatch him away from her. She was young and ignorant. Sometimes kind-hearted intentions can develop into bad things... and, that was acceptable as long as nothing overly harmful came of it.

Jun Mo Xie was resigned to not regard the little girl angrily. He didn't wish to scold or hit her either. But, he wasn't going to let her off very easily either. Ignorance isn't a sin. But, it can become a sin if it results in grave consequences. What would he do if he didn't teach her a lesson and she decided to act willfully in the future as well?

It was important to understand that this incident had packed-off two people to hell...

"Not mad...?! You think I won't be mad after what you've done?" Jun Mo Xie thought for a while, and replied slowly.

"But, I... boo hoo... ummm... I made a mistake..." Dugu Xiao Yi sobbed and wiped her tears as she continued to cry out, "I should've eaten my... boo hoo..."

"I'm very disappointed with this matter!" Jun Mo Xie snorted and continued coldly, "I don't wish for something like this to happen

again!"

"Yes... Yes... I won't dare to... I really won't dare to... I will change..." Dugu Xiao Yi nodded like pounded garlic. It was like she had been relieved of a huge burden. But, it also felt that her heart was somewhat sore from the pain. The little girl had seemingly grown up a lot post this incident...

"Uh... I'll go back and learn about this carefully... by asking my mother... I'm very sorry!" The little girl started rubbing the lapel of her dress.

Jun Mo Xie staggered, and nearly fell down. It had suddenly gotten rather hard to breathe. In fact, things had almost reached the point of suffocation for him. [You want to learn about this thing by asking your mother?]

"Since you're not mad about... the cooked rice you ate with sister Guan... do you want to have some with me also?" the little girl's eyes opened round and wide as she persevered and asked.

"Uh... we'll discuss this issue later..." Jun Mo Xie's forehead was riddled with drops of sweat.

"I don't care! You and I are going to cook properly!" The little girl pouted, "Elder Sister Guan ate what I had prepared and took advantage of me... my mother didn't tell me about this properly... I don't know what "cooking rice" is..."

Jun Mo Xie was dripping with sweat at that time. The angry thoughts had disappeared from his mind, and the only thoughts he had... were those of getting away quickly. [Initiating the young to such a thing is... overwhelming...]

Dugu Xiao Yi was made to leave after endless persuasion and her inevitable weeping. Jun Mo Xie was physically and emotionally tired as he initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune, and staggered back to his tent.

"This is farce!" There was silence for some time. Then, a low

voice emanated from the tree where the five great experts had earlier taken a rest. The voice was soft and cold in tenor. Yet, it was supple as well. It was like the icy summit of a mountain top... aloof and haughty, unrestrained but naturally graceful...

Anyone who had listened to that voice could've guessed that the speaker was an apex personality of the entire world.

"Yes. This is bullsh\*t. The only one benefitting is that Jun brat!" another sharp yet tactful voice chimed-in.

It was unknown when two people had stationed themselves on top of that big tree. The five experts had been below it only moment ago. However, they hadn't become aware of this. This clearly showed how formidable the cultivation of those two people was...

"It might not necessarily be a benefit. The information we have collected suggested that the little bastard shouldn't even have been able walk together with that Guan Qing Han... But, he has slept with her now! This is a different variable. In fact, this will be a very embarrassing variable for the Jun Family. Let's see how the Jun Family deals with this," the first voice replied in a long drawn out manner.

"However, the effects of this matter won't be small for the Jun Family... no matter how they handle it," the sharp voice somewhat took pleasure in others' misfortune. It then quickly added, "Eldest Sister, you want to make that brat your disciple. So, why don't you make a move at this time? Let's just grab him and walk away in silence."

"Make him my disciple? I just want to torture him!" it seemed that the owner of the first voice was gnashing their teeth, "That shameless bastard! I would've torn him to a thousand shreds if it weren't for that...!"

"Ah... what could that little brat with such an insignificant cultivation do to offend you, Eldest Sister?" the sharp voice asked

in a confused-sounding tone.

## Chapter 383: I'm a Selfish Man!

---

"Offend me? How could a brat with such low skill levels offend me? I just don't like him; that's all!"

The first voice became somewhat embarrassed for a second. Then, it quickly reinstating its composure, and said, "Don't ever think that I will have any affection for such a lecherous face! I only faked those feelings! I wish to beat him up and teach him a proper lesson. And, I will feel very happy once I've taught him a lesson that my heart desires!"

The other voice fell silent. It was clearly shocked. [What happened to the eldest's voice-tone when she was speaking that sentence...?]

A long time passed before the second voice spoke again, "Then... what are you going to do, Eldest Sister?"

"The aim of our trip is to travel the world. So, we can follow these people for now. And, didn't you hear Dongfang Wen Qing? He said that they might take that brat to hide with the Dongfang Family... This means that these people might part ways with the Jun Family's troops later. You see how I handle that brat when that time comes! I'll give him worse than death!" the first voice snorted.

"So, why didn't Eldest Sister intervene when Dugu Xiao Yi had given him that ridiculous medicine?" the sharp voice sounded confused, "He wouldn't have been able to do anything if we had stepped-in at that time. We would've gotten to see him choke on his urine. In fact, it would've been one of the worst ways of torture. Wouldn't that have been an interesting thing...?"

Watching him choke on his urine would've been one of the worst ways of torture... Wouldn't that have been an interesting thing...? These two women who were speaking these words seemed more ruthless than the other...

The strength of these two mysterious women was extremely high; they were exceptionally formidable!

"Intervene? Why would you wish to intervene then?" the first voice again seemed to have a strain of embarrassment in its usually cold texture, "Green Hunter... you and I have taken this form... we are in the form of women at the moment. So, we couldn't have stopped him from doing that... scandal! We could've killed him with ease... but, stopping him... we couldn't have done that!"

"Eldest Sister is right! We shouldn't have intervened since we couldn't have stopped him..." the second voice turned out to be that of Green Hunter's. She had given this angle some thought, and couldn't help but become a bit embarrassed as a result...

"That man is despicable, and he's in need of a lesson. But, he still has some importance, and he doesn't really need to die." The first voice snorted and said, "Moreover, the pills involved in the transaction with the Sacred Fruit might come via him. Didn't you hear the Solitary Falcon speak that the mysterious man is that brat's master? And, didn't you report that the mysterious person has made a solemn vow to give us those efficacious pills in exchange for the Sacred Fruit?"

"That's right! I had almost forgotten..." The Snake King's eyes shone, "Things change a lot if we consider that! That mysterious person's power is amazing and mystical! I still feel a bit traumatic at the thought of that previous experience! I feel that even elder sister might have a tough time in competing with that towering strength!"

"My meeting with that mysterious man was short. Moreover, he didn't fight for real. He merely moved and killed Li Jue Tian in the most deceptive of ways. Yes, I can't compare with such skills. I can't even figure out what technique that man had used. I think it was something like the 'Flame of Enlightenment'... or some other form of 'Pure Fire'. It will be good if such a skilled person doesn't have any hatred for us. And, we can ensure that this person gives

us more pills if we control his young disciple. We will at least have some cards in our hands in that case!" the person speaking these words was the Lord of Tian Fa — Venerable Mei.

"Therefore, we can't afford to be careless with this matter! We heard them say that he might go to the Dongfang Family. But, there are many issues relating to that as well. And, one of them is the oath that family had to take. He he... Our departure from the Tian Fa Forest has already completed half of their oath. The remaining part relates to the crumbling of the Snow Sword Mountain in those Snowy Peaks. That would need some planning. In any case, this is a very interesting matter."

"So that's how it is! You have already thought of so much, eldest...! The Eldest genuinely deserves to be called the Lord!" the Snake King said cheerfully, "So, we just watch the fun now...?"

"Watch the fun? Not necessarily. Perhaps we might have the opportunity to join-in on the fun!" Venerable Mei smiled lightly.

Everything became quiet. The two didn't speak any longer. Suddenly, it seemed as if they had never existed.

Anyone looking at the tree from the side would've been amazed to notice that their shadows hadn't been visible this entire time... even though there were sounds coming from the tree. In fact, not a single twig on the branches of that tree had shaken this entire time...

Jun Mo Xie was in a difficult situation at the moment. In fact, he was in a very difficult situation.

He had just entered his tent when he had seen an elegant figure standing in front of his bed. It seemed like a beautiful and graceful figurine.

Guan Qing Han!

Her face was expressionless. It was as cold as it had been in the past. She was staring at the bed in a daze. And, she held her



tattered clothes in her hand. The sign of her chastity had been smeared on them...

She was dressed in white clothes. Her current dressing had belonged to Jun Mo Xie. So, they were quite wide for her. However, they clung to her slender waist even better, and made it look even lovelier. Her expression was complicated and somewhat sorrowful... somewhat shy... a little distracted... and even a little disappointed...

Guan Qing Han's body trembled slightly as she heard Jun Mo Xie enter. Her face had become red, but she didn't turn around. However, her face soon became pale again.

Jun Mo Xie stationed himself behind her. Neither of the two spoke for a while. They merely listened to each other breathe, and remained silent.

They were only a short distant apart from each other. But, it seemed that they were at the opposite ends of the world. The two of them had been involved in that intimate act a while ago. But, it still seemed if they were strangers. The atmosphere in the tent had become stifling as a result; it had become exceptionally stifling...

Jun Mo Xie smiled in a gentle manner after a while. And then, he suddenly sat down on the wooden chair behind her.

Jun Mo Xie looked at Guan Qing Han's back, but it seemed as if he was talking to himself, "I know that the feelings in your heart must be complicated. In fact, you must be at a loss. You must be confused about what is to be done from this point onwards. In fact, you must even be confused about what's to be done at this moment..."

Guan Qing Han's body trembled.

"Actually, even I don't know what's to be done. I'm confused as well!" Jun Mo Xie said slowly. Guan Qing Han's delicate body trembled and she couldn't help but turn her head. She wanted to

turn around at first, but she forced her head back instead. [You don't know what's to be done? You don't know what's to be done with a girl next?]

She realized the entire matter as she listened to Jun Mo Xie's slow voice. Guan Qing Han had finally understood Dugu Xiao Yi's strange behavior of the past two days. She couldn't help but sigh.

[This matter... is a result of an unfortunate accident... it was a great coincidence.... it's just that I have been entrapped in this calamity.]

Jun Mo Xie took a deep breath, and spoke with determination, "I know that this matter is an unfortunate accident. It was a freak coincidence. However, you are my woman from now on — whether you wish for it or not... Your previous status is of no relevance anymore. You are my woman... whether you admit it or not. And, that is an unchangeable fact.

"This will never change. This will never change... no matter the time and place," Jun Mo Xie spoke these words slowly and carefully. And yet, he also seemed very dominating.

However, his unusually dominating mannerism didn't create a sense of antipathy in Guan Qing Han's heart. Instead, her heart felt an indescribable feeling of commitment.

Jun Mo Xie's voice strengthened as he continued to speak, "Being called my woman may not be easy. But, I will spare no effort to cherish and protect you as long as you're my woman. And, I'll ensure that you never suffer any grievance.

"Perhaps I can give you time to think it over if you're not ready yet."

Jun Mo Xie's tone was unhurried, "We know that your engagement with my brother was worthless. It was worse than worthless. And, you're no longer my brother's wife. You're Third Uncle's adopted daughter now. I hope you remember that. There

will be many complications if we get together, and there will be many slanderous rumors. But, you needn't worry about any of that!"

Jun Mo Xie then smiled and said, "These are matters of men. There will be a lot of rumors, but I will ensure that none of them reach your ears. Not a single word! Do you understand? So, the thing you're worried about... doesn't really exist!"

Guan Qing Han's shoulder moved a bit... and she suddenly seemed to relax.

"I believed that you must understand my temperament properly. I am not a great hero... or very heroic. I'm a very selfish man. There aren't many things I care about in this world. But, I've always cared about my loved ones — my family, my woman, and my brothers. Nothing else matters as long as they're safe and happy. And, I — Jun Mo Xie — have nothing to do with the other people around the world. I'm not a noble man!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously, and spoke frankly with an aura of assurance, "I'm afraid that I will disappoint you if you expect great achievement from me. Because... I'm not a hero. I am a selfish man. I'm so selfish that if any man says that he wishes to bully my people... or embarrass my woman — that person will suffer the cruelest form revenge from me! And, that includes your Guan Family... because they aren't one of the people I care about!"

Guan Qing Han was unable to remain calm because she suddenly had a flash of realization. So, she turned around while biting her lips. Her expression was extremely complicated as she looked at Jun Mo Xie's calm face. Her mouth opened and closed for a bit, but she still didn't say a word.

She didn't know how her family would regard her once this matter became public. She didn't know how she would have to suffer at their hands. And, the thought of this had sent her heart in a frenzied state of panic. And, she simply couldn't think of what to

do anymore...

Those flat-sounding words from Jun Mo Xie had suddenly left Guan Qing Han to feel a chill inside her heart. And, she had started to worry about them instead of being concerned about herself at this time....

She tried to imagine what Jun Mo Xie's reaction would be if someone from the Guan Family disrespected her. Moreover, the Guan Family's impression on Jun Mo Xie was very poor since they had tried to force her to marry into the Xue Hun Manor.

[Jun Mo Xie is unlikely to let them off easily.]

# Chapter 384: The Undercurrent in the Capital

---

Jun Mo Xie would rarely ever be serious. But, anything he'd ever say in a serious manner would stand to represent a commitment. And, Guan Qing Han had understood this fact clearly by this time. However, it was the understanding of this point that had left her to feel increasingly scared.

Someone would've spat out a mouthful of saliva in contempt if he hadn't spoken those words with a serious look. However, no one could've done that in this instance!

[No one can ever change his decision. He had similarly vowed to protect me when faced with the Xue Hun Manor's threat. So, I'm sure he means it this time as well.]

"Everyone has always called me a licentious debauchee... they've said that I'm ignorant and useless..." Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly. "However, I don't understand a woman's mind in reality... Nor do I know how to talk of love. Maybe I should carefully cajole you at this time... or convey gentle feelings with honey-laced words. You have done a lot for me. And, I'm not a heartless man. But, I can... I can... I genuinely don't know how to say these things..."

"I have never talked about love! I have genuinely never talked about it! Yesterday's matter... ahem... it was my first time in this life. And, it was painful for me as well. I'm not lying to you. You weren't the only one who felt pain. I felt it too. In fact, I feel a little dizzy at this time. I can tell you this, but I felt very embarrassed at the thought of mentioning this to the others..." Jun Mo Xie's face seemed pained, and a little embarrassed.

Guan Qing Han had wanted to laugh out for a brief second. She had been a maiden woman until then. So, this instance had been her first time as well. And, she too had felt a lot of pain. So, how could she have felt like laughing at this time? It was because she

had heard these words from Jun Mo Xie's mouth...

It was very hard to believe these words since they were coming from the mouth of a Young Master with such an ill and loathsome reputation. But, Guan Qing Han didn't laugh since she saw the expression on Jun Mo Xie's face. Jun Mo Xie's expression was strange and awkward, but Guan Qing Han could tell that those words weren't lies. In fact, they had seemingly come straight from his heart...

[Is possible that this is true?!]

[The legendary tyrant... the greatest debauchee of Tian Xiang is a first-time in reality? It can't be, right? There would still be a little credibility to the words of a man who says that a few women in the Spirit Fog Lake are virgins. But, Jun Mo Xie...]

However, Guan Qing Han hadn't listened properly. Jun Mo Xie had specifically said in "this life." Or maybe she had heard him clearly. However, she was unable to understand the meaning contained in those two specific words.

Guan Qing Han's eyebrows skewed, and her face became cold once again.

Jun Mo Xie waited for a moment. He noticed that Guan Qing Han's lustrous mouth had opened for a moment, but her complexion had eased to some extent. So, he couldn't help relax as he said, "In fact, last night... I had the medicine and my mind had spiraled into a chaos... I know that I had exerted the entire of my strength, but I didn't feel a thing... it's indeed a huge pity..."

Guan Qing Han hadn't expected that the little brat would speak such words right when he was being serious. Consequently, her face became red with embarrassment.

Jun Mo Xie's intention was to use those words to probe the situation. He had always noticed that Guan Qing Han would get enraged whenever he would say or do something foul and bold. In

fact, he couldn't help but gather the courage to get up in order to hold her in his arms...

However, Guan Qing Han was startled by this, and hastily took two steps back. She wiped the tears from her cheeks. And, her face became cold as she said, "We were helpless in today's matter. But, it was a mistake. I wanted to save you. I didn't do it for you alone, but also for the Jun Family's sole heir! We have made that mistake, but it doesn't mean that you can recklessly disrespect me! Jun Mo Xie, we can't make that mistake again! A mistake only adds to a mistake! You... are acting willful again!"

Jun Mo Xie stopped his hand midair. His complexion changed a few time in a short while. Then, he eventually retracted his hand, and spoke-up, "You can't accept something at one moment, and... say something else later... you said... you are my woman! So, why would you run away now? Your status in the family will change after we return, and Third Uncle will take you as his adopted daughter. We'll have a huge banquet. And, all the respected individuals of the world will come to attend... So, I believe that things will slowly simmer down. And then, I can take you through the doorway of marriage."

"Who... who said that I'll marry you?!" Guan Qing Han was embarrassed and angry. [I've never seen such a tyrant! He has spoken no sweet words to me yet, and he still wants to marry me...?

"Whether you get married or not... is your business. And, me taking a wife or not... is my thing." Jun Mo Xie's eyebrows rose as he gave a nefarious smile and said, "Come, beautiful... you've had an exhausting day. I know you're tired. Hurry up, and I'll send to you to take rest..."

Guan Qing Han's face instantly became red. And then, it became as white as ice. She looked at Jun Mo Xie, and enunciated every word she spoke, "You rest, Jun Mo Xie. Don't try those methods with me! Don't make me look down on you again! And, you can

forget about what happened today. You go back to your grandfather, and tell him everything. He will settle the accounts. And, I will never stay here with you for the life of me..."

Jun Mo Xie smiled and replied, "I said that I'll send you off to rest. I never said that I'll make you stay here. Elder Sister seems to be thinking crooked things..."

Guan Qing Han's eyes opened wide as she pointed a shaky finger at him, "You... you lecher! You hoodlum! I will be your Elder Sister?!"

Jun Mo Xie laughed out loud, "Let's look at this. You are Third Uncle's adopted daughter. So, does means you're my elder sister, right?"

Guan Qing Han got extremely mad. She swung her sleeves, and turned to go. But, she suddenly felt a sharp pain in her lower body the moment she took a step. Her forehead got covered with beads of cold sweat since she couldn't take another step!

Guan Qing Han had just lost her virtue. In fact, she had endured hardships for the entire day. That had already been too much for her delicate body. And, adding oil to fire... Jun Mo Xie had been very rough.

Jun Mo Xie saw this, and rushed forward. He stooped down, and his left hand went under her neck, while his right hand curved under her legs. He held her like one holds a baby, and brought her body up towards his chest. The Young Master then stood up, smiled, and walked outside while carrying her in his arms. He smiled as he said in a lowered tone, "Don't worry. I'll take you back."

Guan Qing Han was alarmed and ashamed by this. How could she live with pride if she was carried back by him in this manner? Therefore, she couldn't help but struggle in a vigorous manner.

Jun Mo Xie controlled her body in a firm manner, and didn't



allow her move. He then steadily walked out. Guan Qing Han felt so embarrassed and ashamed at this that she hid her head in his arms. The Young Lady didn't wish for anyone to see her, and didn't wish to see anyone herself either...

However, they didn't hear even the slightest of sounds once they walked out. Not a single soul was in sight since it was already late at night by now. This made Guan Qing Han relax somewhat. But then, her shame and embarrassment welled-up again since she was being carried by Jun Mo Xie. Her ear was stuck to his chest. So, she could listen to his heartbeat. And, she couldn't help but become confused at hearing his palpitating heartbeat...

Jun Mo Xie dropped her back, and was driven out of her tent after that. He smiled bitterly as he returned to his tent. Then, he started to circulate his aura through his body in order to recover his strength as quickly as possible. However, his skills had evolved, and his aura had become purer. Thus, he had managed to recover his strength in less than one hour...

The Young Master stood up, and moved-about a bit. He then stretched his limbs a bit, and murmured, "Today's events seem like a dream. I can't tell if this was a traceless illusion..." His body then suddenly disappeared from the tent.

Jun Mo Xie hadn't forgotten that he still had a promise to fulfill.

[One should never break a promise. And, one should never commit to a promise they will break!]

[The Bear King — Big Bear, and Crane King — Long Crane did everything in their power to help deal with the Xue Hun Manor. So, I still have to complete my end of the agreement! And, tonight is my last chance to settle my debt!]

Naturally, this was also an opportunity to enhance his personal influence as well!

Jun Mo Xie didn't like owing a debt to anyone — irrespective of

whether it was an emotional debt or a monetary one. And, he particularly didn't like being indebted to someone who had acted first and had done their best to accomplish their part.

The matter had developed into a big one. In fact, it had gone beyond everyone's control. However, they had done this because they had made a commitment. So, Jun Mo Xie couldn't break his promise either.

Moreover, the elimination of the Xue Hun Manor had come as the removal of a huge threat.

Guan Qing Han was his woman now, and the Xue Hun Manor had been destroyed. This had obviously led Jun Mo Xie to feel more refreshed.

[You dare try to snatch my woman?! You're fu\*king dead!]

Therefore, he had recovered his strength with full speed, and had then unleashed the Yin-Yang Escape to its full capacity to rush towards Tian Fa.

An alarmed voice sounded around one-hundred-and-fifty meters away as his shadow disappeared, "What's going on? How did that brat disappear so suddenly? His speed is so astonishingly quick that it surpassed my perception!"

Then, another person spoke-up, "Why does Elder Sister care about it? So what if that brat's speed is exceedingly fast? Everyone from the Jun Family is still here. The monk can't run away from the temple. So, why fear that he will run away...?"

The two voices chuckled for a while, and became quiet again...

The Capital — Tian Xiang City...

There had been many big changes since Jun Wu Yi had led his army away. And, small changes had been pouring-in in a continuous and never-ending stream. There would be a conflict between two powerful families on one day. And, the Emperor would have to mediate matters. Then, there would be mediation

between two families who were at loggerheads the next day. An announcement of an Imperial family suit would follow the day after...

In short, the Imperial troops were being dispatched in an increasing frequency. Moreover, there had been changes in the official appointments, and his Majesty had been vigorously appointing many young scholars. However, these smaller changes had mostly gone unnoticed since he was using exquisite means to lubricate the entire structure, and had made the changes without making any noise in broad daylight. Consequently, no one had noticed the manner in which he had quietly infiltrated these young scholars into various departments through ordinary means. And then, some rotten officials... or elderly members of some powerful families who weren't at a very senior position were sent away... perhaps with the excuse that they could go back home and enjoy the rest of their years in peace...

Not a drop of water had been spilled from this air-tight mechanism. It was a seamless and clever method.

The number of people affected on an immediate basis weren't a lot. So, not a lot of people seemed to care about it. Three to five people were thrown out one day... then, five or six people would leave the next day... and the next... And, this had continued for the entirety of those two months. Thus, the Imperial polity had been turned on its head, and there had been massive changes...

The higher positions of powers were originally held by members of the powerful families. And, most of them had still retained their positions. However, many of the people under their command had been replaced with new recruits... or members of other families.

This entire thing happened in a very smooth manner. So, the powerful families were caught unaware. They may have wanted to take some countermeasures once they had realized this. However, it was already too late. Therefore, they had been rendered helpless in the face of it.

They had been overwhelmed!

Moreover, the internal conditions of the powerful families weren't that great either. And, that was because there were undercurrents surging inside these families. No one knew who had spread the rumor... but, it was said that the young masters who had been sent with Jun Wu Yi to the battlefield had been handpicked to gain experience. And, it was further said that these young masters would become the choice for successors for their respective families' head-post as long as they would return safe and sound...

This rumor had quickly given rise to huge waves!

# Chapter 385: Tang Yuan's Strategies

---

Each powerful family had its own method of dealing with that rumor. The other candidates for the position of the family's lord were quite confident in their abilities. However, this rumor had still left them worried a bit. This rumor had faded away quite quickly, but it had done its job by creating mistrust. Consequently, many people had moved into action. And, the frequency of their campaigns had been increasing at a steady rate...

Some people knew that the rumor was probably false. But, they still intended to take advantage of that opportunity to place their sons... or maybe their fathers on top. Therefore, they began to scheme in secret as well.

These families seemed peaceful on the surface, but violent storms were raging in the dark of secrecy. Everyone was in a hurry. They'd move like the wind in a messy manner. Yet, they were also very cautious for the fear that they'd act carelessly and create a mess...

The only families which managed to remain aloof to this situation were the Jun and the Dugu Families. The later generations of these two military families weren't present there. Therefore, the existence or absence of such rumors didn't have any effect on them. These families were like a solid block on the inside. Water may be present there, but the container was water-tight.

The two families weren't affected by these rumors. Therefore, they had maintained their internal stability. However, the same couldn't be said for their military might. And, that was because their most trusted military subordinates had been dispersed along with other old officers. Plus, the followers of these two families had also started receiving a treatment that was different from the one that was dished-out to the followers of the other families. This was conclusive proof of what was coming. And, the two families couldn't get any opportunity to reverse the situation. They had

been rendered defenseless as a result. It was almost as if they had been banished.

The Murong Family, the Meng Family, and the Tang Family were "great" families of Tian Xiang. And, the elderly of these families were obviously the same as well. However, they'd seem idle and bedridden in the face of this chaos. In fact, the juniors of these families were very respectful and dutiful on the surface. But, they were similar to a double-edged sword in secret. Thus, these families had caused a lot of blood-shed.

There was another family that had remained considerably calm. And, that family was the Li Family. But, they had the great genius Li You Ran as their Eldest Young Master. So, the other youngsters of the family didn't dare to compete against him. He had used very heavy methods to suppress them early on. Therefore, the rumor of this battle for an heir was the least effective in the Li Family.

It was only obvious that some major forces had remained unaffected by this gust of wind.

For example...

The Proprietor of the Aristocratic Hall — Tang Yuan — had ignored these foreign affairs. He had only cared about the advancement of his establishment... and earning profits. So, it was becoming increasingly prosperous with every passing day. He had held several auctions, and had earned huge pots of gold every time. Jun Mo Xie had given many effective medicine bottles to Fatty Tang before he had left. And, Fatty's method of conducting business was exceptional. He had auctioned the first batch of those medicines, and their results had caused a huge sensation in the Capital City.

After that, Fatty had started to limit and control the sales. He would only sell 20 pellets of each medicine in one batch. And, one individual could only buy a maximum of 5 pellets. Moreover, the reserve price of the auctioned items had continued to increase.

However, the number of people who would arrive for these auctions had also continued to increase.

The prices of these goods had soon started to reach frighteningly high levels because of their sensational popularity. But, the line of people of coming to buy these products was still endless. In fact, the customers would be willing to spend to any extent inside the Aristocratic Hall. And, the ones who didn't have hundreds of thousands... or millions... were only left to face embarrassment, and would remain tight-lipped as a result.

Fatty Tang gave the medicines very pleasant and trendy descriptions as he gave them out. He gave the Mysterious Yang Dan a very glorified description, "Even the impotent men would have the sturdy strength of 500kg with the help of this thunderous Mysterious Yang Dan!" It had almost sounded as if he was offering impotent men an aphrodisiac. In fact, he had said that it would give them much more than that...

There was this so-called 'poem'— The young buy wine and romance. The fifty-year-olds settle into their marriage. But, even the eighty-year-olds' crotches would still seek more.

And, he gave the Missing Yin Pill an even more enchanting name; "It improves one's appearance and makes the skin like that of a divine beauty that has maintained the countenance of a flower. Even a little amount of this will change an ugly woman into a beauty who can reverse the flow of a mighty river and move the stars — the Missing Yin Pill!"

Tang Yuan had seemed like a travelling performer who was selling sham when he had given such descriptions to these two medicines.

These two extremely trendy, awkward and vulgar sounding medicines had soon come to be known as the Divine Pills of the Tian Xiang City.

The descriptions didn't exactly roll off one's tongues. In fact,

they were unreasonable. Most people would stutter at first. However, people soon started to recite these descriptions in a fluent manner. And, this was the effect that had been created on the people who hadn't even consumed these medicines. Who knows what would've happened if they had actually consumed these 'Divine Pills'?

Later, Tang Yuan cited that the establishment lacked sufficient manpower. He then used his official authority for private interests, and arranged for his fiancée Sun Xiao Mei to lend him a hand at the Aristocratic hall. This left Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang — the two Sky Xuan experts — to complain endlessly.

The two experts had revolted against Fatty's display of authority several times from the start. [Your entire Tang Family doesn't have a single Sky Xuan expert. Yet, you dare to incite us like this. Who do you think you are?]

However, Tang Yuan gradually figured a way out. He was dealing with Hai Chen Feng one day, and he simply spoke this line, "Third Young Master said that you'd be the most suitable person for this job." Hai Chen Feng got to work the moment those words exited Tang Yuan's mouth. Moreover, he was sharp, swift, and decisive in his actions. In fact, he seemed afraid of being slow.

This left Fatty to reconsider his approach. He was in a similar situation with Song Shang the other day. And, he applied the same method with him as well. And, the result was the same. Therefore, Tang Yuan assumed authority without proper pretext from that day onwards, and started to act in a tyrannical manner — [I don't think anything of who I am. I'm only Elder Brother Mo Xie's spokesperson in Tian Xiang. I merely handle Elder Brother Mo Xie's affairs. You obey whatever I'm telling you. Otherwise, I'll tell Elder Brother Mo Xie about you!]

This resulted in one thing — the two Sky Xuan experts fled whenever they saw the Fatty. They'd never come face to face with him. [I can't refuse him. But, that doesn't mean that I can't avoid



him, right?]

However, Fatty Tang had a strategy to deal with this as well. He stipulated that they must come to the Aristocratic Hall once a day. And, he assigned them an office each. He would stick a three-meter-wide paper sign on the entrance in case he wanted to assign them some task. And, that paper would inevitably start in the following manner, "The Third Young Master has said..."

And, then there was the young prince — Yang Mo. Tang Yuan obviously wouldn't allow him to sit idle either. The Little Prince had given them a huge amount of money when the establishment had opened. And, this had left the money-strapped Tang Yuan to pile praises on Jun Mo Xie for garnering such valuable support. After all, that money had arrived in a very timely fashion.

However, the Aristocratic Hall was trying to make more gold at this time. But, the Prince's mansion had merely stretched its hand in wait for their share of the money. Tang Yuan had obviously been left to feel seething pain because of this. So, he started to cuss about it every day, "I run, and deal with everything until I run myself ragged every day... like a monkey... only to provide for these freeloaders."

Tang Yuan had obviously forgotten his roots by now. Moreover, he had forgotten the challenges they had faced in the beginning... and the family which had financially supported his organization when he had needed it the most. So, he could only see his hard-earned money flowing-out like gurgling like a stream at this time. And, he'd feel as if he were losing a part of his flesh...

Tang Yuan's hand would tremble every month when he'd gave-out the shares in profits. In fact, his eyes would become red, and his flesh would start to twist. [The Third Young Master has done all this. So, this belongs to him. You just come here to rest and have sweets, you brat! Yet, you also get the money. And, so much of it at that! Why?]

Thus, Fatty Tang's mind was in a complete disequilibrium!

Moreover, Tang Yuan was determined to deal with all troubles even if Jun Mo Xie hadn't specifically asked him to. However, Little Yang Mo had several aunts and uncles. And, they were obviously princesses and princes. Some of them arrived one day by a matter of chance. Tang Yuan had obviously rolled his eyes at this. However, Little Yang Mo wasn't able to do much when Tang Yuan rolled his eyes at their arrival during the auctions, [Ah, more members of the Royal Family! This business is only meant to benefit them! Who doesn't want more of them here?]

The little boy didn't seem to have any feeling of self-respect in the beginning. So, he obviously suffered many losses. Moreover, Tang Yuan wouldn't divide the shares in a proper manner. He'd calculate the share in profits. Then, he'd deduct any losses the Aristocratic Hall would suffer due to the Royal Family from the Prince's share. [You have to pay on behalf of the Royal Family! In any case, your self-respect isn't worth the money!]

And then, finally...

That shy little boy eventually started to become anxious for the sake of his own interests.

The little boy would look at the daily transactions of the Aristocratic Hall. The money was crashing-in through the door. In fact, that pile of paper-money had soared to the sky. However, he could only stare blankly at it since none of it belonged to him. Sometimes he'd even do some accounting. But, he'd come to realize that he was losing money instead of making it... who could ever bear such an intolerable thing?

Therefore, the little boy became clever and alert. He wouldn't yield even a little money. In fact, he had soon started to haggle over every coin. He almost resembled a little rooster from a cock-fighting match at times. In fact, he soon started pulling an occasional trick or two of his own... [I could get some extra

rewards if an elder from the Royal Family visits the Hall. I'm only a child. So, making them get me something small wouldn't be out of the question, right?]

However, the royal intermediaries were good at sweet talking as well. So, it was only natural that contradictions would occur. But, the little boy would remain strict and impartial. He would give priority to the money above everything else. In fact, even the boy's father would've collapsed on the spot if he had seen the manner in which his little son had started to talk...

The Princes... the members of the Royal Harem... and their intermediaries soon started to find it increasingly difficult to take advantage of the Aristocratic Hall upon their visits. In fact, members of the three Princes' factions were the worst off. Consequently, the three Princes got extremely angry, and decided to visit the establishment themselves. They had obviously arrived with the intent of inflicting losses to the little boy. And, the little boy ended-up suffering losses after losses... How could a small arm ever twist a big leg...? Moreover, three pairs of fully-grown legs...?

Then, Tang Yuan and Song Shang made an evil plan one day. And, they filled the little boy's cup with wine at the evening banquet. The young boy was very striking to the eye, but his capacity to drink wasn't striking to say the least. Moreover, he was very anxious at that time. He was pained, and couldn't help but recall what his Elder Brother Jun Mo Xie had said to him in this moment of helplessness, "Your father isn't the Emperor. How can I help you? Helping you will mean going against the Emperor's son. And, that's the same as going against the Future Emperor. Will I be allowed to live if I did that?"

There's a so-called saying 'wine won't get the anxious drunk', but it got him drunk. Moreover, the young boy had gotten completely drunk. In fact, he was sloshed! And, he started to chant in his drunken stupor. He wine obviously didn't suit him. In fact, it nearly made him crazy. Moreover, the intoxication didn't allow him

to sleep properly. So, he got out of the bed at night, and shouted loudly in his childish voice, "I want to become the Emperor! Fu\*k! I fu\*king want to become the Emperor! I will revolt! I want to be an Emperor so that my children don't have to get bullied!"

He was a young boy at this time. However, he had already figured that his son would have to face bullying someday. One could say that the boy had surpassed Dugu Xiao Yi's levels...

That shouting in the middle of the night scared Tang Yuan. So much so that he soiled his pants. However, he didn't dare to intervene for the fear that some outsider could've been listening to this in the middle of the night. In fact, Tang Yuan had been terrified to such an extent that he was more likely to forget his own surname than this night...

[This is a crime worthy of a family's extermination!]

Tang Yuan suddenly decided that he would never get that little boy drunk. [I will get others drunk. Maybe I'll get drunk myself. But, getting this kid drunk can put my life at risk as well! It's too damn risky!]

# Chapter 386: Enters Tian Fa for the Third Time

---

Inside the Imperial Palace...

The Emperor frowned. His dignified face looked gloomy. He paced back and forth for a while. His pace was neither too slow... nor too fast. And, he eventually let out a long sigh. The Emperor's expression was that of confusion. He seemed to be stuck at an important decision. In fact, it appeared as if he had been facing a complex problem.

Several powerful Xuan Qi experts had announced their support for the Jun Family. And, this list now included that very powerful and mysterious Master as well. This matter had struck the Emperor's heart, and had kept him awake day and night.

"How much truth do you think there is to this matter, Elder Brother Wen?" He had received this amazing news some time ago. In fact, many people had confirmed it. But, the Emperor still couldn't believe it... However, the fact was that he didn't wish to believe it...

"Elder Brother Wen, Jun Family had suffered a major tragedy twelve years ago. We must consider that those tragedies couldn't have happened if such a person had stood behind the Jun Family this entire time. Jun Wu Hui and Jun Wu Meng wouldn't have died, and Jun Wu Yi wouldn't have become a cripple. Moreover, the Jun Family's third generation wouldn't have had only one surviving child. And, that's because the Silver Blizzard City wouldn't have dared to do anything. Therefore, I'm convinced that something is odd about this matter!"

The Emperor frowned as he continued, "But, don't you think that it's merely weird? Don't you think that it's only an act by the Jun Family to neutralize the intentions of those who wish to prey on them? So, has this been done with the intention to give the Jun

Family an opportunity to flourish? This would prevent the deaths of Jun Mo Xie's generation to say the least!"

Mr. Wen's face had lost its calm and tranquil demeanor a long while ago. He sat with a serious expression at the moment, and it was evident that he was pondering over something.

"This entity is a supposed to be peerless expert first of all. He is rumored to be a-once-in-a generation expert. So, why hasn't there been a legend about him if he has existed in the world of the mortals for many years? Moreover, it's impossible for such an expert to emerge in such a short while. Secondly... This man is supposed to be a towering and peerless Master who existed from ten to twenty years ago. So, he should've had an awe-inspiring aura. And, it wouldn't have been very difficult to believe if this person had hailed from a force that was at the level of the Silver Blizzard City or the Xue Hun Manor. However, the Jun Family is nowhere near at par with them. So, this matter seems very confusing...

"Third — such a tragedy wouldn't have occurred if he had genuinely watched over the Jun Family. And finally, the most important part — This mysterious Master may have been away for a long time. Therefore, he may not have been aware of the tragedies that had happened to the Jun Family. However, he still didn't take any action even though he has reappeared! Any person would've found those things to be intolerable! First, this person doesn't show himself in the past ten years. After that, he only killed Li Jue Tian. But, he still allowed the Silver Blizzard City's men to live. He even spared the Xiao Family's men! This is very unreasonable! After all, Xiao Bu Yu had forced the Dongfang Family to take a very humiliating oath. Moreover, Jun Wu Yi and Xiao Han have always had an irreconcilable hatred for each other...

"Every grievance has someone responsible for it. And, there is a debtor for every debt. These words have some truth to them. But, we know that Jun Wu Yi's legs were disabled, and haven't been

healed since. So, how could he take revenge? There's no chance of him taking revenge! But, whatever that man has said and done in this matter becomes even more inexplicable if we deny those words of his! So, this matter has many layers where confusions exist!"

His Majesty frowned as he paced-about and pondered.

"Your Majesty, there's a good possibility that this information has some truth to it," Mr. Wen spoke-up in a serious manner, "So, I request Your Majesty to consider this... most people present at the time of that mysterious man's appearance were under Li Jue Tian's influence. And, Li Jue Tian didn't get along with the Jun Family. And, most of the families present at that scene had conspired to entrap Jun Wu Yi into throwing away his life. So, why would they wish to fake such news? Moreover, pulling off an act in front of exceptional people like the Lord of Tian Fa and the Provosts from the Elusive World of Immortals is impossible!

"Your Majesty's misgivings are naturally very reasonable! However, I believe that the sole reasonable explanation for this rests in the angle that the Jun Family may have somehow gotten the support of such a capable person in recent times. It could be similar to how they managed to get the Eighth Great Master — Solitary Falcon's support. It's only that this person's strength is even more formidable!"

Mr. Wen then continued in a serious tone, "It doesn't matter if this support is recent... or has been there for a while. But, this man genuinely exists. And, there's no doubt about it!"

"That's true. Ah, I had figured that it was a facade, and nothing more than that. But, that seems impossible at this time. So, we need to determine how the Imperial Court shall treat the Jun Family from now onwards."

The Emperor let out a deep sigh. The dark line on his forehead visibly denoted his worries as he looked into the distance. His state

of mind wasn't clear. The ruler of the Tian Xiang Empire had already acknowledged the existence of that mysterious man. However, it seemed that he was waiting for someone to tell him that the matter was merely a huge facade.

"The Jun Family... the current relationship with the Jun Family might not be what Your Majesty considers. In fact, it might be considered to be very harmonious by some!" Mr. Wen spoke, "And, the Jun Family's newly acquired support may not have to be a bad thing for Your Majesty and the Empire. All you have to do is... maintain your current relationship with them. Then, you can attempt to win them over. That Jun Zhan Tian isn't the kind of man who will forget old favors and friendships... nor will he forget the emotions therein."

"Not a bad thing..." the Emperor smiled bitterly, and muttered in a low voice, "Jun Zhan Tian isn't a man who will forget past favors and friendships..."

It wasn't known why he had repeated what Mr. Wen had spoken, but his tone had sounded eccentric and eerie.

Mr. Wen was startled as he looked at the Emperor's face. It was as motionless as a lake's water. He couldn't see any emotions on it. There had been traces of gloominess on it before, but that had also disappeared at this time. However, Mr. Wen also felt that His Majesty was suppressing his deep and heartfelt emotions.

Then, a strong wind suddenly blew through the window. A memorandum that was placed on the table was blown away by this gust. It floated-about for a moment, and eventually fell to the ground. A page had been blown-open from it. It read, "Jun Wu Yi is returning safely with the army from the battle at the Southern Heaven City. A mysterious man had appeared at the scene. And, not one of the thousands of men dared to disobey him even though he had acted haughtily. He killed the Great Master Li Jue Tian with merely a turn of his hand. After that, he proclaimed for the Jun Family. The man destroyed the Xue Hun Manor, and he also



made the Silver Blizzard City. Even the Lord of Tian Fa didn't dare to call out to him. The two Provosts from the Elusive World of Immortals didn't dare to move either."

After that, the voluminous writing became extremely detailed.

Mr. Wen's vision got affixed at a set of words.

"Not one of the thousands of men dared to disobey him even though he had acted haughtily. He killed the Great Master Li Jue Tian with merely a turn of his hand. After that, he proclaimed for the Jun Family. The man destroyed the Xue Hun Manor, and he also made the Silver Blizzard City. Even the Lord of Tian Fa didn't dare to call out to him. The two Provosts from the Elusive World of Immortals didn't dare to move either..."

[What could be the identity of such a skilled person?]

Mr. Wen narrowed his eyes, and looked upwards as he pondered deeply.

That matter at Tian Fa had only taken place three days ago. And yet, the Emperor had already received this secret information. This message had reached here even faster than an eagle that was flying at full speed...

The Jun Family Household...

Jun Zhan Tian had become a recluse ever since his son-and-nephew had gone to war. In fact, he hadn't even appeared in public ever since.

Old Pang hurried over with his bamboo cane and reported, "My Lord! The secret report from the Southern Heaven City...!"

Jun Zhan Tian's eyes opened wide as he stood up and said, "I want to read it! Bring it to me!" He hurriedly took the report. His arm had started to tremble somewhat. The face of the old man who had received many urgent military reports in the past was calm. In fact, there was no movement on it. But, he was scared inside. In fact, he was nearly on the edge.

Only Old Pang knew that Jun Zhan Tian hadn't slept properly for two months since Jun Wu Yi had gone to battle along with his nephew. In fact, he hadn't even had a single night of proper sleep.

Jun Zhan Tian read this secret report very quickly at first. He then discovered that he had overlooked the real message in that secret report. So, he started to read it again... more carefully this time... word by word... sentence by sentence...

His taut body finally relaxed as he sat down on the chair.

"Wu Yi is alright. And, even Mo Xie is alright! They're returning triumphant!" Jun Zhan Tian tried to control his happiness. He sounded calm and indifferent, but his brows were enough to determine that he was very happy. "It's just that Mo Xie will follow his mother's brothers, and he will go to the Dongfang Family for a little while. This was requested by Dongfang Wen Qing."

"This is indeed great news, My Lord!" Old Pang was genuinely happy.

Jun Zhan Tian's face wrinkled and blossomed as he smiled and replied, "It's indeed great! The Dongfang Family had been very good to our Jun Family in those days. Mo Xie is very heroic, and his wit is also commendable! Wu Hui's in-laws must've become very fond of him after having met him!"

The secret report had been issued from Tian Fa three days ago. However, it didn't inform the Grandfather that his "commendable" and treasured grandson had done something earth-shattering.

This matter was like a level-eight earth-quake... or level-nine tsunami for the Jun Family!

The Old Man would grab a stick to break that youngster's legs if he came to know about it...

Jun Mo Xie was entering the Tian Fa forest for the third time at this moment.

He had taken Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit the first time he had entered

the forest. The second time had been during the battle. He had transformed into his formless mode, and had spoken a few words of instruction to Big Bear.

And, he was gracing the Tian Fa again for the third time now...

The Young Master Jun felt that the Tian Fa Forest was the best place for him.

This was where he felt at ease the most.

In fact, he wouldn't even leave if it were possible.

This was the only place where he could somewhat loosen up.

Young Master Jun was moving like flash of light. He knew from experience that the Xuan Beasts of Tian Fa wouldn't be at the edge of the forest.

The Tian Fa Forest covered a huge area. And, Jun Mo Xie didn't know where the epicenter of the forest would be. He had collected rare herbs for medicines like a locust the last time he had been there. But, he knew that if the increasing concentration-density of these herbs were to be put on a map — it would form a straight line. And, this straight line would go to the core of Tian Fa. However, he was a long distance away from that central region at this time. Jun Mo Xie had swept through the area, and hadn't left anything un-plucked in his path. But, it was still merely a drop in the ocean.

However, this also meant that he was at a loss in this case since he could only track the location of the top herbs in Tian Fa...

He had obviously penetrated very deep into the Tian Fa once before. But, his overall knowledge of the forest's 'road map' was very poor. Therefore, it would be very difficult for him to find someone in this vast territory. Consequently, the Young Master Jun was forced to rely on his memory alone, and decided to proceed towards the spot where he had interacted with them the first time had been here...

The range of Jun Mo Xie's spiritual sense had also increased with the progress of his cultivation. So, he put his powerful spiritual sense to use, and quickly located the spot where he had last met the Crane and Bear kings.

Everything around the Ten Thousand Poison Valley seemed bleak. The Young Master hadn't gone very deep into the valley, but he didn't need to... His powerful spiritual sense was enough to determine that the Crane King and the Bear King weren't present there. In fact, even the Snake King wasn't there at this time.

The Young Master was in no mood to look for them since it wouldn't be an easy task. Anyway, it would be a lot easier to make them locate him instead...

Jun Mo Xie revealed himself in the Tian Fa Forest. Then, he abruptly flew into the sky. After that, he pushed forth the formidable aura from the Hong Jun Pagoda. The pure aura pushed forth from his body, and rushed out. Then, it spread in the area around him...

# Chapter 387: Bear and Crane Kings

---

This was undoubtedly a signal. In fact, it was an explosive signal! There was no room for a mistake since he had sent his signal forth. Big Bear and Long Crane would surely come to meet him as long as they were in the Tian Fa forest.

The Crane King and the Bear King were sitting in the very depths of the forest, and were drinking wine.

Long Crane's mind was cautious as usual. But, Big Bear was enjoying and living in the moment. He was having a typical 'the monkey takes over when there's no tiger in the forest' moment. [I'm the boss since the Eldest isn't present here!]

Therefore, he had dragged Long Crane for some drinks, and this had been continuing for two full days by now. He didn't even care about what had happened in Tian Fa over the past few days... or what they would have to face in the future. This simple-minded temperament was entirely different from that of Jun Mo Xie's, but it somehow managed to yield the same results.

The two Beast Kings weren't drinking in their human forms at that moment. Rather, they were drinking that sea of alcohol in their original forms. On one side was a huge bear covered in golden fur. In fact, it almost resembled a mountain. The Crane King's original form was one of a red-crowned crane. His body was even bigger, and was covered in white feathers. And, his eyes resembled two flaming torches. There was a gigantic natural platform in front of these two Beast Kings. They seemed to be using it as table. Wine cups carved out of red sandalwood trees had been placed on this table of theirs'. And, each of these cups was as big as a large barrel of wine.

And, the wine that these two Beast Kings were drinking gave off an exceptionally nostril-assailing fragrance. In fact, it was the monkey-folk of the Tian Fa Forest which had brewed that 'Monkey

Wine.' And, these two Beast Kings had used their position to procure this wine. The massive mouth of a bear opened along with the giant beak of a crane, and the rapidly drained the wine down their throats.

"Third, I've noticed that you're becoming increasingly cautious. In fact, your caution has crossed every boundary. And, you're particularly worried about that matter regarding our Sacred Fruit! I think that it's useless for you to get so worried!" Big Bear's eyes had gone out of focus due to the intoxication. He patted his golden-fur-covered chest, and vomited out the words, "I don't get it. You've been worrying the entire day. How are you not tired?"

It was obvious that Long Crane was very worried about the entire matter surrounding the Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit. However, Big Bear didn't care about it. He was very confident when it came to that Mysterious Master. His intuition was telling him that a person with such a high cultivation level wouldn't see any need to cheat them. Therefore, he couldn't understand Long Crane's anxiousness. In fact, he even despised it somewhat.

"Your brain is full of muscle, Big Bear! What would you know?" Long Crane turned and raised his eyelid to look at Big Bear with his huge ruby-like eyes. "We need to worry since there's a chance that everything may go wrong! How would you and I bail ourselves out if we don't see that man's shadow again? That bear-brain of yours is too small and muddled. Anyone can cheat it with ease! The second Brother was negligent and gambled foolishly. Now, he has to serve others. You're also behaving like that! And, you won't get a chance to run either!"

Big Bear remained silent for a moment. He then said in a low voice, "Third Brother, I believe in that Mysterious Master. Moreover, I feel that the risk of using the Sacred Fruit is too great for us! There's always the danger that our body might explode. In fact, the success rate hasn't even reached thirty-percent in the past. And, it seems like that skilled and mysterious person

possesses a method which doesn't involve any risks. So, it's worth the wait and the risk..."

Long Crane stared blankly after he heard Big Bear's words. He had never expected that his fourth brother — that ignorant Big Bear — could put forth an argument that would seem so reasonable, "I had never considered that you could make such arguments, Fourth Brother. This is a genuine case of 'even a fool gives wise counsel once in a while'. I genuinely respect you for those words!"

Big Bear felt very happy when he heard those words. But, he then finished three or four glasses in one breath and said, "What, 'a fool gives wise counsel once in a while'...? This Beast King has always been intelligent! I never open my mouth without giving things a thought!"

Long Crane couldn't help but smile after he heard Big Bear's boast. In fact, he was going to raise a toast when he suddenly recalled something, "How did you have the courage to address me like that? Who did you call 'Third Brother' a moment ago? I'm your 'Third Elder Brother!' Is there no basic sense of respect left between seniors and juniors anymore? I had barely spoken those words of praise, and you forgot the basic courtesy? Anyway, you may have made a reasonable argument, but this matter it is still too risky! After all, the Sacred Fruit not being in our hands... is still not a good thing!"

Big Bear snorted and replied, "What risks? Isn't it risky to have the Sacred Fruit by ourselves? And, no one has ever been able to steal our Sacred Fruit. It has never happened since ancient times! And, it won't happen now either. Do you want to make a bet?"

Long Crane rolled his red eyes. He didn't seem to be in a good mood, "When will you drop this bad habit of making bets? Don't forget that Second Brother is someone else's mount because he had made a bet! And, I see a similar trend with you! Besides, what can the two of us bet on? Both of us will be slitting our throats if we

don't find that man. You want to bet on that? Bet... my a\*s!"

Big Bear's anger flared, and he shouted as he got up, "I really love betting, right?! So, I will make a bet with you that... that person isn't the bad guy you say he is!"

Long Crane snorted, and replied in a salty and strong manner, "Not that kind of a man? Are you sure? He should've honored his commitment and kept his promise since that Xue Hun Manor has been turned to dust! Humph! Let's not talk about whether he can keep his promise about giving us the pills in exchange for our Tia Fa's Sacred Fruit... He should've at least helped us break through the level ten Xuan Beast barrier as he had promised! So, why did he disappear even though we had come to an agreement?"

"Perhaps he has been delayed by another matter? Such a skilled person wouldn't be so shameless, right?" Big Bear's tone had sounded very confident a moment ago. However, it had suddenly collapsed. In fact, he seemed to have lost some of his confidence by now...

"Are you sure that a very skilled person won't be shameless?" Long Crane sighed and said, "There are many in the human race who are treacherous. How many of them would care about a single promise? You are still very naïve, Big Bear. Does great intelligence appear stupidity to you? You have fooled yourself!"

Big Bear snorted and vigorously grabbed a cup of wine. He then tilted his head, and gulped its contents down with an askance look on his face. It was evident that he couldn't bear with Long Crane's caution.

He was about to refute when he suddenly felt an earth-shattering power push forth through Tian Fa. Big Bear suddenly trembled. Even his hand started to tremble as he threw that big cup of wine with a "Bang". He then jumped up, and spoke-up in an exceptionally excited manner, "It's him! He's looking for us! He's here to help us breakthrough! What do you have to say about that,



Third Crane?"

Long Crane's face also lit-up with delight. In fact, he had even forgotten to notice the "Third Crane" remark. The Beast King flew up with an explosive sound. His wings glittered as he shouted, "You have won the bet, Fourth! He has arrived!"

The two Beast Kings looked at each other. Their eyes were filled with rapt ecstasy.

Big Bear was evidently unwillingly to wait for even a single moment. He shouted and jumped onto Long Crane's back. After that, he shouted loudly as he pointed his finger forward, "Hurry up and take off!" His tone was decisive. In fact, it was like an order. But, Long Crane wasn't prepared for his thousands of kilograms of weight, and was pushed down as a result. He obviously wasn't able to take off. In fact, he fell to the ground. He then rebuked in an indignant tone, "Shameless! Don't ever jump onto me in this bear form of yours! Don't you know that you weigh one-and-a-half ton?!"

However, he didn't feel any change by the time he finished speaking. So, he added more words, "Hurry up and get down! I'm your Third Brother — not your saddled mount! Run on your own!"

Big Bear grabbed two of Long Crane's feathers, and didn't let go. Then, he quickly transformed to his human form, but he shamelessly refused to come down. Long Crane felt helpless. And, he also feared to delay at such a crucial moment. So, he flapped his wings and took-off. Then, he rushed forward like lightning.

He quickly charged towards the direction this enormous pressure was originating from.

Jun Mo Xie was standing in midair. He could feel the Xuan Beasts cower under his extremely formidable power. None of them had dared to make a move. [I'm sure that there aren't many Xuan Beasts who can withstand this.]

Strong winds and thunder arose in the distance. This was accompanied by a huge silhouette which was flying over.

It was Big Bear riding atop Long Crane! The scene looked as awe-inspiring as the ones from the mythical legends of the dragon knights.

Jun Mo Xie remained in the air until Long Crane transformed into his human form and both the Beast Kings landed on the ground. Then, Young Master Jun also floated down with a feather-like swiftness.

"Senior... you... you came!" Long Crane felt somewhat embarrassed. He had called him 'Elder Brother Feng' that time in the Tian Xiang City. But, he was already calling him "Senior" now. In fact, the two Beast Kings felt somewhat depressed since they had previously dared to consider him of their rank and generation...

Moreover, they had doubted this person only moments ago. Therefore, Long Crane felt a bit embarrassed since this person had appeared in front of him at this time...

"Ahem... I was about to leave the Southern Heaven City. But, I suddenly recalled that I still owed you a promise. A man is nothing without his credibility. So, how could I leave before repaying you for the past favors?" Jun Mo Xie gave a detailed account. He sounded magnificent by contrast.

"Ka ka ka! Senior is genuinely a trustworthy person! Third Crane was worried that you won't come. He felt that you were likely to run away like a thief! But, I strongly reprimanded him. You have learned of your mistake, isn't that right Third Crane? Ha ha ha!" Big Bear felt very proud of himself. And, he had drawn back the corners of his big mouth since he felt happy about winning the bet.

How could he not feel proud of himself? This man had shown up and had displayed his importance to his commitment. [How could he steal the Sacred Fruit and leave? That matter with those pills

can't be a trick either, right?]

Consequently, Big Bear had laid down everything that had been weighing on his mind.

"You... you... you... you damned bear! What rubbish are you talking? I... How can I not have faith in the Senior?" Long Crane became very angry. His fingers started to tremble. He wanted to strangle Big Bear. He had never expected that Big Bear would betray him in order to win a favor with the person in front of them...

"No harm done. That was only natural," Jun Mo Xie chuckled and smiled. He didn't know why, but he felt very cheerful whenever he'd face those two Beast Kings. This wasn't a pleasure he derived from acting like a pretentious jerk in front of them. Rather, this was derived from the comfort he felt since he didn't need to analyze any schemes when he dealt with them...

Those Xuan Beast Kings of the Tian Fa Forest were simple and pure when compared to humans. And, this atmosphere made Jun Mo Xie feel relaxed. He felt at ease since he was far away from that endless deception, and scheming...

"Ahem... I've come here to keep my promise. First, I need you two to prepare yourselves. I want you to calm your aura, and bring your conditions to the very optimum. What's most important is that you two bring your mental state to its most peaceful. And, I will first have a look at the borders for your breakthrough."

Jun Mo Xie smiled. He hadn't realized that he was being very amiable. In fact, he would rarely be seen like this... except for when he was with Grandpa Jun, his Third Uncle, and a very few other people.

Long Crane and Big Bear perceived that faintly amiable aura around him very clearly. So, they also started to trust him completely.

# Chapter 388: Help the Beast King with the Breakthrough

---

The Xuan Beasts came in different shapes and sizes. However, they were still beasts at the end of the day. So, there had always been somewhat of a barrier between them and humanity since ancient times. In fact, they were starkly juxtaposed from the human world.

Therefore, there was one 'Formidable Land' outside the 'Three Holy Lands'. In fact, there would've been four 'Holy Lands' instead of three if it weren't for the existence of this difference. However, the level of their strength far transcended that of the apex-ranked humans. So, how could an ordinary human compare with them?

Jun Mo Xie had emanated that faintly amiable feeling. It was very faint, but it had come from the heart. And, the Xuan Beasts were very sensitive to the feelings of likes and dislikes. So, they had sensed it, and had found it very pleasant.

Long Crane and Big Bear genuinely felt that the person in front of them was truly amicable and trustworthy.

Therefore, they looked at Jun Mo Xie with extreme gratitude, and didn't hesitate as they sat down cross-legged. It didn't take long for that strong smell of wine to evaporate from their bodies. Consequently, their previously red faces resumed to their normal color.

Big Bear felt that his aura was flowing free and unrestrained. He was in a very peaceful frame of mind. The Beast King was about to open his eyes when he felt a gentle hand on his shoulder. This hand then moved to the vital point of his shoulder as a soft voice instructed, "Stabilize your minds. Don't move. Long Crane, you must keep watch. No one must disturb this process."

Then, Big Bear removed all the defenses from his mind for the

first time in his life. And, his entire 'Qi Structure' was exposed to the explorations of that person's hand. In fact, this was also the first time that Big Bear had become so unreserved and had put such an enormous amount of trust in a human.

Long Crane complied, and quietly slipped out. And, he started to watch the surroundings very attentively for any activity. This was supposed to be their territory, but Long Crane still acted like it was ruled by a great enemy. He was extremely vigilant...

Because... this breakthrough was very important for Big Bear and him!

Big Bear's eyes were closed, and he could only feel a cool sensation on his shoulder. In fact, it felt as if it was winter-time. Then, he suddenly felt something similar to ice-cold water pour onto his shoulder. This feeling then seeped to his bones. He could feel the pure aura bubble-out from that hand and pour into him. In fact, it was flowing out like a river. And, that river had started to irrigate his meridians!

His meridians had already reached a critical point. In fact, they had attained the peak of a Beast King's strength. But, they were then edged-on by the pure aura they received, and started to enliven... bit by bit. After that, the meridians began to accept the aura, and eventually started to expand a little...

[This is so fast. It is an astonishing progress. And, it is so effective!]

Big Bear was astonished by this, and his immediate reaction was one of admiration. But, he still didn't dare to allow even the slightest of chaos to seep into his mind. Instead, he made a great effort to guide the flow of that powerful external aura through his internal cultivation structure. And, it started to trickle into his Dantian little by little...

Long Crane was standing around thirty feet away when he found that Big Bear's body had suddenly started to emit a faint milky-

white mist. And, it was becoming denser with every passing moment. In fact, the mist continued to become more and more concentrated until the big and sturdy body of Big Bear had been enshrouded in it.

"This is an unworldly aura! In fact, this is the sign of someone being on the verge of breaking through to the tenth level! How could he reach breakthrough so quickly?! How's this possible?!" Long Crane cried out in alarm. In fact, the Crane King was subconsciously rubbing his eyes since he couldn't believe what he was witnessing...

[A miracle is happening in front of me! An incredible miracle!]

The mysterious person had promised to help them with their breakthrough. However, Long Crane had assumed this entire matter differently. The man may sincerely try to help, and he may even possess some extremely remarkable method. However, he had figured that the best result would be an increase in their cultivation which would take them to the critical point in a fell swoop. So, he had felt that the two of them would have to endure bitter hardships and pain-staking practice before they'd eventually breakthrough to a higher level.

He had considered that scenario as the best possible conclusion to this!

However, Long Crane could've never imagined that this mysterious and skilled person would use his powerful aura to help them in breaking through the bottleneck without a pause... and, that too in the blink of an eye!

[What does this mean? What does this signify?]

This meant that this mysterious black-clothed man was willing to sacrifice his own strength for them. He had gone through bitter hardship, and had travelled across the world to help these two brothers. Long Crane's eyes quickly became somewhat moist. [We had wagered an insignificant task in exchange of this. What would

such a task be in the eyes of such a peerless person? And, this mysteriously skilled person has still fulfilled his promise! In fact, he's even sacrificing his own strength for it!]

[How many people in history have honored their promises with such seriousness? How could such people ever be untrustworthy? How could anyone still doubt that this person would cheat us and run away with the Sacred Fruit? That would be a huge joke!]

It's important to know that this mysterious person could easily kill the two Beast Kings in one move since they had lowered their guards. And, he would've gained top-tier Xuan Cores of Beast Kings who were on the verge of breaking through to the tenth level. Moreover, he wouldn't have had to expend any energy for doing this. It would've been a great procurement for him, and it would've surely been very advantageous for his cultivation as well.

However, he didn't do it. Instead, that man complied with the agreement. In fact, he was even sacrificing his strength to help the two Beast Kings with their breakthrough.

Long Crane asked himself if he would've sacrificed his strength to help Big Bear with his breakthrough?

And, he became red with shame after he had carefully considered the possibility for a while. And, that was because he had come up with a clear subconscious answer — No!

[I'm not willing to make that sacrifice for my own brother... let alone other people!]

[This black-clothed mysterious person deserved the admiration of everyone around the world. Any friend of his' would feel reassured, fearless, and honored.]

Jun Mo Xie would've become giddy with happiness if had gotten to know what the two Beast Kings were thinking at this time. In fact, he would have fainted, and still woken up giddy. Moreover, that cycle would've continued for several iterations.

The obviously seemed to be a big misunderstanding.

Jun Mo Xie was obviously serious about his promise. And, he had genuinely expended a massive amount of extremely pure aura. But, he wasn't sacrificing his own strength to help the two with their breakthrough. In fact, the Young Master Jun would've never agreed to this deal if he would've had to do such a thing. He had never been a great and towering hero. So, how could he ever do such a great and altruistic deed?

The reason was obvious. The Xuan Beasts of Tian Fa regarded this pure aura to be extremely valuable. In fact, they valued it far more than the Young Master Jun. Moreover, the quantity of aura inside the Hong Jun Pagoda was very large for Jun Mo Xie. In fact, it was nearly inexhaustible. He was increasingly absorbing more and more aura with the increase in his cultivation. However, he wouldn't feel the need to worry about its scarcity...

Using the Hong Jun Pagoda to help the Xuan Beast Kings with their breakthrough was nothing to Jun Mo Xie. In fact, it was almost as if a man with a mountain of gold the size of the Great Himalayas was trying to flaunt his wealth in front of everyday office-goers. Such a person could easily give everyone a few gold coins and seem generous as he'd say, "It's nothing. Go and have fun with it..."

The scale of the assistance he was lending was something similar...

Moreover, Big Bear and Long Crane were simple and honest creatures. And, this was to Jun Mo Xie's liking. Therefore, he was willing to help them. And, getting to the heart of the matter — helping them out would still carry many benefits for him...

These two weren't ordinary individuals. In fact, both of them were easily equal to some of the Great Master. So, extending a hand of friendship to them would bring no harm...

It is often said that it's more than enough to have only one friend



who is willing to help you in the need of hour. But, how could anyone dislike having more of such friends?

[I've received a lot of quick help from these guys. And, I've obtained the 'Thousand Evil and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit' from them. I've also collected so many other rare herbs from their forest.] This had left Jun Mo Xie to feel that he had done nothing for them in comparison. In fact, he even felt a little guilty. The Young Master Jun would never consider himself a good man, but he still had some conscience. Therefore, he felt extremely bad...

[I haven't done much for them when I compare it to what they have done for me.] However, The two Beast Kings felt the same way. In fact, their sentiment was a hundred times stronger than Jun Mo Xie's.

[He's genuinely an exceptional man!]

Big Bear sighed in his heart. He had been emotionally moved by this. Suddenly, he felt that the energy-circulation inside his dantian had started to become increasingly urgent. In fact, it had soon taken the form of a whirlpool. And, that heavenly aura had become exceptionally frenetic in a split second...

The aura amassed!

He went past that critical point without stopping, and attained his breakthrough with an explosion!

Big Bear's state of mind was very tense, and he didn't allow his mind to wander. He spared no efforts, and gave his all to push through his meridians. The forceful aura coming from that hand had started to feel warm. Suddenly, a loud sound was heard. In fact, this sound was loud enough to shake a mountain!

Bang!

The thick mist that had surrounded Big Bear suddenly disappeared. Then, there was a loud noise. However, no would figure its origin. But, it had left everyone's heart to tremble. It was

indeed a very mysterious feeling.

Jun Mo Xie's body suddenly flashed. He appeared ten feet away, and stood beside Long Crane. His black hood was somewhat moist. And, his body was shuddering lightly. It seemed to Long Crane that he was about to collapse.

Long Crane felt very gratefully at this time, and he was about to speak-up. Then, he saw Jun Mo Xie put his finger in front of his mouth in an indication that he needed to remain silent. Jun Mo Xie then said, "He has just made a breakthrough!"

How could a Beast King like Long Crane not know that? His very soul had been shaken a moment ago. And, he had immediately realized that Big Bear had finally broken through.

Big Bear's post-breakthrough strength was easily equal to that of the Second Great Master, Li Jue Tian. In fact, it might even have transcended that...

Big Bear unconsciously let out a loud and vigorous screech at first. Then, there was a flash of a golden light. In fact, this dazzling light painted the ground in its color as it spread out.

After that, Big Bear's body started to rise in front of these two individuals even though there was no wind. Then, there was a loud bone-crunching sound. In fact, the echoes of that explosive sound reached the very soul. Many similar explosions were heard thereafter. And, this was followed by a very loud sound, "Bang!"

The accumulated strength inside Big Bear's body had finally broken out. And, his majestic body had also been lowered from mid-air. He now had the body of a magnificent, fierce, and tough bear.

The golden hair that covered his body suddenly started to turn a deeper shade. In fact, each of his hair seemed to be exuding magnificent splendor. This astonishing phenomenon continued to for a while before it came to a stop...

The Xuan Beasts throughout Tian Fa had gone silent. In fact, many of the Xuan Beast Kings had started to tremble with fear. Even their very souls could sense that a formidable entity had arrived in Tian Fa. A real Beast King had taken birth!

# Chapter 389: Many Beast Kings Gather to Celebrate with Jun Mo Xie!

---

Big Bear came down to the ground after a long time passed. He then transformed into his human form again. He seemed very happy as he looked over his body. It seemed as if he was in a dream. A long, long time passed. However, it seemed as if this dream-like state of his' hadn't come to pass.

He examined his body very thoroughly a few times before he finally accepted that he had genuinely made a breakthrough.

Big Bear looked upwards, and let out a roar. Then, two tears rolled down his big eyes. He then took great strides, and stood in front of Jun Mo Xie. After that, he eagerly kneeled.

Jun Mo Xie was startled by this. Consequently, he didn't even get the time to stop Big Bear as he continually knocked his head on the ground. Meanwhile, Big Bear choked with emotion as he spoke, "Thank you... thank you..."

Long Crane had been standing on the side this entire time, and his eyes had also somewhat reddened.

He was also a Xuan Beast King like Big Bear, and he had also been stuck at the same bottleneck. Therefore, he understood Big Bear's frame of mind. And, he also understood why the Bear King was kowtowing. Big Bear had acted like this because that mysterious person had given the two of them a new lease of life.

Jun Mo Xie hurriedly pulled Big Bear to stand upright, and said, "What is this for? We had made an agreement. And, I was only honoring my commitment. There's no need to do this!" Jun Mo Xie felt somewhat embarrassed as he said this. In fact, he felt as if he was the typical sort of man who took cheap advantages of others...

[This isn't that big a deal. I could do this eight to ten times a day. And, I'd still have room for more...]

However, Big Bear and Long Crane didn't feel that way. And so, they spoke-up with tears in their eyes, "This may have been an agreement, and it may not feel much to you... but, it means the world to us. In fact, it is similar to receiving a new lease of life! We don't have the words to thank you for this huge favor! The senior can send us on any errand without hesitation, and we would do whatever he says. The strength of our bodies isn't weak. We aren't called Beast Kings for no reason!"

Jun Mo Xie looked at Big Bear. His eyes were glittering with a luster of sincerity. In fact, Jun Mo Xie was left to feel that his future plans to exploit their strength were a bit despicable after he witnessed the genuine sincerity in their eyes.

He faced upwards, and sighed as he finally figured it out. [One may need many schemes to motivate their subordinates to face the enemy. And, one may need to use such scheme again and again. However, no such methods are required to seek help from a true friend. In fact, a little kindness would be enough to motivate them.]

And, Big Bear was obviously such a person...

He wouldn't forget someone's kindness until the day of his death.

And, such people were worth making friends with.

Jun Mo Xie's expression became peculiarly gentle as he softly patted Big Bear's shoulder and said in an earnest tone, "Don't be like this, Big Bear. I genuinely consider you a friend!"

He let out a prolonged sigh, and spoke, "I don't have many friends in this world. You are one of the very few... so you don't need to thank me!"

Big Bear's face lit-up since he became overjoyed at these unexpected words, "Great! That's amazing! I was acting in a very unnatural manner, ha ha..."

Jun Mo Xie chuckled gently, "Now it's your turn to keep guard

while I help Crane King and fulfill my promise."

Long Crane anxiously suggested, "You must've become very exhausted. Why don't you rest for a while and recuperate?"

Jun Mo Xie replied, "No, I can still do it. Come on." He then extended his hand.

Long Crane hesitated at first. He repeatedly sized-up Jun Mo Xie to ensure he was alright before he eventually sat down.

... ..

Some time had passed. Jun Mo Xie looked at the ecstasy filled faces of Long Crane and Big Bear. And, he suddenly felt very happy inside. In fact, he couldn't even describe this strange and unspeakable happiness.

This kind of happiness was entirely different from the one he'd feel after his well-calculated plan had succeeded... or the ecstasy of suddenly discovering treasure... or even the relief after he had killed an enemy.

This was a very pure form of happiness! And, this strange happiness had surprisingly given Jun Mo Xie great joy.

[The struggle of fighting to death is very thrilling... But, helping people on the odd occasion also feels very good...]

Jun Mo Xie smiled as he pondered...

The Young Master Jun had been feeling cheerful and content the entire night.

Big Bear and Long Crane spared no efforts to invite their benefactor for a celebration. In fact, they even vowed that they already prepared some Monkey Wine as a token of their appreciation...

It was very difficult for Young Master Jun to decline the great kindness and repeated invites of the two Xuan Beast Kings. And, it would also be unreasonable to do so. Moreover, there was still a lot

of time left before the break of dawn. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie gladly accepted their invite...

The Monkey Wine was considered legendary in comparison to the inferior wines of the rest of the world. Therefore, it would be too big a waste of the opportunity if he didn't try it...

Big Bear unendingly gave orders to the level nine and level eight Xuan Beasts as they proceeded forward, and asked them to bring the best and the tastiest wine. In fact, he even told them to "deliver the wine at the speed which matches the Crane King's!" Consequently, a huge chaos had been stirred-up in the center of Tian Fa.

This turmoil was even greater than the one that the forest had witness at the time of the Xuan Beasts' uprising. In fact, it was greater by a fair margin. The depths of the Tian Fa forest would usually be quiet in the middle of the night. But, its sky was dust-ridden at this time. And, the strongest Xuan Beasts were moving-around like ordinary houseflies. In fact, it seemed as if they were scattering in disarray.

The ruckus created during the Xuan Beasts' uprising was massive in scale, but it hadn't had any effect on the depths of Tian Fa. But, the territory was suddenly witnessing a major fit of chaos in the middle of the night...

The following visuals had suddenly become very common — A bear would be chaotically charging through the forest with a fruit wine from the northern side. His heavy footsteps would leave the ground to tremble. A Golden Tiger would be rushing alongside him with a fruit basket on his back...

Someone would often turn a bend, but would unfortunately collide with a level nine beast! A loud "Bang!" would be heard, and both of them would be thrown down to the ground. Consequently, the ground would end-up being covered with the cherished fruits...

The Tiger King, Lion King, and Falcon King also rushed-in like a

tornado in quick succession. They obviously knew that they wouldn't get many opportunities to drink on the same table as such a strong individual! And, only a fool wouldn't do their utmost to take hold of such an opportunity. [Maybe this person will help us make our breakthrough... Didn't we see how Third and Fourth Brothers made their breakthroughs so mysteriously? No heavenly treasure apart from the Sacred Fruit can have such a terrifying effect, right...?]

Jun Mo Xie's eyes had opened-wide when he saw the huge stone table in front of him.

The Young Master Jun felt dizzy when he saw the two 'wine cups'. In fact, he suspected that Big Bear and Long Crane had perhaps invited him to bathe in the wine instead of drinking it. [The sizes of these 'wine cups' and the 'wine barrels' are phenomenal...! Even a bath tub isn't this huge...]

One golden-furred monkey was transporting a small barrel of Monkey Wine with sincere effort. However, a small barrel of Monkey Wine would be enough for Big Bear and Long Crane's drinking capacity. Consequently, one could see several golden-furred monkeys transporting more of those barrels towards this place from afar. Everyone without exception was putting their best efforts to task...

Then, the chiefs of peak level nine Xuan Beasts, level nine Xuan Beasts, and level eight Xuan Beasts came over. Each of them had a flattering expression on their faces as they offered some cherished fruits. In fact, they even wagged their tails before they retreated in a respectful manner.

[Damn! There are so many rare fruits here. Forget about eating or seeing them — they're only mentioned in the legends! These are so rare!] Young Master Jun couldn't help himself as a light flashed in his eyes. [How much money could I make if I took these back to Tian Xiang?]



[These fruits are amazing. But, these Xuan Beasts are even more astonishing! Who has ever seen the faces of lions and bears with human-like expressions of flattery... as if they wish to belie their desire to curry a favor? I have!] Moreover, it wasn't just one or two of them... or even a group or two of them — this was the case with each and every one of them. So, how could this scene not be weird...?

Each one of them had arrived prepared with the intention to welcome Jun Mo Xie!

Consequently, Jun Mo Xie's self-importance shot up in a matter of seconds...

He suddenly felt like a legendary figure — The Monkey King!

He almost felt like the Monkey King from the fables. The Monkey King had created a ruckus on the Heavenly Mountains. Therefore, he had been banished. However, he was later proclaimed the King of the mountains, and everyone had prostrated in front of him. This scene was something similar to that one...

Such a pleasant day was one that was fit for the immortals only...

Then, a huge white lion carefully came-up to the stone table in a respectful manner. He then awkwardly cupped his two furry paws, and arched his back as he faced Jun Mo Xie. After that, he took a seat with half of his posterior on the stone bench, while his flagpole-like tail wagged behind him non-stop...

Jun Mo Xie was stunned for a moment. And, it took him a while before he realized that the lion had offered salutations to him. In fact, the beast had actually cupped his paws in courtesy!

[He's so polite!]

[This is really astonishing!]

Big Bear made the introductions a while after the new-arrival sat down, "Senior, this is my Sixth Brother. He's the Lion King — Careless Rock."

"Ke ke ke..." Jun Mo Xie coughed in a violent manner and said, "Lion King? Is his surname genuinely related to that word for cow dung...? Doesn't it stink? This name is very... unique!"

Big Bear and Long Crane froze. They had been left dumbstruck by this remark. A dark line appeared on the Lion King's forehead. He wanted to drill a hole in the ground so that he could hide in it due to the embarrassment. The embarrassed Beast King then gave many meaningful looks to Big Bear. What it meant was..."Hurry up and explain my name to him! That meaning is making me nauseous. It's killing my mood to drink the wine. "

"Senior may have misunderstood. The Sixth Brother's name means, 'Careless Rock', and ahm... ahm... not 'carelessly defecated rocks', ahm... ahm..." Long Crane coughed as he explained.

"So that's what it is! I guess I misunderstood because of my bias. I request the Lion King to not feel offended." Jun Mo Xie nodded and cupped his hand towards the Lion King.

The Lion King became calm once again. [This mysterious person has actually apologized to me! His conduct genuinely befits that of such a skilled man!] He had started to feel unhappy to his very stomach a moment ago. But, he suddenly felt that he had regained some honor again.

Another individual had also arrived some time ago. However, this one was in his human form, and was adorned in golden clothes. This individual was the Golden Tiger King. He too had wanted to speak-up, but he found himself choking when he heard the remark that was made on the Lion King's name. However, he quickly bowed in salutation as Jun Mo Xie's vision shifted towards his direction.

"He's the Ninth. The Golden Tiger King — Earth Cracker," the corners of Big Bear's big mouth had drawn back into a smile while he made the introductions. He seemingly hadn't moved-on from that previous remark yet...

"Tiger King, Earth Cracker! Ah, this name is indeed bold and powerful! And, it's interesting the way it corresponds with Big Bear!" Jun Mo Xie's expression was a gentle one behind the veil. The Golden Tiger King felt very happy about that comment. In fact, he had been overwhelmed by this senior's grace by the time he took his seat.

# Chapter 390: I Will Do This For Your Reputation

---

Suddenly, a dark cloud appeared overhead as the Falcon King spread his huge wings and glided down. He arrived over everyone's head. After that, his body suddenly reduced in size, and changed into a dark-grey-clad grim man. A big aquiline nose hung from his face, and he looked very fierce. He cupped his hand in a deferential salute to Jun Mo Xie after he landed.

"This is our Tenth Brother, the Falcon King — Sky Breaker." This introduction was made by the Crane King. It seemed that the airborne Xuan Beasts fell under Long Crane's command, and the terrestrial Xuan Beasts fell under Big Bear's command according to Tian Fa's hierarchical system.

One could clearly see as a huge monkey as he rushed over from afar at a lightning speed. He was visibly larger than any other monkey around. He panted as he faced Jun Mo Xie, and made his salutations.

"This is our Seventh Brother — the Monkey King. His name is Seventh Earl." Big Bear's eyes made it seem as if some matter had hurt his spirit. He said, "You've already met our Eighth Younger Sister — the Snake King. She has gone out with our eldest sibling for some work. So, they're not in the forest at this time. Our youngest brother has disappeared, and hasn't been seen for the three years since..."

"Oh okay. I could only meet the Lord of Tian Fa — Venerable Mei — for a short time. And, I really regret that. I had come to meet her as well, but it couldn't happen. What a pity...! And, that little girl — the Snake King — had acted with guts. She took responsibility, and I genuinely appreciate that!"

Jun Mo Xie chuckled as he uncovered the lid of his wine cup. The Beast Kings thought that he would drink, but they were bewildered

to see that he didn't touch the wine cup for a while. But then, the wine cup floated in the sky, and a fragrance assailed their nostrils. This was the fragrance of the Monkey Wine. It then circled in mid-air like a whale which was swimming in sea-water. After that, it went towards Jun Mo Xie, and disappeared behind his veil.

Jun Mo Xie took a sip, and smacked his lips. He then closed his eyes. It seemed as if he was enjoying the aftertaste. He then said, "Good! This deserves to be called the Monkey Wine! It truly deserves its reputation!"

The Beast Kings had been stunned by this. [This person is genuinely very skilled! Even the way he drinks wine is so unique!]

The Beast Kings had intended to take that opportunity to make Jun Mo Xie drink wine. They had believed that they would get to see the appearance of this mysterious master by doing so. But, Jun Mo Xie had used that skill, and they had failed in their objective. However, they could only sigh since they felt a little disappointed.

Jun Mo Xie then changed the topic and asked, "Oh yes! Big Bear, I'm a bit confused with the introductions you made a moment ago. I know that Tian Fa works with a hierarchal system like ours, and has always done so. That is no secret. The Tiger King is the Ninth, and Falcon King is the Tenth. So, why is it that they have taken their human form when the Lion King and the Monkey King are still in their Beast forms even though they are the Sixth and the Seventh...?"

These words immediately sunk the atmosphere, and made it restrictive. The eyes of the Lion King and Monkey King had suddenly brimmed with extreme sadness.

"Senior has asked this question. So, we will answer. This isn't really a secret... Lion King and Monkey King had left Tian Fa for their adventures sixty years ago..."

Long Crane continued in a deep and pensive tone, "But, they lacked experience with the world outside. So, they had revealed

themselves and their whereabouts after they had gone out. Four of the Eight Great Masters had joined hands, and had launched a pincer attack on them. It had been an arduous battle. The Sixth and Seventh weren't able to match them. In fact, they were barely able to escape with their lives... they had nearly been turned into corpses by the Great Masters' hands. They were lucky to escape... but not without unavoidable injuries. In fact, they fled that battle with incurable injuries. We were able to save their lives, but they had suffered irrevocable damages. Consequently, they have fallen back to level nine. These two have also lost their ability to take on the human form ever since. And, they still haven't been able to get over that injury..."

Crane King then spoke with grief and indignation, "Lei Bao Yu and Bu Kuang Feng had been amongst those Four Great Masters! Those two bastards! Eldest was extremely furious when this happened. Eldest even stormed the Elusive World of Immortals to look for justice. But, that wasn't enough to deal with the power of the Elusive World of Immortals. So, there was no choice but to leave the matter unsettled. Ah..."

Lion King and Monkey King hung their heads down in sadness. Their strengths had been impaired, and their cultivations had suffered serious setbacks. Consequently, even the seniority of their position in Tian Fa wasn't guaranteed to last. In fact, they would have to cup their paws and surrender their titles of Beast Kings if another beast from their respective species ever reached the peak of level nine...

There had been many lion and monkey beasts who had reached close to the peak of level nine over the years. The difference in strength wasn't that great either. Those said-beasts were only a step behind. And, this posed a serious threat to the leadership of the two Beast Kings. They would be helpless if their strengths fell short. That was the standard rule, and rules must be obeyed. Tyrannical strength was everything...

Moreover, the situation in both of the Beast Kings' groups had slowly become discordant over years. It didn't resemble the situation from that time in the past when their word was law. There had been a time when they had commanded strict obedience, absolute authority, and absolute strength. However, that time had come to pass. In fact, they would've already lost their positions if the other Beast Kings weren't helping them in secrecy...

However, the Xuan Beast groups had always favored the strong and discarded the weak. This was an uneasy truth which had been as such since eternity. Their groups may have some warm feelings towards them. However, their own kind would have no choice but to comply with the basic laws of 'survival of the strongest' if a viable candidate were to appear within their groups. And, Big Bear and the others couldn't get involved in their internal strife for the position of Beast King when that time came...

It would be the end for those Kings when that time came...

"You've got injured... he he... what injury could be sharp-enough to have such grave consequences? Let me have a look. Perhaps I can heal it... can't say for sure though." these words had barely exited Jun Mo Xie's mouth, and the six Xuan Beast Kings had already begun to tremble. Their eyes were filled with a look of ecstasy!

[Who's this man in front of us?]

[He's a great and unmatched person!]

[I'm sure that there's nothing that he can't accomplish! He hasn't said that he can help them for certain. But, the two Beast Kings have hope as long as he tries!]

[This individual possesses the strength that has helped two Beast Kings to advance without a hitch. So, what would some insignificant injuries be for him?!

The Lion and the Monkey King were moved by this. In fact, their bodies had somewhat started to tremble.

The hope that they had been waiting for... had finally presented itself!

Jun Mo Xie calmly extended his hand, and lightly touched Lion King's broad and furry shoulder. After that, a strand of refreshing and pure divine aura entered into his meridians. The Lion King suddenly felt very comfortable as this happened. That small strand of aura cycled through the meridians inside his body. It continued to cycle for a while until Jun Mo Xie retracted his hand. After that, he lightly put his hand on the Monkey King's shoulder...

The faces of the Beast Kings had nervousness written over them as they looked at him. However, not a single one of them dared to utter a single word for fear that they might disturb that very able person.

They couldn't see that mysterious person's expression since Jun Mo Xie's face was covered with a veil. So, they could only do try their best to try and guess his expression. However, Jun Mo Xie's expression was very mild and placid.

Jun Mo Xie eventually stopped after he had expended his efforts. He then slowly let out a sigh. But, the breath in his sigh seemed biting and angered to the six Beast Kings. In fact, the hearts of the six of them had begun to throb...

"The condition of Sixth Rock and Seventh Earl isn't good. Their meridians have been inflicted with heavy damages. Moreover, a portion of them have been shattered. And, this has blocked the cycling of the aura from their dantian. Also, there's an unfathomable, malicious, and mysterious power which has remained hidden inside their meridians. And, this power is rather hard to deal with. That malicious power brings-about the unceasing destruction of your foundation. In fact, you should've been able to recover a long time ago if it weren't for this. There



isn't too much of that energy inside you. But, it's still enough to bring your cultivation to a standstill. In fact, it has been reducing your cultivation in a slow and steady manner. I'm sure that the signs of tendency have already emerged..."

Jun Mo Xie sighed and said, "This is a very sinister Xuan skill. Which of those four Great Masters did this to you?"

The Lion and the Monkey King blankly stared at each other. And, the spontaneously saw the answer in each other's eyes.

The Lion King moistened his claws with the wine, and slowly wrote something on the table. They had lost the ability to take-on the human form. So, they had also lost their ability to speak like humans. But, they were still able to write...

"The Great Master of the Evil Winds — Yin Huang Quan!"

"So it was the Great Master of the Evil Wind's move! It's not surprising that it was so sinister!" Long Crane and the others exclaimed in unison.

"Senior... you've examined them... is there no hope? Can they be cured?" Big Bear asked nervously. Lion King, Monkey King, and the other four-footed Xuan Beasts came under Big Bear's jurisdiction. Moreover, they had been working together for a long time. So, they were very close to each other. It was unknown how many pains Big Bear would have to take... and how much time it would take to form such a close partnership with anyone again...

"That sharp and sinister injury from the Great Master of the Evil Wind is sixty years old." Jun Mo Xie intentionally-or-unintentionally started to shake his head. The Lion and the Monkey King saw this very skilled person, and felt that he looked helpless in the face of danger. So, they couldn't help but feel disheartened since their hopes had turned to dust.

Big Bear's expression underwent a drastic change as well, "Don't tell me that there is no hope!"

Jun Mo Xie looked at the urgency of Big Bear's expression, and let out a long sigh. He had a warm color in his eyes, "This is a matter of grudges which are sixty years old. And, I didn't wish to get involved. But, I can't watch that expression on your face, Big Bear. I guess it's fated... So, I will help you! These injuries are quite severe, but they aren't untreatable. Yin Huang Quan must be quite ruthless, but he's nothing in my eyes!"

This had showed-off Big Bear's enormous reputation.

Big Bear was moved after he heard those words. His big and furry face had started to revel with pride and glory. His face exposed an arrogant grin, but he didn't know what to say...

[I can't watch that expression of your face...]

[Damn! This has got me excited!]

The Lion and the Monkey Kings had started to tremble unconsciously. This news was no less than sudden thunder from the sky to their ears. In fact, their beating-hearts had almost come to a stop.

They had been in hell a moment ago — and they were suddenly in heaven.

They had no hope at first. So, they had no option but to despair. Then, they had received such a huge surprise!

The despaired Lion and Monkey King had been overwhelmed. After all, they had seen that deity-like senior look helpless a moment ago. Moreover, that mysterious person had given them a negative reaction a second ago...

However, this kind of a wound was a piece of cake for Jun Mo Xie in reality...

This was very similar to the time when Jun Wu Yi's legs had been severely injured. A Spirit Xuan expert would have to give their all, and would have to use the entirety of their medical expertise in order to cure it. However, the victim would still suffer a lot of

damage to their cultivation if that were to happen. Moreover, even that Spirit Xuan helper's cultivation would suffer a great loss.

Big Bear and Long Crane's breakthroughs were another example of such an instance. In fact, the Lords of the Three Holy Lands may join hands, but they would still regard this matter as "impossible". But, this "untreatable injury" was nothing for Young Master Jun...

# Chapter 391: Jun Mo Xie's Magnificent Plan!

---

The reason wasn't him. It was the Hong Jun Pagoda's aura. It was the bane of that sinister power since it was the purest aura in all of existence. In fact, it was the aura with the most vigor since it was the aura of life. That is... it was the force of life.

The entire world had originated from Primal Chaos. And, nothing can deceive the force of primal chaos since everything had been derived from it. The Hongjun Pagoda inside Jun Mo Xie was the most essential source of this power.

However, it's only natural that one would have to adjust according to the local setting. Otherwise Jun Mo Xie would lose the advantage of the miraculous effects of the Hongjun Pagoda's power.

Jun Mo Xie had always been very enthusiastic about the Tian Fa Forest. And, he suddenly got an idea after he was finished assisting Big Bear and Long Crane with their breakthroughs.

He had never been able to stand the world's clamor. Nor could he live a chaotic life. In fact, Jun Mo Xie was extremely tired of all that turmoil. Young Master Jun's journey had recently come to a start in this world, but he had already begun to hope for a secluded place to lead his life in peace.

[I will fulfill my responsibilities one day. Then, I will find myself a quiet place, and settle down there to lead a peaceful life.]

And, the Tian Fa Forest was an ideal place of seclusion for Jun Mo Xie...

In fact, even the snakes inside the Tian Fa Forest seemed far more pleasant than those high and mighty humans to Jun Mo Xie's eyes.

And, this was because... this place was free of the scheme and plots that had plagued the outside world.

Jun Mo Xie hated the scheming and the plotting. He would indulge in the scheming at times. But, he had always preferred a direct confrontation. [You want to see who's more powerful? Why don't you take a swing at me? Why beat around the bush? Why waste time with the nonsense?]

In fact, Jun Mo Xie's idea could perhaps be considered a grand design.

[I will change the society's rules if I ever become the supreme in this world.]

[And, I will restructure this world with my own methods!]

[No one will go against my rules! Even the Spirit Xuan experts and Great Masters won't be able to become the exceptions!]

[I don't wish to rule the whole world. But, I want the world to understand what I want!]

[The Xuan experts will have to take a test every year. There are different levels within Xuan cultivation. So, each level shall have its specific clothing and color. One shall get a new color of clothing once they would reach a new level. And, they will have to continue wearing their older clothes unless they've reached a higher level.]

[The divisions would be clear if this is implemented... just like they used to be in my previous life... all the way from kindergarten to university!]

[And, the Tian Fa Forest will be the seat of authority. Tian Fa will be the place from where these rules will be issued!]

[And, that's because this is the place of Jun Mo Xie's future residence!]

Jun Mo Xie even thought of prescribing hats to every division of rank. And, this brought a smile to his face. This was because Jun Mo Xie could suddenly imagine a scene where two people meet and wish to fight after they had quarreled for a while. However, they would then see each other's hats... and then shake hands and

resolve the issue.

"Ah! You're a green hat? I'm a black hat! I'm far below you in rank! What's that? Let's go. Let's go, and have a drink. It's my treat!"

"Yes it is! Look at how ugly your black hat is! He he... look at how wonderful my shiny-green hat is!"

"I genuinely admire the green hat you've put on."

"You're too kind. You flatter me. He he... you can also wear a green hat one day if you work hard."

"Perhaps I could achieve that with your guidance. Ha Ha!"

... ..

Jun Mo Xie thought about the scene, and how he had gotten carried away... he couldn't help but burst into a loud laughter as a result...

This sudden and impulsive thought may have seemed like a joke to him at this time. However, Jun Mo Xie could never have imagined that it would become the premiere law of the Xuan Xuan Continent for the thousands of years to come. It would be called the law of the Evil Monarch!

It would remain unchanged for millennia! And, it would all have come from this...

The Lion King and the Monkey King had started to believe that their incurable injuries would soon be treated. And, they couldn't help but feel relaxed...

Why wouldn't they feel happy and excited? Why wouldn't they feel relaxed?

Jun Mo Xie came back to himself after a long while passed. He then chuckled and said, "We shouldn't delay this any longer if that's the case. Sixth and Seventh, come to me right now. I'll look at you right now... and you will turn back into your human form.

That should also help you in drinking wine. Anyway, these beastly forms look very inelegant around the wine table..."

Jun Mo Xie thought... [This is the first time I'm drinking inside Tian Fa. Would I genuinely have to toast drinks with a monkey and a lion? That would be very awkward...! They will still remain a monkey and lion once they transform into human forms. But, they will at least look like humans...]

[Moreover, wouldn't this help in setting the path for the future...?]

Therefore, the Young Master Jun was very proactive at this time.

The Lion King could barely contain his fervent tears. His white hair trembled. In fact, he resembled an excited puppy as he came in front of Jun Mo Xie and crouched down. The Beast King's tail was wagging. But, he was so emotionally moved that his tail wagged at a very high frequency and slammed into the 'wine cup' Big Bear held in his hand. Consequently, the 'cup of wine' was thrown far-far away...

The other Beast Kings burst into laughter. Jun Mo Xie didn't care about it either. However, he didn't waste any time as he raised his hand. He simulated the Hongjun Pagoda with his body's aura, and a lofty Aura burst out with a loud sound. It shone brilliantly in the sky as it did...

The other five Beast Kings recoiled in shock.

Jun Mo Xie had used a swift and powerful method in order to facilitate a quick-fix in this instance. In fact, he had gone to the extreme of his limits. It was going to be morning-time soon. However, he didn't have much time to waste...

This extreme method obviously wasn't similar to the one he had used when he had helped the Bear and Crane Kings with their breakthrough. Their breakthrough had been very gentle. However, the aura surged through the Lion King's meridians at a

very fast pace, and took him past the breakthrough-barrier in an instant. And, the unimaginable and tyrannical impact of this violently surging aura left the Spirit-level-equivalent Lion King to raise his head and give out a blood-curdling screech as his mouth spat-out blood like an arrow...

After that, the pestering-cold aura that had remained accumulated inside the Lion King for the past sixty years was expelled from his body. In fact, his condition seemed like that of a dog that had been beaten by a beggar's stick, which had then resulted in a thin arrow of blood to splash out from his mouth...

The violent aura that had surged between the heaven and earth was done with its mission. It then cycled warmly through the Lion King's meridians to ensure no cold aura was left inside them. And, it removed any sinister aura that had still remained there. The very able Young Master then raised his head, and pushed the Lion King aside even though the Beast King's eyes were still closed. He then spoke-up in a cold voice, "Next one!"

His manner of speaking was cold and tyrannical. In fact, it was like that of a doctor who had gone to elementary school for an 'immunization program', and had called for the next student even though the needle wasn't yet out of the previous one...

[What? It's already done! This is miraculous! Isn't it very miraculous?!]

The Monkey King trembled as he came to Jun Mo Xie. He then occupied the place which had previously been occupied by the Lion King. However, he wasn't prepared when he felt the pressure on his shoulders. Moreover, this pressure was as heavy as a mountain. The Young Master had already placed his hand on the Monkey King. So, the pure aura had quickly entered the latter's body...

The Monkey King felt a fit of comfortable sensation and wanted to groan to express his elation. However, he was unaware that a gut-wrenching and devastatingly painful sensation would shoot



through him the next moment... His teeth almost broke-off as he screeched, and a black arrow of blood shot towards the trees from his mouth as this happened...

[This is painful... extremely painful... how can such a painful and torturous method be used to treat an illness? This is too extreme a method!] The Golden Monkey King was in the midst of thinking this when he suddenly heard a shout of ecstasy from his side.

He was very preoccupied, and in extreme pain. However, he still looked to his side from the corner of his eyes. And, what he saw... left him to open his eyes wide. In fact, they had been opened to their very limits. [My God of Beasts! Good mother of God!]

[This is a miracle indeed! This is truly a miracle!]

A strange yet familiar white-clothed tall figure was standing beside him. [This, this is Lion King?! My God! This method work so quickly! This is such a quick result!]

The Monkey King felt envious and relieved at the same time. [This pain isn't a problem as long as my injuries can be healed. What's this insignificant pain if my injuries can be healed? Let the pain be fiercer!]

The Monkey King suddenly forgot the excruciating pain he was feeling at this moment. Instead, he started to feel ecstasy; enrapturing ecstasy. He couldn't help but feel very happy, and started to laugh in a very wild manner as a result. However, that sound of wild laughter startled the other Beast Kings. In fact, even the heavenly aura which had been flowing from Jun Mo Xie's hand fluctuated to some extent...

[Why are you laughing, buddy? Have you gone mad from the excruciating pain? You won't kill me, right?]

The Monkey King was laughing in ecstasy even though he was in excruciating pain. One could say that his level of forbearance had transcended to mythical levels...

[He's really... a great man!]

That dark aura left the Monkey King's body along with the black blood he soon spat out. Jun Mo Xie then said, "Great! Now everyone can drink the wine properly!"

Jun Mo Xie then looked up, and saw that the six Beast Kings were looking at him with baffled expressions. He recalled that this expression was something similar to the one he had seen in the eyes of the Himalayan pilgrims in his previous life.

It was full of... fanaticism!

It was indeed fanaticism! Extreme fanaticism! It was like a Buddhist monk had gotten to see Buddha himself! Or... a Nazi who had suddenly seen Adolf Hitler...

He was their idol now!

He was like a God to them!

They were whining and whimpering... they were extremely touched...

Jun Mo Xie looked at the six Beast Kings in their human form as they stood in front of him, and felt very satisfied. He could've easily forced them to stop thanking him by saying one phrase...

[Do you think I helped you for your 'thank you's'?)

And, those simple words... those very simple words would've left the six Beast Kings to ponder...

[Yes, that's right! There would be no words to thank him for such great kindness! Words of thanks to express my deep gratitude would carry the weight of a feather. What meaning would they even have?]

[This very able and helpful person may come to our area again. And, all of us must do everything in power to give him any assistance he needs if he ever asks. We won't stint even if we end up losing our lives for his sake! Why would we put our feelings in

words and ruin this atmosphere?!!]

The Beast Kings were feeling the exact same way. Hence, they came-up with the same train of thought as well. Therefore, none of them expressed their gratitude in words. However, all of them were expressing their gratitude towards this mysterious and skilled man with their actions and expressions.

# Chapter 392: The Ultimate Objective

---

Jun Mo Xie slowly continued to drink the wine. And, the Young Master was eventually made to understand that the so-called Xuan Beast hierarchies. It turned out that the Xuan Beasts' hierarchies were much harsher and delicate than the Xuan levels of humans.

A Xuan Beast would have to cross one more hurdle after they had reached the peak of level nine in case they wanted to become a Xuan Beast King. And, this hurdle was the challenge they would have to make to the-then Xuan Beast King. They would only be able to transform their body once they had succeeded in this challenge.

Some would change forms at the peak of level nine, and some could never do it throughout their lives. The peak of level nine was followed by level ten. However, this breakthrough was the most difficult one for a Xuan Beast.

A Xuan Beast would automatically be considered a Xuan Beast King if the said-individual could take human form at the peak of level nine. However, they would only be considered a genuine Xuan Beast King once they had stepped into level ten. In fact, they would then be considered a True Xuan Beast King! And, this was different from being the Xuan Beast King of a single race of beasts!

Jun Mo Xie had helped Long Crane and Big Bear make this difficult breakthrough a short while ago. But, that was only the first step. And, it was obvious that they would have to face more of such mountains as they'd go forward. However, Long Crane informed him that no one except their Sage King had ever reached that realm. Therefore, he didn't mention much about it.

Jun Mo Xie grabbed a 'strange' wine cup and muttered, "So, you two are basically the primary Xuan Beasts of level ten. And, those four Xuan Beast Kings have taken their forms after they've reached the peak of level nine.

The six Xuan Beast Kings nodded.

"I will refine the pills from the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit, and give them to you. And, your level should... go one step further when that happens..." Jun Mo Xie said this with uncertainty. The Young Master was confident in his ability to refine those divine pills. But, he hadn't tested them. So, he was unaware of the extent of their effect.

The eyes of the six Xuan Beast Kings were shining at this time. In fact, their eyes had coincidentally started to shine at the same time...

[We'll advance by another step!]

[We've made a breakthrough only recently. But, we'll get to do it again after three years? My God! This speed is amazingly fast! The Beast Kings of the past had never made breakthroughs with such speed!]

Three years wasn't a short period for humans. But, it was a very short period of time in the long lives of the Xuan Beasts.

It was important to know that talking about advancing another step was very easy. But, the gap between the two ranks was very large. The six Xuan Beasts were breathing in a rushed manner, and their eyes were brimming fervent admiration.

This was followed by some silence. After that, Long Crane spoke-up with a stammer, but it seemed as if he was impatient as well, "Great Senior, you wish to refine those divine pills. But, don't you lack some important herbs for those?" Everyone else picked their ears as those words were spoken.

"Alas... it's true. But, I only lack a few kinds of herb." Jun Mo Xie let out a long sigh at first. Then, he suddenly opened his eyes, "How did you know that I'm missing some herbs?"

Long Crane chuckled and replied, "That was a guess. He he... the senior's possesses great skills. So, he would've already handed-over

the pills if he had all the necessary herbs. But, the senior said that he'll give us those pills after three years. That ought to mean that the senior still requires more herbs. And, it may be assumed that those herbs aren't ordinary, right?"

"Crane King genuinely deserves his title. His thought process is meticulous and extraordinary!" Jun Mo Xie smiled. His tone was uncertain as he hesitated and said, "Yes. How could the refining process of such efficacious pills be comparable to something normal? The Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit is very rare. But, it's only one ingredient at the end of the day. I still need to collect a massive amount of the other herbs before I can commence the liquid extraction. Many powerful and magical herbs will be mixed together into one. And, the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons fruit will be used to aid in it at a later stage. It is only then that I will be able to refine those unmatched divine pills."

Jun Mo Xie's tone was heavy as he continued to speak. The Xuan Beasts Kings had held their breaths as they listened to him with their ears erected.

"This 'unmatched pill' would have a huge potential. It will be able to increase the life of an ordinary person by a hundred years or more. A Xuan expert could also take it. An Earth Xuan expert would become a level two Spirit Xuan expert in merely a few months' time with the help of this pill... maybe even stronger. Moreover, there's no chance of an accident since they body of the user will be under no threat of exploding. And, that's because the pills will work in accordance to a person's cultivation, and will spread out their aura in a gradual manner. It can be said that it is neither frightening, nor dangerous. It can genuinely be called the Divine Medicine that Seizes the Heaven's Fortune..."

There was a sound of collective gasps. The eyes of the six Beast Kings turned as round as copper bells. And, their bodies started to shudder with excitement...

[Earth Xuan to level to of Spirit Xuan? Life increased by a hundred years? Neither frightening, nor dangerous?!]

[My God! This is a divine pellet! This is crazy! This is something we've dearly yearned for! Damn! Damn!]

"How many herbs are you missing? We can think of a solution together! Please don't get me wrong. The senior has remarkable powers, but he's still one man. Our strength isn't as remarkable as the senior's. But, we are far more than one person. That should be able to count for something..."

Big Bear's eyes had become huge and round, and they had also started to emit a wolfish-green light. However, he had spoken in a very gentle manner.

"Yes, yes! Our Tian Fa is very huge. I'm sure that we can help the senior collect those heavenly herbs very quickly," The enthusiasm of the other Beast Kings also shot up to the sky. Many of them had spoken-up while licking their lips... they obviously seemed very greedy at this time.

"Well... that's also good. Everyone wants to help. And, that will save me a lot of unnecessary work and time in my search. In fact, it will be very beneficial," Jun Mo Xie pondered for a while before he finally agreed to it. And, this made the faces of the Beast Kings light-up with happiness.

"The herbs which I don't have are... Dragon Beard Grass, Phoenix Tail Flower, Nine Knot Lotus, Persistent Severing Root, Tricolor Manila Grass, and Seven Colors Lotus Root ..." Jun Mo Xie spoke with honesty. In fact, he was rather blunt as he named them in a long-drawn flow. He then took a short break to catch his breath before he continued onwards with the list, "Thousand Years Ginseng, White Vermilion Fruit, Nine Nether Grass, Nine Profound Root, and so on... a higher ranked herb will obviously be better. And, it will be better if you can get as many as possible."

The six Beast Kings had been stunned by this. The Falcon King

had the most alert mind amongst them. And, he had quickly torn-off a large scrap of bark from a tree in order to use it as a scroll. He then used his claws to write everything down from memory. However, his wrist had started to ache by the time Jun Mo Xie finished...

Then, Jun Mo Xie related the details about how each of those plants looked... which environment they grew in... how to pick them, and so on. The Beast Kings listened extremely calmly and meticulously. In fact, they even held their breath for the fear that they might miss a tiny bit of detail which could later turnout to be crucial to the important matter of their advancement...

"I'm aware that collecting these precious and extremely rare materials at once would be impossible... even if the entirety of Tian Fa's strength is used. So, you can collect as much as possible at one time, and you can keep dispatching someone to Tian Xiang City and deliver it to the Jun Family while you prepare the next batch. Anyway, I will be visiting the Jun Family at regular intervals," Jun Mo Xie chuckled.

"Ah, you can be responsible for collecting herbs inside Tian Fa. And, you can meet me in the extreme north to collect your pills in three years' time. We'd get better results if we follow this two-pronged approach..."

Jun Mo Xie thought, [This matter won't take long if we do it like this. I also have to take a trip to the North. This matter with the herbs is only one of several others. So, I might as well do them at once...]

[Third Uncle must be going crazy in wait. There's a beautiful woman on a snowy mountain-top, and she has been looking forward to his arrival in hope for ten years... how many 'ten years' could there be in one life? How many decades can a pair of lovers wait? Would they wait till their hair turned white, and they became old and senile? What would they do even if they were united then?]



Besides this... there was the matter of the Dongfang Family's vow! Therefore, that Snow Sword Mountain needed to collapse. And, Jun Mo Xie genuinely wanted to see the Snow Sword Mountain since its collapse would make for a wonderful sight. In fact, the Young Master had already prepared his plans to bring about such a heavenly and impressive wonder!

And, it would be more suitable to get this matter done as soon as possible...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had been making his preparations. He still hadn't fulfilled his promise to Tian Fa. But, he had already started to make plans to go to the Silver City...

It wasn't that the Young Master's heart had any sinister thoughts. It was only that the Beast Kings had asked to help. Moreover, the list of herbs mentioned inside the 'Book of Folk Remedy' wasn't easy to collect...

[These six Beast Kings may manage to collect these herbs. However, I may not have been able to do that for the life of me...]

The Young Master had come to Tian Fa to collect heavenly herbs. And, he had collected them in large quantities. However, that amount still wasn't nearly-enough for his requirements...

However, Long Crane and the others had offered to help Jun Mo Xie. And, they too would get what they wanted in case he succeeded. So, Jun Mo Xie had decided to tell them his requirements in an honest and blunt manner. This obviously meant that he would save himself from unnecessary labor and effort. He needed many herbs and divine treasures for raw materials, and it would've taken him a long time to collect them on his own. In fact, he reckoned that he may have failed to collect them in eight lifetimes...

[I'm using these Beast Kings in this instance. But, none of them will suffer a loss if I refine the pills. Everyone will get their share. I believe that those pills are worth far more to them... far-far

more...]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie didn't feel guilty about this. In fact, his conscience was clear.

The Beast Kings accepted Jun Mo Xie's requirements without any issues, and made a vow to complete the list. In fact, they wouldn't mind even if they would have to put a stop to any other matter at hand. They would lend their full strength in order to look for those treasured materials. After all, it related to the Beast Kings' breakthroughs. So, how could they not be meticulous about it?

Not to mention the fact that the Rainstorm and Hurricane Masters had blasphemed Tian Fa's fierce dignity a few days ago. And, that matter had been burning in their hearts for a while. Therefore, the Beast Kings had endeavored to advance after that incident had taken place. However, they hadn't been able to find a way forward before. But, the Lion and the Monkey Kings had suddenly become amongst the four living examples of a potential road to their success...

Moreover, that very skilled person had also devised an effective mode of contact via the Jun Family of Tian Xiang City. The Beast Kings felt even more assured since the goals had been set. In fact, the Beast Kings had only one thought in their minds... [Shouldn't I volunteer to deliver those herbs to Tian Xiang City if we manage to collect each of those herbs in the first batch alone? I would become the first one to get my reward if that happens!]

Each of the Beast Kings was thinking the same thing at this moment. And, their faces had started to look somewhat strange. They then looked around, and saw the faces of their brothers. [No one will wish to miss out on this opportunity. It seems that some infighting will be inevitable...]

Jun Mo Xie looked to the sky to ascertain the time, and realized that it would be morning soon. So, he stood up to bid his goodbye. The Beast Kings strongly urged him to stay, but he had made his

decision. So, he drifted away...

# Chapter 393: Collision of the Spirit Senses

---

Jun Mo Xie felt very happy as he floated in the air. In fact, he almost wanted to sing at the top of his voice. The Young Master had never thought that everything would go so smoothly. However, he was also unaware that any other individual wouldn't have been successful if they had been in his position... even if they had been in the same circumstances.

The Hong Jun Pagoda had been the key factor here. The Hong Jun Pagoda's aura had made the Xuan Beast Kings feel warm to the very bottom of their hearts. And, this first impression had been a lasting one. And, he had somehow managed to create a mysterious and a fabulous impression as a result. Would anyone else have been able to pull this off?

Jun Mo Xie looked at the surrounding environment in search of a quick way out. And, he found himself rather surprised at this. This was because the place where he had run into that little beast wasn't very far from his current location. In fact, it was very close since he could already see that orderly formation of towering tree which created that "mansion" of sorts...

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel comfortable as he looked at that scenery. And, he scuttled forward with a "whooshing" sound. [He he... It will be a lot of fun if I can get my hands on that adorable little thing and take her back with me. Kneading that soft and mushy meat felt so good... especially that little butt! It is something that I would never tire of pinching... I'm really looking forward to it...]

It had to be said that Jun Mo Xie's thought process was somewhat nasty. Other people would be very protective towards adorable animals, and would raise them with care... just like the little girl adored Little White. However, his approach was very disdainful...

That tiny beast was extremely cute. However, this rare specimen human of the species was also very different from ordinary people. So, he could only think of catching that tiny thing, and pinch its posterior again. He genuinely had a nasty taste...

The Young Master entered that little valley with joy and expectations. He had wanted to meet that creature again for a long time. The sight of the beautiful flowers filled his eyes after he set foot in the valley... same as before. And, their exquisite fragrance assailed his nostrils once more. But, this place was deserted. In fact, not even a little sound could he hear...

Jun Mo Xie took two steps. Everything was quiet inside, and he could only hear the echoes of his own footsteps. The place was obviously full of vitality. But, this valley was as quiet as a 'valley of death'. This silence was in complete contrast with the bright and colorful scenery. And, this contrast left him to feel extremely strange in his heart...

The Young Master Jun circled around as he meticulously searched. But, he didn't find a thing. So, he walked to that pleasant-looking stone cave, and looked inside. That black cloak was still there. But, there was nothing else there...

There wasn't a single trace of the adorable little creature...

Jun Mo Xie was still didn't wish to leave. So, he initiated his spirit sense to search... just in case that little creature had gone out to forage or hunt for food. The Young Master's spirit sense had become much more powerful ever since he had crossed into the third level of Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. In fact, his ability then-and-now couldn't even be mentioned in the same breath. He could only sense to a radius of about thirty meters before. But, his range had increased to hundreds of meters now.

The Young Master's spirit sense had increased to a large degree. In fact, it had reached a very high level. And, this had nothing to do with the Hong Jun Pagoda's divine aura since this power was

sourced from Jun Mo Xie's Sky Xuan cultivation level...

However, no one would that a Sky Xuan ranked expert possessed such a powerful spiritual sense...

Jun Mo Xie continued to expand the reach of his spirit sense in a step-by-step fashion. And, he went over his surroundings in an extremely meticulous manner. However, he didn't discover a single trace of that tiny creature. Everything was as silent as before. In fact, this place was dead-silent...

[How can this be? This place was quiet the last time I was here. But, it was a peaceful silence at that time. But, the silence has some malice about it now. How can I not feel suspicious?]

[This is Tian Fa's core, and it is understandable that common high-level Xuan Beasts don't dare to venture inside. But, do even the top Xuan Beasts like the peak level nine ones not dare to come here?]

The Young Master had exchanged many words with the six Beast Kings. Therefore, he knew that there were other level nine peak Xuan Beasts besides them. It was only that these other beasts couldn't take-on the human form...

[There's deathly stillness here. This shouldn't be happening, right?]

Jun Mo Xie strengthened his heart, and mobilized his power to its optimum. He then sent out his spirit sense to the depths of the Tian Fa Forest like incorporeal arrows.

The Young Master sent his spirit sense to a diameter of over six-hundred meters. He found the noise of Xuan Beasts' activity to the north, east and west. However, the southern side was deathly silent.

[It seems that the source of this weird event is in the south.]

Jun Mo Xie retrieved his spiritual sense from the other three directions, and narrowed his search to the south. He had

understood that the strange things happening in the core of Tian Fa had something to do with the weird situation in the south.

Then... suddenly!

The movement of his spiritual sense towards the south seemed fine at first. But, it then hit an exceptionally thick barrier. And, the Young Master's strong spiritual sense got caught. In fact, it was unable to move either forward or backwards. It was like an airborne fly had been caught in a spider's web.

Jun Mo Xie was startled at first. But, he recovered quickly. Then, a powerful spirit sense arose, and rushed forward to meet Jun Mo Xie's spirit sense. This spirit sense then collided head-on with Jun Mo Xie's.

"Bang!"

Jun Mo Xie spirit sense wasn't weak. However, he felt that it had no margin to resist against the powerful spirit sense which had arisen before him.

There was something like an explosion inside his head. He became dizzy and fell down. The seven orifices of his head had started to overflow with thin wisps of blood. In fact, the Young Master would've been hurt very seriously if he hadn't reached the powerful and tyrannical state he was currently at...

Jun Mo Xie's spirit sense had already reached a powerful level. So, he hadn't expected that it wouldn't be able to face even a single blow from the opposing spiritual sense he had just encountered. He had never anticipated that he would've been defeated so thoroughly by this force.

His opponent had used a sneak attack. But, he couldn't deny the formidable strength of their spirit sense. The opponent had a very powerful spirit sense. In fact, he reckoned that they must be stronger than the Great Masters. This person might not have been more powerful than Venerable Mei, but their power was more or

less the same.

[Could Tian Fa be hiding another strong person?]

He had been worried about the conflict between the various lands since he felt that Tian Fa would be defeated. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had helped the Xuan Beast Kings breakthrough the barriers of their advancement, and had healed the injured ones. The Young Master had done this because he liked the Xuan Beasts' honesty and simplicity. So, he had enhanced their strengths since they would need it to defend themselves.

There was no need to aid the Xuan Beast Kings if they were to face a power like the City that remained hidden in the snowy peaks. The Beast Kings' future would perhaps remain unchanged. But, the matter regarding the very future of Tian Fa was completely different.

Even the usually calm and collected Jun Mo Xie had turned pale with fear in the face of such a powerful and terrifying spirit sense. His own spirit sense had dispersed even though his opponent's attack hadn't ended. Moreover, the said-opponent hadn't let up in their attacks. In fact, it seemed that they had decided to chase after.

Jun Mo Xie's mind moved like electricity. He strove hard to suppress his mental injury, and used the last bit of his consciousness to somehow launch the formidable and endless aura from the Hong Jun Pagoda. It was like a broken sword that had chopped forth into the blue sky. And, it rushed forth to attack the spirit sense which had clashed head-on with that of the Young Master's.

Jun Mo Xie's spiritual sense obviously couldn't be compared to that of the Hong Jun Pagoda's. In fact, they couldn't even be mentioned in the same breath. It started a powerful counter-attack, and went after the powerful spirit sense which had confronted the Young Master's in order to intercept it. The spirit



sense from Hong Jun Pagoda then unleashed a fiery reign. The opponent's spirit sense was also bright and alert. And, it had quickly adjudged that the second wave of spirit sense would be greater than the one before. In fact, this individual seemed to have assessed that the second wave would be much stronger than their own by the time the two sides clashed again. Jun Mo Xie's damaged spirit sense was finally able to pull away from that thick barrier, and was then able to retreat with the help of Hong Jun Pagoda. It was then gently escorted by the aura from the Hong Jun Pagoda, and retreated into his body.

A miserable and tragic shriek was heard from the south as this happened. This individual's spirit sense was extremely powerful. In fact, it was far more powerful than those of the Great Masters'. Moreover, the reaction time of this individual was amazing. However, their spirit sense was no match for the Hong Jun Pagoda's. This individual had managed to recall their spirit sense very quickly after the second collision. However, they had been defeated very thoroughly. Thus, it was evident that they must've suffered a heavy damage.

The sound of that screech was somewhat low, but it was still very incisive. In fact, it even shook the trees at Jun Mo Xie's side. After that, a slight rustling sound was heard as this shriek made its way into the distance.

Heavens know when Jun Mo Xie's slamming heart returned to normal, and that feeling of helplessness and powerlessness disappeared. Jun Mo Xie then wiped the blood from his mouth. He looked towards the south like a wolf on a cold winter night. [There is another great power!]

[That place seems like an area even an incorporeal and formless spirit sense can't penetrate...]

[What is that place?]

[And, who is inside it?]

Jun Mo Xie jumped-up with the entirety of his strength, and initiated the Yin-Yang Escape. He took large strides, and vanished as he covered the distance between him and his opponent.

[Going to that weird area will only increase my wisdom and experience. I anyway wish to make a comfortable life for myself inside this forest in the future. So, why would I not wish to learn about such a mysterious and powerful individual?]

[That person could be a huge threat!]

A strange milky-white mist appeared in front of Jun Mo Xie. It could be said that there hadn't even been the slightest of hints of this mountain-like mist before he had turned around that mountain. In fact, there had been no sign of it in the sky either. However, he was faced with a pure white mist the moment he had crossed the mountain. And, this mist had seemingly shrouded everything...

It was vast and boundless.

This didn't seem like an ordinary form of mist. It didn't have any divine aura inside it either. Moreover, this thing seemed to be made of something which could turn it pitch-dark inside. The mist seemed like it would be weak, hollow, and delicate from the outside. However, it was very pliable in reality...

This strange white mist couldn't be penetrated by a spirit sense, but a physical body could still enter it...

Jun Mo Xie tried to make his way by moving his hand inside. He stretched it, and felt nothing obstructing him. The Young Master then extended it further inside, and it became evident that there was a huge space beyond this mist-barrier.

Jun Mo Xie tried to penetrate the white mist with his spirit sense again. However, he again felt like he had encountered a thick barrier. He couldn't get into it that way. The mist was extremely tough for his spirit sense. It was similar to poking a tenacious

balloon with one's finger. The finger might go inside the balloon, but the balloon wouldn't burst.

The Young Master felt this exact-same way as he tried to force his spirit sense forward.

[This is really strange!]

[This is the first time I've seen such a strange place where the body can enter, but the spirit sense can't explore it...! It is either another mystery of Tian Fa forest... or some sort of an enormous existence...]

Jun Mo Xie snorted. It was nearly impossible to change his mind. He would use the Yin-Yang Escape, and he would then enter this place...

## Chapter 394: The Nine Xuan Root!

---

Jun Mo Xie had no choice but to go in. And, this was because the Young Master noticed a peculiar foliage of vine at the edge of the white mist the moment he thought of withdrawing away. The leaves were heptagonal in shape, and blood red in color. Their inner veins were clearly visible. In fact, it was like they were trying to burst out of the leaves' surface.

This slender vine was snow white in color. In fact, it looked like silk floss. However, anyone who'd touch it would realize that it was stronger than steel.

[The Nine Xuan Root! This is the Nine Xuan Root I haven't been able to find anywhere!]

Jun Mo Xie was overjoyed at this unexpected discovery. This was the final ingredient he needed to concoct that Xuan Advancement Dan! Jun Mo Xie had accidentally stumbled upon this surprise. So, how could he let go of this herb? It could be dangerous inside. But, he would blame himself for an eternity if he didn't take the Nine Xuan Root.

The pills derived from the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit would also have the same effect. But, that pill was still out of Jun Mo Xie's reach since he lacked a large number of raw materials. Moreover, his present cultivation wasn't high-enough to refine it. Anyway, the Young Master just couldn't wait...

Moreover, he could always make use of the pills he had refined from the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit after he had done the same with the Xuan Advancement Pills. And, this would result in two burst of advancements. Plus, there was a chance that the pills refined from the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons may fail to be as effective as he had imagined. So, wouldn't the gains still outweigh the losses if he was able to procure this vine for the Xuan Advancement Pill?

Jun Mo Xie became extremely elated at seeing something he had thoroughly longed for. And, he initiated the Yin-Yang Escape at its full capacity.

However, he was disappointed once again. The Yin-Yang Escape had been unstoppable in the past. And, it had always been extremely remarkable in every endeavor. But, the Young Master was unexpectedly encountering obstacles while using it in this place. He had the freedom of direction, but he'd feel as if he had fallen into a swamp whenever he'd touch the white mist. And, each step he'd take would require a huge amount of energy...

Jun Mo Xie felt trapped. And, he started to feel as if he had stepped into a mountain-pile of cotton. The cotton looked as light as a feather. But, one couldn't see thing once they had gone inside that pile of white cotton. The eye could only see one color, but the purity of this color still had a bedazzling effect...

[Such a fantastic place exists inside the Tian Fa Forest?] Jun Mo Xie was completely amazed.

He obviously didn't stop the Yin-Yang Escape. Wouldn't he become an easy target for some hidden expert if he did that? A man could die in that murky atmosphere, and wouldn't even come to know about it...

[Using the Yin-Yang Escape is draining a lot of energy. But, it still maintains my invisibility. So, I will be invisible even if an overwhelmingly talented expert is present inside. This is my biggest advantage!]

[This is a remarkable thing! How amazing!]

Jun Mo Xie was trapped inside this fantastic environment. So, he reached down towards the Nine Xuan Roots, and walked along its rattan in the same manner a person walks in their sleep.

The Young Master wasn't worried since he had already conducted his experiments. It wasn't easy to go forward if he

wanted it. But, it was quite easy to move backwards. Therefore, he could withdraw whenever his heart so desired...

Hence, his safety was ensured...

Jun Mo Xie would only venture into such a strange area as long as his safety was a hundred-percent ensured. And, he wouldn't move forward if things looked even a little dangerous...

This was the prudence that had earned him the title of the greatest assassin of his generation.

However, Jun Mo Xie anyway wouldn't have retreated very easily...

And, this was because he was determined to obtain the Nine Xuan Root.

The six Beast Kings were drinking and celebrating at the time Jun Mo Xie disappeared into that valley. They had also heard that gloomy screech which had originated from the south. They stared blankly at first. Then, they jumped up. In fact, it seemed as if someone had lit a fire under their buttocks.

"It came from the direction of that Tian Fa's Cave!" Long Crane's voice was filled with alarm and panic. He was genuinely very nervous.

"That genuinely is Tian Fa's cave!" Big Bear and the others turned pale. They didn't waste any time, and rushed towards it with all their might.

"Does this have anything to do with the Senior? We were drinking, and he was in a hurry to leave. So, we forgot to tell him that he couldn't go there!" The Tiger King seemed somewhat worried, and his forehead was covered in sweat. In fact, he had spoken this while he was galloping along the route.

"It's hard to say..." The Falcon King's dark face became even darker. His falcon-sharp eyes could see only pitch-darkness far ahead.

"Who apart from that Senior would dare to enter Tian Fa's sacred place? Would you dare to do it?" Seventh Earl looked very anxious. He then continued in an impatient manner, "This sound may have originated because of the Senior. And, we must beg for leniency and get him released if that is the case..." The Monkey king had recently received a favor from the said-person. So, how could he bear to see them suffer in his homeland?

Big Bear snorted and said, "It's too early to speak anything on that matter. It's very difficult to say which one of those two will have the upper hand here. So, it is very difficult to decide who we will have to beseech in the end. I just hope that the Senior still gives weight to my word..."

These words were enough to determine the absolute and unparalleled faith Big Bear had in that mysterious person. It was hard to assess that whether Big Bear's reputation was prominent-enough to speak those words or not. However, it was evident that his skin was thick-enough. His skin may not have been the thickest one around. But, it was surely unparalleled in many ways...

"Shut up everyone! Is this the time for this? Let's just get there first!" Long Crane shouted back. Then, he stopped running on the ground, and rose in the air as he transformed into his original form. He then quickly turned into the huge pure-white crane. He flapped his huge wings, and quickly flew past.

Big Bear saw Long Crane leaping into the sky, and immediately understood the Crane King's plan. So, he leapt up as well. In fact, he jumped even higher than the Crane King. He would continue soaring into the sky until the Crane King would come around. Then, he'd transform into his Bear-form, and start to descend due to the excessive weight. The Crane King would catch him as he'd start to fall, and he would revert to his human form before he'd land on the Crane King's back. Then, the two of them would proceed forward together...

The two Beast Kings had been cooperating with each other for

decades. Therefore, they were very familiar with each other.

However, there was a miscalculation this time. The Crane King was clearly very impatient at this time. He flipped around in mid-air, and came to a stop. Big Bear saw this, and transformed to his Beast-form in order to fall down towards the ground at a very fast speed. However, the impatient Crane King gave a screech, and shot forward at an even faster pace.

This was a big mistake...

Big Bear's immense weight dropped to the ground with a loud "Bang!" He had fallen to the ground very heavily, and the solid layer of earth was smashed. Consequently, an enormous crater was formed at the place he had landed. He had been completely unprepared for the eventuality, and was hence caught off-guard. He didn't sustain any wounds to his flesh since it was quick thick. But, there wasn't an inch of his body which didn't hurt badly. The Bear King then sat up, and cursed in anger.

The other Beast Kings were in haste at this time. In fact, it was almost as if they were fire-fighters charging to put-out a serious arson. They flit from his side in quick succession. The Falcon King was the kindest since he returned to Big Bear's side, and handed him his clothing. However, his speed didn't slow down as he did this. After that, he also flew into the sky, and shot southwards like a black arrow.

The six Beast Kings arrived at the forbidden area of the forest in nearly an instant due to their cultivation levels.

They found no reason behind the sound they had heard, and only saw that white mist instead. The six Beast Kings searched the area around the white mist, but didn't discover any traces that would indicate that a person had entered it. They were obviously very relieved at their finding...

However, they were unaware that Jun Mo Xie had gotten here by using the Yin-Yang Escape, and wouldn't have left any traces as a



result...

It was a remarkable technique. It had left no traces behind whatsoever...

"It seems that no one has come here. And, it's a great thing that no one has!" Long Crane became relieved and spoke, "No average person can enter the forbidden area. Everything seems fine."

"I think it's still good to ask. The scream that came from inside has made me worried." Lion King seemed anxious as he continued, "We all know that they wouldn't have made such a sound if they weren't seriously injured..."

Monkey King disagreed, "One can sometimes feel intolerable pain during their practice. And, that can happen particularly when one's making a breakthrough. Perhaps that's what that scream was about. Such a sound isn't common inside Tian Fa, but it's not very rare either. So, should we make such a fuss over nothing?"

"You're right. Every Xuan Beast screams like that during cultivation practice. But, have you ever heard such a sound coming from the forbidden area?" the Lion King replied in a sarcastic tone.

Long Crane thought for a moment. He then strengthened his voice, and asked, "The current Crane King has come to pay his respects. Does the Senior of the Sacred Land have any instructions for us?" his voice was deep and resounding as it made its way inside the white mist.

A voice of someone gnashing their teeth replied from inside the mist after a long time had passed, "Sure, you've come to pay your respects! Hurry up and get lost to your grandmother!"

The six Beast Kings were stunned. Their big eyes had narrowed as they gloomily returned to the road they had come from.

The six Beast kings had been very unlucky this time. The individual inside had been caught off-guard by the powerful spirit sense from Jun Mo Xie's Hong Jun Pagoda. So, they had suffered a

terrible defeat, and were currently lamenting about how heroic they had been in the past. And, this had made them very impatient and annoyed. It was then that the six Beast Kings had decided to come. So, how could they not be snubbed despite their good intentions...?

The six Beast Kings were given a tight one in their face, but they still didn't dare to complain. In fact, they went back at greater speeds, and disappeared from the scene very quickly.

Then, that voice again spoke-up from behind that thick mist, "Damn it! I forgot to ask them if anyone had come-in a while back. Who was that guy? He was such a pain! His spirit sense was so powerful and frightening! I would've been done for good if it weren't for that quick action!"

Jun Mo Xie was using the Yin-Yang Escape with everything he had. He was having difficulty while moving inside the thick mist, but he couldn't help laughing after what he had heard. [It seems that the guy inside this place is having a tough time. I seem to have driven his mind out of sorts. Just how powerful is the Hong Jun Pagoda's spirit sense? I was able to contend against this individual's strength. In fact, the Hong Jun Pagoda left this individual in an injured state. This is truly amazing!]

He followed the Nine Xuan Root's vine one step at a time. And, each step of his' was extremely cautious...

Jun Mo Xie couldn't believe that the person inside this thick mist could live in this environment... [He should've been dead by now... Moreover, I haven't come across a single tree... or any other plant since I've started to follow that vine. This is extremely abnormal!]

[The Nine Xuan Root is here. So, how come there isn't any vegetation around...?]

[This doesn't make any sense!]

It was unknown how much distance Jun Mo Xie had covered

before he finally felt that the thick mist had begun to thin out. So, he mustered his strength, and proceeded forward...

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt his body relax as he finally left that thick-white mist. And, he found himself inside a clearing. The area was still surrounded by a wall of that snow-white mist. Therefore, one couldn't see anything past it. The Young Master could only see up to a few meters in diameter, but nothing beyond... Everything beyond it was merely endless and thick white mist.

There was a cluster of trees not far from him. And then, there was a hill a bit further ahead. But, it was enveloped in mist as well.

One could clearly see a little bit of that mist in-between the vegetation as well. The mist was light where the trees were thick, and it was dense where the trees were sparse.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly realized something. He still hadn't figured what this white mist was, but he had certainly understood one thing. [This strange mist is sparse wherever there is a lush growth of trees, but it is dense in the area where the vegetation is scarce...]

The Young Master saw the endless white mist and sighed. [It seems there isn't a lot of vegetation here. It's no wonder that something as poisonous as this Nine Xuan Root grows alone in this place...]

The Nine Xuan Roots were spread far and wide... just like the diameter of the trees...

The Young Master discovered that the trees inside the cover of this mist weren't very tall. In fact, they mustn't have been more than ten meters in height. However, they were very thick. It was obvious that the fog had stunted the trees' growth in terms of height. So, they had grown horizontally instead.

However, Jun Mo Xie was still very puzzled by this since there was no sunlight in this area. So, he couldn't understand how these had managed to trees grow. Moreover, they seemed to have been

growing for thousands of years...

Jun Mo Xie sighed. He decided that he wouldn't think about these mysteries any longer. The Tian Fa Forest was full of mysteries, and he didn't have the strength to solve them all at this point.

[It is difficult for me to make progress with the Yin-Yang Escape method, and my skills aren't helping either. But, I will unravel these mysteries one day. And, that is when this Tian Fa will thoroughly accept me!]

[Anyway, I don't have the time to think over these 'restricted' matters right now. I only need to dig out this Nine Xuan Root, and I'm done after that.]

He was about to start when he heard a soft sound. It was coming from the forest, and it sounded like the snort of an animal...

Jun Mo Xie attentively looked in that direction. A huge golden-furred bear slowly stood up from the mist that had shrouded his body. It then stretched its huge body...

It was a level nine peak Xuan Beast.

Jun Mo Xie didn't wish to complicate things. So, he decided to evade in to the soil. He went underground, and dug out the Nine Xuan Root. He could smell the Nine Xuan Root's fragrance more easily inside the soil. He held the Nine Xuan Root in his hand to take a better look, and his face exposed an exulted expression.

The snow-white Nine Xuan Root sparkled like jade in Jun Mo Xie's hand.

The Nine Xuan Root had a very strict aging system. It would be black after it would sprout. And, it would remain black until the first ten years had passed. It would turn brown after that. The color would change to yellow once a hundred years had passed... red after a thousand... and, it would only become milky-white after ten-thousand years.

[This place has the best quality Nine Xuan Root!]

Jun Mo Xie hadn't expected to find such a huge surprise. The quantity of this Xuan Root wasn't small either. It could be used for Grandpa Jun's pills, and there would still be a lot of it left afterwards. In fact, enough of it would be left to supplement the refining of every kind of Divine Xuan pill...

The Young Master happily took the root, and put it inside the Hong Jun Pagoda. He then broke into laughter without realizing it. Suddenly, the entire area started to reverberate with loud screeches. It turned out that there were more than one level nine Xuan Beasts in that area.

Jun Mo Xie used his spirit sense to search forward, and found the sources to be as strong as the spirit sense he had previously clashed with. In fact, there were several such entities in this area!

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but break out in cold sweat. [My God! How come there are so many powerful entities hidden here?] He couldn't dare to delay, and he whizzed away from there.

It was difficult to come in, but it was quite easy to go back. It only took him a moment to get away from the scope of that white mist. The Young Master smiled as he looked at that white mist from afar, and muttered, "I will be back! That's for sure!"

Jun Mo Xie then came upon a huge rock which had big inscriptions written on it. It was then that he realized where he had been to...

[Tian Fa's Cave!]

[This place turned out to be the most mysterious place in the entire world!]

[Tian Fa's Cave! This is great! It is genuinely worthy of its legendary and mysterious status!]

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but smile inside his heart. He then flew-up like a breeze as dawn broke out in the silky blue sky. After

that, he quickly made his way back to the Southern Heaven City.

[This is truly a great harvest! And, an unexpected great harvest at that!] This great harvest had left Jun Mo Xie to feel extremely happy.

He now had every material required to make his grandfather advance. Moreover, he would also be left with enough material to refine a lot of divine pills. Was there any medicine that couldn't be refined from this herb that had accumulated tens of thousands years-worth aura in the Tian Fa?

There were barely any other places apart from Tian Fa which had a special environment that was capable of growing such heavenly herbs.

[How much effort has this saved on my end?]

[Moreover, my relationship with the Beast Kings has improved a lot after today. In fact, we've become quite familiar with each other. And, this will come out to be very helpful there as well!]

Jun Mo Xie still looked like the debauchee from six months ago. However, the fact was exactly opposite. He had been amazing in secret.

The Jun Family's military strength couldn't be considered weak. They had many people under their dominion. Moreover, Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang were there to take care of the Jun Household in the Tian Xiang City. And, the underworld gangs of the city were working for them as well. So, it was like they had full layout of the Capital with them.

Moreover, the business was blooming under Tang Yuan's talent and bitter haggling. The Aristocratic Hall was like a legendary treasure tree in the Capital. Moreover, it was a treasure tree which would shed huge amounts of treasure when shaken once.

In terms of individual cultivation... Jun Zhan Tian was at the peak of Sky Xuan, Jun Wu Yi was at Sky Xuan middle rank, and

Jun Mo Xie was at the base rank of Sky Xuan. And, each one of them was on the verge of another breakthrough; especially Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi! They would soon become Spirit Xuan experts as per Jun Mo Xie's plan.

They also had external help since one of the Great Eight Masters — Solitary Falcon — was living at the Jun Family's residence. Moreover, Jun Mo Xie was on the verge of completing the prerequisites that would free the Dongfang Family from the burden of their oath. And, this would gain him an extremely startling force in the form of these assassins. Each of his three Dongfang uncles was a Spirit Xuan expert. So, wouldn't the Dongfang Family be more powerful when their complete strength was taken into account?

Furthermore, he had painstakingly performed great favors for six Beast Kings in the Tian Fa Forest. It could even be said that the level nine Xuan Beasts and the Beast Kings would rush to assist in any battle as long as he asked them in the form of that mysterious master. This genuinely wasn't an impossible notion to consider. And, there was literally nothing that these Xuan Beasts couldn't achieve...

Moreover, Jun Mo Xie had invented himself into that mysterious master, and this was one of his greatest advantages. Who in the entire world didn't know that such a divine and powerful person was supporting the Jun Family?

This incorporeal and mysterious force was the Jun Family's greatest support. Who in the world would contend against the Jun Family after such an individual had decided to support them? Had they not seen the Second Great Master turn into ash?

In addition, the Baili Family's young genius — Baili Luo Yun — was waiting for him in the Southern Heaven City. Inviting him had also been part of Jun Mo Xie's big plan.

It could be said that Jun Mo Xie had become a great power in this

world.

He had become extremely awesome!



# Chapter 395: How Did You Eat It?

---

In the Southern Heaven City...

The very exhausted Guan Qing Han had closed her eyes, and lain down on her bed after Jun Mo Xie had left her tent. Her spirit had been stretched extremely thin ever since she had been besides the Young Master. Her heart wasn't worried. And, the others didn't matter. However, Guan Qing Han's mind was fuzzy, and she was extremely exhausted. Pain was invading her body. In fact, there wasn't a point on her body where it didn't hurt. Moreover, she felt ashamed that the lower part of the body hurt a lot in particular. In fact, she felt as if it was being torn apart. Even the tiniest of movements would give rise to excruciating pain there...

[It's entirely that idiot's fault for meddling with things! Damn... it hurts so much!]

Guan Qing Han felt powerless and weak. She couldn't move a single part of her body... not even her little toe. Two tears flowed down her cheeks. She didn't regret helping the Young Master. Nor did she resent Jun Mo Xie. But... it was too painful. And, these tears were her only means of relief from this pain...

The Young Lady had been passive throughout that stormy event. In fact, she had even mentally prepared herself for it. But, she had still lost every ounce of her physical strength. In fact, every bit of her Xuan strength had forsaken her as well...

She felt that she didn't have any bones or muscles in her body. She wasn't able to summon any strength from any part of her body. But, she was still unexpectedly able to turn her eyes. Guan Qing Han felt somewhat surprised at this. And, those tears had left her eyes even before she could react.

She expended the last bit of her strength to save her pride and dignity when she had stood-up inside Jun Mo Xie's tent, and had put-on her clothes...

The Young Lady didn't wish to show her weak-side in Jun Mo Xie's presence. She had told herself that she had committed that mistake to save Jun Mo Xie... to save the last surviving member of the Jun Family's Third Generation. She had thought that there would be no traces of that event, and that she wouldn't get involved with him after that. In fact, she had convinced herself that there wouldn't be a need for them to get involved with each other after the incident had passed.

She tried to think along these lines, but she couldn't convince herself.

"You're my woman! This is a fact!"

Jun Mo Xie had spoken those words in a domineering manner. And, his tone had been unquestionable in its authority. That scene had been repeating in her mind, and those words had been playing in her ears...

"I will marry you when these problems subside!" that man had said.

[Was that a promise? Was that his desire?]

[That was a mistake, right? Isn't it?]

[And, why am I so scared?]

[But, why is there a trace of bashfulness in my heart?]

[I did it to save the sole surviving member of the Jun Family's Third generation. But, why haven't I committed suicide already? Why haven't I traded my life to defend the names of these two families? Why hasn't this idea even cross my mind? Why...?]

[Am I a woman with no sense of shame and honor...?]

[Why?]

She was quietly lying in bed when this train of thought overwhelmed her, and flooded her mind with a plethora of questions. And, Guan Qing Han had forgotten about the pain her

body was suffering as a result. Her face became red at first. It would then turn deathly pale... before turning deep red again... and would eventually paint her neck the same color. And, this continued to happen in endless circles...

Two tear drops flowed down her cheeks, and soaked her long, black, and satin-like hair.

However, they weren't because of the pain this time.

[This night... I... am doomed to get no sleep...]

She was unaware of how much time had passed when she heard someone speak something outside her tent. She didn't care much about that at this time. Everything seemed very trivial to her in her current frame of mind...

But, there's always something that comes to provoke a person regardless of how hard they try to avoid it. Someone lifted the entry flap of the tent, and stuck their small head inside. This person then sneakily looked around the place, and walked-in on tip-toes...

"Elder Sister Guan... are you alright...?" Dugu Xiao Yi's face was brimming with a sense of loss and shame. Her eyes gleamed with tears as she looked at Guan Qing Han. She then cautiously and solemnly sat at the bedside. It seemed as if the little girl's figure had wasted away in the middle of the night...

The little girl had been born into the second most powerful family of the Capital City of the Tian Xiang Empire. And, she was the only girl in her generation in that huge family; the rest of the off-springs were boys. Therefore, Dugu Xiao Yi had blossomed in that family while being doted on. In fact, the care she had received was hard to imagine...

It was very hard to have male-female relationships in that era. And, this case was the same for even the most common of girls of the most common of households. The morality of such a relation

was scrutinized very strictly before marriage. And, it was for the fear of someone learning about something unsavory. And, wasn't she from a big family like the Dugu Family...?

Even the people of the neighborly households had to be very vigilant. They may dare to talk about those tabooed things, but the Young Lady's ears shouldn't come to hear of them. Otherwise, it would be a huge and unforgivable crime...

Their family had the Grandfather in-charge, three great generals, and the seven beastly Young Masters, and many other powerful members. Which one of them couldn't decide the life or death of a person from an every-day household? Therefore, the consequences of even one indecent word reaching the ears of the Young Miss Dugu would be horrible...

Moreover, the little girl was only sixteen years of age at present... what could she understand?

This was an era when the youthful maidens would only come to understand such things a night before their marriage. The mother and daughter would be alone together, and both would be blushing. The mother would gingerly hand-over erotic pictures through the silk. And, the daughter would be very careful while stowing it away. However, the thin silk enveloping these pictures would clearly indicate its purpose.

After that, the mother would send a loyal and elderly lady with her daughter upon her marriage... as a guide. And, this is when the real education would begin. Instructions about what to do... and when... and so on... the newly married girls would follow that loyal elderly lady's teachings... Ahm... ahm...

Even the mother would be too shy to speak about such things to her daughter!

Therefore, the fact that Dugu Xiao Yi already understood this much... and now knew what something as vague as "cooking rice" meant... was an amazing feat in its own merit.

However, Dugu Xiao Yi didn't understand this aspect of the society since she was very adorable and pure. A Young Lady would quickly assume the indicated postures the moment a man would ask her switch to the 'pushing a cart position' if she knew about these things in detail. How terrifying would such a tabooed sight be for this era...?

Which family would ever dare to take such a daughter-in-law in that era? And, they would be very unhappy even if they braced themselves and went ahead with such a marriage proposal...

...

Guan Qing Han's expression became complicated when she saw her culprit in front of her. How could she not harbor some hate when she saw the person guilty of perpetrating such a big crime?

The little girl would've had to lose her virtue, and would've had bear this pain if they hadn't switched places by accident...

[She had thought herself clever, and had set out to "cook rice". She had then set a roaring fire, but she herself had been scared away from the cooked food. And then, I took advantage of the situation... wait... I didn't take any 'advantage' of the situation. I was obviously the innocent one in this case...]

[Could it be considered as 'taking advantage'? It hurts a lot. This is a huge sin!]

Guan Qing Han's face started to heat-up at that thought. It was like her face had caught fire. However, she didn't know whether it was because of anger or shame...

"Elder Sister Guan... I'm really sorry... I didn't do it on purpose... I didn't know that it would turn out this..." Dugu Xiao Yi scowled miserably. She felt distressed that she had lost such a rare 'once in a lifetime' opportunity due to her mistake. The little girl had obviously cooked great rice. But, someone else had consumed that cooked rice. In fact, she hadn't even come over to apologize.

Instead, the little girl felt wronged...

"It's nothing... it's in the past now..." Guan Qing Han smiled with difficulty. She wanted to raise her hand, but she was unable to since it was extremely painful. In fact, even budging a little hurt her a lot...

"Elder Sister Guan... is it... it isn't that painful...?" Dugu Xiao Yi saw Guan Qing Han remain motionless. So, she asked inquisitively.

"Ah... Ahm... Ahm..." Guan Qing Han's red face looked at her in an accusing manner. How could she reply to that? [How can I possible answer to that in a way that doesn't sound wrong?]

"Elder Sister Qing Han, you're not answering... but I know that you're in a lot of pain... you've suffered a lot, elder sister..." Dugu Xiao Yi spoke-up with some sympathy. "Did he hit you?"

"Did he hit me?" Guan Qing Han opened her big and beautiful eyes at those words. [Where did that come from? Jun Mo Xie had lost his mind due to that excessive poison. He hadn't gone berserk on a battlefield. So, why would he hit me?]

"Oh, I had also seen Brother Mo Xie's devilish form that day. He was sure to have hit you. Uh... it's my fault..." Dugu Xiao Yi had spoken those words absent-mindedly. It was evident that she hadn't dared to speak the words she was thinking in reality...

"He he..." Guan Qing Han had finally understood that this little girl didn't understand what she herself had believed a moment ago.

[She definitely has a lot of guts. How else could she have dared to ask that question...?]

"Can I ask you a question, Elder Sister Qing Han?" Dugu Xiao Yi became relaxed when she saw Guan Qing Han chuckle. In fact, she had become so relaxed that she had become unbridled by what had happened before.

"What's the question? You can ask." Guan Qing Han looked at her

gently. She could do nothing about this little girl at this time...

"Uh... ahm ahm... that one... how did you eat it? Was it tasty?" Dugu Xiao Yi rubbed her clothes as her face turned red with embarrassed.

"What? Eat what? I haven't had anything to eat!" Guan Qing Han was flabbergasted. How could anyone not be puzzled by what that little girl was speaking?

"I... Brother Mo Xie... wasn't he cooked by the rice I gave?" Dugu Xiao Yi's face became extremely red. She gathered a lot of courage as she asked, "I cooked the rice, but you ate it in the end... So, how did you eat it?"

"Huh?" Guan Qing Han's beautiful eyes widened to their greatest limit.

# Chapter 396: The True Style of the Evil Monarch

---

"That... that kind of thing..." Dugu Xiao Yi was feeling very embarrassed. She couldn't deal with the embarrassment when she saw that Guan Qing Han couldn't understand her. So, the little girl whispered, "Good sister... tell me how you did it...!"

Guan Qing Han became petrified when she heard this. And, her eyes shone with a black sheen as she looked-on...

[How... to do that? How can I say about it...? And, how can this little girl ask about such a thing?]

"You... you... Xiao Yi, what nonsense are you talking? You're a girl from a big family. Aren't you ashamed of asking such a question? I am tired. You have your food, and go take some rest!" Guan Qing Han's face reddened to her ears as she reprimanded with embarrassment.

"Elder Sister Guan... you told me that we are all women here when we were at home. So, we shouldn't act like strangers when discussing these matters..." Dugu Xiao Yi smiled as she gathered her opportunity. She had come to her tent to get a feel of the situation. And, she had now come to realize that Guan Qing Han wasn't angry at her. So, she immediately became audacious, and lifted the quilt to peek inside.

"You... don't do that!" Guan Qing Han was startled by this, and she wound the quilt tighter around herself.

"I'll see... what this relationship is this..." Dugu Xiao Yi smacked her lips, and continued with hidden bitterness, "Why is everyone so secretive regarding this matter? I still don't know what this thing is about. Otherwise, I wouldn't have gotten so flustered today... And, Elder Sister wouldn't have been able to take advantage of the situation..."



[Taking advantages? I took advantage of the situation? This simply isn't done!]

The little girl exerted her strength as she spoke, and forced the quilt up. Guan Qing Han was completely powerless at this time. And, Dugu Xiao Yi's curiosity was extremely strong. Consequently, the little girl was successful in removing the quilt, and got into the bed. Guan Qing Han's body was once again inflicted with pain as a result of this struggle, and she couldn't help but groan as she wrinkled her shapely eyebrows in extreme anguish.

"Let me see where the pain is. I will help elder sister with it..." Dugu Xiao Yi was acting like a mean woman.

Guan Qing Han cursed in a lowered voice as she struggled in the blanket. Then, she started to plead... and, she was soon left to pant... and, she eventually ceased her struggle...

"Oh! How can there be a swelling over there? How can that happen over there? Isn't this extremely scary?" Dugu Xiao Yi cried in alarm whilst they remained wrapped in the quilt. She had been struck by an inconceivable shock. "How's that even possible?" One could imagine from this voice that the little girl's eyes and mouth were opened wide in astonishment.

Guan Qing Han wanted to die from the shame, "Stop... stop... you... stop this... I'm telling you... I'm telling you..." Dugu Xiao Yi's beautiful hair was disheveled. She joyfully got more comfortable in the quilt, and put her head on Guan Qing Han's pillow. She then assumed the appearance of a person who had extended their ear to listen carefully and diligently, "Uh, tell me everything in detail, Elder Sister..."

Everything remained silent throughout the night.

The sky was glimmering with sunlight early the next morning.

There was a burst of fluctuation in the atmospheric winds as Young Master Jun appeared inside his tent after a night of hard-

work. He hadn't slept throughout the night. Yet, his spirits were still high.

They were to break camp on this day. But, there was still one matter which Jun Mo Xie hadn't dealt with.

He washed his face, and tidied-up his appearance. Then, he moved out of his tent. However, he attracted attention from near-and-far the moment he stepped out.

The Young Master was like a magnet at that moment. And, all the eyes around couldn't help but be attracted towards him.

Jun Mo Xie was dressed in rarely-worn white robes. His face looked like it was crowned with jade. His sword-like eyebrows were raised, and his eyes seemed gentle and spiritual. He genuinely looked like a handsome Young Master... an elegant and handsome youngster. His expression was consciously-or-otherwise ice-cold, devilish, fierce, and grim.

Jun Mo Xie's mouth was softly closed. But, it was curved upwards at the ends. Yet, the on-lookers couldn't help but feel alarm and abject fear. Everyone could sense that there was a world-shaking murderous aura behind that slightly closed and smiling mouth...

He was smiling as warmly as the spring breeze. But, the vibes that were coming from him made people feel that it was more like a cold gale from a desolate forest...

It was like he had grasped the absolute power and authority to kill. It seemed as if everyone was beneath him. In fact, the Young Master seemed to be high in the clouds... and overlooking all creation.

The killing intention in his aura was like a strong tide, but it was also like a light breeze at the same time.

His jet-black hair was tied up with a blue-green band. Most of it was floating above his shoulders in a graceful manner from the

back of his head. And, it left the on-lookers to believe that it was some kind of a free and graceful dust... as if it would float-away whenever the wind would blow. The Young Master also seemed like an individual who was standing solitary on a lofty summit — cold and lonesome.

There was a green-blue belt around his waist. However, the belt somehow seemed like arms that were wrapped around his waist. His robe and sleeves floated upon his tall stature. And, it seemed like he wasn't a regular human being of that world.

A sword hung lightly on the waist of his broad robe. However, that gleam in his eyes seemed sharper than the sword.

He looked like a beautiful and heavenly creature. He looked like someone who would float above the earth at any time. However, any man would still feel that the said-youngster was a blood crazed demon that had been unleashed from the gates of the underworld.

[Obey me, or die by my hand

[I will wreak havoc upon the world! I will kill the Kings of men. And, I will also kill their Gods!]

This visual was very confusing and contradictory. And, it undoubtedly gave rise to a very strange feeling.

[How can such contradictory personalities reside in the same man? This is impossible!]

Moreover, that unique personality had somehow appeared inside the Young Master Jun. It was something like the sight of water and fire on a burning stove. It seemed as if Yin and Yang were intertwining inside one person in a seamless fashion.

This had happened for the first time since Jun Mo Xie had appeared in that world.

And, it was the first time that the Evil Monarch's demeanor and style of movement had reflected in Jun Mo Xie. This was the first time that the so-called 'bloodthirsty and terrifying murderous aura

of the Evil Monarch' was being released into that world in a free and unrestrained manner...

[I will no longer endure in silence! I will no longer pretend! I'm the Evil Monarch from this day forth!]

[The Otherworldly Evil Monarch!]

Jun Mo Xie took a step as he slowly walked into the distance, and towards a tent.

The three surviving members of the Baili Family were residing inside that tent.

The Young Master Jun's next target was Baili Luo Yun.

The Baili Family hadn't sent many men to this battle. In fact, they had only sent five people. They were being led by the Spirit Xuan Baili Xiong Feng. The rest were Sky Xuan experts... except for Baili Luo Yun since he was at the Jade Xuan realm. However, the barely Jade Xuan peak Baili Luo Yun had surprisingly survived the battle with the Xuan Beasts unscathed, while two of the Sky Xuan experts of the Baili Family had lost their lives...

Baili Xiong Feng had been left confused and depressed by this. The Baili Family had picked their experts after careful consideration. They were well-aware that those two Sky Xuan peak experts could lose their lives in this battle when they had sent them to Tian Fa. However, the Baili Family had picked them since their deaths wouldn't have brought-about any instability in their Family's structure. However, this didn't mean that they wanted those two Sky Xuan peak experts to die. In fact, their deaths were a price they almost couldn't afford to pay.

The Baili Family was strong. But, it wasn't an extremely strong family. How many Sky Xuan peak experts could they have in their ranks?

The agreement Jun Mo Xie and Baili Luo Yun had made before the battle still hadn't been fulfilled. But, everything had come to an

end now. The Jun Family had become a force no one would dare to provoke. So, it was time to dispel any misgivings Baili Luo Yun may still possess...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had chosen this moment to fight.

[Baili Luo Yun is a one-in-a-million genius. His Family may not like him. But, the attitude which entails that 'I'm the best in the world' is still ingrained in his bones!]

It was common sense that one would have to break the pride of someone as talented as Baili Luo Yun before they could take-him-in as an underling. Otherwise, the said-underling wouldn't listen to orders properly, and won't be made of use easily.

The Evil Monarch's murderous aura and arrogance had been spreading out for a long time. Every man could feel it in their very bones. And, this was something Baili Luo Yun simply didn't possess...

Baili Luo Yun had a stubborn pride that was rooted into his bones. In fact, it was rooted quite deep. And, it would rebound even under such pressure.

However, the Evil Monarch's pride was that of an entity who stood alone at the top of the world.

These two parties couldn't be compared on any accord. Jun Mo Xie's strength wasn't the greatest in that world at this time. But, the Hong Jun Pagoda gave him the confidence which made him feel like he was genuinely standing at the summit of the world.

If there was ever a God in that world... he would be looking down on the entirety of creation.

And, Jun Mo Xie believed himself to be such an individual!

[Who will it be — if not me?]

The reason Jun Mo Xie had warmed-up to Baili Luo Yun was very simple. It was because he had found a special temperament in Baili

Luo Yun. Moreover, this was a temperament which regarded life or death as nothing. One could even say that Baili Luo Yun would remain calm and tranquil even if the world were to collapse right in front of his eyes.

It wouldn't be surprising to find such a temperament in people of old age... or those who had suffered hardships for long years. But, Baili Luo Yun was barely twenty years old. And, this was noteworthy. To suffer at the hands of his own family was one thing. But, his personality was something else!

Such a person possessed the certain disposition of a killer. And, an extremely adept killer at that! In fact, he was someone who could even rival an assassin such as Jun Mo Xie!

The so-called assassins who were previously dispatched by the Blood Sword Hall were nothing in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. And, that was because they were merely a group of fighting men. They weren't true assassins. In fact, the Young Master Jun had only found two men who had the temperament of a true assassin ever since he had come to this world.

The assassin he had met at the palace's doors during the Scholars' Feast was someone whose lightning-like attacks still left some post-traumatic fear inside Jun Mo Xie's heart. His attacks were nearly unstoppable, and could strike their target without fail. In fact, one couldn't even spot the place where they had come from. Such should be the style of a true assassin!

It was a pity that the-said assassin was an enemy...

And, the other one was Baili Luo Yun!

The Jun Family had a military background, personal strength, intelligence from the gangs, and external aid of individuals whose strengths were nearly at the top of the world. The only thing they lacked was... people from Jun Mo Xie's previous line of work...

A group of assassins!

Heavens know how much effort one can save if they have a group of assassins at their beck-and-call! Assassins have always been the kings of darkness! They have always been the ultimate solution to settle any dispute!

# Chapter 397: Instigating a Situation of Chaos and Fanaticism

---

Jun Mo Xie's way of thinking was very simple. He didn't wish to run into a situation of inconvenience where the opposite party would start a useless argument whenever he'd begin to take action. [You're going to listen to me, are you? Great! Send someone to fight me. We'll talk after that's done with!]

[You have the time to waste over arguments? But, my time is very precious...]

Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang's strength was much higher than Baili Luo Yun's. But, Hai Chen Feng was someone with a very righteous a character. In fact, he was a chivalric warrior of sorts. So, he couldn't be assigned many kinds of tasks. And, Song Shang was crazy about wine. This made him even more unsuitable in that regard. Therefore, neither of them was suitable for that core position.

That's why Jun Mo Xie valued Baili Luo Yun for highly...

Jun Mo Xie's silhouette walked past the Supreme Commander's tent. Jun Wu Yi, Solitary Falcon, the three Dongfang brothers, Duanmu Chao Fan, and Sikong An Ye were discussing urgent matters inside. They were left startled when they felt a chill that had surpassed any in the world. They also felt a thick and cold aura along with it...

It seemed like an exceptionally murderous sword had flashed past the tent. This was only momentary, but it was sufficient to terrify the men inside. In fact, their very souls had been made to tremble!

[Why has such an exceedingly powerful person arrived inside the encampment?]

The seven men turned their heads around in unison. And, this



happened in time for them to see Jun Mo Xie's white clothes flutter in the wind through the tent's entrance. They merely caught a glimpse of that lithe figure. But, the seven men were left stunned...

[Jun Mo Xie!]

[That was Jun Mo Xie!]

[How is this possible?]

Which one of these seven men wasn't a top expert? They possessed keen eyesight, and a sharp brain. How could any ordinary person compare to them?

An average person would be extremely astonished to witness such an event. But, those seven men had perceived the very essence of it.

[This is an awe-inspiring feeling! How many people would one have had to kill to give-off such a strong and cruel aura? How many things would one have had to experience to attain a position of such greatness?! Would one's soul ever be at peace if they had experienced so many deaths?]

Jun Wu Yi had once been in a position of great power as the Blood General, and he had commanded millions of soldiers at that time. He had rallied his soldiers, and massive areas had been filled with corpses owing to the terrible bloodbaths that had followed. However, he introspected and realized that even he-himself had never been able to attain the demeanor Jun Mo Xie had...

Jun Wu Yi was undoubtedly an emotional individual...

And, this "emotional" attitude of his' had ensured that he'd never reach Jun Mo Xie's levels...

The Solitary Falcon had travelled the world, and had treated human life as grass whilst he had roamed cruel and free. His Xuan cultivation had reached the top, and he had become a Great Master. But, even he didn't possess an unapproachably high aura

like that of Jun Mo Xie's.

The three Dongfang brothers were born-assassins. A handful of bloody murders were nothing to them. But, their murderous aura was lacking by far when compared to the extremely frightening and spear-tip- sharp aura that was being released by Jun Mo Xie.

And, there was obviously no need to mention Duanmu Chao Fan and Sikong An Ye. They were nothing in comparison. In fact, no one was anything in comparison...

Who could've thought that the man who had been the source of everyone's laughter last night... would give such a huge shock to everyone today...

That impact was extremely strong. In fact, it was earth-shaking!

"Jun Wu Yi... you... you... dammit... I didn't make a mistake, right?" Dongfang Wen Jian spoke-up in an incoherent manner, "Wasn't that your brother's son...? My sister's son...? Wen Xin's son? Mo Xie, that little bastard!"

Everyone shifted their unwavering gazes to Jun Wu Yi as those words were spoken.

[Just how many things is your Jun Family hiding? Such a youngster was shown to be a debauchee for ten years... how did you do it?!]

Jun Wu Yi's eyeballs had also shot out of their sockets. It seemed like he was dreaming as he replied in a near-delirious state, "How would I know?! That was Mo Xie, right? It must be him!"

Dongfang Wen Dao was very angry, "What must be?! He has grown up with you since his birth! Who else would know if you don't? Give me a goddamned definite answer!"

[That's right! Who knows if you don't?!] Everyone looked at Jun Wu Yi. Their expressions were strange. [You still think you can hide things...]

Jun Wu Yi was silent. In fact, he was speechless. [I don't know what's going on! I really don't know...]

Jun Mo Xie was unaware that he had given such a huge shock to everyone who was besides his uncle. So, he was obviously oblivious to the fact that he had created such a big problem for his uncle merely by walking past his tent.

He had only released the entirety of that desolate murderous aura which had gathered inside his heart. However, this was feeling which had long been dormant inside him. So, this evil aura was becoming even stronger with each step he was taking. And, the thirst for blood gathered in his soul was also being emitted out more loftily with every step he took...

He had calculated the distance between his tent and that of the Baili Family's. He had done this when he had taken the first step. And, the tyrant Jun's intention was to leave the Baili Family's members to tremble by the time he had made his way to the front of their tent.

He wasn't doing this to merely convince Baili Luo Yun. He was doing it to accomplish Baili Luo Yun's cherished dream!

Jun Mo Xie had realized it even if Baili Luo Yun hadn't told him.

There was a plain-looking tent ahead. Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xio Yi were inside it. They had freshened up, and had gotten ready for a new day after the previous night's cacophony. Guan Qing Han had only had a short period of rest. But, she had already recovered to a great extent. She had received some medical assistance from Jun Mo Xie's aura, and had rested properly throughout the night. And, this had been of great help to her. The Young Lady at least had the energy to walk-around...

Dugu Xiao Yi had been sighing and moaning. It seemed that Guan Qing Han's mind was in a better condition in comparison. The little girl had a lot on her mind. She had been looking at her chest and posterior from time to time. However, the more she's do this...

the more inferior she'd feel...

[Why are they like this? Why is Elder Sister so big there?] Dugu Xiao Yi had somewhat lost her self-confidence. She hung her head and spoke, "Your figure is very nice, Elder Sister Qing Han. You're so big there. How do you do it?"

Guan Qing Han's beautiful face reddened as she replied angrily, "What are you saying? You're still young. Give it two years, and yours will be big as well! Perhaps even bigger than mine...!"

Dugu Xiao Yi clasped her cheek. The little girl's mind had started to wander afar. So, she had heard nothing of what had been said. She instead continued to murmur on her own, "So big, and so soft. Brother Mo Xie must've found it nice after having felt it. It felt so nice to me last night as well. Can mine also be that big in the future? Can they...?"

Guan Qing Han was extremely embarrassed and anxious. So, she quickly covered the little girl's mouth and said, "Foolish girl! What nonsense are you saying?"

Tears had started to flow from Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes by now. However, Guan Qing Han's hand had covered her mouth. So, her tears dripped onto Guan Qing Han's hand. She looked quite pitiful. And, Guan Qing Han became frightened since she thought that her act of covering the other girl's mouth must've been painful for her. So, she quickly relinquished her grip.

Dugu Xiao Yi became increasingly teary-eyed. Her tears made their way down like a stream. Her mouth began to quiver as her eyes stared helplessly in grief. It was evident that she was feeling very sad...

"Xiao Yi... you... what's happening with you? Quick tell your elder sister!" Guan Qing Han was in a flurry as she wiped away the little girl's tears and asked.

"I know that Elder Sister is trying to comfort me... I should be big

in these areas. But, I'm not as big as you... Moreover, it's not even soft... boohoo!" Dugu Xiao Yi had started to bawl with grief, "Also, I let that good opportunity slip-by last night! I'm an idiot! I'm a big idiot! I'm annoyingly stupid!" Dugu Xiao Yi ran out of breath since she was crying. She then started to sniffle.

"..." Guan Qing Han was struck dumb by this.

Dugu Xiao Yi then saw a silhouette outside the tent. And, the sound of weeping came to an abrupt stop. It seemed that she couldn't believe what she was seeing. She strenuously rubbed her eyes, and spoke-up in a low and surprised voice, "Brother Mo Xie?!"

Dugu Xiao Yi's voice had reeked of an expression of outrageous shock when she had said the words, "Brother Mo Xie". In fact, it was like she had seen a ghost in broad daylight.

Guan Qing Han hadn't turned around at first. But, she couldn't help turn her head once she heard the little girl speak...

They saw a white-clothed figure not far from their tent, and it was slowly coming over like the rising sun. He was walking over slowly and swiftly... like the rustling leaves in the wind. But, they couldn't help as they held their breaths at his approach. In fact, Dugu Xiao Yi thought that she had just seen the Emperor...

That's right. This is what she had been left to feel!

It felt as if one was facing someone who held an enormous amount of power in their hand. It was as if this person could look down on the entirety of humanity like it was 'weed'. It was someone who was detached from the entire world...

This individual carried an extremely elegant bearing which could rule over the world.

His light footsteps made sounds which echoed in a manner that seemingly made them 'drum' across the world. It felt like the people of the world would be left to feel joy and fear at every step he took... And, that they would be ready to kneel in front of him

out of panic and respect...

[This... this is the Brother Mo Xie I keep thinking about? Or, is it that indecent Jun Mo Xie? My Brother Mo Xie?] Dugu Xio Yi's mind had gone blank. She felt like she was in a dream. In fact, her eyes were emitting a flash of fanaticism. She seemed... somewhat bewitched.

This Jun Mo Xie was a perfect match with the 'image of an ideal man' this girl had been fantasizing about since her childhood.

[My husband is a peerless hero! The great heroes of the world will be trampled under his foot! He is a King who looks down on everyone. But, he will be very intimate and caring towards me. He won't tease me when I'm unhappy. And, will hold me when I grieve. He will also laugh with me when I'm happy...]

[This is my ideal husband!]

Guan Qing Han was also astonished...

This Jun Mo Xie had made her forget all the debauchery which he had committed in the past. He had also wiped-clean the bad impression he had made on her mind. She wanted to look away, but she couldn't bring herself to. His elegance and power had attracted her gaze to him, and she simply couldn't look away from him...

Jun Mo Xie's cold gaze shifted just-in-time to meet the dazed eyes of Guan Qing Han's...

And, Guan Qing Han was left to tremble as a result. This was the first time that she was looking at Jun Mo Xie since that night. And, a thought suddenly emerged in her heart... [Has he genuinely changed?]

[This is a domineering and reverent man with an astonishingly imposing bearing. He possesses an extremely murderous aura. This demonic man is the one who took my virtue. Is he really that same debauchee?]

[How could there have been such a huge change?!]

The two people looked at each other in silence. Jun Mo Xie gave a meaningful expression. However, he didn't come to a stop. And, his expression again became cold and sharp as he moved towards the Baili Family's tent.

His imposing aura had reached extremely great heights by now!

And, Guan Qing Han was left completely perplexed in the background...

## Chapter 398: Jun Vents Anger

---

Jun Mo Xie needn't have drawn close to the people from Baili Family since they could already feel his sharp aura. After all, Baili Xiong Feng was at the basic level of the Spirit Xuan realm. So, his Xuan Qi cultivation was only marginally inferior to the three Dongfang brothers.

Moreover, the two other men of the Baili Family were at Sky Xuan peak, while Baili Luo Yun was at Jade Xuan peak. So, wouldn't they have been able to sense that 'all-enshrouding' murderous aura? In fact, it was obvious to them that this imposing aura was moving towards their tent. So, they were the intended targets...

The three men of that family were led by Baili Xiong Feng to stand at the tent's entrance.

They then saw that glorious silhouette as it slowly approached them while they faced the rising sun. The pupils of the Baili Family's leader dilated at the sight of this. That bright, shining, and golden youngster was the one who had been applying such great pressure on him...

[How is this possible? He's just a young brat! Why am I feeling such intense pressure?]

He felt as if Jun Mo Xie's dull-looking eyes could read every thought that was circling in his mind. He felt that his fate was under that youngster's control. In fact, he felt like he had no free-will of his own.

He felt extremely powerless. [Why is a youngster who possesses a cultivation far beneath mine able to have such an effect on me?]

"The Third Young Master of the Jun Family...?" Baili Xiong Feng realized that he felt uncomfortable to his very spirit. In fact, his heart had been sent trembling. So much so, that he hadn't even



realized when he had taken a step back... He asked in a loud voice in order to hide his uneasiness, "May I dare to ask why the Third Young Master has come here?"

However, even Baili Xiong Feng had realized that his voice had seemed to lack any power in front of his counterpart.

The three great experts of the Baili Family had fallen into a disadvantage position the moment they had rushed out of their tent after having perceived that imposing murderous aura. In fact, they had lost the right to talk on equal terms. It didn't matter if they were Spirit Xuan experts or Great Masters... the result would've been the same.

And, that was because they had been forced to come out!

They would've found themselves in a far better situation if they had been able to remain in their tents when Jun Mo Xie had arrived outside since he would've had to take the initiative, and would've had to speak first in order to provoke or request them for their attendance...

However, it was a pity that they weren't able to do that...

Baili Luo Yun and two other members of the Baili Family stood behind Baili Xiong Feng. And, they could see that Jun Mo Xie appeared very calm, yet arrogant. In fact, his aura seemed strong-enough to force the entire world to submission! Yet, their eyes shone with a brilliance of fanaticism at this sight.

And, that was because this was the realm they had been striving to achieve their entire lives.

This realm perhaps wasn't the greatest. And, it perhaps wasn't the strongest in the world either. But, it was a realm that entailed absolute confidence in oneself. And, this was a realm of genuine pride!

Baili Xiong Feng had always been proud of not being a part of the herd. But, he felt extremely inferior now that he compared himself

to the exceptionally imposing attitude he was faced against.

"I've come to look for you, Baili Luo Yun. We had an agreement," Jun Mo Xie spoke-up in a dull tone. He didn't take any notice of the Baili Family's leader even though the man was standing right in front of him. The Young Master Jun instead faced Baili Luo Yun as he spoke. In fact, he even smiled at him faintly.

Jun Mo Xie seemingly hadn't heard the question which had been asked by the Spirit Xuan-strong Baili Xiong Feng. Or perhaps he had disdained to even answer...

This was a show of complete disregard... bare and blatant disregard.

The lack of foresight from the Baili Family, and their attempts to destroy such a great asset had made Jun Mo Xie despise them. In fact, the Baili Family's doom had been foreordained as far as Jun Mo Xie was concerned. And, that would be for Baili Luo Yun!

And, for his own plan!

Baili Xiong Feng could feel the anger rising inside him. And, he suddenly lost all sense of reason and self-awareness. He was a Spirit Xuan expert at this time. Something like this had rarely happened to him even when he was a Sky Xuan expert. However, this brat had thrown away the regard of his many years of powerful cultivation in an instance.

The leader of the Baili Family's platoon couldn't understand what was going on...

He took a deep breath, and did his best to keep his raging anger in check as he shouted, "I'm talking to you, Jun Mo Xie!" The Jun Family's strength had risen very suddenly ever since the arrival of that mysteriously strong person who had killed the Second Great Master. So, Baili Xiong Feng tried to maintain some sense of appropriateness despite the fact that he felt extremely angry.

The Baili Family couldn't afford to provoke the Jun Family

because of that person who stood behind them in support. Forget about the Baili Family... Baili Xiong Feng knew that even the monstrous powers like the Silver Blizzard City couldn't offend that mysterious person.

Therefore, Baili Xiong Feng's tone had been somewhat warm even though he was extremely angry.

"I was thinking of our bet. So, I'm here to relieve you of your three uncles. I was finally able to take out some time for this now," Jun Mo Xie smiled brightly and amiably. And, it seemed as if he was waiting for a suggestion as he continued, "You're not in a hurry, are you?"

Jun Mo Xie had again pretended that he hadn't heard Baili Xiong Feng's words. This was akin to two back-to-back slaps to the latter's face.

Baili Luo Yun was suddenly struck by a realization. In fact, he felt touched as he somewhat understood the matter...

Jun Mo Xie had been facing him, and had been speaking to him. In fact, the Young Master Jun hadn't even glanced at the Spirit Xuan Baili Xiong Feng. This indicated that even the leader of the Baili Family's troops wasn't much in his eyes...

This point entailed that the Baili Family was nothing in Jun Mo Xie's eyes.

What was Sky Xuan? What was Spirit Xuan? They were nothing in his eyes.

Jun Mo Xie only had eyes for one person at this moment...

Baili Luo Yun!

Why?

Baili Luo Yun had understood the reason very clearly...

[This Young Master understands me clearly. In fact, he even understands what I'm thinking...]

[That's right! He's venting out this anger in my stead! ...for everything I've suffered at the hands of the Baili Family over these dozen or so years...!]

[He knows that I wish to leave the Baili Family in a blaze of glory, and confidence. He also knows that I mustn't leave them by sneaking out like a dog.]

[I'm a genius. I know my worth. I would've left the Baili Family long ago if I had wanted to. No family would ever miss an opportunity to have such a talented member in their ranks. But, I didn't go. And, that's because I want to claim the glory I deserve!]

[I wanted to come out at the top, and not the bottom!]

[And now, this youngster isn't holding back... he's offending the entire Baili Family for my glory... for my justice... and, for the injustice that I've suffered...]

[Who in this world would do so much for me?]

Jun Mo Xie hadn't spoken a single word of solicitation. But, Baili Luo Yun had already begun to admire him.

Baili Luo Yun's eyes flickered. He didn't say a word, but he made a solemn vow in his heart.

[Jun Mo Xie has delivered what I had requested. He didn't stint even a little when it came to fulfilling his promise. He has instead been extremely brash. So, I will also fulfill my commitment. In fact, I will spend my entire life in fulfilling my commitments. I will never stint from my commitment as long as I live. I will pledge my life in loyalty to him!]

However, Baili Xiong Feng was already trembling in rage.

Jun Mo Xie's downright arrogant attitude had left the Spirit Xuan expert to stamp his foot in fury. [You may have some exceptional backing. The Jun Family may have rebounded from its degeneration, and may have started to resonate with fame and glory. But, a young brat shouldn't show any disrespect to the Baili

Family because of that. Moreover, he certainly shouldn't show any disregard to Baili Xiong Feng!]

[Who can ever endure such a thing...?]

[The Jun Family may have boundless future prospects. And, no one would dare to mess with them. But, this doesn't mean that they can bully people like this!] Baili Xiong Feng had never been a broad-minded man. This was obvious from the fact that his Family had decided to act against their own future interests and had sent Baili Luo Yun to die. Moreover, Baili Xiong Feng had personally taken charge of escorting Baili Luo Yun to his death in the Southern Heaven City. These schemes had already revealed the traits and status of his character. Who couldn't understand this point...

However, people with a higher affinity for such traits in character often tend to attach more importance to their reputations...

A low snarl resounded from Baili Xiong Feng's throat as he panted. He was afraid of the mysterious man who was backing the Jun Family. So, he had been trying his best to keep his anger in check. However, it was a pity that his anger had continued to increase. And, this had in-turn increased the difficulty he'd face in controlling his anger. He gnashed his teeth hard, but his restraint finally collapsed as he said a few words, "Jun! Mo! Xie!"

Baili Xiong Feng would've probably turned to a 'fawning lickspittle' if the Young Master Jun had shown him any respect... just the way he had clasped the foot of the Xue Hun Manor a few days ago. This was because the Jun Family's prestige was now greater than what the Xue Hun Manor's had been in the past. In fact, it had exceeded that by far at this time. So, how could an insignificant family like the Baili Family afford to provoke them?

Unfortunately...

The Young Master Jun refused to notice that low snarl as well. In

fact, it seemed that he hadn't even heard it. Baili Xiong Feng seemed to be too trivial in Jun Mo Xie's eyes since he was still smiling softly at Baili Luo Yun, "I know you're worried that your father will suffer problems at the Baili Family's hands because of you. He may even suffer unjust bullying and prosecution. But, you needn't worry anymore."

Jun Mo Xie was still smiling brightly. He lowered his voice, and it seemed that he was consoling Baili Luo Yun. However, he still seemed to be making a proclamation at the same time, "I've never noticed the trash from the Baili Family. They're nothing in my eyes." He had lowered his voice, but his tone was still declarative in its make, "I only wish that your value... deserve my actions..."

Baili Xiong Feng had already attained the Spirit Xuan realm cultivation. Jun Mo Xie had lowered his voice, but the Spirit Xuan expert could still hear him very clearly. In fact, the very act of Young Master Jun lowering his voice left them to feel that he didn't hold Baili Xiong Feng in much esteem...

Baili Xiong Feng heard a noise inside his brains. It seemed that something had snapped within him. His fists were clenched, his eyes had become red, and his face had become purple. He suddenly faced upwards and roared, "You've made me mad!"

Jun Mo Xie's eyes blinked for a while. He folded his hands behind his back, and frowned. He then addressed Baili Luo Yun again, "The weather isn't good. The Sun seems so big in the sky, but the sky is still rumbling with thunders. It's truly terrifying ah..."

The sound of these words had hardly faded when a sharp wind blew as an extremely enraged Baili Xiong Feng extended his hand to grab Jun Mo Xie. He believed that making minced meat out of this hateful brat was the only way to soothe his anger...

# Chapter 399: Fight a Spirit Xuan and Showcase Extraordinaire!

---

Baili Xiong Feng had completely ignored the fact that the Jun Family had that mysterious and unrivalled master as their benefactor.

He had seemingly ignored only that mysterious person in this equation. In fact, he felt that it was fortunate that the-said man wasn't there at this time, and he believed that the consequent revenge wouldn't come knocking immediately-after. However, Baili Xiong Feng had overlooked another thing. And, that aspect was fatal to ignore...

The Baili Family's leader had fallen into a very disadvantageous position since he had stimulated the air around him with his movements. And, he had unknowingly fallen into Jun Mo Xie's area of expertise as a result. In fact, Jun Mo Xie could've sensed the direction this attack was approaching from... even if he had closed his eyes and his ears...

Moreover, he had been enraged by Jun Mo Xie. Therefore, he had lost the genuine edge of a Spirit Xuan strength...

The white robe was floating beautifully behind Jun Mo Xie. His hands remained behind his back as he quickly dodged the attack, and returned to his position. Then, the Young Master Jun's right hand speedily moved from behind his back, and gently moved towards his opponent's palm. However, it seemed as if Young Master Jun had overestimated his abilities...

However, a golden light flashed from his front hand; it seemed more ghostly than real... The Young Master then spun around, and stationed himself around ten meters away. He had clasped his hands behind his back once again.

Several jaws dropped as a blood burst out with a 'Chi Chi Chi'

sound!

The middle of Baili Xiong Feng's palm was the source of this break-out...

[One move!]

[It was just one move!]

[The difference between the ranks of this youngster Jun Mo Xie and Baili Xiong Feng is that of heaven and earth! Yet, he has managed to injure the Spirit Xuan Baili Xiong Feng? This is unbelievable!]

[Who would've believed this incredible thing unless they witnessed it with their own eyes?] No one would've dared to believe it...

Baili Xiong Feng was an experienced man. However, he-himself was unwilling to believe that he had been injured until he felt that stabbing pain in his hand. And, this was because the one who had injured him was a brat of no more than seventeen years in age...

"Baili Xiong Feng is done for!" Seven powerful experts had been hiding unseen around a corner. Their cultivations were very high. So, it was unlikely that anyone would be able to spot them. These experts had seen the entire scene unfold, and couldn't help but sigh. The person who had spoken this was Dongfang Wen Jian...

"That Baili Xiong Feng had long been done for! He had lost the moment sensed Mo Xie's imposing aura, and came out to confront him," the Solitary Falcon commented in a cold manner, "He was doomed to be defeated the moment he lost his temper. Baili Xiong Feng's defeat can only be attributed to his own mistakes. He may have no morals, but he's still at the Spirit Xuan realm. So, he shouldn't have lost to a preliminary Sky Xuan regardless of how bad he is...!"

Everyone nodded to show their agreement in a pensive manner. However, the Solitary Falcon was left dumbstruck the moment he



finished speaking. In fact, the Great Master had been left terrified of what he had just spoken...

He then suddenly cried out in fear. And, his long hair stood up as he said, "A base-ranked Sky Xuan? What did I just say...? I haven't misinterpreted it, right? This is damned! Damn it! When did this kid reach the first level of Sky Xuan?"

He appeared in shock as his eyes swept over Jun Wu Yi and the three Dongfang Brothers. In fact, the Great Master's eyes were reeking of a sense of extreme shock at this time, "I clearly remember that this brat was still at the Jade Xuan peak on the day of the battle with the Xuan Beasts! He advanced to the first level of Sky Xuan in a couple of days? He advanced four levels overnight?! Is there any fu\*king justice in this world?!"

Everyone suddenly became aware of that point the moment he made that statement.

The others had realized the extent Young Master Jun's cultivation had reached a long time ago. After all, all of them except for Jun Wu Yi were Spirit Xuan experts. So, how could they not tell?

However, they hadn't thought about this factor until the moment the Great Master had pointed it out. Consequently, the mouths of these talented people became round like an 'O' in the face of that issue. In fact, there were no exceptions to this reaction...

[That's right! Everyone saw that this brat was at Jade Xuan peak two days ago. We had praised his talent at that time. But, he has advanced to the first level of Sky Xuan in the blink of an eye? How did this happen? What words would someone use to praise him now? He was considered extremely talented two days ago... So, what praise could someone heap upon him at this point?!]

The eyes of six among them turned, and got focused on Jun Wu Yi's face. Their thoughts were clearly discernable... [You're his

uncle! You must've known about this! You didn't tell us, but you still knew it... right?!

Jun Wu Yi nearly fell off his wheelchair. [Why are you looking at me? I genuinely didn't know! You don't know... I'm his uncle, but I had no idea either! This brat has a lot of secrets! God knows how many cards he has hidden in his hands?!]

Everyone was stupefied when they saw that Jun Wu Yi was unable to explain this. However, there was a wonderful scene playing out up-ahead at that moment. So, they couldn't help but shift their gazes to focus on the fight. A first level Sky Xuan had beaten a Spirit Xuan expert! This had toppled all established knowledge about warfare. In fact, this was something so rare that it hadn't been seen in a millennium...

Baili Xiong Feng was still dumbstruck as he watched the blood flow out from the center of his hand. In fact, he was at a complete loss. [My hand! I've trained so hard since childhood. I could put my hands in a stove, but they'd still be durable-enough to persist for a few hours. In fact, I can even block a divine sword's blade with my bare hands, and still not suffer any injury!]

[However, I have a hole in my hand even though there is no sign of a weapon in my opponent's hand!]

Baili Han Hai had been standing behind this entire time. However, his eyes had opened wide at this time since he had never seen his eldest brother in such a difficult situation before. Moreover, it was a young brat who had put his eldest brother in such a difficult situation...

Baili Luo Yun was standing in a calm poise. He too was startled to witness the scene that had unfolded in front of him. However, this result wasn't exactly unexpected in his opinion. In fact, this result had been ordained the moment Jun Mo Xie had arrival. And, Baili Luo Yun had realized that something like this would happen since he knew that Jun Mo Xie wouldn't act in this manner unless he

had full control over the situation.

The Southern Heaven City had become the Jun Family's home ground by now. So, he had believed that many experts would've been waiting in hiding. And, he had figured that they would've killed Baili Xiong Feng once they were called upon. But, Baili Luo Yun had never imagined that Jun Mo Xie would decide to deal with Baili Xiong Feng himself. Nor had he imagined that Jun Mo Xie would gain a position of absolute dominance...

[Jun Mo Xie is younger than me... Yet, he possesses such a great cultivation!]

Baili Luo Yun had sensed that Jun Mo Xie's cultivation was better than his own a while ago. But, he had never thought that Jun Mo Xie would be so far ahead that he would've reached the Sky Xuan realm! Moreover, he had challenged a Spirit Xuan expert even though he was a Sky Xuan... and had won with ease!

[What is a 'true genius?' Only Jun Mo Xie is entitled to be related to those two words. The other so-called 'geniuses' of this world have been overshadowed by this talented and mysterious youngster who stands in front of me!]

This thought destroyed any pride which Baili Luo Yun had given refuge to. [Jun Mo Xie is the sole gem from the third generation of Tian Xiang's authoritative Jun Family. And I...? This Young Master Jun is only seventeen years old. Yet, his Xuan cultivation is far greater than mine. In fact, the difference is like that of heaven and earth... one can't even mention us in the same breath!]

[I have been content at staying at the Jade Xuan peak. Meanwhile, this kid — who is six or seven years younger — is taking on Spirit Xuan experts... and is actually beating them in such a convincing manner!]

[What reason do I have to be prideful? Why should I act aloof?]

Baili Luo Yun had been subdued in the true sense of the word.

But, Baili Xiong Feng had been enraged on the other side. In fact, he had been driven mad...

He was unable to bear his own defeat.

[I'm a Spirit Xuan expert. So, I'm his elder in every way. I could've bullied Jun Mo Xie very easily. I could've taught him a good lesson, and it would've been fine as long as I didn't take it too far. I could've put him in his place. And then, I would've taken the matter to Jun Wu Yi, and explained him the reason behind my actions. I've would've then asked him to preside over the matter. I reckon that Jun Wu Yi would've considered me to be a magnanimous man since I didn't bicker with a kid of the younger generation. Well... I at least wouldn't have incited a strong military reaction from the Jun Family...]

[After all, Jun Mo Xie had insulted my Baili Family first. And, no one could've endured that. So, the fact that I didn't kill him on the spot would've reflected as a great sign of respect towards the Jun Family. The Jun Family is a noble family. So, there wouldn't have been a major reaction from their side...]

[However, I didn't expect that I would be defeated like this even though I took the initiative to attack. Moreover, I was defeat in one move! How can I explain this? Do I have to go to Jun Wu Yi and say, "Look... your nephew is such a bully! He hit me!" I won't be able to live anymore...]

Baili Xiong Feng's eyes had become round in a glare while hands moved like the wind as he launched relentless attacks.

Jun Mo Xie's body seemed like cotton as it floated free and unhindered. And, his hands moved as freely as the wind as he attacked back. Jun Mo Xie's training and foresight would've allowed him to avoid Baili Xiong Feng's devastating attacks even if he hadn't made a breakthrough to the Sky Xuan realm.

However, his reaction had been sharper and his stance had become perfect after the breakthrough.

Baili Xiong Feng seemed to be attacking in a wild frenzy. However, he was constantly reminding himself that he only wanted to teach Jun Mo Xie a lesson... and didn't wish to kill him. And, that was because the Baili Family would be destroyed if Jun Mo Xie were to die by his hands since they didn't have the power to defend themselves against that mysterious and powerful man's revenge.

Baili Xiong Feng was embroiled in hatred at this moment. But, he only wanted to retrieve his honor; he never wanted to bring disaster to his family...

However, he was unaware that Jun Mo Xie was also considering whether he should kill Baili Xiong Feng this entire time. [Should I kill Baili Xiong Feng? Will it be worth it?]

The Young Master Jun kept thinking over the question, and pondered whether it was worth it to kill him or not...

Baili Xiong Feng's style of fighting was powerful, bold, and tyrannical in the eyes of others. But, it had a hundred loopholes as far as Jun Mo Xie's eyes were concerned. Jun Mo Xie had skimmed through a wide range of fighting style in his previous life. And, those fighting styles had evolved over thousands of years. However, even they had some loopholes. So, what would the mere centuries-old fighting style of the Baili Family be in comparison?

Jun Mo Xie wouldn't have been able to think about killing Baili Xiong Feng in the past even though he could've seen-through his attacks. After all, the difference in their strength would've been too great. The strength of a Spirit Xuan expert was unimaginable for a normal person. So, this situation would've been something like the one he had been in when he had faced Dongfang Wen Dao in hand-to-hand combat. He had seemed to have prevailed at the time, but he couldn't have done much beyond a certain point. However, the circumstances were very different at this time. How could this Jun Mo Xie ever be compared to the one from that day?

Another crucial point was... the weaponry involved!

# Chapter 400: Dealing a Fatal Blow to a Spirit Xuan Expert!

---

That ‘turning ordinary metals into wonderful gold’ had genuinely allowed the Young Master Jun to cut through iron like it was hot butter. In fact, there seemed to be nothing which he couldn’t overcome. For example... he had only used his toothpick-like sword to make a hole in Baili Xiong Feng’s hand. And, this was a clear proof of that.

However, Jun Mo Xie was considering whether it was necessitated to kill his opponent at this time. [Should I kill him? Should I not kill him? What’s the advantage of killing him? What’s the advantage of not killing him? What’re the pros and cons? I need to consider this seriously.]

[Baili Luo Yun would have no choice but to obey me if I kill Baili Xiong Feng. He will have no way out!]

[If I don’t kill him...]

Jun Mo Xie chuckled since he suddenly felt foolish. Killing or not killing this man would be roughly the same thing. But, he realized that there was one matter which was endlessly nagging at his mind. It was the condition that had been set by Baili Luo Yun that day... And, that was ‘to kill everyone the Baili Family had sent here’.

However, Jun Mo Xie wasn’t willing to do so.

It wasn’t that the Young Master Jun had had some misgivings about the conditions after he had accepted them. It was just that Jun Mo Xie was unwilling to follow Baili Luo Yun. [What would happen if I promise to do everything he asks? Who will hold a higher importance in that case? This will have a negative influence on my authority!]

Jun Mo Xie had found himself facing a conundrum at this time.

Baili Luo Yun wanted him to kill his opponent. However, that was secondary. The real question was — did Young Master Jun wish to kill this man?

[Baili Luo Yun can request me to do it... he may even beg me to do it... but, his efforts will be in vain if I don't wish to kill him. However, Baili Luo Yun may plead with me to spare that person's life on the other hand, but I would still kill him if I wanted him dead.]

This had nothing to do with Baili Luo Yun.

This matter was related to Jun Mo Xie himself.

Jun Mo Xie's body issued a hissing sound and his white robes fluttered in the air as his body sped up in an instant. He then changed directions three times in the blink of an eye. After that, he shot forward like a demon. Then, he quickly looped and retreated, and stationed himself around fifteen meters away. He looked at Baili Xiong Feng coldly. His eyes were brimming with an intention to commit murder. In fact, it seemed as if he was on the verge of dealing the final blow.

"Jun Mo Xie is going for the kill!" Solitary Falcon's sharp senses became aware of the raging killing intention which had suddenly erupted out of Jun Mo Xie. Thus, he announced it in a dignified manner. He was the strongest amongst those present at the scene. The Great Master Solitary Falcon's agility skills were world-renowned. And, only he could discern the Young Master Jun's moves at this time. The remaining people found it hard to see Jun Mo Xie's rapid movements; even the three Dongfang Brothers were no exception....

The Young Master Jun had quickly changed his position three times, and had attacked at three of Baili Xiong Feng's loopholes in this process. Moreover, he had attacked Baili Xiong Feng's loopholes in order to kill him.

However, there was a chance of a last-ditch counter-attack.



Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had retreated to look for better opportunities.

Sikong An Ye had been paying attention to the developments since the beginning. So, he couldn't help but sigh, "This youngster has been consolidating his position with every step. His strategy is extremely brilliant! First, he gained an upper hand by using his murderous aura to force Baili Xiong Feng to show himself. And, that move pushed the Baili expert into a disadvantage. This kid's moves are so fast that I can barely even see them. The result of this fight has no suspense to it.

"The Third Young Master has been controlling this situation from the very beginning. And, he first provoked this fight. He then unleashed his killing intention instead of retraining it. And, he started to use his words to a great effect, and managed to provoke and enrage Baili Xiong Feng. In fact, he got the man to abandon common sense and judgment, and forced him into making mistakes. Then, he made that thunderous attack, and injured Baili Xiong Feng's hand when he was in a chaotic state of mind. This allowed him to disrupt his opponent's rhythm. It was then that Young Master Jun bared his fangs, and used his rapid speed to strike a fatal blow. This chain of events can only work in fight between two individuals. But, this is also the most efficient method, and saves a lot of unnecessary effort.

"The Third Young Master of the Jun Family... the rumored number-one debauchee of Tian Xiang has turned out to be such a ferocious character!" Sikong An Ye's voice seemed textured with a sense of great admiration. And, Jun Wu Yi suddenly felt a sense of great pride and relief.

"But, I don't wish to challenge this treasured nephew of mine again. I could learn a lot by training with him, but I genuinely don't wish to be beaten by someone so young," Dongfang Wen Dao still felt somewhat traumatic from the last time.

"He's not acting like a senior should. He's action like a kid. I'm

baffled by Baili Xiong Feng's actions. Why is he even bothering with Mo Xie despite the seniority of his status? Why didn't he go to Jun Wu Yi to seek justice? The Jun Family is very honorable. And, Wu Yi would've never shielded any mistakes. Mo Xie hasn't behaved properly in this matter. But, that doesn't even matter now. Baili Xiong Feng would have to live in shame if he got defeated. And, his victory would be no less than a joke. A Spirit Xuan expert harboring such a severe grudge against a sixteen-seventeen-year-old is a huge joke!" the voice of the eldest member of the Dongfang Family was expressing his undisguised contempt.

"But, he was already in a mess when he was forced to come out by Jun Mo Xie. So, this was basically a strife between the auras of the two men. And, this couldn't have been sensed so easily by others either. In fact, we wouldn't have been able to detect it if our strengths weren't that great..."

The Great Master Solitary Falcon had extensive knowledge. And, he quickly pointed out the key factor, "Jun Mo Xie has completely grasped the moment. Mo Xie wouldn't have had anything to go on if Baili Xiong Feng hadn't opened his mouth in the beginning. But, Jun Mo Xie was able to use his aura to gain advantage since he spoke-up first. Mo Xie then controlled Baili Xiong Feng by making him increasingly enraged. After that, he acted to kill him..."

"Baili Xiong... Xiong... Xiong... Xiong... Feng is too much... he didn't have any restraint... he doesn't have any..." the muscles on Duanmu Chao Fan's big neck had started to pop-out as he said, "This... this... such a young man... has this... this kind of an aura! Good Mother! Look... him... not... rising!"

Sikong An Ye clasped his head in pain. That incessant stammering was making him dizzy.

"Is your self-restraint any good? Wouldn't you be infuriated by Jun Mo Xie if we experiment and exchange your place with Baili Xiong Feng's?" Sikong An Ye looked at Duanmu Chao Fan with disdain as he said, "It's fine to talk, but doing it is a different

matter. Why are you boasting so much?"

Everyone felt that this argument was reasonable. Anyone of them would've been left fuming if they had been in Baili Xiong Feng's position. In fact, Duanmu Chao Fan would've probably choked and died on his own stammer...

[That brat is too cunning!]

"Pay heed! The most important part is coming!" Solitary Falcon had been watching the fight this entire time. He called-out to remind everyone to pay attention.

Baili Xiong Feng could feel Jun Mo Xie's cold and severe murderous aura quite clearly. And, this sobered his hysterical mind. He could sense that an extremely dangerous attack was coming. In fact, his subconscious mind prompted him to use his unique skill — the Wild Dragon Palm.

Strong aura whistled from within, and a figure came out from his hand and covered the sky. Each strike of his palm carried enough strength to crush a stone to rubble. And, it rushed forward towards Jun Mo Xie with a rumble. The aura converged in his palms. It covered everything, and crashed down.

Jun Mo Xie's silhouette moved and dodged the massive canopy made by this attack. In fact, his movements were so quick that he left after-images in his stead. The attack pressed down and crushed the image that had still remained where Jun Mo Xie had stood a moment ago. However, Jun Mo Xie's real body had already arrived in front of Baili Xiong Feng by now. In fact, he had come face to face with his opponent. Moreover, he was smiling at Baili Xiong Feng with his glistening teeth.

His white teeth glittered faintly. They resembled the faint flash that is seen in the eyes of a hungry wolf on a cold winter's night.

Baili Xiong Feng was shocked. And, he retreated with everything he had...

However, it was too late!

A golden light flashed, and a thin blood-red line splashed out. Then, Jun Mo Xie's figure retreated with a 'whooshing' sound. Everyone saw that his figure had return to its original position. Baili Han Hai had been standing around ten meters behind Baili Xiong Feng this entire time, and had been watching the fight in an enraged frame of mind. But, he issued a cry of shock when he saw that Jun Mo Xie and that golden light had already in front of him, and his eyes became completely round.

Jun Mo Xie's two thundering palms chopped down on Baili Han Hai's chest. And, the Sky Xuan expert's body shook thrice before his chest caved in.

Who could've thought that Jun Mo Xie would mount a sneak attack on Baili Han Hai while fiercely battling Baili Xiong Feng. [He was the real target! Baili Xiong Feng wasn't!]

[He doesn't wish to let anyone go!]

Then, Jun Mo Xie came to standing position before Baili Han Hai, and turned towards Baili Luo Yun. He then smiled, and whispered, "I will fulfill your wishes. I gift these two men to you."

Baili Luo Yun was silent, and his expression was extremely complicated.

Baili Xiong Feng and Baili Han Hai stood upright at this moment. However, they were trembling even though they were standing upright. Moreover, they had a color of despair painted on their faces.

Solitary Falcon sighed and muttered, "Two men... including a Spirit Xuan... were killed in an instant by the attack of a Sky Xuan expert. And, his white robes haven't even stained. This scheming and these kinds of movements have left me to gasp in amazement! I have no words to praise him..."

Baili Xiong Feng stood still like a statue. He then slowly turned

around, and fixed his gaze on Jun Mo Xie. After that, he spoke-up in a low voice, "Let me see that weapon of yours." Everyone had seen an arrow of blood shooting out of Baili Xiong Feng. However, no one had been able to spot a weapon until now...

Jun Mo Xie stood silently for a moment. Then, he turned his palm, and everyone was able to see that barely half-a-finger-sized toothpick like 'sword' shining in the sunlight.

Baili Xiong Feng smiled wretchedly and said, "I had seen your sword at your waist. And, I had always been on guard against it. But, I had never expected the real weapon would be in your palm this entire time!"

The seven powerful spectators who stood at the side suddenly understood everything as they heard these words. [So that's why Jun Mo Xie never used his sword...? He had planned to use his sword as a decoy the entire time! The boy seems to have calculated everything from the beginning!]

"Good attack!" Baili Xiong Feng straightened his neck, and gave a strange smile. Then, his body suddenly slumped, and a slim fountain of blood gushed out of his neck. It shot out straight, and travelled many meters as it shone brilliantly in the sunlight.

Then, he went down like a sand-castle at a beach.

Jun Mo Xie had cut his throat with the flash of that golden light.

The Baili Family's Spirit Xuan expert — Baili Xiong Feng — had died.

"Bang!" Baili Han Hai also went down in a similar fashion. A thin stream of blood slowly flowed out from underneath his body. That Sky Xuan expert hadn't even had the time to say a single word until the time he was killed by Jun Mo Xie.

"I have fulfilled your desires. Do you still wish to fight me?" Jun Mo Xie smiled as he looked at Baili Luo Yun. His white robes hadn't even been stained with blood during the course of these

events...

# Table of Contents

## [Otherworldly Evil Monarch](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301: We Just Need The Eastern Wind!](#)

[Chapter 302: Alchemy and Progression](#)

[Chapter 303: The Dispute Over the Medicinal Dans, and Guan Qing Han's Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 304: Ballad of the 'Real Man'](#)

[Chapter 305: The Undercurrents before the Battle](#)

[Chapter 306: I Wish To Go Too](#)

[Chapter 307: The Crossbows... Have Arrived!](#)

[Chapter 308: I've Come Here to Rob!](#)

[Chapter 309: I Will Only Observe; I Won't Even Speak](#)

[Chapter 310: We've Lost Another One!](#)

[Chapter 311: It's My Turn At Last](#)

[Chapter 312: Frantically Tortured to Death](#)

[Chapter 313: The Sullen Sky Xuan Assassins](#)

[Chapter 314: Sword Pointed to Tian Fa](#)

[Chapter 315: To Violate the Army's Disciplinary Laws](#)

[Chapter 316: The Malignant Tumor Serves as the Vanguard](#)

[Chapter 317: Two Girls — Two Problems](#)

[Chapter 318: Turtledove Takes-over the Magpie's Nest](#)

[Chapter 319: The Yin-Yang Harmony Drug?](#)

[Chapter 320: I Only Seek For My Heart To Be At Peace](#)

[Chapter 321: The Nephew and Uncles Meet as Strangers](#)

[Chapter 322: To Fail Miserably at an Easy Task](#)

[Chapter 323: Jun Mo Xie! You Had the Impertinence to Stab Your Uncle?!](#)

[Chapter 324: Don't Let Your Fertile Water onto Others' Farms?](#)

[Chapter 325: Dongfang Wen Xin](#)

[Chapter 326: The Biggest Barrier to Xuan Cultivation's Advancement](#)

[Chapter 327: Dispelling Erstwhile Resentment](#)

[Chapter 328: A Grim Situation](#)

[Chapter 329: Thunderous Events in Tian Fa](#)

[Chapter 330: The Unreasonable Lord of the Tian Fa Forest](#)

[Chapter 331: Jun Mo Xie's Doubts](#)

[Chapter 332: Baili Luo Yun](#)

[Chapter 333: Tian Fa's Fury](#)

[Chapter 334: To Have the Heart of a Bear, And the Guts of a Panther](#)

[Chapter 335: Tian Fa is Shocked](#)

[Chapter 336: Tian Fa's Decision](#)

[Chapter 337: They Wish to Entrap Me? They Should Make Preparations For Their Own Funerals!](#)

[Chapter 338: Fortuitous Encounter in Tian Fa](#)

[Chapter 339: The 'Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons' Fruit](#)

[Chapter 340: I'm Stealing this Sacred Fruit for the Sake of Doing a 'Good Deed'](#)

[Chapter 341: Tian Fa's Millions Depend on the Success or Failure of One Person!](#)

[Chapter 342: The Mysterious Master Shows Up, and Has Some Other Plans](#)

[Chapter 343: Whoever Believes in Me Will Live Forever](#)

[Chapter 344: Bumper Harvest!](#)

[Chapter 345: Extremely Vile!](#)

[Chapter 346: Li Teng Yun's Persecution](#)

[Chapter 347: This Thought Shall Remain Immortal in the Realm of this World!](#)

[Chapter 348: Don't Snatch My Husband!](#)

[Chapter 349: The Hero Won't Be Alone!](#)

[Chapter 350: Internal Strife](#)

[Chapter 351: Wrongly Accusing Li Jue Tian](#)

[Chapter 352: A Frantic Battle](#)

[Chapter 353: The Two World-Shaking Swordsmen — Rainstorm, and Hurricane; Both Great Masters!](#)

[Chapter 354: The Battle Commences](#)

[Chapter 355: A Strange Battle](#)

[Chapter 356: Trying to Steal a Chicken Only to End-up Losing the Rice Used to Lure it](#)

[Chapter 357: Great Master Li Jue Tian's Tragedy](#)

[Chapter 358: Name Shakes the World!](#)

[Chapter 359: I Will Curse You Till You Die of Excessive Rage!](#)

[Chapter 360: How Can You Be So Shameless?!](#)

[Chapter 361: The Snake King Comes Out to Fight!](#)

[Chapter 362: Lei Wu Bei Fights](#)

[Chapter 363: The Third Battle](#)

[Chapter 364: Four Great Masters Fight Tian Fa](#)

[Chapter 365: A Majestic Battle](#)

[Chapter 366: Defeated!](#)

[Chapter 367: Knife Thrower! Knife Thrower Appears Again!](#)



[Chapter 368: The Killing Blow! The Aftermath!](#)  
[Chapter 369: Scatter Like The Clouds](#)  
[Chapter 370: The Devil's Bite of the Flame of Primal Chaos](#)  
[Chapter 371: Profits From Disaster, and Breaks Through a Third Time!](#)  
[Chapter 372: Breaking Through to the Third Level!](#)  
[Chapter 373: What Kind of a Medicine is it?](#)  
[Chapter 374: I Want to 'Cook Rice' with You, Jun Mo Xie](#)  
[Chapter 375: Turning Ordinary Iron into Wonderful Gold!](#)  
[Chapter 376: I've Come to Cook!](#)  
[Chapter 377: I Won't Play, Would You?](#)  
[Chapter 378: Must Have a Clear Conscience](#)  
[Chapter 379: As Furious As the Claps of Thunder!](#)  
[Chapter 380: Courageous Little Girl](#)  
[Chapter 381: A Trace of Guilt](#)  
[Chapter 382: The Responsibility and Farce](#)  
[Chapter 383: I'm a Selfish Man!](#)  
[Chapter 384: The Undercurrent in the Capital](#)  
[Chapter 385: Tang Yuan's Strategies](#)  
[Chapter 386: Enters Tian Fa for the Third Time](#)  
[Chapter 387: Bear and Crane Kings](#)  
[Chapter 388: Help the Beast King with the Breakthrough](#)  
[Chapter 389: Many Beast Kings Gather to Celebrate with Jun Mo Xie!](#)  
[Chapter 390: I Will Do This For Your Reputation](#)  
[Chapter 391: Jun Mo Xie's Magnificent Plan!](#)  
[Chapter 392: The Ultimate Objective](#)  
[Chapter 393: Collision of the Spirit Senses](#)  
[Chapter 394: The Nine Xuan Root!](#)  
[Chapter 395: How Did You Eat It?](#)  
[Chapter 396: The True Style of the Evil Monarch](#)  
[Chapter 397: Instigating a Situation of Chaos and Fanaticism](#)  
[Chapter 398: Jun Vents Anger](#)  
[Chapter 399: Fight a Spirit Xuan and Show-Case Extraordinaire!](#)  
[Chapter 400: Dealing a Fatal Blow to a Spirit Xuan Expert!](#)